



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 03

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Revenge

Recently, the animal trading market in the south of Blackhot City had become more boisterous. Compared to before when only the places which sold pets were lively, nowadays, the horse trading area became more bustling as many people in Blackhot City started to consider their private carriages. Besides, the Norman Empire's hierarchical system became increasingly more accepted and started to influence people's daily lives from all aspects.

In this animal trading market, recently a news spread that the horse trading area would be separated from the animal trading market. This was because someone wanted to invest into a bigger and more senior horse trading market to satisfy the demands of some people in Blackhot City in the future.

In the Norman Empire, with the exception of army and public traffic, only soldiers could be allowed to use private vehicles in public areas. As many rich people and businessmen in Blackhot City were only commoners, once the military control came to an end, they could only put away their private cars at home.

Some were sorrowful and sighed while stud-farm bosses and farmers who bred a bit some horses in the surrounding farms all looked very satisfied.

There were several stud-farms in Blackhot City, which all had a booming business these days. At the same time, those farmers who knew how to breed horses, drive carriages, and take care of horses became in demand. This meant that many farmers who could only do farm work in the farmland would get an opportunity to work

downtown.

If those rich commoners who could only have carriages wanted to have a carriage, they had to hire at least two workers, one driver, and one hostler. Besides, they had to buy at least two strong horses and customize a carriage that met the requirements of the Norman Empire. Additionally, they had to build a horse stable at home and spend money on taking care of the horses everyday.

Driving a carriage is more complicated than driving a car. Therefore, many people who prepared to change their method of transportation became resentful. However, even if they were unwilling, they could only do it as they dared not show their dissatisfaction at all.

That indicated just how strict the hierarchical system of the Norman Empire was. Even all the businessmen in the entire Norman Empire dared not oppose it, not to mention some independent businessmen. So even if there were people who were dissatisfied with this change in Blackhot City, more people were happy about it. Actually, the amount of the latter far surpassed that of the former.

If you wanted to use a private car, the solution was simple and transparent. Once you made enough contributions to the Norman Empire and became a soldier, you might have a chance to get a private car. If a businessman wanted to be a soldier of the Norman Empire, even the lowest rank—parasol-leaf soldier—the lowest threshold would also take you at least 1600 gold coins' taxation or donation.

The soldiers of the Norman Empire were divided into seven ranks. The lowest rank was parasol-leaf soldier, above which were respectively oak-leaf soldier, maple-leaf soldier, pine-needle soldier, and three senior soldier ranks—lilac soldier, rosebush soldier, and rose soldier. Each soldier rank enjoyed different rights on all aspects.

The oak leaves on Zhang Tie's military officer certificate indicated that he was in the oak-leaf rank, which brought him a treatment of a second lieutenant. In the Norman Empire, soldiers who sacrificed themselves for their country could always win more respect than those who only donated gold coins.

If a businessman who had become a parasol-leaf soldier, the lowest soldier rank, through legal taxation or donation wanted to be further promoted, besides several times higher taxation and donations, he had to meet several stricter requirements. For instance, he should not have a criminal record; additionally, he had to be a model of high morality in the society; he should be enthusiastic about doing social benefit activities and be generous in helping others.

After reaching these rigidly quantitative requirements, he should also collect the signatures of at least 300 commoners of the Norman Empire and pass the investigation of the Imperial Order Investigation Committee before became an oak-leaf soldier.

Oak-leaf soldiers had more rights than parasol-leaf soldiers.

The lowest-level officials of the Norman Empire would be chosen at least from oak-leaf soldiers or direct-line descendants of families

composed of oak-leaf soldiers. Commoners and parasol-leaf soldiers were not qualified to be officials of the Norman Empire.

The hierarchical system was a set of rigid fundamental laws for ruling a country. Through hundreds of years' practice, this foundation of the Norman Empire was becoming more powerful and firm.

The book "The Charter of Orders" was published by the Imperial Order Investigation Committee of the Norman Empire which was the legal document on introducing the ruling foundation of the Norman Empire. This book was most discussed in Blackhot City these days as it had become the bestseller in bookstores.

Sitting before his own stall, Zhang Tie heard some guys who were also selling items nearby discussing this hottest topic. After it came the speculations about the escalating friction and battles between the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty in Kalur region.

From those guys' discussion, Zhang Tie learned that it was the seven families of the Coal, Iron, and Steal Federation who had coordinated with the Norman Empire to realize a "peaceful liberation" of Blackhot City. As a reward, the clan elders of the seven families would be rewarded the status of rosebush soldiers of the Norman Empire.

As for Zhang Tie himself, because he had formed the Iron-Blood hidden strength, he was recruited by Colonel Leibniz to join the Iron-Blood Camp and luckily became one of the first eight natives who were rewarded with soldier rank in Blackhot City during the military control period. Although he was only a low-rank oak-leaf

soldier, it was already great enough.

On the carpet before Zhang Tie were several bamboo cages which contained golden uangs. He had bought them from some kids in the early morning when he came here. There were more than 30 uangs, which had cost Zhang Tie 12 silver coins.

Golden uang was a very cute beetle. Male uangs had a huge horn on their heads, which made them adorable. Zhang Tie had also caught two in a tree he used to play when he was young. This kind of beetle was not expensive. However, it was not easy to catch a live one. It would take you some time to catch them. Those 11-12 old kids living in the farms outside Blackhot City were very excited about catching them as a part-time job.

Zhang Tie sat in front of his stall with his eyes on the uangs in the cages before him while waiting for the arrival of Samira, that bastard.

This time, Zhang Tie looked like a 20-odd pioneer in common clothes which looked a bit old. Besides them, he wore a summer hat and was leaning lazily against a banyan tree with a grass stem in his mouth. At the sight of him, people would know that he was just a sorehead.

...

At noon, Samira finally arrived, followed by two tough bodyguards.

Samira circled around the market with only over 30 golden uangs collected. This quantity could not meet today's mission, so he became a bit anxious. Each time he would get benefits from buying these live creatures. Once he could accomplish the task, Master Abyan would not mind giving him a bit of reward. However, if he could not accomplish the task, he was not brave enough to face Master Abyan's fury. What Samira feared most was to make Master Abyan think he was useless and start to become dissatisfied with him.

While his anxiousness continued to grow, he caught sight of that 20-odd youth—Zhang Tie's disguise—and the golden uangs that were put in a bamboo cage on the ground.

When he arrived in front of Zhang Tie, he didn't even ask him about the price before ordering a tough guy to take that cage containing uangs and throw the beetles into a larger cage in that tough man's hand.

"What are you doing?" Zhang Tie asked in a low-pitch voice with a furious expression, spitting off his grass stem.

"I want all of your golden uangs!"

Casting a glance at Zhang Tie's clothes, Samira showed a contemptuous expression.

"You want to take it away without even asking the price?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Ha!" Samira gave a cold harrumph and stared at Zhang Tie like seeing a rustic. "Are you here for the first time? Don't you know who I am?"

"I don't care who you are, if you want my commodities, you have to pay!"

"Of course I will pay!"

Saying this, Samira took out several silver coins from the inside of his coat and threw them to Zhang Tie. After that, he turned back and walked away, followed by two tough guys.

Only after a few steps, Zhang Tie had already caught up with them. "You only paid me eight silver coins, that's not enough. My golden uangs deserve at least 16 silver coins..."

Hearing this, Samira and the two tough men turned back at the same time.

"Brat, I've given you face and you should take it. Only I am collecting golden uangs in Blackhot City. Only kids would play with these animals, I've already given you face by paying you eight silver coins!"

Samira's face instantly became solemn.

Zhang Tie threw the eight silver coins back to Samira. "Here are your silver coins, give me back my golden uangs, 23 in total, I will

not sell them!"

Samira didn't catch Zhang Tie's silver coins but cast a glance at a tough guy beside him. When Zhang Tie stretched out his hand to grab that cage in Samira's cage, the tough men directly pushed him several steps back, forcing him down on the ground.

"Brat, if you keep being this stupid, I will beat you up. Hurriedly take the silver coins and roll out of here!" Samira swore. After that, he turned back and left while the two tough men gesticulated with their fists at Zhang Tie.

Seeing the argument, many people moved close to Zhang Tie.

"Brat, never mind it, those people are collecting uangs for Master Abyan. You can not offend him. Take the silver coins from the ground and leave as soon as possible!" some kind-heart man started to persuade him.

Dumbfounded, Zhang Tie sat on the ground for a while, seemingly having been greatly wronged. After that, he suddenly shouted loudly and jumped up from the ground. He then chased after Samira. On the way there, he pulled out of a shiny dagger from inside his coat which really scared the surrounding people. They had never imagined that Zhang Tie was that righteous.

What happened next was too fast.

The moment Samira heard Zhang Tie's shout did he saw Zhang

Tie rushing towards him with a dagger in hand. In a split second, Zhang Tie thrust his dagger directly into Samira's heart. Afterwards, he grabbed his cage and escaped immediately...

Not until Zhang Tie was more than ten meters away did the two muscled men following Samira understand what had happened. At the sight of Samira's fallen body in this quick manner, they immediately rushed after Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie kept running towards a hill in the south of Blackhot City. He ran so fast that after chasing him for less than 50 m. , the two tough men, running with gritted teeth, saw his shadow far off in the distance, which then quickly disappeared in the woods...

The two tough men also entered the woods and searched for quite awhile, but were not able to find even a hair of Zhang Tie. They could only dejectedly return to that place where Samira had been assassinated. After such a long period, Samira no longer had any signs of life on him.

When they rushed off to chase after Zhang Tie, the onlookers immediately left, not even casting a second glance at Samira who was lying on the ground.

Everybody felt that he had deserved that. Seeing the two tough guys coming back with disgruntled looks, many people in the market even became happy.

"Samira that bastard should have long died!"

"That's it, that Chinese youth runs so fast and has such a righteous morality..."

"I heard that none of the Chinese of the Norman Empire are easily offended."

"Of course, some bastards would behave better than that!"

Among all the onlookers in the market, only a local snake's face turned pale when he caught sight of the dead Samira lying on the ground. From the onlookers' discussions, he already knew that the one who had killed Samira was the very Chinese youth who had asked him where Samira was in the morning by paying him several silver coins. However, at this moment, he would never admit that someone had asked him about Samira's whereabouts.

'This was just a fight arisen from an unfair deal. That's it! I haven't seen that Chinese youth before, never have seen him before! It's so pathetic to see such a murder in this market!' That man told himself this twice inside.

Soon, a sheriff came to the market to investigate the present scene. He recorded the cause of Samira's death and how the murder had happened. Murder was a great case. It took the sheriff over one hour to finish this. Finally, he let the two muscled men carry away Samira's body.

According to witnesses' descriptions, the murderer was a 20-odd Chinese pioneer. Nobody knew his name, where he came from, where he lived, or whether he had some partners or friends. From

the descriptions of the onlookers, even that killer's look became weird.

Additionally, the moment that killer murdered Samira, he ran away. Nobody knew whether he would come back to Blackhot City or not. For such a case, nobody would be interested in investigating it. Actually, they didn't even have time to search for him in the wild. At most, the sheriffs would warn their counterparts in Blackhot City to pay attention to whether there were 20-odd Chinese pioneers who met these descriptions.

Soon after Samira's body was carried back into the luxurious castle-like manor beside the Lvyin Lake, Master Abyan, who enjoyed a great reputation in Blackhot City, learned that Samira was killed...

Chapter 202: Master Abyan

As the only gray-robe alchemist in a small area like Blackhot City, of course Master Abyan was qualified to be called a master.

Being different from the senile image that many people had about masters, although Master Abyan was over 50 years old, because of good maintenance, he looked much younger than his real age. With a 30-odd man's look, Master Abyan featured the charms of a mature man.

Younger appearance seemed to be a common feature among alchemists. All them tended to look much younger than their real age.

Master Abyan was such a person who would be recognized as an alchemist the moment you saw him.

A 50-odd gray-robe alchemist was already excellent achievement although not a genius in the world of alchemists. Similar to the hierarchical system of the Norman Empire, alchemists also had many ranks like herbal medicine apprentice, knapsack physician, suspended-gourd alchemist, girdling alchemist, and gray-robe alchemist.

Master Abyan was on the brilliant fifth stage in the alchemists' world. Although there were many more brilliant stages after the fifth stage, this status was already enough for him to obtain the respect and good treatment from the rulers of any country across Blackson Human Clan Corridor.

In Alchemists' world, everything could only be accumulated through time and experience. There was no shortcut to success in the alchemists' world. Additionally, because all alchemists could live longer than commoners, a 50-odd alchemist was like a 20-odd fighter who was rightly in his heyday with a bright future.

In the castle-style manor of Master Abyan, he would most commonly stay in two places: one was his pharmacy, and the other was his medical pills room.

These days, Master Abyan spent most of his time in his medical pills room as he was trying his best in studying a magical medicament that could help him rise to the next stage. It was a LV 4 magical medicament - primary strength medicament.

Based on his abilities as a gray-robe alchemist, he didn't dream about making such a great medicament at once, but a further study of it had benefited him a lot. He was ready to climb to the peak step by step. His status as a gray-robe alchemist and his deep relationships that had been built in the past years made his influence deep rooted in Blackhot City. However, if he could make further progress, his influence would not be limited to the Blackhot City but spread to the entire Brunswick Province of the Norman Empire. This would be of great help to his further plans.

Master Abyan was bored by making low-level medicaments in a remote area like Blackhot City all day long so as to get acquainted with those rustic land owners who only knew how to get gold coins by digging mines and make woman pregnant.

Because of a reason that he would not expose to anyone, Master Abyan felt that his physical strength was increasing right now along with his spirit. This brought him great confidence to challenge a higher and more brilliant stage in the alchemists' world.

The direction he chose to study and break through was primary strength medicament, the most attractive medicament among those of LV 4.

As a gray-robe alchemist, Master Abyan had mastered many secret knowledge systems that could only be known by alchemists. Therefore, he knew many secrets that other commoners didn't know, including the secret of the attractive 'primary strength medicament', which was related to golden uangs. This was alchemists' secret knowledge.

Common uangs could only lift objects that were more than 1200 times heavier than its own weight at most, however, after mutation, they could lift objects that were more than 1800 times heavier than their own weight. They were well-known kings of strength among the mother nature's creations.

Even before the catastrophe when human beings' science and technology were very developed and some crazy guys even clamored to enter the universe, people could only decipher less than 3% of their own genes.

However, the 3% of human genes that had been deciphered were over 95% similar to that of uangs and over 99% similar to that of other mammals. This knowledge had been grasped by people

before the catastrophe. Today, this knowledge was still of great use to alchemists.

The alleged 'primary strength medicament' was a kind of medicine that contained a certain strength from uangs' genes that granted uangs great strength. It could also work a bit on human body by activating a small part of some human genes which were related to strength, which drove people mad.

It didn't increase people's physical strength by over 1000 times; that would be too crazy and could only be made by god. If a vial of primary strength medicament made by alchemists could allow a person to increase his lifting strength by 3-5 times that of his own strength, namely adding 300-400 kgs' strength, and help the person retain it for several hours, that would already be enough to drive people mad.

'Primary strength medicament' was very expensive which also drove people very mad. However, the most critical materials required by this kind of medicament were only those common golden uangs, a mutated beetle that could be seen everywhere. Although common uangs could also be used to make this kind of medicament, that could only be done by alchemists of higher rank.

As an alchemist who was expecting a further promotion, Master Abyan had a greater chance to succeed by using mutated golden uangs to study the 'primary strength medicament'.

These days, Master Abyan had used up hundreds of golden uangs in his medical pills room. Those uangs had struggled and disappeared in weird bubbling liquids of different colors.

Today, Master Abyan made some interesting experiments in his medical pills room and gained a further understanding on how to make 'Primary strength medicament'. This made him very happy.

However, Master Abyan started to become gloomy when he heard that there was no more golden uangs in the medical pills room.

"Are you saying that Samira who was responsible for collecting golden uangs for me was murdered? Are you saying that there's no golden uangs for my experiments anymore?" Master Abyan asked with an emotionless face, looking at a terrified steward of his castle.

The steward's face immediately turned pale and he almost lowered his head to the ground. "After learning of this news, I've dispatched three groups of people to collect golden uangs in emergency. I'm sure they will soon come back!"

After closing his eyes for several seconds, Master Abyan opened his eyes.

"Is that killer a Chinese youth called Zhang Tie?"

"No, I heard it was a 20-odd Chinese youth!"

"Did anyone know him?"

"No!"

"Was this 20-odd Chinese youth acting alone? Was he a strange face in Blackhot City? Had he appeared in the animal trading area before?" Master Abyan asked.

"Yes!"

The steward looked at Master Abyan with a pair of amazed eyes, expressing great awe to this man.

Seeing the steward's eyes, Master Abyan revealed a wisp of smile on his lip corner. "Do you think it's very difficult for a person to change his face?"

"Do I need to report this to colonel Leibniz with a letter signed by you?" the steward asked, his voice lowered.

"No need, I will not care whether Samira died or not. Even if the killer was Zhang Tie, as he has considered to change his look before dealing with his personal grudge with Samira, it means that he doesn't want to offend me. No need to find more trouble. Arrange a new manager for purchasing medicinal materials for me!"

After saying this, Master Abyan slightly flicked his hands towards the steward. For Master Abyan, this was just a trivial thing and it was unnecessary for him to take revenge for a small figure like Samira.

The steward then received the order.

"I don't want to be interrupted!" Master Abyan said.

"As you wish, I will make so, but Ms. Gina who wants to buy youth water had been here waiting for you for half an hour in the parlor. She was invited by the young miss from Gregory family. Will you go to the parlor or..."

"If so, no need to be that complicated, I can also gain tranquility in the parlor!"

"Yes sir!"

...

Under the guidance castle's steward, Master Abyan went to the parlor in the side hall of the second floor after a short while. After opening the gate for Master Abyan, the steward then closed it respectfully and exited.

In a baroque skirt, a beautiful 30-odd woman was lazily sitting on the sofa. She was holding a white folding fan while a great part of her plump breasts exposed. Her figure was enchanting, while her skin was as white as snow.

"Do you want to buy youth water?" Master Abyan asked as he

walked over to her.

"Yes, the young Ms of Gregory introduced me to here. She says you have a very special youth water which can be directly injected into women's bodies. Besides keeping beauty, it can also cure loneliness!" Ms Gina said, face blushed. Afterwards, she sat up slightly straighter, exposing the curves of her breasts in a more perfect way.

Master Abyan revealed a smile while his eyes radiated shiny lights. "Then please stand up, I will inject the youth water for you now!"

Ms Gina stood up from the sofa.

"Beautiful Ms, please turn back and lie down on the sofa with your hands supporting your body. Meanwhile, remember to raise you butt, this pose should not be difficult for you!"

Ms Gina then obediently turned back and made the pose; it was an very alluring pose for any man.

"The first time I inject youth water for you might make you uncomfortable. It might be a bit painful! Afterwards, when you get used to it, you might want an injection or two every week!"

"The young Ms of Gregory family said that your injector is very huge!" Ms. Gina gasped out.

"Yes, Ms, you will soon enjoy it! Please take off your skirt. Yea, like this, hmm, show me your butt. There's another obstacle on you. If you can take off your sling underwear or push it away and show me the place where I need to inject you, I would be very happy to do that! This would help me inject youth water into your body in a much smoother way."

Master Abyan had already pulled away his robe and taken out his grim and huge injector that was used to inject youth water.

Ms. Gina did it according to Master Abyan's requirements. When she took off her underwear and touched that huge and hard injector of Master Abyan behind her, she exclaimed immediately. She had seen so many injectors, however, that was definitely the biggest one that she had seen. She would not even be able to hold it with one hand. Such a huge injector might be more suitable to a mare.

"Ms, the injector is ready!" Master Abyan had already put it next to the place where he wanted to inject the youth water in. He started to slightly rub it on the place. Ms Gina felt so stimulated that she started to quiver all over. "When the needle of the injector enters your body, you might feel a bit painful the first time. When I inject it for you, please don't struggle or move. Can I press your waist with one of my hands? I know, as a medic, if I touch your beautiful body without your prior consent, it will be impolite and a bit profane to you!"

"Fine!" Ms Gina panted.

Receiving her consent, Master Abyan placed his powerful left

hand on the hipbone of Ms Gina's waist.

"Ms, if you are ready, please treat yourself as a rutting female dog and bark twice when I can inject it for you. During the process , if it is too painful, you can also bark twice. This way, you can feel less scared. I will also make it less painful by pushing in the injector a bit slower and gentler. I've already checked it just now. If you want to be cured, you have to receive injections in two places. During the first time, I can tap your potential while the second time, I will complete the real deep treatment for you..." Master Abyan righteously said.

"Woof... woof...", Ms Gina, who looked very noble, barked twice, face blushed. It was then soon followed by a distant and sharp bark.

In the next hour, the barks drifted in the parlor one after another at different rhythms.

The moment Master Abyan pushed in the injector, he raised his head and looked at the ceiling. He didn't focus on Ms Gina who was quivering all over and could not even stand steadily, instead, he was gazing at a grain on the ceiling, seemingly wanting to see through the ceiling of the parlor.

At this moment, Master Abyan was very tranquil inside as he was seriously thinking about something...

Could a person really be able to resist the toxicity of Blue Frost after being struck by a lightning bolt...

Could a person, really, easily form Iron-Blood hidden strength after being struck by a lightning bolt...

That person was really more interesting than golden uangs...

...

At such a solemn and critical moment, if Zhang Tie knew that Master Abyan was still silently thinking of him, he would have definitely been left dumb while cramping and spitting white foam. He might have even crashed himself into the wall, losing his mind.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie didn't know...

Chapter 203: Improvements In The Castle Of Black Iron

Zhang Tie didn't know what had happened in the animal trading market and Master Abye's castle-style manor. According to his plan, after killing Samira with his dagger, his running speed could even match that of a sprinting wild wolf.

The two bodyguards beside Samira were left far behind him in only several seconds. They could not even catch the flying dust that had been left by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie kept running towards south of Blackhot City before turning to the west. He picked remote areas with few people and made a big circle in the wild.

Half an hour later, having run over 30 kms, Zhang Tie stood in the woods over 10 km away from Blackhot City, on its west side.

He liked to run. He liked that feeling of being as free as the wind. This time, after killing Samira, he made another round to simply enjoy the cool feeling of running. Zhang Tie felt that each of his pores from his head to toes were cool.

After stopping in the wild woods, he burst out laughing loudly.

After looking around to ensure that nobody was near him, he took off his coat, wig, and face mask. As it was too uncomfortable to take the coat and the wig in his hands, Zhang Tie directly threw

them off. As for the face mask, Zhang Tie folded it and rubbed it into a ball before foisting it into his pocket. According to Donder, this kind of memory-based face mask would recover its original look when you sprayed water on it no matter how crumpled it was, as long as it didn't torn.

After doing this, the moment Zhang Tie wanted to leave, he noticed that Samira's cage containing golden uangs had been carried all the way here and was lying on the ground after a trip of tens of kilometers.

Squatting down, Zhang Tie opened the cage and poured out the golden uangs. There were 56 golden uangs of different sizes inside the cage. They were actually adorable and had a nice color.

"Today, I completed my revenge and save your lives. From today on, you should remember to be cleverer and not be so easily caught by people!"

Some golden uangs clumsily tried to turn back by standing on the ground. Zhang Tie then took them up and put them on a nearby tree trunk. Released out of the cage, all the golden uangs instantly escaped in all directions.

He didn't know whether they had understood his words, but Zhang Tie felt that some golden uangs were nodding to him when they left. Some having climbed several steps forward even looked back at their savior.

Zhang Tie's mom said that every creature had its spirit. It seemed

true.

Seeing those small creatures being released and gaining freedom, Zhang Tie also felt set free. He had never had this cool sense of having achieved his revenge before. It was like drinking icy plum syrup in the hot of summer and having many beauties warm up the bed for you in cold winter.

Zhang Tie felt that a dauntless man should act like this!

As long as nobody had witnessed him killing Samira, even if Master Abyan doubted the randomness of it, he could do nothing to Zhang Tie.

Soon after this event was solved, Zhang Tie felt that even if he would soon be dispatched to Kalur, he would also feel much more reassured about his family members and friends in Blackhot City. After all, without chopping off his—Samira's, that villain's, a poisonous snake's—head, you didn't know when he would jump out of his hiding place and bite you or your loved ones.

At noon, Zhang Tie returned to Blackhot City through the west city gate.

Soon after he entered the city, he saw a bald tough guy with a killing Qi in the uniform of the first lieutenant of the Norman Empire passing by him in a car.

Zhang Tie hurriedly shouted out, "Officer Freo!"

With a sound of ‘zhi...’, the Mountain Cat branded military SUV braked. The tough man who was driving and two soldiers on the SUV turned back at the same time and caught sight of Zhang Tie, who was walking on the road in plain clothes.

"Zhang Tie!" First Lieutenant Freo swiftly jumped off the vehicle and came to stand in front of Zhang Tie. The moment he wanted to give him a punch on the shoulder, he realized something and hurriedly stopped. "How are your wounds?"

"Much better. The air outside Blackhot City is fresh. It's beneficial to my recuperation, so I came out for a walk!" Zhang Tie casually lied. After that, he looked at a pile of crates containing military materials in the vehicle. "How's the camp now?"

"The division has already sent an order. Three days later, Iron-Blood Camp will drive to Kalur as the vanguard of No. 39 Division! Now that the Kalur's situation is escalating, our frontier troops are in shortage. Skirmishes under the scale of battalions and regiments would occur over ten times each day... That region is becoming more and more bloody..."

Although having long predicted the coming of this day, when he heard the news from First Lieutenant Freo, Zhang Tie's heart still pounded. In the blink of an eye, the battles between two great countries had come so close to him.

It happened earlier than Zhang Tie had predicted.

Taking a glance at him, First Lieutenant Freo felt regretful and comforted Zhang Tie, "Based on your wounds, you might not be able to join this battle in Kalur. You just recuperate in Blackhot City, hope we can have a chance to see each other again!"

After patting Zhang Tie's shoulders, First Lieutenant Freo jumped back into his Mountain Cat SUV and drove away out of Zhang Tie's vision.

After standing there for a while, Zhang Tie started to run.

He controlled his speed while running past the avenues of Blackhot City, not making it too shocking. He only kept his speed at that of someone chasing after a thief once he realized that his purse had been stolen.

Zhang Tie kept running toward his apartment on Avenue Monet. In the following two days, he only left once, returning with two sacks of various fruits and a barrel of honey that he could buy in the Blackhot City. He then totally immersed himself in the reconstruction of the Castle of Black Iron.

Two days later, three artificial buildings stood in the Castle of Black Iron: two of them were single-story log cabins numbered 3A80, while the other was an independent double-story log cabin numbered 3B90. All the three buildings were purchased from Home of the Wild, and because of them, the entire Castle of Black Iron seemed to be more lively.

The three log cabins had tangerine roofs and tan walls, making

them look very beautiful and delicate. Because they were designed and built in modules, the shapes of these log cabins were different from that of common residences. They looked more like wood houses of elves or dwarves from fairy tales. Whether it was styles or designs, they were all simple and chic, full of natural colors and good craftsmanship.

After being built up, the log cabins looked more beautiful than in the photos. From now on, Zhang Tie had his own grain warehouse and biological lab.

All the purchased grains were divided into two single-story log cabins.

In his lab, Zhang Tie started the fermentation using his first batch of basic aura yeast fluid. This fermentation process required water—mountain spring water from the Castle of Black Iron—fruits, honey, and sugar, all of which had been well prepared by Zhang Tie.

Like how he had fermented yeast fluid numerous times at home, he fermented almost 300 kgs yeast fluid. Being sour and sweet, this was his favorite drink when he was young. Sadly, he couldn't drink too much at home as it was meant for fermenting the rice brew. This time, however, Zhang Tie promised himself to make enough yeast fluid to be able to drink it whenever he wanted in the future.

Besides that, he also left a vial of basic aura yeast fluid in the lab so as to start its second mutation and evolution. Zhang Tie input aura value points inside like how he had done to those bees. No matter how many times he would have to try and whether he

would succeed or not, he would never feel loss for those aura value points as they were produced everyday.

After doing these things in the Castle of Black Iron, in the afternoon, a day before the Iron-Blood Camp would leave for the Kalur region, Zhang Tie walked out of his apartment on Avenue Monet in unexpected high spirits in tidy military uniform and boots along with his military officer's long sword.

Zhang Tie went back home first, accompanying his parents to kill time in the afternoon. During the supper, he told them that the Iron-Blood Camp would drive to Kalur for a big fight. His mom started crying, and the atmosphere at home became very depressing. Although Zhang Tie tried to improve it, even dad and elder brother's smiles looked very reluctant.

His mom continued to add dishes into his bowl, so he lowered his head and just engulfed whatever she gave him.

It was not easy to fight Sun Dynasty's Brilliant Feathers. The fight that Zhang Tie was going to experience would be more dangerous and cruel than what his martyr bastard-eldest-brother had experienced; Sun Dynasty's army was known across the entire Blackson Human Clan Corridor for its savageness.

After supper, elder sister-in-law put away the bowls and chopsticks and went to the kitchen.

Zhang Tie brought his dad and mom to the chairs in the parlor. After that, he bowed in front of them three times, making a loud

sound, 'dong, dong, dong'.

Although his dad didn't drop tears at supper, he burst out crying now too.

Zhang Tie stood up and revealed a smile. "Dad and mom, don't worry, I'll be back alive. Until I bring you hundreds and thousands of descendants, I will not die. You've given me a good name. I'll be as indestructible as iron!"

...

Zhang Yang then accompanied Zhang Tie out and walked with him for a long distance.

"Zhang Tie, that money..."

"They are clean. It's Gregory family's compensation to me!" The moment his elder brother opened his mouth, Zhang Tie knew what he wanted to say. Before departing, he tightly grasped his elder brother's hands. "We brothers should not care about these things. Because it's chaotic everywhere, as long as I leave Blackhot City, you will hardly get any news about me.

"In the future, if I don't come back in half a year, you should take the money and leave Blackhot City together with dad, mom, and elder sister and go to the Eastern Continent. Then, you should look after our parents well!" Saying that, Zhang Tie took out that resin card with holes on it and gave it to his elder brother. "When you

arrive at the Eastern Continent, you should go find Donder and he will arrange everything for you!"

Zhang Yang's eyes turned red while he forcefully grabbed Zhang Tie's shoulder with one of his hands, tears sliding down his cheeks. Zhang Yang was also a soldier, of course he knew what would happen on battlefields. In such a great war, no matter how strong a person was, nobody would dare to pat their chest and swear that they could come back alive. Zhang Yang knew that what Zhang Tie had talked at home was only to comfort dad and mom. The real truth was what he was saying now.

"Can't you just not go there?" Zhang Yang asked.

In Zhang family, only he knew that Zhang Tie was still on his sick leave. He had suffered a heavy wound along with a rare poison. As only a few days had passed since he was given the sick leave, Zhang Tie had reason to not go. If he didn't appear tomorrow, he then would be able to avoid joining this war.

Actually, the Iron-Blood Camp and the No. 39 Division which knew Zhang Tie's latest situation had seen that Zhang Tie hadn't reported to the Iron-Blood Camp. This indicated that he would not be coming there tomorrow as well.

As Zhang Tie's elder brother, Zhang Yang sincerely wished for him not to go there.

"When there was an assassination attempt on my life, all the brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp immediately set out and

surrounded the residence of Gregory family in order to avenge me. So this time, I have to be there even if to face a mountain of swords!"

Zhang Yang sighed. He knew Zhang Tie's personality very well. Sometimes, although his brother was a bit cynical, he was very righteous. Donder had only looked after him for two years, yet he didn't hesitate to give him the 'Mental Arithmetic by Abacus'. If the whole Iron-Blood Camp could sacrifice themselves for him, then he could also sacrifice himself for the whole Iron-Blood Camp.

This was Zhang Tie!

"I have several brothers and women in Blackhot City, elder brother, you must have seen them. I mean Barley, Pandora... If I cannot come back in the future, when you leave, if you are able to look after them, you'd better give them a hand!"

Zhang Yang solemnly nodded. After that, the two brothers bade farewell to each other. Zhang Yang then saw off Zhang Tie, watching as he disappeared at the end of an avenue.

...

After finishing with his home affairs, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. He then came to Fatty Barley's home. When he saw his friend, he had also just finished his supper. Beneath the building where Barley lived, Zhang Tie told him that he would leave for Kalur with the Iron-Blood Camp tomorrow. Under Barley's

shocking gaze, Zhang Tie gave him a key.

"This is a safe that I rented out in the Golden Roc Bank of Blackhot City today, the number is 1067. I've put something there, as well as a letter for you. When I leave, you can go get the things inside the safe together with Doug and the other brothers!"

After being silent for a while, Barley took Zhang Tie's key. "Will you bid farewell to Doug and the other brothers?"

"No need, I cannot stand men crying in front of me; it feels like bidding farewell to a dead body. I prefer women to do that in front of me. " Bursting out laughing, Zhang Tie tightly embraced Barley. "Good luck, bro!"

After waving his hand to Barley, he turned back and disappeared in the darkness.

Chapter 204: Agreement

After leaving home, Zhang Tie went to the orphanage founded by Grandma Teresa. He donated 200 gold coins to the orphanage. This was the largest amount of donation that the orphanage had ever gained since it was founded. When Zhang Tie left, all the kids in the orphanage sang the hymn of the Guardian God School and saw Zhang Tie off, while Grandma Teresa kissed his forehead.

In the eyes of the kids of the orphanage, Zhang Tie was absolutely the only sage besides Grandma Teresa.

After this donation, Zhang Tie became penniless again with only several gold coins left.

...

Tonight, the eighty four girls in Blackhot City all received well-packaged exquisite gift boxes that Zhang Tie had the boutique stores send to them.

Each of them received a beautiful fresh flower, a set of Miss Diss' underclothes, and a set of jewelry from Milan Jewelry Store. On each greeting card, Zhang Tie wrote down a line of words.

"XXX, I will leave Blackhot City tomorrow, thanks for bringing me pleasure. I will remember you forever. Please forgive me for being not able to give you more——Zhang Tie!"

During this period, in the 7-8 days' edification and education by the beauties of the Rose Association, Zhang Tie finally became a half-fashionable man who started to know about various fashionable and interesting places in Blackhot City from a rustic who didn't know how to enjoy himself at all.

From those beauties, Zhang Tie learned the name of the best jewelry store in Blackhot City, the name of the best underclothes store, the location of the best coffee bar, the best tailor's store, the best hair salon, and the best hotel, as well as how to make the most delicious chocolate, etc..

The beauties in the Rose Association could easily tell the best places and the best items in Blackhot City as if they describing how much jewelry they had at home.

Many of these beautiful girls were from common families like Zhang Tie. A few of them had slightly better family conditions, none of which could match that of Benet's family. Because of differences in family statuses, it was not possible for each of these girls to have a set of Miss Diss's underclothes, neither was it possible for each of them to have a set of jewelry from Milan Jewelry Store.

To be able to wear a set of Miss Diss's underclothes and jewelry from Milan Jewelry Store while they were young and beautiful had become the dream of many girls of the Rose Association.

For many people, such a dream was over superficial and utilitarian, however, Zhang Tie didn't think so. He just felt lucky that before leaving Blackhot City, he could do one more thing to

make the adorable girls happy.

This might be the last memory that he could leave them.

...

There were no greeting cards in the gift boxes that he gave to Pandora, Alice, and Beverly, because Zhang Tie had carved all the words that he wanted to say on their finger rings.

As nobody was at Alice's home, the gift carrier brought back the gift. If necessary, she would send it there again tomorrow.

...

After doing all of these things, Zhang Tie felt absolutely relaxed. Before leaving Blackhot City, he had exerted all his effort to do everything he could do. Even if he was killed on the battlefield, he would not feel sorry for them all.

He killed the one who deserved to be killed and appreciated the ones who deserved to be appreciated...

Zhang Tie felt that he had loaded off a heavy burden.

...

Under the dim roadside lamps, he walked through the streets, from the gate of Seventh National Male Middle School all the way to the station where he had watched Miss Daina many times from afar.

It was where Miss Daina always waited for the bus to go home everyday. Previously, Zhang Tie could only hide in the alley behind the station to peep at her beautiful figure; he had already stealthily enjoyed her figure near this station for three years. Tonight, Zhang Tie bravely walked onto the platform for the first time, silently standing on that place where the beautiful figure always stood.

It was already deep in the night, few pedestrians were on the streets. All the urban buses had stopped running. Nobody was in the station except for Zhang Tie. The dim road lamp near the station radiated a looming light in the dark, elongating Zhang Tie's shadow. It looked like a road that extended into the endless darkness.

Standing on the platform alone, Zhang Tie closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He seemed to smell a wisp of the familiar fragrance left here while that beautiful figure got on the bus and left.

Donder said that in this age, if a man wanted to be mature, he should have done four things - f*cked a prostitute, killed someone, was sent to prison, and became a soldier.

In the past couple of months, Zhang Tie had experienced all of the above four things that Donder had mentioned. He was mature then now. And so he understood that lie which had brought him

endless hope.

...

"My greatest wish is that one of my students will become a powerful fighter or a powerful man who can safeguard human beings. Then, I will well dress myself to marry him..."

...

"The appointment between me and all of you is that when you are powerful enough to protect me, let me marry you, okay?"

...

"Would you like to make this kind of agreement with me?"

...

The beautiful voice of yesterday's classroom was still drifting in Zhang Tie's ears, the agreement which had thrilled him so much. Not until this moment did he understand that it was the most beautiful lie that he had ever heard.

Miss Daina was his teacher, the best teacher in his heart. She had her own life and would never belong to him. Neither would she marry him. Before Miss Daina, Zhang Tie was forever a student who could only silently follow her and hide in an alley beside the

station to kiss her in his mind with his humble eyes.

In this small station, that poor, small figure was sacrificed and buried forever.

...

Zhang Tie didn't know how long he stood in that station. He did his best to recall everything he could about Miss Daina. Actually, he was so scared that after he left Blackhot City tomorrow, this would become his eternal farewell. He was afraid that one day he won't be able to remember that beautiful figure anymore. He was afraid that one day he would forget her looks.

Maybe, on the day he left school, he should have collected his courage to take a photo with Miss Daina.

Zhang Tie became a bit regretful inside.

He wasn't certain from when there was already nobody on the streets...

He wasn't certain from when the fine rain had become so heavy...

He wasn't certain from when he was no longer alone in this station as Pandora was standing in front of him.

Looking at her weak body and pale face that had been wetted by

heavy rain, Zhang Tie felt pained. He then embraced her while taking off his military jacket. After cleaning the water off Pandora's head, he hurriedly put his jacket over her head before taking her icy hands and forcefully rubbing them.

"How did you know I'm here?" he asked.

Looking at Zhang Tie's nervous expression, Pandora chuckled. "You told me about what you always did previously, I guess you'd be here tonight. So here I am!"

Zhang Tie was slightly abashed, feeling like a kid who had been caught while stealing candy bars in a relative's home. He then pretended to glare at Pandora as he lifted her. "What about you, why are you here alone then, it's so late!"

Revealing a smile to him, Pandora lifted her hand and took out that box which contained the ring. Although she had gotten soaked by the heavy rain, that box was still dry with not even a water drop on it.

"I've just received your gift, learning that you'll need to leave Blackhot City tomorrow, so I want you to put this ring on for me !"

For some reason, at the sight of Pandora's smile, Zhang Tie felt like crying. He didn't say anything but instantly caught that box and took out that black ring. After that, he took hold of Pandora's hand that she stretched out before him.

Pandora's right hand was tender and elegant. When she opened her palm, Zhang Tie wanted to put the ring onto her right hand's middle finger, but the moment he moved to do so, he saw Pandora shaking her head and stretching out her fourth finger. After that, she looked at Zhang Tie full of expectations, her eyes seeming to contain endless words.

There was a great difference in meanings depending on which woman's finger the man put the ring on.

Zhang Tie and Pandora gazed at each other, the whole world quieting down around them.

Seeing Pandora's open snow white fingers in front of him, Zhang Tie felt as if seeing Pandora lying on the bed and showing her open snow white legs, waiting for him to crash inside.

Identical to that day, at this moment, Pandora didn't say anything more, instead, she just looked at Zhang Tie with a pair of shiny eyes which contained all words: both of encouragement and expectation.

Whether Pandora opened her legs or palm in front of him, Zhang Tie felt that she was especially beautiful, which made his heart pound.

"I will die!" Zhang Tie solemnly promised Pandora.

"I know!" Pandora watched Zhang Tie with tears flowing out of

her eyes. "One day, I will die too. I just want to make an agreement with you while I'm still alive. When I'm as beautiful as Miss Daina, if you're still alive, can I take her place and marry you?"

Zhang Tie immediately burst into tears.

He pulled Pandora's hand toward himself and kissed it. After that, he put that ring onto fourth finger with great seriousness.

Both of them then smiled. After that, they embraced tightly and began to crazily kiss each other in this silent station, trying to lick all the tears off the other's face.

...

It kept raining for the first half of the night, and Zhang Tie hugged Pandora as they sat on the platform of the station. He told Miss Daina's story to her. Pandora also hugged Zhang Tie as she leaned against his chest with her head, listening seriously.

At the second half of the night, the rain stopped. Zhang Tie then lifted Pandora up and brought her to his apartment. After that, they started to crazily make love without a stop.

Chapter 205: Leaving Blackhot City

The next noon, in the railway station of Blackhot City, the military train that was going to leave had already blown its first whistle, which indicated urgency and that the train was about to set off.

"Is everyone ready?" Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt asked, looking out the carriage for the last time. By then, the last soldiers of Iron-Blood Camp had jumped onto the train from the platform.

"Everybody is in!" Major Guderian cleaned his glasses. "Everybody and all the equipment is on the train! Besides one wounded soldier, everybody of Iron-Blood Camp is already in."

"Fine, set off!" Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt ordered. At the same time, he thought back to Zhang Tie's young face and felt slightly regretful inside.

After blowing the third whistle, the military train started to move slowly.

"What a pity!"

Major Guderian took off his golden-frame glasses and slowly cleaned them with a piece of cloth. In the Iron-Blood Camp as a whole, only major Guderian and Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt knew that Gregory family had given Zhang Tie a vial of advanced recovery medicament once he left the hospital. If Zhang Tie had used that vial of medicament, he should have been able to follow in

the steps of the Iron-Blood Camp. However, Zhang Tie was not here; therefore, major Guderian let out a sigh.

The carriage was filled with military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp. For Guderian's slight sigh, nobody made any response, instead, they all kept quiet.

"Nothing to feel regretful about. This might be karma between people as was said by marshal Lin Changjiang!" Reinhardt stated, hitting the point.

...

The train sped up. Right then, people in the carriage of military officers seemed to hear increasingly louder voices shouting 'come on' from carriages that carried common soldiers behind them.

Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt and many military officers were curious, and they looked out the windows once again. Everybody saw an SUV rushing out of the tunnel near the platform. Soon, that SUV caught up with a carriage between the middle part and the end of the train. The soldiers of Iron-Blood Camp in the carriage had opened the door and were shouting loudly to encourage the black-haired guy who was standing on the seat behind the driver.

With a large military pack on his back, he was holding a huge sword. With the encouragements, that man first threw in his luggage into the carriage before following it with his terrifying sword, letting some soldiers hold it for a moment. Finally, he

jumped out of the SUV like a fierce tiger and rolled into the train's carriage. Hit by this flesh-bomb, several soldiers screamed miserably...

Hearing the screams, all the soldiers who were encouraging him from the other carriages burst out laughing loudly.

At the last minute, Zhang Tie had arrived...

...

Five minutes later, somewhat embarrassed, Zhang Tie appeared in the military officers' carriage where Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt was in.

"Boss, Zhang Tie, second lieutenant, platoon leader of Third Platoon, Fifth Company has recovered, I'm requesting to return to my troop!" Standing in front of Reinhardt, Zhang Tie gave a military salute to the boss of the Iron-Blood Camp.

"Agreed!" Reinhardt revealed a wisp of a smile at the corner of his mouth. Looking at this young man before him, he suddenly felt very happy. "Have you recovered?"

"Yea!" Zhang Tie patted his chest. "It's already been a couple of days, but due to something, I've come back a few days later!"

"What thing?" Being a bit serious, Chief of Staff Guderian asked.

"Chief of Staff... uhm... you know that I've just had the circumcision... I've held back for over ten years and my girlfriends could not wait any more. But it was not convenient to do that in the camp..."

Zhang Tie became a bit bashful.

"Badass!" After swearing at Zhang Tie, Major Guderian couldn't stop himself from laughing. Of course he knew how Zhang Tie had gotten his nickname 'Second Lieutenant Mummy'.

At the same time, all the other military officers in the carriage burst out laughing as well...

Zhang Tie then took a seat. As he saw Blackhot City grow smaller, many thoughts flashed across his mind.

...

At this time, at home, Alice was holding the delicate gift box packed in blue package paper, which was brought by Pandora and Beverly at Zhang Tie's request. She was looking at the two of them with a curious expression.

"What's inside?" she asked Pandora.

"Just open it!" Pandora smiled, encouraging her.

Alice then opened the outer blue gift box. Like all the other girls, the moment she saw the logos of Mrs. Diss and Milan as well as the flower, she also exclaimed.

When these items were put together, every girl would like it.

Alice then opened the two boxes inside, the bigger box contained a set of beautiful blue underclothes while the smaller box contained an expensive ring with a huge sapphire on it.

During the past week, Alice was in a low mood. However, filled with such a great pleasure, she immediately burst into a smile which was as fresh as a flower.

"Was it Zhang Tie who requested you to bring it here?"

Alice's eyes were fixed on the two items in her hands, she loved them so much.

"Who else except him?"

"Why didn't he come here himself?" Face blushed, Alice put the set of blue underclothes close to herself and found it well-matching. "That badass, lady-killer, who only knows how to make girls happy..."

"He didn't know how to face you; therefore he asked us to send it

to you..." Pandora calmly said.

"Where's he?"

Alice's movements became slightly stiff.

"Went to Kalur. He should be on the military train by now. The Iron-Blood Camp, which he's in, was dispatched to join the war between the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty in Kalur as the vanguard of No. 39 Division..." Beverly said dejectedly.

Alice's face immediately turned pale.

"Did he say something for me before he left?" Alice's voice trembled slightly.

"He had carved what he wanted to say on your ring!" Thinking of the words on that finger ring with a ruby on it that Zhang Tie had gifted her, Beverly started to drop off tears. So many people had sworn her as a bitch, male or female; however, only Zhang Tie knew she was as pure as ruby. With a good man like Zhang Tie, Beverly had been satisfied, no matter whether she could stay with Zhang Tie in the future.

"Wish you'll be happier than a sea——Zhang Tie"

Taking the ring, Alice finally saw such a line of words on its back. She thought she could see Zhang Tie's smile again...

That was a man who truly treated her well, a man who would be enraged at the sight of her being chased by a group of wild wolves, a man who would use his own body to shield her from a bolt at the most dangerous moment! When she dropped off tears before that man for the first time, that man controlled his greed at the most critical moment and silently put on his pants for her, leaving her her most precious thing.

Alice had not imagined that it might be her last meeting with Zhang Tie. When he was going to leave, he had people send this ring full of bliss to her along with a set of suitable underclothes chosen by him.

Alice then burst into tears, loudly, before rushing out of her home and running towards the railway station. She wanted to to have a look at that man for the last time, however, she failed to catch up with that military train in the end...

...

At this moment, in another place of Blackhot City, Barley, Hista, Doug, Bagdad, and Leit had taken out what Zhang Tie had left for them.

That was a leather case containing 600 gold coins and Zhang Tie's letter to them.

The letter read as follows:

'Brothers, I will set off for Kalur. You're my brothers. So are those brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp. They were ready to sacrifice themselves for me, so I can only sacrifice myself for them. I don't want to make this like a will. But sometimes, I have to tell you the truth. Because I'm not god, there's also a chance for me to not come back. Additionally, the casualty rate of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division is the highest in the Iron-Horn Army.

'If I give each of you 100 gold coins just like that, I know none of you will take it just like Sharwin. Because our friendship is worth more than this amount. Here, I want you to take them all. The reason is very simple. If I cannot come back, I just want to try my best to do something for my brothers. Why? Because the holy war between human beings and the demons will soon come.

'I was told this by the most reliable person when he left Blackhot City. I trust him. Maybe in the next few years, the situation of the entire Blackson Human Clan Corridor will see a great change. Since Blackhot City won't be safe then, you should plan to leave here as soon as possible. If I had the ability, I would've done more for you, but please forgive me, I can only do this. This money will be my compensation for the amount of coins that I've plundered from you at the beginning.

'Previously, I had a lot of words to say, but I don't know how to say it all, so that's it!

'If I survive and come back to find that none of you received my good intentions, I will be very angry. I swear to beat the sh*t out of any who does that.

'Hista, you bastard should better not take this money for women. You should think more about how to escape together with your women.

'Doug, you don't look like that person who excels at making money or spending money. If you have trouble, don't forget to negotiate with Barley that bastard. He will not let you suffer a loss.

Bagdad, when I left the Iron-Thorns Fighting Club, I told manager Hance that if you would like to go there, they should arrange a very proper location for you, which is definitely better than being a serviceman in the fighting club where you are working at.

'Sharwin, no matter what happens in the future, don't face it alone, remember that you've got so many good brothers.

'Barley, I know you cute Fatty are the most righteous one. I'm very happy to be brothers with you.

'Well, that's all. Finally, I want to say, I've already done the circumcision and am not a virgin any more. You'd better not be curious about the process since if you knew, you'd be very jealous of me. I don't want to wound your confidence as men and make you feel reluctant to raise up your head when you see me next time, ha... ha...

'Yours sincerely!'

Reading Zhang Tie's letter, the group was on the verge of tears, but by the end, they all burst out laughing.

"Zhang Tie, this bastard!"

When Doug wanted to cry, he couldn't stand but laugh, leaving a green snot bubble out on his nostril. Without thinking too much, he directly twitched it off and smear it onto the clothes of a person beside him. He even cleaned his hand on that person's clothes...

Not until they finished reading did Hista realize that Doug seemed to have rubbed on his clothes twice just now. 'What does that mean?' Feeling something not right, he lowered his head, and then immediately jumped up!

"Ah, Doug, you bastard! What disgusting thing have you smeared on my clothes? I'll kill you, ah..."

...

In the distance, the military train that contained all the soldiers and equipment of the Iron-Blood Camp was driving towards the far off south. Looking at the disappearing outline of Blackhot City in the horizon, Zhang Tie mumbled inside, "See you, Blackhot City!"

Chapter 206: Arrival At Kalur

After they set off from Blackhot City, they drove for two days until the military train carrying all the equipment and members of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division finally arrived at Kalur region on the third morning.

Zhang Tie was woken up by a dream. From the moment he got onto the train, he had only done three things: first, sleep; second, kill wild beasts in the Trouble-Reappearance situations; third, visualize two abacuses at the same time to practice 'Mental Arithmetic by Abacus'. Compared to those fragrant and adorable girls, it was really boring to stay with a lot of smelly old men on the train.

The ruffians were playing cards with tobacco in their mouths. The violent maniacs who wanted to have a breakthrough in the Iron-Blood Fist skill were silently practicing the movements in the carriage. In contrast, most of the veterans had their eyes closed or were calmly polishing their weapons to prepare for the coming war.

During the past day and two nights, the train only stopped three times in some small stations on the way so as to add coal and water; one hour each time. Being strictly disciplined, none of the soldiers and military officers took even half a step from the carriages.

The carriages with common soldiers were filled with smoke while the carriage with military officers felt so still that they could not even break wind.

Under this situation, Zhang Tie went to the sleeping compartment and threw himself onto the bed. With the exception of eating meals, he didn't come out at all.

...

"Wake up, Second Lieutenant Zhang Tie, we've arrived at Kalur..."

Still in a sweet dream, Zhang Tie was rocked awake by a second lieutenant above him. Opening his eyes, he found that the train had already stopped. It was noisy outside. Pushing his head out the window, Zhang Tie looked outside and found that the day was about to break. The whole station was filled with people in dark-red military uniforms and mountains of military items.

Zhang Tie immediately got up and put on his clothes and shoes. After slightly grooming himself, he came to the canteen carriage, which was now the temporary conference room of Iron-Blood Camp.

When Zhang Tie came to the canteen, a military officer ranked first lieutenant who was not of the Iron-Blood Camp was hurriedly leaving from the next carriage.

In the next minute, the first military conference was held in the canteen carriage when Iron-Blood Camp came to Kalur.

...

A map of Kalur region was hung on the wall. The center of the map was a city, the south and north of which were occupied by obvious blue or red marks. Between the red and the blue plates, there was a huge gray region which just surrounded Kalur. Holding a command pen, Major Guderian was introducing the present situation about the regions surrounding Kalur in a very concise language.

"Now, both our troops and the Brilliant Feathers are gathering in the expanse region fifty kilometers away from Kalur. The city remains neutral. On its south, namely the blue region on the map, are the Brilliant Feathers, while on the north side, namely the red region on the map, is our Iron-Horn Army. The station we are in is 87 km away from Kalur. We are here..."

Major Guderian pointed his command pen on a town called Karic in the frontier of the red region on the map.

"This narrow gray region surrounding Kalur on the map is 75 km in length, 124 km in width. It is the mountainous area of Kalur and where the most fierce fighting happens between our troops and the Brilliant Feathers. Now, many troops of both parties have been dispatched in this region. Encounters happen everyday here. Just now, I've received an order from the Division's headquarter that we have to be there as soon as possible and grab this area.

"We had another battalion there before, however, before last night, this troop had lost contact with its superior. Usually, this means that that battalion's brothers all been lost..."

Guderian then drew a direct line from Karic to that place called Solanet in the gray region. As they could all understand the contour line, they knew that Solanet was a town built on a half-hill.

Guderian then drew lines and circles on the map using his command pen and told others what to do next.

"Our first task is to grab this place again. Additionally, we have to continue to move for two weeks in this demanding region which covers at least 100 sq km and clean three enemy bases. In the next two weeks, we will give the biggest strike to the troops of Sun Dynasty in this region.

"In this task, we can only consume our own provisions and will get no relief. Fourteen days later, we can go back to the No. 4 Fighting Castle of the Iron-Horn Army near Kalur to recondition. Any questions?"

Everybody shook their heads, except Zhang Tie who felt his heart pounding as this was his first war. Unexpectedly, the moment they arrived at Kalur, without even sipping a mouthful of water, they were assigned with a task, leaving no time for a buffering at all.

"Fine, the battle maps will be delivered to each company. If there are no problems, you have five minutes to prepare. After that, we should get off the train and assemble the teams to set out!"

All the military officers then suddenly stood up and went to deliver the task to their own companies.

In the next five minutes, Zhang Tie put on that set of Sharp-Arrow Type-B lieutenant light armor produced by the Norman Empire for the first time; its alloy sheets could cover most of the key areas on his body.

Besides putting on this set of armor and taking the same equipment and provisions as other military officers, Zhang Tie also brought a container of javelins that weighed over 100 kg and held that 'Man's Certificate' in his hand.

Not only military officers, even the common soldiers had completed all the pre-war preparations in the five minutes.

Wartime was the right time to display the high efficiency of the Iron-Blood Camp. From the first soldier who received the order to open the door of a carriage and jumped off the train to all the 1000-odd members of the Iron-Blood Camp, they all quietly assembled into teams in the railway station. All of this was finished in two minutes.

At this time, the Iron-Blood Camp which had assembled before the war expedition was like a fierce beast which had finally revealed its killing nature. Everybody was holding their weapons and wearing armor. They all were quiet while a heavy killing Qi rolled in their bodies.

...

"Ah, Iron-Blood Camp, here's our Iron-Blood Camp..."

When the Iron-Blood Camp was assembling in the station, the soldiers and military officers of the Norman Empire in the station couldn't resist looking with amazement at this assembling ferocious troop.

"Which division?"

"I heard it's the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division!"

"Ah! Is that the Iron-Blood Camp led by that mad Reinhardt?" someone exclaimed.

"That's great, that Iron-Blood Camp will definitely give those bastards a fierce lesson!"

Someone became excited.

Hearing the discussions, Zhang Tie learned that boss Reinhardt was well known in the entire Iron-Horn Army.

"Who's the guy holding that terrifying thing and carrying a pile of heavy javelins?"

"I don't know, but he seems very sharp!"

Zhang Tie didn't imagine that by just standing among the soldiers he would attract the attention of many people. However, as it was his first time participating in a war, Zhang Tie only felt nervous inside, not feeling like showing off at all.

"Set off!"

Soon after Boss Reinhardt's roar, all the brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp started to move and trotted out of the station.

The moment they left the station, Zhang Tie understood why they were ordered to walk towards Solanet. In this frontier town where they got off the train, almost half of the buildings were destroyed in the war. Broken tiles and walls could be seen everywhere.

Buildings had been burnt to pieces while roads were seriously destroyed. As a result, the steaming armored vehicles that could only play their biggest role in plains and group assaults became useless in mountainous areas that surrounded Kalur region.

The town was covered with soldiers in dark red military uniforms of the Norman Empire. It was not strange for the 1000-odd people of the Iron-Blood Camp which rushed out of the railway station. After the troop of the Iron-Blood Camp trotted away from the railway station, they soon ran out of the town and entered the wild in only several minutes.

Solanet was at least 25 km away from here.

Only now Zhang Tie realised that it was very foolish to take this heavy sword as his main fighting weapon. That heavy sword along with the javelin container on his back, as well as some other equipment, made it that Zhang Tie carried half a ton of equipment with him. And all of that had to be carried while needing to run 25 km before participating in a war. Even if Zhang Tie had nine wolves' strength, he still felt a bit tired with this high intensity. After all, carrying loads was not wild wolfs' advantage.

However, at this time, Zhang Tie had to grit his teeth to stand it and collect his courage for himself.

Before the troop entered the mountainous area, a cavalry riding iron-horn beasts darted out from behind the troop and gave a metal cylinder that contained an order to Battalion Commander Reinhardt, who was at the front of the troop. After that, the cavalry rapidly rode away.

"According to the report of our scout brothers, those bastards of Sun Dynasty chopped off the heads of all of our battalion brothers in Solanet and piled them all on a drying field. Nobody survived, including the wounded and refugees. According to the latest order of the division's headquarters, also the latest task to us the Iron-Blood Camp, we will kill all the bastards of Sun Dynasty that are occupying Solanet. Do not let any one of them escape..." Battalion Commander Reinhardt growled full of killing Qi.

"Kill them all!"

"Kill them all!"

Everybody's blood in the Iron-Blood Camp boiled...

Chapter 207: The First Battle

To occupy Solanet and to kill all the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty in Solanet were two tasks with totally different difficulties. In the eyes of the decision makers of the army, there was no question whether the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division could complete this task, or what price it would have to pay for achieving it.

As a whole battalion of the Iron-Horn Army was killed by the troops of Sun Dynasty in Solanet, their heads chopped off and piled on to a drying field nearby, the Iron-Horn Army had to also chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty who occupied this area and pile them on a drying field.

That was simple, no matter how many people would be sacrificed, they had to complete this task.

Generally, rulers of the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty were wrestling hands in Kalur region, It was displayed by conflicts between colonels and the close fights between numerous soldiers.

This was the first time that all of the battalion's soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army were killed by Sun Dynasty in the combat zone. To accomplish this deployment, the amount of soldiers that Sun Dynasty had to have used to surround and attack had to have been at least twice as large when compared to the Iron-Horn Army's strength.

At this time, the advantage that the Sun Dynasty's soldiers had by outnumbering the Norman Empire in Kalur region started to be

outstanding. Even if it was only a small-scale encounter or a skirmish between two battalions, the party with more soldiers could easily gain a small advantage and take the initiative.

What happened in Solanet was just the epitome of the problem that the Norman Empire faced in Kalur region.

Therefore, the Iron-Blood Camp had to fiercely beat up the soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers. This way, they had to boost the morale of the entire division.

As annihilation was totally different from occupation, the fighting plan had to also be adjusted.

Major Guderian decided to have the Iron-Blood Camp attack from the south of Solanet instead of the north. After making a circle, the Iron-Blood Camp would launch an attack from the back of its enemy to cut off the escape road for those bastards of the Sun Dynasty who occupied Solanet.

This adjustment was simple, fierce, and decisive. Facing the attack from the south, the troops of Sun Dynasty in Solanet could only fight the Iron-Bloody Camp desperately. There would be no chance for them to escape to the north. Because of terrain, they would also have a great difficulty in escaping to the east and the west.

However, if this strategy was adopted, the Iron-Blood Camp would also face a great threat. Once it entered a stalemate with the troops of the Sun Dynasty in Solanet, unable to kill those guys at

once, if one more enemy troop showed up behind them, the Iron-Blood Camp would be surrounded by its enemy and could only react passively.

Of course, the appearance of the Iron-Blood Camp in the south of Solanet would shock the enemy, however, at the same time, the Iron-Blood Camp would put itself into the ring of encirclement which could be easily closed down by the enemy.

This plan seemed a tad crazy because few commanders would jump into the enemy's ring of encirclement to fight, however, Battalion Commander Reinhardt was one of the crazy ones. The moment Major Guderian proposed it, Reinhardt immediately adopted it without a moment's hesitation.

Because they had to take a detour, when the Iron-Blood Camp arrived in its designated place, they had walked more than 10 km's on mountainous road.

Finally, when the first ray of sunshine cast onto Solanet at dawn, the 1000-odd members of the Iron-Blood Camp had already arrived at a place near a mountain slope to the north of Solanet and quietly lurked there.

This place was less than 1 km away from Solanet. After making a rapid march of over 30 km, the Iron-Blood Camp quietly lurked at the entrance of Solanet.

They hid in an elm forest. Although they had over 1000 people, they made no noise at all. Everybody half squatted on the ground,

resting, drinking, and eating, so as to supplement physical strength as soon as possible.

They had 20 minutes to recover their physical strength.

Finally able to take a deep breath, Zhang Tie pulled out some dried meat from the inside of his coat and started to wolf it down. Meanwhile, with eyes open wide, he stared at the small village on the small hillside, which was Solanet.

At this time, several wisps of heavy smoke rose up from that village, seeming like the final breaths of several buildings that had burned over the night and now were about to die. After occupying Solanet, the bastards of Sun Dynasty burned down several houses in the village in case of being raided in the evening, so the houses kept burning through the night like several huge flaming torches.

By then, there were no local residents in Solanet any more. Before the troops of both parties started to confront each other, the residents surrounding Kalur had escaped in all directions, whether to Kalur, to the south, or to the north. Nobody wanted to stay between the two armies.

It was said that Kalur had already gathered hundreds of thousands of refugees.

The small village was filled with moving soldiers of Brilliant Feathers who wore blue military uniforms. Many of them seemed to have just woken up as they were washing their faces at the riverside in the distance.

Although having no fighting experience, Zhang Tie could estimate that there were around 2500-3000 soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers in Solanet.

As there was only one main road leading to the village, the attack plan also became very simple. The Iron-Blood Camp only needed to rush into the village up the main road and kill all the guys in blue military uniforms on the way. The key to this manouver was speed. They had better not leave enough time for the troops of the Sun Dynasty to assemble.

After eating two slices of dried meat and drinking two mouthfuls of water, Zhang Tie rested for five minutes. He felt that his physical strength was gradually recovering. They all didn't eat much, for if they did, it would influence the upcoming fight.

The rapid march with half a ton's equipment was also an all-around test for Zhang Tie's physical strength. If there were ten more km, Zhang Tie knew that he would really not be able to take it. With the half a ton's equipment, it was not funny at all. Thankfully, Solanet was in sight, and Zhang Tie let out a deep breath.

Although this 'Man's Certificate' was the number one weapon for him to show off himself, in the battle field, Zhang Tie felt it was like making a cocoon around himself.

Two weeks later, when the Iron-Blood Camp was going to re-supply itself, he considered changing his main fighting weapon. If

he had to escape or make a long-distance raid, this heavy sword would really put a heavy load on him.

Zhang Tie then made a decision inside. He felt this was the first law that he understood since he jumped off the train—never slap your face until it's swollen in an effort to look fat. If not, you will suffer a great loss.

In less than two minutes after Zhang Tie made such a realisation inside, he soon learned the second law—no one would wait until you've prepared well.

The promised time for a rest before the attack was 20 minutes. However, less than 10 minutes after they started to rest, a team of soldiers rushed out of the village towards this area where the Iron-Blood Camp had hidden itself.

About 500-600 people were moving towards them. Of course, they did this not because they had discovered the Iron-Blood Camp lurking but because they were ready to leave Solanet.

When Zhang Tie thought that Reinhardt would let these soldiers leave in case of exposing their camp to the greater troop of Sun Dynasty, Reinhardt delivered his order, "Prepare for battle, kill them all!"

Because the division's headquarters' order was to kill all the bastards of the Sun Dynasty that had occupied Solanet, Battalion Commander Reinhardt didn't plan to let any of them leave alive.

After receiving the order, the two companies' brothers that had been equipped with light crossbows silently moved to both sides of the mountain path with their bolts notched and their narrowed eyes on the team of soldiers and horses.

Because this was Zhang Tie's first battle, he became a bit nervous and forcefully swallowed his saliva twice.

At this time, a powerful hand fell on Zhang Tie's shoulder. He turned to see Freo half squatting behind him.

"When the battle breaks out, all the brothers of Third Platoon will follow you and you just follow me. Don't be afraid..."

Zhang Tie nodded.

The team of soldiers and horses kept marching on, swiftly shortening that distance of 1 km between them and Zhang Tie.

They were really a team of soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers. At the front rode the cavalry, holding wing-like banners. Armored soldiers came after with weapons in hand, four people per row. Lastly were another batch of riders like those at the front, however these wore relatively more brilliant armor; they looked like the military officers of this troop.

The army of the Sun Dynasty took three hundred as a unit while the army of Norman Empire took five as a unit. The two troops were different in many aspects. The 500-600 soldiers and

horses might be a battalion of Brilliant Feathers.

The team of soldiers had not imagined that they would be ambushed not long after leaving Solanet. When bolts were shot from the elm forest on both sides of the road, instantly, half the soldiers were wounded, causing howls and cries to rise up in an instant.

"Kill them all!"

Battalion Commander Reinhardt was the first to rush out of the elm forest like a fierce tiger. With only one fist, he punched a cavalryman who had been left unstable by his flurried horse into flesh and iron pieces, and sent him flying back through the air, causing a great amount of soldiers of the Sun Dynasty to fall to the ground.

The soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp all jumped out of the elm forest like fierce tigers and instantly cut the team of 500-600 people into several sections.

The main fighting weapons of First Lieutenant Freo were two huge double-bladed axes which were like wheels. When the robust, tough, bald man wove his huge axes, he looked like a humanoid meat grinder which would grind all the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty once he touched them.

In the timeframe of a wink, First Lieutenant Freo had already torn open an over 10-m long bloody path before Zhang Tie...

Chapter 208: The Fight

In such a raid with absolute number advantage on his side, facing a team whose fighting force had been weakened by one third by the first wave of bolts, the moment Zhang Tie rushed out of the elm forest together with his brothers, even before he had killed anyone, the war had almost come to an end...

This was not a fight at all, it was more like a massacre!

Noticing what was happening over here, the army of the Sun Dynasty stationed in Solanet had already blown the fighting horn in emergency. Soon after that, the entire Solanet started to boil with action.

"Kill them..."

Hearing some soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp shouting loudly, Zhang Tie turned and looked at the distance. He then caught sight of two military officers at the end of the column. Realizing that they were in a bad scenario, the two military officers were forcefully striking their horses to escape towards Solanet.

Some soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp were chasing after them. However, the distance between them was becoming greater. Some soldiers even raised their light crossbows and shot towards them, but the bolts crashed into the steel armor on their backs and just fell to the ground with a sound of 'ding ding'. As the horses were also wearing armor, due to the large distance, the light bolts could not even wound them.

In a blink of an eye, the two military officers of the Sun Dynasty were over 100 steps ahead of everyone. Even Battalion Commander Reinhardt could not deal with them.

When everybody thought that the two fish were going to escape after all, Zhang Tie showed off.

Since he had joined the Iron-Blood Camp till now, this was the first time for all the members to witness how this legendary Second Lieutenant Mummy launched an attack.

A spear shadow flashed across the others' eyes. Almost at the same time, a military officer of the Sun Dynasty who was one hundred steps away made a shrill shriek. Even if he was wearing a set of thick steel armor, he was still penetrated through by a heavy javelin. As a result, he immediately fell off the horse.

Hearing his shrill shriek, the other man in front of him was shocked. He then looked back while another javelin descended upon him from the sky. Without even a groan, his whole body was penetrated through by Zhang Tie's missile and he fell off the horse too.

"Yah!"

All the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp boomed, immediately raising the morale once again.

"Kill them all!"

After a growl, everybody rushed into Solanet which was less than 0.5 km away.

After making meritorious deeds in the battlefield for the first time, Zhang Tie's blood started boiling. Seeing Battalion Commander Reinhardt and other military officers rushing to the front of the soldiers, Zhang Tie also collected his courage. After shouting 'kill them all', he pulled out his 300-odd kgs fighting sword while still carrying his container which lacked two javelins on the back, and rushed towards Solanet together with the rest of the camp.

The military troops of Brilliant Feathers also responded very fast. The moment the more than 1000 people and horses of the Iron-Blood Camp rushed into the village, more than 1000 people had been already assembled inside. The opponent commander also led the 1000-odd people to rush out, aiming to have a fierce clash with the Iron-Blood Camp.

At this moment, only the assembled troops could use their biggest fighting force. As the opponent commander also knew this principle, the moment the Iron-Blood Camp rushed inside, he had already seen clearly the number of soldiers and horses of the Iron-Blood Camp. This number was a bit higher than the one they had eliminated yesterday.

But the moment he managed to assemble the troops of Brilliant Feathers in this village, he would outnumber the Norman Empire. Even if his side was raided, the opponent commander still had the

confidence to be the last one smiling.

The opponent commander's confidence was turned panic-stricken when he saw the huge and bloody battle-qi totem behind Battalion Commander Reinhardt when the two troops were about to crash into each other.

This was also Zhang Tie's first time seeing Reinhardt's battle-qi totem. It was a bloody python which was spreading hell-like flames all over the place.

Generally speaking, after a person entered LV 6 and became a fighter, others could know his personal fighting strength and level only from his battle-qi totem. LV 6 fighters had a black spider, LV 7 fighters a centipede, LV 8 fighters a python, while LV 9 fighters had a bloody scorpion. These battle-qi totems were the symbols of fighters' fighting strength and level in the human world.

Zhang Tie had seen battle-qi totems many times. He firstly saw that on Captain Kerlin's body. Recently, he had also seen Glaze's dead dad's battle-qi totem. Although the two totems had different patterns, they were of the same color - black. In Blackhot City, Zhang Tie hadn't seen any battle-qi totem of another color. This was so until he saw Reinhardt's.

Reinhardt's battle-qi totem was not only as fresh as blood, but also looked pretty commanding. Additionally, that huge python was spreading flames in all directions.

This was the most direct manifestation of Iron-Blood battle qi.

Besides the totem changing from black of common battle-qi to red, the whole totem was spreading rolling flames like those of hell.

This was definitely the exclusive symbol of Iron-Blood battle-qi.

A troop of about 1000 people led by a person who had formed the Iron-Blood battle qi was definitely the brand troop of Norman Empire's division.

The opponent commander finally understood whom he was facing. He also responded at once.

Therefore, when Reinhardt burst out his flaming Iron-Blood battle-qi totem, a huge and icy-blue bloody-scorpion battle-qi totem also erupted almost at the same time, which was also not a common battle qi.

Soon after that, a great amount of battle-qi totems rose up from behind, big and small. All them were black or gray, so in the whole battlefield, the most attractive battle-qi totems were that bloody flaring python and that huge icy-blue bloody scorpion.

There were a bit more totems in the Sun Dynasty's troop than in the Norman Empire's one.

At the sight of that huge icy-blue scorpion, Reinhardt seemed to come to a realisation why that battalion of the Norman Empire was annihilated by the opponents. Icy blue battle-qi totems were the result after those bastards of the Sun Dynasty had formed their sky

battle-qi, which was the best battle-qi in their country. Therefore, the leader of the Brilliant Feathers of Sun Dynasty was not a commoner either.

The icy-blue bloody scorpion and the flaring python immediately sped up and left their own troops. Before the rest of their troops crashed against each other, they made a fierce crash first.

"Boom!"

A huge crack sped forth from where the two met like trains smashing into each other after reaching the highest speed, exploding a big pit with the diameter of more than 2 m on the grassland under their feet.

At the same time, Zhang Tie felt a fierce wind blowing towards him. He felt the land under his feet shudder twice and saw two figures fly back bleeding through the air. When the two landed, they charged at the opponents and crashed for the second time.

"Kill them all!"

The two troops were all in a rage now, eyes red.

When they were over 50 m away from each other, Zhang Tie launched his attack.

The javelins in the container on his back appeared in his hand one by one and were thrown out.

Almost at the same time, seven military officers of the Sun Dynasty who had burst out battle-qi totems and were rushing ahead were struck by Zhang Tie. Five of them had black-spider totems while the other two had centipede totems.

Zhang Tie moved too quickly but his throwing speed was faster. For the LV 6 or LV 7 guys, their eyes couldn't even catch the javelins that flew towards them. Their movement could not match the speed of flying javelins at all. Therefore, they were all shot to death immediately.

Some javelins could even penetrate two people at once.

Seeing this, the Iron-Blood Camp's morale rose up once again.

In contrast, the morale of the opponent became lower.

Before the two troops crashed, Zhang Tie had already cleared his container by killing seven enemy military officers. He then undid the javelin container and threw it onto the ground.

'That's better!' he mumbled inside. After relieving the over 100 kgs' burden, Zhang Tie became more agile immediately.

The two troops, totaling more than 2000 people, immediately crashed into each other on a patch of grassland at the hillside.

In a split second, numerous sounds of blades clashing against each other and cutting into human flesh resounded.

"Kill him!"

A black-spider man of Sun Dynasty who had set his hatred filled sight on Zhang Tie rushed towards him. Without hesitation, he quickly raised his broad sword and chopped at his victim's head. However, he seemed to have not noticed that 'Man's Certificate' behind Zhang Tie.

"F*ck you!"

Zhang Tie's eyes also turned red. With two hands on the handle, he immediately picked up his huge sword from the ground and sliced towards that man with a black-spider totem.

Based on facts, before 'Man's Certificate' in Zhang Tie's hand, few weapons deserved the descriptive word 'huge'—that thing in his hand was simply an over 2-m long huge guillotine used to cut fodder in the barn. With the strength of nine wild wolves' seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie exploded with amazing strength. In a split second, the broad sword in that man's hand broke in to two halves like a chopstick forcefully broken when it smashed against the guillotine, instead of being slowly cut off like fodder in the barn.

After that, Zhang Tie's huge sword smoothly sketched through the part above that man's waist.

The man then instantly became two halves...

From the time he killed this man, Zhang Tie calm down inside as he immediately entered the absolutely calm and shrewd state, like that of a spectator.

He then hefted up his huge sword. With a simple horizontal sweep, six grim soldiers rushing towards him in a fan-like formation more than 2-m away from him instantly froze. At the same time, six blood columns sprouted upward out of their waists right in front of Zhang Tie when their upper bodies slid off.

At the sight of this scene, not only the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty, even the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp behind Zhang Tie became scared. The power of this 'Man's Certificate' in the hands of Second Lieutenant Mummy was too terrifying!

Chapter 209: I Am Shameless

At some point, neither the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty nor those of the Iron-Blood Camp dared to be close to a 2 m. circle around Zhang Tie.

The fight kept going. After the aborted raid, the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty who rushed out of Solanet in teams continued to join the battle.

Zhang Tie was still trying his best to kill his enemies while the battle between the man with a battle-qi totem of flaring python and the man with a battle-qi totem of icy blue scorpion continued.

That was the collision between a LV 8 fighter's Iron-Blood battle qi and a LV 9 fighter's sky battle qi. Compared to Zhang Tie, that collision scared off any other persons in a circle of 10 m. After each fierce clash, Reinhardt would growl because of inexhaustible excitement.

On this battlefield, Reinhardt's growls could completely overshadow others' battle cries.

"One more..."

"One more..."

"One more..."

The whole battlefield echoed with Battalion Commander Reinhardt's lion-like growls.

Hearing such growls, all the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp gained strength while the faces of the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty started to turn pale. By now, needless to say, the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty already knew what kind of troop they were facing.

This troop was more than twice as powerful as the one they had annihilated.

Most of the soldiers in common battalions were LV 1-LV 5 warriors, but in the Iron-Blood Camp, the soldiers were at least LV 3 veterans. This was a very sharp difference in fighting force.

...

Some more spears thrust towards Zhang Tie. He swept his huge sword once again, breaking several spears at once. Before the flustered soldiers could move backwards, Zhang Tie rushed forward and swept at them with his huge sword. The four soldiers of the Sun Dynasty in front of him immediately spurted blood from their waists and fell to the ground.

Zhang Tie himself didn't know how many times he'd swung his huge sword, but slowly he started to change his fighting tactic in his mind. Although it was cool to slash the enemies into two halves, that required greater strength to break armor. However, usually, based on the size and sharpness of the huge sword's blade, once someone got hit by it, a 3.5 cm-5 cm deep wound would be

fatal enough. As long as this wound was made by the huge sword, it would be very long. Once such a wound was made on any part of a person's upper body, it would be fatal, regardless of being horizontal or vertical.

It was wasteful to slash a person into two halves. Only 1/5-1/3 of the strength that he used to slash a person in two was already enough to kill an enemy.

After changing Zhang Tie changed his fighting tactic, few people could be seen being slashed into two in front of him. However, his fighting efficiency accelerated with less strength used up.

As Zhang Tie had not learned any sword skills, he just instinctively used that huge sword as the extension of his palm. He kept waving it like using the movement 'sword palm' in the free-hand movements of Iron-Blood Fist skill.

Besides having the super great endurance of wild wolves to run, Zhang Tie also had the wild wolves' endurance to fight.

It was hard to say whether it was because of his increased spiritual energy, but Zhang Tie felt that the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty didn't move fast enough. He could clearly see the movement trajectory of their weapons. When facing them, Zhang Tie had enough time to consider his response, whether to hold back, counterattack, or jump away. Previously, he didn't feel this way, but for some reason it became obvious in the battlefield.

These soldiers had greater speed and strength than Glaze. They

were more experienced in fighting. However, in Zhang Tie's mind, these soldiers were not as shocking as Glaze to him in the training ground at school.

He didn't know that in the whole battlefield, with the exception of Reinhardt, his performance was almost the best.

Young age, handsome figure, huge fighting sword, terrifying strength, fierce and sharp fighting skills as well as amazing javelin throwing skills—all these features easily made him eye-catching. He was like a rainbow after rain.

When Zhang Tie killed another man with a battle-qi totem of black spider and three common soldiers in front of him, a tall figure appeared before him.

It was a military officer of Sun Dynasty taller than 2 m. He was as strong as an iron tower and held a mace whose spikes resembled wolf's fangs and whose rod was as high as he was tall while the battle-qi totem of centipede was rolling behind him, revealing him as a LV 7 fighter.

This man was covered in fresh blood while that terrifying mace in his hand was almost wholly painted in red, pieces of flesh hanging off it. Needless to say, all that was from the soldiers of the Norman Empire.

The huge sword and the wolf-fanged mace then collided against each other. After grunting, they both moved backwards.

"You'll be the 116th red-hide dog of the Norman Empire that died under my wolf-fanged mace. I will enjoy peeling off your hides and burying you into the soil. After that, I will smash your heads into pieces like how I hit tomatoes on the ground when I was young..."

Saying that, the terrifying tough man licked the blood off that horrible wolf-fanged mace.

"Do you want to match strength with me? You fat freak, I'm the king of strength!" Zhang Tie became infuriated. "Come here then, the one who drops his weapon first will be the real idiot!"

Zhang Tie rushed forward. Hefting his huge sword, he slashed towards the giant's head. At the sight of this, the giant revealed a grim smile. With a growl, he also wove his wolf-fanged mace to collide with Zhang Tie's huge sword.

Once...

Twice...

Thrice...

...

Ten times...

...

The sound produced by the collision of the two heavy weapons rocked the whole battlefield...

This was Zhang Tie's first time seeing such a guy who was born with great strength that could match his own. The battle qi this man practiced seemed to also be able to greatly improve his strength. This guy was really tricky.

After colliding with his opponent numerous times, Zhang Tie pretended to spit out blood while gritting his teeth to continue fighting the giant.

Besides strength, this terrifying giant had fighting skills that were no worse than those of Zhang Tie. Seeing Zhang Tie becoming a bit 'weaker' but still striving to fight him, the giant looked grimmer.

...

Finally, when the iron-tower like giant was slashing down with his wolf-fanged mace towards the huge sword, he found that the huge sword had already left Zhang Tie's hand. As a result, the great weapon was sent flying far away by the wind produced by the giant's wolf-fanged mace's swing.

But before the giant could become excited, Zhang Tie punched his waist with a move from the Iron-Blood Fists. The moment the giant sent the huge sword flying backwards, the Iron-Blood hidden strength immediately exploded in his body. Almost in a second,

Zhang Tie punched over ten fists on to this giant using his Iron-Blood hidden strength.

Face turning pale, the giant felt his hands losing strength. The moment the wolf-fanged mace dropped to the ground, he spurted a mouthful of fresh blood, like a high-pressure water pipe.

The giant immediately knelt on the ground. He glared at Zhang Tie, but the moment the Iron-Blood hidden strength exploded in his body, his eyes turned red like those of a rabbit. Fresh blood flowing from his mouth corner, the giant seemed to want to say something.

"I know what you want to say; well, I'm shameless, I'm the idiot..."

While still talking, Zhang Tie swiftly pulled out a dagger from his waist and thrust it in the giant's neck without any hesitation, then forcefully rotated it.

The giant unwillingly fell down with his eyes wide-open. Zhang Tie then ferociously spat a mouthful of bloody saliva onto him.

"Idiot! I've not played this trick with my pals, like throwing a ball to attract a puppy, since I was seven years old..."

It was Zhang Tie's first time to encounter such a man born with great strength which was even greater than that granted by the nine Wild Wolf Seven-Strength Fruit. But this time, Zhang Tie

concluded that those who were smarter than him could not match his strength while those who had greater strength than him could not match his intelligence. After 'training' this giant to get used to clashing against his huge sword, Zhang Tie only played a small trick to solve this tricky opponent.

Due to his great spiritual energy, Zhang Tie felt a sudden threat. He then slightly leaned to his side to avoid a spear which was thrust at his back. He grabbed it so fast, making a sound of 'sou', that the guy who wanted to ambush him couldn't even keep his balance as he tumbled forward, towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then kicked at him, his attack imbued with the Iron-Blood hidden strength, sending that person flying 10 m away. After that, he held the spear and gave a sweep, slashing another opponent away. He then threw the spear, penetrating through some guy who had intended to assault the awkward tall man Beckham from the back.

After doing all that, Zhang Tie picked up that great wolf-fanged mace, which weighed almost the same as his own huge sword. He then glanced over the surrounding soldiers of the Sun Dynasty. At the sight of Zhang Tie rushing towards them with the giant's wolf-fanged mace, all of their faces turned pale and they immediately turned back and escaped.

...

This time, Battalion Commander Reinhardt also took the wind. Hearing Reinhardt's growl "Go to hell!", Zhang Tie turned and saw Battalion Commander Reinhardt's Iron-Blood fist breaking

through the defense of the man with the battle-qi totem of an icy-blue bloody scorpion and landing directly on his head. In a split second, colorful brains and guts exploded out of his head and body.

Seeing this scene, everybody in the Iron-Blood Camp became highly spirited.

However, at the sight of this, even more soldiers of the Sun Dynasty started to turn and run. Many of them didn't even care where they were going. They only wanted to stay as far away as possible from these gods of killing from Iron-Blood Camp.

"Kill them all!" the brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp exclaimed and chased after them.

Ten minutes later, the established resistance of the Brilliant Feathers Army of the Sun Dynasty in Solanet didn't exist any more. All the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty started to run. Like chasing after rabbits, the Iron-Blood Camp spread a net from the south to the north and started to chase after those soldiers who only thought about escape through the main roads of Solanet.

The entire village resounded with the shrill shrieks of the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty and the sounds blades slashed people's necks.

Under the leadership of Battalion Commander Reinhardt, some people and horses of the Iron-Blood Camp moved out at a speed faster than the fleeing soldiers could escape in. After that, he led his troop back in an ever closing net. The Iron-Blood Camp had

surrounded the whole Solanet.

"Kill them all! Take revenge for our brothers!" Reinhardt's emotionless order drifted across the village.

In a split second, the whole Solanet was covered with human heads rolling on the ground...

Chapter 210: Muling

Wandering through the streets of Solanet, Zhang Tie could see bodies lying everywhere. Gradually, his discomfort became numbness.

Some bodies and blood stains were there from yesterday, some from today. They belonged to the soldiers of Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty both.

Soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp who now occupied Solanet were picking corpses. All those belonging to Sun Dynasty's soldiers would be pulled out; their heads would be chopped off and piled on the drying field. In contrast, when the corpses of the Norman Empire were found, they would be gathered and buried together.

This was a job full of pain and hatred. Everybody was doing it in silence. Casually, at the sight of some groaning soldiers of the Sun Dynasty, the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp gave them another slash to the throats to end their pains.

Donder had said that there were no righteous wars between countries. At the sight of those soldiers of Sun Dynasty whose heads were being chopped off, Zhang Tie realized that some of them were only a couple of years older than him. This made him a bit uncomfortable. These people, Zhang Tie didn't hate them at all. However, born in this age, when you ended up in a situation like this, you had to fight for your own lord.

On the battlefield, you could only wish to survive yourself and

not see those familiar to you die.

Maybe the one who really deserved death was that bastard who had given the order to chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Norman Empire.

The arrival of Iron-Blood Camp and what its soldiers were doing were just revenge. On this topic, the Norman Empire had only one principle—to take revenge many times greater. If the heads of 1000 soldiers of the Norman Empire were chopped off and piled up for display, then at least 2000 heads of the soldiers of the opponent had to be chopped off and piled up. That was how the Norman Empire dealt with it. Iron-Blood Camp was a troop which existed for such fights and destruction.

The small Solanet was filled with the smell of blood.

"That bastard of Sun Dynasty who had delivered the order to chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Norman Empire yesterday is caught..."

A soldier of Iron-Blood Camp ran towards Zhang Tie while shouting loudly. Hearing this news, Zhang Tie decided to have a look at how a bastard like that could look like. For because of that bastard's order, over 3000 people had died in Solanet in two days.

The most bloody area in this village was that drying field, which had been used by the villagers to dry wheats under the sun during harvest. The rest of the time, it acted as the town's square for the villagers to amuse themselves.

The drying field was located in the center of the village, which was a vacant land covering over 3000 square meters. Beside it was a spiked bell tower dark red in color and a church that nobody knew which cult it belonged to.

That guy who had given the order to chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Norman Empire yesterday was finally found in the basement of that church. After surrounding Solanet, the Iron-Blood Camp figured out what had happened yesterday from some captives. After confirming that they were telling the same, the Iron-Blood Camp killed those poor guys and searched the whole Solanet until they finally found that bastard.

At this moment, several piles of heads were erected on the drying field, which were even greatly higher than the straw piles nearby. At the sight of them, timid people might be so scared they would pass out.

"Don't kill me... don't kill me... I'm the most pious servant of the God of Brilliance... if you kill me... the God of Brilliance will punish you... argh..."

The moment Zhang Tie came to the drying field, he heard a hysterical shrill shriek which was definitely 100 times more nasty than that of the most nasty quacks of ducks that Zhang Tie had ever heard.

Along with the man's loud scream came his miserable howls for he was being beaten up.

The drying field was surrounded by many soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp, including most of the military officers present. At the sight of Zhang Tie, all the soldiers in the outer ring of the circle willingly made a path for him to walk inside.

In the fierce fight just now, Zhang Tie had used his real strength to gain the approval and respect of all the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp. Although the final results were not counted, everybody understood that this youngest Second Lieutenant Mummy of No. 39 Division had killed almost a platoon's worth of soldiers of the Sun Dynasty which included at least 10 LV 6-LV 7 military officers.

Undoubtedly, Zhang Tie deserved the title of the person who had killed most military officers of Brilliant Feathers in the battle today. His excellent javelin skills deserved the two words 'amazingly excellent' not only in the Iron-Blood Camp, but even in the entire Iron-Horn Army. As long as Second Lieutenant Mummy's javelin was thrown out, no one below LV 7 within 100 steps of him could escape.

Besides, the fight between Zhang Tie and that tricky LV 7 giant was witnessed by many people. If it was a bit opportunistic to use his javelin throwing skills, the face-to-face fight between him and that giant using a 200-300 kg wolf-fanged mace could display Zhang Tie's real force. In this duel, Zhang Tie not only presented his great strength and fighting skills, but also his intelligence.

Before fighting Zhang Tie, that giant using wolf fang mace had already killed a two-digit number of soldiers of the Iron-Blood

Camp. Seeing Zhang Tie killing him face-to-face, nobody felt that Zhang Tie was an idiot. All the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp regarded him as a hero.

Even if having formed the Iron-Blood hidden strength, it was still rare to see a LV 4 warrior killing a powerful LV 7 opponent in the whole history of Iron-Blood Camp.

When a person reached LV 4, he had only ignited the seven burning point on his spine. If one added that Shrine burning point, he would still have just ignited eight burning points. However, a LV 7 fighter had already ignited thirty four burning points on his spine, plus the Shrine burning point, totaling in fourteen burning points. The two had three level and ten ignited burning point difference.

So seeing Zhang Tie kill that guy despite all of that, everybody felt that Colonel Leibniz had really fetched a treasure for Iron-Blood Camp from Blackhot City. Such a guy would have a super high possibility to form Iron-Blood battle qi. Great Battle God would definitely care about him a lot.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the circle, he saw a military officer kicking a flesh ball towards him. The rolling guy wore a noble's blue silk robe and a golden waistband.

Being kicked so fiercely, that flesh ball shrieked loudly. " I protest... I request for the treatment of captives in human wars as is regulated in the Brilliant Magna Carta..."

Watching that man who as embarrassing as a pig with fat filled brains and intestines, Zhang Tie believe that even Donder would be one hundred times more handsome than he was. Yesterday, this guy had delivered the order to chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Norman Empire including those of wounded soldiers and captives, and pile them on the drying field.

"Did he give the order?" Zhang Tie asked First Lieutenant Liu Xing near him, who was the military officer of Third Company of the Iron-Blood Camp and another Chinese military officer. Since Zhang Tie entered the Iron-Blood Camp, First Lieutenant Liu Xing had already expressed his favorable impression and concerns about him.

"That's him, this one is Muling of the Brilliant Feathers!"

First Lieutenant Liu Xing revealed a resentful expression.

'[Muling](#)? Is that a shepherd and guide or what?' Hearing this weird title, Zhang Tie became slightly dumbfounded as he started to guess the job of the Muling of Sun Dynasty.

The weird title Muling was definitely unique to Sun Dynasty. Although there were many countries that unified state with church in Blackson Human Clan Corridor, only Sun Dynasty had such a bizarre profession—namely the priesthood of the Brilliant God Cult and the secular official position of the regime.

People with this position always had two roles: the first was a hardass priest, and the other an officer. In the Sun Dynasty, the

title Muling spread everywhere through the country, including schools, factories, military troops, urban and rural areas, and mines. Every place with people would be matched with someone having this title. These Mulings were like disgusting tentacles of an octopus which could tightly grab the whole Sun Dynasty, leaving nothing behind.

"When a Muling wants you to confess to him on behalf of the Brilliant God, he actually wants your soul; when a Muling cares about your work, he wants your purse!" This was a proverb that had widely spread through the entire Andaman Alliance about the Mulings of the Sun Dynasty.

In the entire Blackson Human Clan Corridor, the most disgusting thing about the Brilliant God Cult was that no matter where the Mulings of Brilliant God existed, they would only do two things: turn others' belongings into those of Brilliant God, and turn the belongings of Brilliant God into their own.

Norman Empire was a country with a very open religious policy. Besides the Battle God Cult, this country also allowed its citizens to have other beliefs, except for the Brilliant God Cult. Because in the Norman Empire, the Brilliant God Cult was defined as a heresy. Any practitioner of this religion would be killed along with all the members of his family.

In the history of the Norman Empire, after being bewitched by some Mulings, some believers of the Brilliant God Cult had once broken out into riots in several cities and established a temporary regime. From then on, the relationship between Sun Dynasty and Norman Empire became very tense.

Anyway, everywhere in Sun Dynasty, these Mulings were people with supreme authority.

Even Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could see one of the most notorious worms of the Sun Dynasty in a small area like Solanet; the meat ball was a four-star Muling, the four stars embroidered on his long robe, which was not a low rank among established Mulings.

...

Muling, the pinyin of Chinese characters "牧领", which means head pastor. However, "牧" also reminded people of shepherd while "领" reminded people of guide in Chinese, that's why the MC would feel confused about that title when he heard it for the first time.

Chapter 211: Revenge And Booty

"There are good people among bandits and robbers; there are psychic and intelligent ones among magical beasts and domestic animals. However, if there is a population in the world that would not find it wrong to chop off the heads of a whole battalion, it must be the Mulings of the Brilliant God Cult!

This is because the first condition for joining the priesthood and clergy of Brilliant God, for becoming Muling, is to sacrifice an innocent kid below 10-years-old with his fresh blood and life to the Brilliant God. The higher rank the Muling is, the more times he would have had to sacrifice innocent lives and on the larger scale.

Only the real evil and ugly people can do this. Although the name Brilliant God Cult sounds good, actually, it's an absolutely a heresy."

This was how Donder had described it to Zhang Tie.

Maybe because the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp hadn't chopped off his head immediately, it birthed some weird hopes in his brain that was drowning in kilograms of fat. He dared to talk about the Human Race's Brilliant Charter with the military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp, expecting to survive.

However, everybody just watched his final performance with icy expressions. Although they couldn't wait to just chop off his head or stomp him to death, if that truly happened, it would be too easy an end for him.

After a short while, five horses were led into the drying field by several soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp.

Seeing this, that Muling's face turned completely pale while his shrieks became more shrill. At the same time, he quickly changed his pleas.

"Ah... no... please, let me die fast..."

"Because of your order, do you know how many people have died here in the last two days? Do you know how many people of the Iron-Blood Camp were killed? Do you know how many people had their heads chopped off? And right now you still expect an easy death?" Battalion Commander Reinhardt watched him with an emotionless expression. "I can only assure you that it's very painful, as to whether it is fast or not, it'll depend on you!"

After saying this, Battalion Commander Reinhardt motioned with his hand and said with an icy face, "Fix him..."

Receiving the order, some soldiers instantly fastened that guy's head and four limbs to the ropes that were tied to the horses.

This was Zhang Tie's first time seeing someone being torn apart by five horses. This cruel death penalty was rarely used on the crime-ridden people even in the Norman Empire. This was a horrible death penalty with rich oriental features.

The head of the Iron-Blood Camp had given this order to tear apart the Muling who had decided to chop off the heads of all the soldiers of the Norman Empire so as to send a warning to those guys who wanted to challenge the authority of the Norman Empire and the honor its army—soldiers of the Norman Empire could be killed, but not insulted!

In this village, it was not possible to kill all of the 2000-odd people with a troop of 1000-odd people. Before the Iron-Blood Camp had rounded everyone up, there were 70-80 soldiers of Brilliant Feathers that had escaped when they realized the situation was not going well for their side. After returning to their base, they would definitely report what had happened here to the superiors of Brilliant Feathers Army. Therefore, the Iron-Blood Camp was sure that the Brilliant Feathers Army understood what they wanted to express.

...

After being tightened to five horses for under a minute, that fat figure finally became five separate parts. After that, the five parts were left in Solanet together with their ropes.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie thought that he would vomit at the sight of such a scene, since it was more vicious than just slashing a person into two. The bloody scenes on the battlefield had truly made him uncomfortable; however, watching this guy painfully struggle and shriek miserably until he was separated into five, Zhang Tie only felt cold inside.

'For such a scumbag, we should do this!' Zhang Tie told himself

inside, 'more than 200 soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp were wounded or killed in the first battle today, which means that the total amount of the Iron-Blood Camp was reduced by one sixth. Half of this loss should be owed by that guy who had been quartered. If this guy hadn't taunted the Iron-Horn Army and infuriated the marshals, how could I be dispatched here.'

After this final warning ceremony, Major Guderian glanced at his watch. "We have 40 minutes to clean the battlefield and collect our booty; we'll leave here in 40..."

...

Everybody rapidly scattered while First Lieutenant Liu Xing pulled Zhang Tie's arm and ran with him towards the battlefield.

"What are we going to do?" Zhang Tie asked him.

"Go collect our booty?"

"Shouldn't this be done by soldiers? Shouldn't the booty be collected before being submitted?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity, thinking of the army rules told by his elder brother.

"Who told you that?" First Lieutenant Liu Xing kept striding forward as he explained to Zhang Tie, "In the Iron-Horn Army, even the entire Norman Empire, all the booty from Iron-Blood Camp's independent fights don't need to be submitted. Didn't you know that?"

"Is that true?"

Zhang Tie was really shocked.

"Of course, the Iron-Blood Camp, which shoulders the toughest fights and suffers the highest casualty rate, should enjoy some special treatment!" First Lieutenant Liu Xing said, starting to run. "The booty of the Iron-Blood Camp is divided into two parts: the collective one, and the personal. The collective booty is distributed by the Iron-Blood Camp in a unified way while personal booty fully belongs to individuals. Even the colonel could not share that!

"Collective booty belongs to the collective wealth of the troops eliminated by us such as ordnance and the government and public materials in the enemy occupied zone. After each battle, a part of the captured collective booty would be taken as extra pension for the casualties in that battle.

"If there were no collective booty, extra pensions for casualties would be allocated from the personal booties which are all the wealth on the enemy that you've killed. This time, we should submit all the cash that we collect as extra pension for the wounded and dead soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp."

"What about the personal booty of our Boss Reinhardt after he exploded his opponent into parts?"

First Lieutenant Liu Xing burst out laughing loudly. "In this case, unless boss goes to fetch the corpse one piece by another, if you

find that guy's personal belongings, they will belong to you. Boss Reinhardt doesn't tend to do that, have you seen those bastards running faster than hares? That guy who had formed the sky battle qi is not common. He's already a LV 9 fighter. There might be something good with him. Anyone who can find it will have it!"

‘F*ck!’ Zhang Tie also hurriedly ran towards that battlefield...

...

First Lieutenant Liu Xing explained the rules on distributing booty in the Iron-Blood Camp while they ran. After several hundred years' experience, the Iron-Blood Camp of the Norman Empire had long formed a strict distribution system. Every member would follow it self-consciously.

Take this time for an instance, besides killing more than ten military officers, Zhang Tie had also killed a great amount of soldiers. According to this distribution system, the personal property of those soldiers that Zhang Tie had killed didn't belong to him any more, instead, they were going to be allocated among the soldiers of Third Platoon. As a military officer, Zhang Tie could only collect the personal belongings of other military officers that he had killed.

First Lieutenant Liu Xing said this was the gesture that military officers of the Norman Empire should have. Boss Reinhardt executed this gesture very well as he didn't even feel like searching for his booty from the guy that had been torn to pieces by his punch.

Boss Reinhardt, he looked down upon the personal belongings of all the guys who were weaker than him. If boss really liked something on that person, his final fist would definitely be tender. For instance, he only needed to explode the guy's head, instead of his whole body, like how a fairy spread open a flower.

A military officer who could kill a great amount of enemies on the battlefield, thus increasing the survival rate and gaining more booty and wealth for his subordinates would definitely gain their favor and reliance. Undoubtedly, at the critical moment, a lot of them would be ready to sacrifice themselves to protect their officer

Real brothers were an indestructible community combining righteousness and benefits.

It was partnership between businessmen that shared benefits but was not righteous. When the catastrophe arrived, the partners would flee by themselves like birds.

It was empty talk and dreams of nerds to be righteous without sharing benefits. It would take scholars ten years to fail a revolt.

From the distribution of booty in the Iron-Blood Camp, Zhang Tie had gained some insights. It was said that such a distribution pattern originated from the emperor who had founded the Norman Empire.

At this time, after the corpses across Solanet were dealt with, each member of the Iron-Blood Camp was collecting their own

booty. The armors, weapons, property, and special equipment on those corpses were all valuable. Some experienced guys even forcefully opened the enemies' mouths to check whether they had gold teeth inside. Nobody would mind prying them off.

Zhang Tie noticed that personal belongings of the enemy corpses that had been killed by brothers that had sacrificed themselves would also be collected by special people. As these were the booties of the brothers that had sacrificed themselves, they would be converted into wealth and delivered to the family members of the dead soldiers in the name of extra pension.

The whole process was so meticulous that nothing valuable would be left.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the battlefield, that guy who had been exploded by Boss Reinhardt had long been cleaned, leaving nothing at all, even a hair. After letting out a sigh, Zhang Tie realized that he was late. Therefore, he could only collect and count his own booty.

The first thing Zhang Tie gained were the two horses of the military officers who had been struck down by his javelins. The two horses were expropriated by Major Guderian to carry some properties and wounded soldiers back first.

Besides that, the rest of Zhang Tie's booty were all the properties of the twelve military officers of Sun Dynasty who had been killed by him.

Armor, weapons, and purses were all Zhang Tie's personal achievements. His subordinates helped him collect all the good stuff from the dead bodies. As these items neither could be carried away temporarily nor be left for Sun Dynasty to arm their soldiers, based on the formalities on dealing with this in the Iron-Blood Camp, after collecting these items, they had to be registered first before finding a place to bury them.

The benefit of doing things this way was that when the conditions became better in the future, they could dig the items out and use them again. They then could be sold, used, or left as a hidden equipment supplement point.

All the members of the Iron-Blood Camp were very smooth in doing this. They divided the labor work orderly and cleaned the battlefield in a very fast way, like plowing land.

No matter where they were, the military officers were definitely richer than common soldiers. They would have more good items with them.

After searching over several bodies, with exception of some purses that contained cash, Zhang Tie finally saw a very beautiful gold pocket watch embedded with two circles of fine gemstones. There was a wild compass on the skull of the watch. The dial even contained a monthly calendar and ephemeris and a waving rotating wheel which could be wound up automatically. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie knew it was an advanced item, which put him in a good mood.

When he saw this pocket watch, Zhang Tie realized that he had

not even had a watch since he was born. Therefore, he took it without any hesitation.

Because all the cash being collected should be handed in as the pension of dead and wounded soldiers, at the sight of the purses, Zhang Tie he didn't even glance at them but directly threw them to a soldier beside him, asking him to hand them in an adviser of Iron-Blood Camp who was especially responsible for collecting cash. Zhang Tie roughly estimated there were at least dozens of gold coins inside the purses through weight. This amount of money also represented Zhang Tie's condolence to those dead and wounded soldiers. Because it was on the battle field, even if it was a military officer of Sun Dynasty, he would not take too much money with him.

Besides that above, the military rations of the dead military officers of the Sun Dynasty should also be left. In the near future, the Iron-Blood Camp would have no supplies at all. Only taking two rations with them which afforded a single week of food, Zhang Tie threw the rest to the soldiers of Third Platoon, solving the problem of several soldiers' rations.

On the dead second-lieutenant military officer of the Sun Dynasty, Zhang Tie found a nice dagger which was black all over. Although having no luster at all, it was very sharp, and much easier to use than his own. This one was truly a bad-luck guy, being killed by Zhang Tie's javelin before the two troops had even clashed. His dagger was still hanging on his waist, not even having been pulled out yet.

Noticing this good item, of course Zhang Tie took it as his own

without any hesitation.

Besides these items, Zhang Tie also found some amulets of Brilliant God Cult from those military officers and a book "Holy Decree of My Lord" which was used to wash people's brains by the Sun Dynasty. As these items were fabricated by these hardass priests, of course Zhang Tie would not take them.

On a 20-odd body, Zhang Tie found a heart-shaped gold pendant necklace. He opened it and saw a photo of a beautiful lady who was also a bit over 20 years old. That lady smiled brilliantly. Watching the photo for a short while, Zhang Tie sighed inside and silently foisted it back, letting it rest close to the icy chest of that military officer.

For that giant Zhang Tie killed, besides that huge wolf-fanged mace and the half-body armor, he was absolutely poor as he didn't even have a copper coin with him. Glancing at his thrusting belly, Zhang Tie had a feeling that this guy might have eaten all of his wage.

This guy kept staring at the sky with a grievous expression until now.

"Well, don't think about it any more. At worst, until next we encounter each other, you can learn to be a bit smarter. How about letting you be shameless next time..."

Saying this, Zhang Tie felt vacant as he moved his palm over the giant's face to close his eyes. After receiving Zhang Tie's promise,

that giant's face also seemed to have relaxed somewhat.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to stand up, he noticed a small something on the ground under the giant's armpit. It was a finger with a metal half-active fingerstall. Not knowing whether it was a middle finger or an index finger, the moment Zhang Tie caught sight of that fingerstall, he recalled that fighter with a huge icy-blue bloody scorpion as his battle-qi totem who was exploded by Boss Reinhardt.

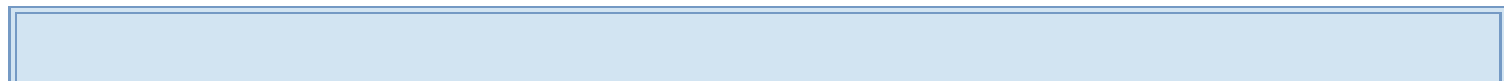
Feeling something on the finger, Zhang Tie picked it up.

Under the fingerstall was a ring covered by the half-motive of the fingerstall. It was a common silver ring. Zhang Tie's heart suddenly pounded as he quietly moved off the ring from that broken finger.

Holding the ring in his hand, Zhang Tie confirmed it was not made of silver, but a matter that was two times heavier than gold and of the same volume. Silver's density was smaller than that. As to the two green stones the size of nails of a little finger, Zhang Tie was also confused about them.

This ring felt both expensive and mysterious...

There were some special geometric patterns on the silver ring. It seemed to be runes, but Zhang Tie was not sure. Watching the rune-like floral patterns, his heart pounded as he injected his spiritual energy in that ring like polishing his burning points.



——Ring of Energy. It can recover your physical strength 4% faster after you use it up, enabling the wearer to be more energetic. This item was made by rune master Andariel.

This was a fragment of the message fixed in the ring like the label of commodity. When you inject your spiritual energy inside, this message would be activated and appear in the mind of the one who activated it like the legendary tape recorder before the catastrophe.

'F*ck!'

Zhang Tie almost jumped up. 'Is this a rune equipment that is usually out of small figures' reach in Donder's words?'

'I'm rich...'

A vulgar thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

Twenty minutes later, the Iron-Blood Camp started to leave Solanet. When they moved out, Zhang Tie had one more dagger on his waist, an extra, delicate, advanced pocket watch, and a silver ring on his left middle finger. With the exception of this, nothing else had changed on Zhang Tie. The huge sword and javelin container were still heavier than half a ton. With such heavy items, each step forward meant a great consumption of his physical strength.

At this moment, Zhang Tie put almost all his spiritual energy on himself. He found that although the weight on his back didn't become lighter even a bit, his physical strength obviously

recovered faster than before. If he made a serious comparison, he would know it truly recovered almost 4% faster than before. Benefiting from this, he felt less fatigued.

No matter what, this ring could give him a greater chance to survive these kind of battles.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could receive such an achievement in such a battle. He couldn't help thinking that if he could get more attribute-improving equipment like this, he would become stronger and have a greater chance to return back to Blackhot City.

Through today's battle, Zhang Tie had also gained some improvements in his sword skills as he had found that some gestures of sword palm of the Iron-Blood Fist skill seemed really feasible for this huge sword of his. In the battlefield, if you use this huge sword as a huge and sharp palm, you can then exert greater force by those open movements.

Additionally, when he used those more delicate and heavier javelins made by the Norman Empire in the battlefield, Zhang Tie faintly felt that they could fly faster than before, however they seemed to have reached a limit in speed as they met an invisible barrier.

That barrier was a sound barrier that all flying objects in the air would meet when they reached the velocity of sound...

...

Chapter 212: One-Hundred People Down

Zhang Tie and his subordinates were calmly lying in the grass while a team of about 100 soldiers of the Sun Dynasty were walking towards them with a bit of tension on the hillside below them.

As this was a mountainous area, the mountain pass below was very narrow. On both sides of the pass were shrubs or large rocks, so even if the team of soldiers wanted to pass this region as soon as possible, the over 100 people could not move fast at all.

This was already the 12th day since the Iron-Blood Camp had executed the "enmity task" here in this mountainous area. In the first week, based on the statistics of the Iron-Blood Camp, Zhang Tie had already won the nickname of "One-Hundred People Down", which was an honor in the army, an honor that was gifted to real warriors. However, Zhang Tie didn't like this honor, neither did he like being called "One-Hundred People Down" by others.

In his opinion, he was forced to kill people in the battlefield. As a small figure, he could not change the willingness to fight between the two powers at Kalur region. Because he wanted to survive himself, as well as help his subordinates do so, he chose to kill. Although they were enemies, there was no animosity between him and the soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers. In the enmity between two powers, they were just trivial components, tools and iron filings...

Perhaps someone truly deserved death such as that bastard who was quartered by the five horses of the Iron-Blood Camp, but even if the opponents were members of the Sun Dynasty, Zhang Tie still

felt that most of them were no different from him and his friends in Blackhot City. They were all small figures who had their own parents.

Since they were all human beings, one should be reluctant and aggrieved to kill people. For if this action was taken as an honor, it would be grievous.

Such thinking might be seen as too merciful, fitting more for women. Especially in the army, few people would agree with Zhang Tie, however, he felt that there was nothing to be proud about in being called "One-Hundred People Down". He only felt jarred. He preferred to be called "One-Hundred People Down" for convincing one hundred women into his bed instead of killing one hundred men in a battlefield.

The two events were totally different as one could bring people happiness and new birth while the other could only bring pain and death.

Zhang Tie preferred the former one.

Including those adorable girls of the Rose Association, Pandora, Alice, and Beverly, only 16 girls were left before Zhang Tie would gain the honor "One-Hundred People Down" which he could be proud of. He had never dared to imagine something like this before, which gave him a sense of pride when he was alone.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, there was nothing to be proud in killing commoners who had no way to fight back against him.

When at school, it was said that before the catastrophe, for a period of at least 2000 years, human beings were actually ruled by those demons who disguised themselves as humans. When demons ruled, people's values were twisted so many people took ugly as beauty and wrong as right: a group of people killed another group of people; people of one profession killed others of another profession; people of one skin color killed others of another skin color; people of one country killed others of another country; people with one belief killed others with another belief. The above killings became as usual as cooking dinner.

Demons told people how to make distinctions. When people were born, they would learn how to separate themselves by language, skin color, blood ties, religion, country, wealth, educational background, looks, hobbies, social status, moral standards, even food... Everything could be used to split them apart.

After that, people learned of animosity and how to take revenge and kill each other. They learned how to eliminate things that were different from themselves. As each newborn was labeled to distinguish it, these labels then taught them who to kill based on the differences of those labels when they grew up. As a result, each one became isolated in their soul islands and turned into the most senior wild beasts.

When demons encouraged people to take revenge on and kill each other, the love affairs between men and women that were the most beautiful and pleasurable emotions, allowing people to grow in numbers, were twisted to become shameless and lewd. Expressing love to a person became something shameful, condemning and humiliating.

After being confined for thousands of years, people's love flowers in their hearts gradually withered away as if they were locked in dark rooms. Many people no longer knew how to express their love the right way, instead, they learned how to vent their resulting emotions through violence, hypocrisy, and deception. People had turned love into harm, greed, and fear. Even to this day, people still couldn't remember how to express the most beautiful side of their human nature with pure love and pleasure.

Zhang Tie loved to wonder whether this world would be better if all men would feel shamed for killing or hurting other people but would feel proud for bringing an orgasm and pleasure to a woman.

He might never get the answer. However, Zhang Tie believed that if he could make a choice, he preferred to be a man who was not proud of killing people.

Because Zhang Tie didn't like to be called "One-Hundred People Down", all the members of the Iron-Blood Camp still called him Second Lieutenant Mummy. Right now, he was well-known in the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division. As Zhang Tie had made outstanding military exploits, Second Lieutenant Mummy gradually gained another meaning that Zhang Tie didn't like—any enemy that caught sight of Zhang Tie would soon be a mummy.

Even Battalion Commander Reinhardt kept speaking highly of the excellent javelin throwing skills of the Second Lieutenant Mummy, "Few people below LV 8 would escape from Second Lieutenant Mummy's javelins once he catches sight of them." Actually, none of the LV 6-LV 7 platoon leaders of Brilliant

Feathers' troops caught in his sights could survive.

As they had to stay in this mountainous area for two weeks, smart Major Guderian chose a place where it was very difficult to walk on and impossible to assemble greater numbers of troops for the Iron-Blood Camp in this broad friction zone.

He said that the first benefit of such a place was avoiding the chance of being surrounded by superior enemy forces when the Iron-Blood Army moved alone; the second benefit was enabling the camp to be more mobile, exerting the wolf pack tactic to the utmost. In a simpler manner, greater enemy troops could not enter this area while those who entered could not match the Iron-Blood Camp.

Those tycoons of the division's headquarters might have presumed that the Iron-Blood Camp would adopt this tactic, so that's why they delivered an order to dispatch it to this barren land without even providing them provisions. Probably those military officers also knew that if a wolf pack was moved into the wild, they would seek food by themselves.

These days, Zhang Tie also rapidly learned about everything regarding war from others...

...

At this moment, in Zhang Tie's eyes, there seemed was a team of "lunch" sending themselves here voluntarily. After lying in an ambush in the brushwood for an entire morning, the sudden

appearance of a team of Sun Dynasty's soldiers made everybody highly spirited.

"Head, will we f*ck them?"

Two team leaders had stealthily moved close to Zhang Tie. Now, all the soldiers of Third Platoon, Fifth Company of the Iron-Blood Camp didn't call Zhang Tie "sir" or "platoon leader" anymore as the two appellations sounded a bit jerky, instead, they all called him "head".

Zhang Tie slightly narrowed his eyes to observe the troop below. From the formation, he found no difference between this one and other troops that they had met these days. It was composed of more than 100 people, which might be the population of Sun Dynasty's company of. Based on his experiences these days, Zhang Tie along with about 50 other soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp that followed him could kill them all in several minutes. However, for some reason, at the sight of that troop, Zhang Tie felt a faint restlessness.

He wanted to let them go, however, he could not find a single reason to let them go.

'Am I really as merciful as a woman?' Zhang Tie asked himself.

Nobody in Third Platoon moved. They all waited for Zhang Tie's signal. These past days, they all learned that if Second Lieutenant Mummy wanted to clean these people and horses, the javelin that was thrown by him would signal the start of the attack. So before

Second Lieutenant Mummy launched an attack, nobody in the entire Third Platoon dared to move.

Seeing that the people below were going to soon leave the attack range, Zhang Tie reaffirmed that no ambush was around them and, gritting his teeth and forcing away the thoughts which had nothing to do with war, he launched the attack without any more hesitation.

This was one solution that Zhang Tie had learned in the Iron-Blood Camp—on the battlefield, you would not never know the answer for any doubts or questions unless you chopped down with your saber.

Action was always more persuasive than doubts.

The moment Zhang Tie moved, one of the main military officers from among that troop was struck by a spear and let out a shrill shriek.

This was the signal!

The people in Third Platoon with light crossbows then immediately shot their bolts, causing people and horses off their feet on the road below.

Zhang Tie jumped down first. After shooting a few more volleys of bolts, the other people of Third Platoon also followed after Zhang Tie and rushed down the slope.

When rushing downward, the javelins in the container on Zhang Tie's back were constantly thrown out, striking the other three military officers in that troop before they could make any response. For the rest of the javelins, Zhang Tie just glanced over the tallest and toughest guys in that troop before striking them all down.

After all, once the backbone of military officers were killed by Zhang Tie, that troop collapsed immediately.

"Kill them all!"

Zhang Tie dashed forward like a fierce tiger jumping out of a narrow place and rushed first into the enemy troop; he became calm and emotionless once again.

Although it was not glorious to kill people, he had to do that right now since he wore the military uniform.

...

Zhang Tie didn't hold that 300-odd kgs' huge sword any more, instead, he put it back in the base of Iron-Blood Camp. He realized that if he kept carrying that huge sword in this mountainous area, he would be a true idiot.

Zhang Tie was holding a relatively smaller two-handed sword, which weighed more than 70 kgs. This double-handed sword was

Zhang Tie's personal booty that he had collected recently. It came from a LV 7 military officer of the Sun Dynasty.

This sword was very delicate with fish-scale like sword body and snow white and mirror-like blade that seemed to have a very great texture. The handle was a pair of praying nude virgins. Their wings formed the armguard. From the craftsmanship, this sword was much better than that "Man's Certificate" in both weight and visual effect.

The double-handed sword that weighted more than 70 kgs was only one fifth of Zhang Tie's huge sword. Holding it in one hand, he felt like holding a wooden stick. It was too light. With a casual flick, the blade would cut through the air and cause a sharp sound along with ghost cries and wolf howls...

Zhang Tie named it with another f*cking name that aroused the ridicule of everybody in the Iron-Blood Camp - "Woman's Excellence".

Although this sword was used for killing, Zhang Tie wanted to warn himself with it that it was not greater to let a man die easily on the battle field than letting a woman live happily.

It was not great to kill people, but Zhang Tie wouldn't leave any chance for a single enemy to survive.

Although this sword was a bit smaller, its power could even match that of the huge sword.

The second thing was "Woman's Excellence" warned Zhang Tie that the most suitable weapon would be the most powerful one. For Zhang Tie, that huge sword was really a bit heavy.

...

The moment Zhang Tie rushed into the enemy troop, he wove his double-handed sword and sent four heads flying in the air. After another swing, his great strength granted the blade with a terrifying cutting force so several spears thrusting towards him were easily broken.

Zhang Tie then rapidly moved inside. After another sweep, some more soldiers of the Sun Dynasty laid down to the ground while sprouting blood out from their bodies.

In the terrified eyes of a soldier, Zhang Tie clashed into him like a furious bear. With the horrible sound of broken bones, that soldier was sent rolling directly down the hill.

Zhang Tie then thrust out his sword once again which penetrated through two soldiers of the Sun Dynasty at once. Using their bodies as a shield, Zhang Tie lifted the two bodies and threw them towards the most populated place. As a result, more than twenty people lost their balance. Many of them even rolled down the narrow pass from Zhang Tie's barbarous force while screaming miserably.

The rest of Third Platoon's soldiers moved in only several seconds later than Zhang Tie, but in that little time, he had already

cleaned 1/5 of Sun Dynasty's soldiers. including those he had taken care of with his javelins before.

Seeing such a dauntless military officer, all the soldiers of Third Platoon became highly spirited while the surviving soldiers of the enemy troop tried to awkwardly escape.

"Kill them all..."

After another growl, fifty more fierce tigers charged at the chaotic troop. In a split second, the mountain pass was filled with blade lights and miserable shrieks...

Chapter 213: Restlessness

The battle ended faster than Zhang Tie had expected. Besides that more than ten soldiers of the Sun Dynasty had escaped and some had been hit by Zhang Tie and rolled off the hillside, while the rest of the troop had laid down in the mountain pass.

In sharp contrast, only five members of the Iron-Blood Camp were slightly wounded. None of theirs were heavily wounded or sacrificed.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied by this. After other similar raids, he found that the soldiers of the Sun Dynasty relied extremely on the orders of their commander in the battle. For these common soldiers of companies or platoons, once their military officers were killed, they would immediately be lost and hardly organize any effective resistance.

Zhang Tie presumed that this might be related to some system of the Sun Dynasty. These days, he heard many things about the Sun Dynasty's troops, which followed a strict hierarchical system and many rigid regulations. As a result, soldiers' creativity and personal willingness were under very great control. One very perverted regulation was that unless in the military camp or executing orders, more than three common soldiers were forbidden to join in a group at any time.

In Sun Dynasty's army, common soldiers were not allowed to have their own thoughts at any time as the commander's will was their will. The benefit of such a troop was that even if there was a fiery pit in front of them, the common soldiers would choose to

jump inside without any hesitation. Such an army was actually very terrifying.

However, if taking into account the ambushes these days as an example, when Zhang Tie killed all the military officers first with his javelins, most of the common soldiers lost their commanding people; they then did not know what to do next, like flies with no heads. In this case, their fighting force was greatly weakened.

Although his group had won another battle by eliminating all the enemies, for some reason, Zhang Tie felt even more restless than before.

...

After taking out of that pocket watch that he had collected from the battlefield, Zhang Tie gave an order with an icy expression, "You have three minutes to clean the battlefield. Three minutes later, we have to evacuate!"

They usually had at least ten minutes to clean the battlefield; the soldiers of the Third Platoon didn't understand why their boss had only given them three minutes today. However, at the sight of Zhang Tie's icy face, nobody asked why, instead, they all rapidly moved.

This time, everybody had a great harvest. Zhang Tie gained more than 20 Sun Dynasty's gold coins from the military officers that he had killed, which was a bit more than usual. Additionally, he got some nice weapons, two senior leather belts, and some useful

widgets.

Zhang Tie only kept the gold coins. Besides them, he selected a beautiful silver lighter. After that, he allocated the rest to his subordinates who had fought together with him.

Three minutes later, after cleaning the battlefield, over fifty people quickly left under the leadership of Zhang Tie. Until they left, nothing special happened, so Zhang Tie started to mumble inside, 'Am I thinking too much?'

...

The wolf den of Iron-Blood Camp was in a weird lava zone in the karst region in this mountainous area. A battle between two troops of more than 2000 soldiers in total would hardly break out here. Even if it did, the weird topography would separate the troops into different groups, which would hardly form any formation with powerful fighting force.

If they fought in this terrain, the personal fighting force of the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp could be exerted to the utmost. Even the most common member of the Iron-Blood Camp were ranked as corporals, namely warriors who had not formed Iron-Blood hidden strength; however the most common members of Brilliant Feathers' troops ranked LV 2-5. This indicated that Iron-Blood Camp had an overwhelming advantage over common troops in fighting force.

This also explained why Iron-Blood Camp could be the king troop

in each division of the Iron-Horn Army.

According to Major Guderian's judgment, after the Solanet event and three small bases of Brilliant Feathers in this region were cleared by Iron-Blood Camp, if the Sun Dynasty knew their existence in this region, they would definitely come to take a revenge. Therefore, Major Guderian chose a hidden place as the wolf den of the Iron-Blood Camp in case of being surrounded by the enemy. Each day, Iron-Blood Camp would move and hunt the local troops of Brilliant Feathers in the surrounding mountainous area of dozens of square meters in platoons by taking turns...

Before the final battle, both marshals of the two armies seemed to have the intention of dispatching their own troops here to fight by turns so as to test the opponents and train their own troops. The casualties and achievements of their soldiers at the cost of numerous lives and rivers of fresh blood would only turn into emotionless data on the tables of the decision-makers, but whether that data would influence the decision-makers' decisions, only god knew.

When Zhang Tie led his troop back into this weird lava zone, most of the other wolf packs hunting outside had already returned. Most of them had gained some booty, more or less. However, compared to Zhang Tie's Third Platoon, other troops had less booty yet had sacrificed more.

Since they entered this war zone, they were casualties in the Iron-Blood Camp everyday, more or less.

The moment Zhang Tie came back to the wolf den, he entered

the command tent. Many military officers who had led their troops out today were gathering there. They reported their troops' achievements and the situations on how they had encountered their enemies today to Major Guderian one by one. Hearing their reports, Major Guderian lowered his body and continually marked something on the map spread on the table while asking one or two questions every now and then.

When it was Zhang Tie's turn, he reported the achievements of the Third Platoon while pulling out the certificates of his achievements—the ID plates of the military officers of the Sun Dynasty that he had taken off them.

When he submitted the ID plates, the surrounding military officers all admired him. In the entire Iron-Blood Camp, only Zhang Tie's troop could easily gain a great harvest each time.

"After going back, you will definitely gain a warrior's medal!" Second Lieutenant Moosa told Zhang Tie.

These days, Zhang Tie had already killed dozens of military officers of the Sun Dynasty. For a person who came to the battlefield for the first time, this was really a very great achievement.

Hearing Moosa's praise, the surrounding military officers all nodded.

"Zhang Tie is simply a nut too hard to crack for the low-ranked military officers of the Sun Dynasty. Those LV 6-LV 7 guys are

almost like target practice for Zhang Tie."

Hearing the surrounding military officers' words, Zhang Tie just revealed a smile. However, that restlessness inside him didn't fully disappear even now. He hesitated whether he should express his doubt so that Major Guderian could make a judgment on whether there was truly a problem somewhere.

Lowering his body to the map, Major Guderian instantly noticed Zhang Tie's shadow of hesitation. Raising his head, he lifted his golden-rimmed glasses with his hand.

"Second Lieutenant Zhang Tie, do you have anything to add?"

"Major, I just feel something is not right today!" After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie decided to pour out what he wanted to say. "Although we've been very successful in today's ambush, for some reason, from the start of the ambush to the present, I still feel that something was not right!"

"Something not right?" Major Guderian looked a bit solemn while the surrounding military officers became quiet too. They all stared at Zhang Tie. "Can you describe it more clearly? What is not right?"

"I cannot say it clearly, but I keep feeling that there's a problem somewhere. But I don't know where. After the ambush to coming back here, I felt someone was following us. Therefore, I especially led my troop to take two circuitous routes and set a pocket trick. However after more than an hour, I still couldn't find that hidden

person!" Seeing the amazed expressions of the surrounding military officers, Zhang Tie could only continue, "Previously, when I encountered dangers, I would also have this kind of sense of restlessness!"

If it was not Zhang Tie's excellent military exploits and braveness in battles, someone at present would have definitely bursted out laughing. However, because it was Second Lieutenant Mummy who said this, nobody laughed.

Major Guderian even revealed a thoughtful expression. He carefully gazed at the map on the table. Boss Reinhardt also walked over to take a better look at the map together with Major Guderian.

"Is there any problem?"

"Everything looks normal, there are also no problems with the encounters and ambushes!" Major Guderian frowned. "However, as is mentioned in the school motto of the Imperial Ground Force College, when you cannot find problems on the battlefield, that is the true problem! After Zhang Tie's warning, I also feel somewhat uneasy, as if something is not right..."

Major Guderian pointed at the places with special marks on the map with his finger. "These battles broke out four days ago, these three days ago, these yesterday, these today. These days, our troops would fight Sun Dynasty's troops four or five times a day, six at most. This frequency remains unchanged. That's the problem! If you're the commander of Sun Dynasty's troops, through previous days' fights, you must have already confirmed

that there is a troop of the Iron-Blood Camp in this zone, what will you do then?"

"Temporarily shrink their manpower in this zone. Then, they will find another chance to annihilate us!" Reinhardt answered calmly.

"That's it; however, the zone where we operate hasn't changed since the beginning. That's the problem!"

"But..."

The moment a military officer standing nearby opened his mouth, he was interrupted by Major Guderian.

"The survival of Iron-Blood Camp should not be established on the presumption that our enemies are idiots!" he explained solemnly.

Hearing his words, everyone went quiet.

Reinhardt then frowned. "Has any troop found that they were being tailed on the way back today?"

"No, we're all very careful. Since we're veterans, we've set some tricks on the way back, but did not find any trickery!" Guderian shook his head. "I'm really confused by this. If our opponents have some traps or plans, they have to first confirm our location. However, they don't seem anxious. Since no spy airships have

flown above us these days, the location of the wolf den should not have been exposed!"

"Have all the troops returned today?"

"Still missing two!"

After a consideration, Reinhardt gave a decisive order, "When the two troops come back, we'll transfer tomorrow early morning!"

Saying this, Reinhardt pointed at a place on the map closer on the north side of this mountainous area. Major Guderian examined the place and nodded.

After the decision was made, everyone left the command tent. On their way out, many military officers glanced at Zhang Tie aimlessly. Before leaving the tent, First Lieutenant Freo even patted his shoulders.

When Zhang Tie left, he still felt a bit worried. If he was excessively meticulous this time, he would have made a fuss. Then, he would be a real laughing stock.

After Zhang Tie left the tent, First Lieutenant Liu Xing walked towards him and comforted him.

"No need to be that tense. Each major decision of the Iron-Blood Camp has its own reasons. Without genuine consideration, Major Guderian and Boss Reinhardt would not decide to have us transfer

just because of a military officer's baseless concern. As we are isolated here, we should always be meticulous!"

Zhang Tie smiled at him.

...

When Zhang Tie came back to his own tent, many soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp were attempting to pull that "Man's Certificate" from the empty land outside Zhang Tie's tent. Although that huge sword was nominally his weapon, most of the time these days it was more like a public one.

When Zhang Tie didn't use it, he would insert it into the soil. Anyone then could have a go at it. Actually, that "Man's Certificate" had gradually become a standard for the common soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp to test their own ability. It was also like a big toy. Many guys who were free after supper would have a try here. Because of this huge sword, many people practiced harder than usual. Even those dandyish ruffians didn't want to be called women. Out of basic self-respect, they still cared it very much.

Before Zhang Tie came back, many guys were shouting loudly beside the huge sword. However, seeing him returning and entering his own tent for rest, all the guys lowered their voices in case of bothering him.

After entering his tent, Zhang Tie ate a piece of dried meat and had some water. After that, he started today's cultivation. Even in

war-time, once he had free time, Zhang Tie would never lessen his requirements for personal cultivation. Cultivation time was like women's cleavage, as long as you squeezed it, you would have it...

He polished his burning point first before practicing the visualization of two abacuses and carrying out four different arithmetic operations on the two abacuses at the same time. After that, Zhang Tie activated a Trouble-Reappearance Fruit and entered the situation within where the terrain was almost like that of the present mountainous area.

Waving his huge sword, he started to fight wild wolves, huge wolves, and various other wild beasts of different quantities all over the mountain. Through the fights, the wild beasts seem to also be becoming increasingly more tricky. As Zhang Tie grew, those wild beasts seemed to also be growing and becoming smarter.

After realizing that it would consume a lot of Zhang Tie's strength to wave the huge sword, those wild beasts constantly changed their tactics against him these days. They didn't rush forward at the same time, instead, they started to attempt various attacks with differing quantities and combinations.

In the end, those wild beasts found the most effective tactic—after surrounding Zhang Tie, they would keep a distance from him. Once that was done, they would attack Zhang Tie from three different directions at the same time in groups of three.

They kept attacking Zhang Tie in turns ceaselessly, and here started his miserable days in the trouble-reappearance situation...

Each time, Zhang Tie would run through the mountainous land with his huge sword as he fought those wild beasts. He attempted to break through the wild wolves' siege. However, each time, Zhang Tie would be so exhausted that he could not even raise his hand in the end. As a result, he would be torn into pieces by the rest of the wild wolves and huge wolves.

Each time in the trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie would exert his fighting capability to the utmost and break through his fighting limit, as well as experiencing various painful ways to be killed. He would constantly analyse and improve himself by finding his own problems and shortcomings, and then would continue to fight and die in the trouble-reappearance situations...

Nobody in the Iron-Blood Camp knew what Zhang Tie was experiencing when he was alone everyday. Actually, by the time Zhang Tie won the reputation of "One-Hundred People Down", he had died almost 100 times in the mysterious space.

Each day, Zhang Tie would learn and improve through "death".

...

After Zhang Tie finished his cultivation, almost six hours had passed. He then walked out of his tent. At this time, numerous stars were hanging in the sky while the two moons were as crystal as water.

Zhang Tie asked a person nearby and learned that the other two troops had already come back several hours ago. He then became reassured.

At this hour, many people had already fallen asleep.

Due to still being restless, after going to the toilet, Zhang Tie especially went around the wolf den of the Iron-Blood Camp. Finding no problem with the sentry posts, he returned to his tent and slept in armor.

According to the rules of the Iron-Blood Camp, when camping outdoors, everybody should wear armor. In the beginning, he didn't feel comfortable sleeping in armor, so he could only lie on the side. But, several days later, he started to get used to it.

'The Iron-Blood Camp will move tomorrow morning; maybe I'm a bit too tense today,' Zhang Tie thought before falling asleep. 'It's just a warning, I prefer to be mocked than seeing people getting killed!'

Zhang Tie soon fell asleep.

...

At midnight, Zhang Tie suddenly woke up from a sweet dream, his heart pounding heavily. This time, it was like that time when he had met Huck and Snade for the first time.

Zhang Tie felt that his mouth was dry. After drinking a mouthful of water, he put on his battle boots and picked up his "Woman's Excellence". Carrying his container of javelins, he left his tent. As it was just an instinctive movement to bring his container of javelins, Zhang Tie didn't find anything wrong with it.

At this moment, the encampment of the Iron-Blood Camp was in an absolute quiet state. Everybody was in deep sleep besides the lone chirping insects and weirdly shaped rocks under the starlight.

Because his restlessness was growing sharper, Zhang Tie decided to have a peep at the hidden sentry posts on the borders of the encampment.

The nearest hidden sentry post was only 70 m away from the border of the encampment, which was the shortest safe distance.

As it was midnight, Zhang Tie's footsteps were very light. He didn't want to shock anyone else. After arriving behind a lava zone in this karst terrain, Zhang Tie froze when he caught sight of the hidden sentry post.

The sentry post was covered in a weird lilac fog. It looked really weird under the starlight, but what caught Zhang Tie's attention were the numerous silhouettes walking in that fog. They came from all directions like ghosts and quietly moved towards the encampment of the Iron-Blood Camp.

Since the hidden sentry hadn't given any warning, obviously he had been killed.

In the end, what woke everybody in the encampment was the sonic boom caused by Zhang Tie's javelin that flashed so fast through the air.

In a wink, four growls had already made the whole Iron-Blood Camp boil up.

Soon after that, the military officers who were the first to rush out of their tents with weapons in hands heard Zhang Tie's furious growls like thunders from afar.

Chapter 214: Black Feathers Regiment

Zhang Tie moved so fast that his following three javelins flew closely after the first one.

Because it was too urgent, even Zhang Tie had not noticed the shrill sonic booms until his javelins hit the targets.

At this time, he didn't have time to choose his targets at all. Soon after he pierced the front four people, the fifth person had already rushed in front of him like a ghost.

The enemy moved fast, very fast.

The shrill booms of javelins not only rose the whole Iron-Blood Camp, but also stimulated all the ghost-like figures to roll towards the encampment of the Iron-Blood Camp like wildfire in the darkness.

"Kill them all!"

After a loud scream, Zhang Tie gazed at that figure before him and slashed at it with his sword in his right hand. Noticing the attack, that person pulled out his weapon to block the sword. The moment Zhang Tie broke his opponent's weapon, he immediately slashed that person into two, causing a fresh blood to splash all over him.

At this time, another person rushed towards Zhang Tie. Zhang

Tie then struck directly through his heart with his sword.

For an instant, Zhang Tie thought that person had been killed, however, he could have never imagined that the man would still rush towards him. Even though was pierced by Zhang Tie's sword, he still slashed towards Zhang Tie's head with his saber, his expression grim.

That person's whole head was covered by a skeleton-like helmet, only exposing a pair of bloody and crazy eyes.

If Zhang Tie had not experienced numerous deaths in trouble-reappearance situations, which had given him strong fighting skills and great mental capability, he might have died.

It was really Zhang Tie's first time seeing a guy who could continue slashing towards your head even when he had his heart pierced.

Seriously scared, Zhang Tie used a cannon kick, a movement from the Iron-Blood Fist skill, and kicked at that person's lower abdomen, sending him flying backward. As a result, several more people were knocked down, though at the same time, that saber went close past Zhang Tie's nose.

He immediately oozed cold sweat.

In a split second, Battalion Commander Reinhardt with his flaring battle-qi totem rushed over. Passing by, Reinhardt punched

the front guys into pieces and they flew backwards.

"This is Black Feathers Regiment of the Brilliant Feathers Army. Take care. Only by chopping off their heads and destroying their central nerve system on their spines can we kill them..." Battalion Commander Reinhardt shouted loudly, his voice drifting through the whole battlefield.

Black Feathers Regiment? F*ck! Zhang Tie had also heard about these monsters of the Sun Dynasty. They were also the brand troop of Sun Dynasty. However, unlike the Iron-Blood Camp, they mainly cultivated themselves based on a secret medicine which could make them into killing machines which forgot pain and death. These people became very terrifying on the battlefield.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the Brilliant Feathers Army would use Black Feathers Regiment to deal with the Iron-Blood Camp. He was also still confused about how these people had found the wolf den in the first place.

Seeing at least 3000 soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment rushing towards him from all directions, Zhang Tie felt somewhat hopeless inside. His enemies were war golems who only glared through the slits in their helmets with their bloody eyes and killed others quietly. Even if when they rushed forward many were killed, they would not make a sound.

The eyes of these soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment looked crazy. Additionally, their armor was also terrifying. Unlike common armor, theirs was totally skeleton-like, only protecting their heads, necks, spines and other major joints and bones, not

caring about the rest of their bodies being exposed. They straight up ignored the penetrative and fragmentary harms which common soldiers were afraid of most.

The function of the skeletal armor was to protect the completeness of their physical structure and increase the difficulty in breaking their key joints and the central nervous system of their spines. For these soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment who didn't know what pain was, as long as their physical structures were complete, they could continue to kill people.

After Zhang Tie chopped off some more enemy heads, the other military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp finally arrived and held back those monsters who had almost broken into the encampment of the Iron-Blood Camp.

After that, the rest of the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp arrived too. A raid then became a field operation under the stars' light.

It was at least twice more difficult to kill a soldier of Black Feathers Regiment than killing a common one. Thus, those soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment who didn't fear pain or death were even with the soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp.

The moment both parties clashed, the Iron-Blood Camp suffered casualties. Black Feathers Regiment was an existence which was not weaker than the Iron-Blood Camp, and even more terrifying than the latter on the battlefield. They didn't fear pain or death at all, and had no instinctive hesitation of killing enemies at the cost of their own lives. In the Iron-Blood Camp though, even the tough guys would hesitate at this critical moment.

This was the most brutal battle since Zhang Tie had joined the Iron-Blood Camp. He didn't even know how many people he had killed. He only knew that the soldiers in skeleton-like armor just endlessly poured in from all directions.

The easiest way to kill the monsters was to directly chop off their heads. However, after chopping their heads, Zhang Tie was covered all over with their blood like a blood man that was scooped out of the blood pond.

Zhang Tie had gained some non-lethal wounds and felt like he was in a mire composed of those terrifying soldiers.

Compared to Iron-Blood Camp, there were so many opponents...

Only after 20 minutes' fight, Zhang Tie's "Woman's Excellence" had become a corncob gnawed on by mice as a lot of scratches and nicks had already been made on it. This was because before he could chop off the heads, he had to break the skeletal helmet on the soldiers' heads that even covered their necks. Although "Woman's Excellence" was elegant, facing numerous face-to-face slashes, it finally revealed its fragile side.

Finally, after chopping off half of a soldier's neck, the "Woman's Excellence" broke into two and became useless.

With half of his neck still linked to his shoulder, that guy was slashed towards Zhang Tie with his saber.

Zhang Tie held it back using the remainder of his sword. After that, he grabbed that person's wrist. With a sound of 'kacha', he broke it, then grabbed that man's head between his hands and forcefully twisted the rest half of the neck.

Other soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment darted towards Zhang Tie. At the same time, First Lieutenant Freo killed all the way and drew close to Zhang Tie. He swept his huge axe towards the soldiers. As a result, each soldier was slashed into two and sent flying backwards.

"Hahaha, your woman will not be able to deal with these guys. Go bring your man here..."

'F*ck, what do you mean by my man?'

Although knowing that that bad, tough man was referring to "Man's Certificate", Zhang Tie still felt dejected. Seeing the bald tough man wave his huge axe, sweeping it past the most populated place of Black Feathers Regiment, Zhang Tie stomped and ran towards his own tent.

Only after ten more seconds, Zhang Tie, with "Man's Certificate" in his hand, killed his way back. The dejected mood inside him then turned into the howling killing intent of his sword.

To deal with these soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment in metal skeletal armor, "Man's Certificate" seemed to be the best weapon.

At this time, Battalion Commander Reinhardt had already broken through the encirclement of the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment. Like a flaring lion's swipes, each of his moves would lead to flaming blood rain and fragmented corpses.

After glancing at Reinhardt who was deep in the mire, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth and immediately threw his remaining javelins in that direction, striking through the necks of some monsters surrounding Reinhardt. When the sharp heads of the javelins penetrated through their necks, they also broke a big hole in their cervical spines.

After clearing the javelins in the container, Zhang Tie took down the container. After discharging his load, he burst out into a tiger-like howl. Waving his huge sword with two hands, he killed all the way to the place with the most enemies where Battalion Commander Reinhardt was in.

The Ring of Energy on his finger had long played its role as Zhang Tie's physical strength was recovering faster than ever. Although the recovering speed only increased by 4%, on this battlefield, it could obviously improve Zhang Tie's strength.

With the two meter long "Man's Certificate", Zhang Tie weaved through the enemies and quickly cleared an empty land. This time, he didn't spare any effort. Elegance did not matter here, only by chopping them in two would he kill them. Without any calculations like before, Zhang Tie forcefully slashed with his huge sword everywhere. These surrounding dauntless guys were much easier than cunning wild wolves.

Holding the huge sword, Zhang Tie's lethality to those soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment was really unrivaled. With a casual sweep, he would immediately clear an area of 7-10 square meters, causing broken limbs to fly everywhere.

Zhang Tie then became the most terrifying flesh grinder on the battlefield.

Seeing their Second Lieutenant Mummy performing as bravely as before, the morale of the Iron-Blood Camp rose up again.

Zhang Tie killed on the way towards the guys that were surrounding Battalion Commander Reinhardt like a road roller.

Seeing Zhang Tie, Reinhardt burst out laughing loudly. Back to back, they heavily clashed against the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment.

However, this time, many opponents rushed towards their encampment, the amount of which was 2-3 times greater than the manpower of the entire Iron-Blood Camp. Although Zhang Tie and Reinhardt could easily deal with those surrounding them, the common soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp would suffer a great difficulty dealing with them. And if the common soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp couldn't last, no matter how dauntless Reinhardt and Zhang Tie were, they would also finally be overrun by the countless soldiers of the Black Feathers Regiment who didn't fear pain and death at all.

"It seems that the marshals of the Brilliant Feathers hate us very much. They must have been outraged that we've quartered their bastard Muling. The Black Feathers Regiment rarely dispatches so many of their troops at once..."

As he constantly punched the monsters into pieces, Battalion Commander Reinhardt could even talk with Zhang Tie.

Sweat dripping down his forehead, Zhang Tie almost rolled up his eyes.

'No crap, judging from the number of opponents which is several times greater than that of Iron-Blood Camp's, you can clearly see that they're definitely determined to clear the Iron-Blood Camp this time, for Black Feathers troops are not as cheap as white cabbage which is always available. '

They could only blame Iron-Blood Camp for being too hateful.

Zhang Tie just slashed without saying anything.

Several seconds later, hearing no reply, Battalion Commander Reinhardt finally revealed [his fox' tail](#). "Look at your 7 o'clock, 150 m away, there are some people..."

After slashing some opponents into two, Zhang Tie hurriedly exchanged locations with Reinhardt. After that, he cast a glance at that place mentioned previously. Behind a great density of soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment, under the looming stars' light, Zhang

Tie could faintly see some people in different clothes on a hillside. They seemed to be the military officers of Black Feathers Regiment. Among them was an old man in a weird robe whose hair had grizzled. He seemed to be blowing on a weird item in his mouth while watching over the battlefield.

It was too weird. That person seemed to be blowing a musical instrument, yet making no sound. All the soldiers of Black Feather Regiment including that weird guy were so quiet, revealing their terrifying madness and weirdness.

"I see!"

Zhang Tie brandished his huge sword and slashed two monsters into pieces again.

"Can you f*ck that old man in the middle with your javelin?" Reinhardt asked.

"It's too far. If I was 50 m closer, it'd be possible!" Zhang Tie kept slashing as he exchanged opinions with Reinhardt. "In this case, I think we're unable to move 50 m closer in that direction."

After being quiet for a while, Reinhardt said, "What if I can send you 50 m away from here?"

"Then I can kill that old guy! But how would you send me there?"

"I'll throw you there! Though after throwing your javelin, you'll

be surrounded by the common soldiers, and even some of the high-level fighters of the Black Feathers Regiment and might lose your life! So I won't force you to do that. You make the decision..."

Zhang Tie became quiet.

"Will the Black Feathers Regiment retreat after I kill that old guy?"

"They will. All the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment are commanded by that man. The weird musical instrument that man is blowing is to command these soldiers. As it is of a very high frequency, we cannot hear it. However, these soldiers who had been changed by some secret medicine can hear it. They're fighting according to the sound from the musical instrument!"

"What if the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment don't retreat tonight?"

"Then everybody in the Iron-Blood Camp will die here before dawn. They obviously outnumber us. Some brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp are barely holding on already. The Brilliant Feathers Army is determined to kill us all!"

They kept talking with each other in low voices while they fought.

Zhang Tie then struggled inside for as long as a minute. Being surrounded, they didn't exchanged any more words...

"I will do it!"

Zhang Tie was clear that after saying this, he had completely given up on his own life.

He had to do that.

The brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp once fought for him in the Blackhot City, therefore, he should not retreat now. If he retreated, nobody in the entire Iron-Blood Camp would survive. To kill that man was the only chance to help the Iron-Blood Camp survive this night.

"Fine!"

"I've got many women in Blackhot City. If I die and the brothers of Iron-Blood Camp survive, tell them to protect my women when they return to the Blackhot City!"

"Fine!"

Reinhardt said nothing but two "Fine".

After quickly telling his will, Zhang Tie didn't speak any more but gritted his teeth to fight... After ten more seconds, he grabbed a javelin that he had thrown out into a soldier of Black Feathers Regiment. After a horizontal sweep, he broke another soldier's

body with his blade.

The moment he dropped his huge sword, Zhang Tie held the javelin in his right hand which he usually used for throwing. With a tiger-like howl, Reinhardt punched with a brilliant fighting move, cracking down a great amount of surrounding soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment. After that, he seized Zhang Tie's waist band and threw him out like throwing a javelin.

Nobody could imagine what trick the two surrounded by many soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment thought to play.

Zhang Tie was a javelin thrown out by Reinhardt while he himself also held a javelin. In a blink of an eye, he had already flown over 50 m while the guys in the distance were frozen from shock and amazement.

Zhang Tie locked that cone-shaped funnel onto the old guy in weird robe standing in the middle and threw his javelin while still in the air.

This time, the distance of over 100 m was like it didn't exist at all. The moment the javelin left Zhang Tie's hand, it had already penetrated that guy's chest, followed by a shrill sonic boom.

In disbelief, the old guy lowered his head to stare at that wide bloody hole in his chest. The flute-like thing dropped from his mouth. Soon after that, he fell to the ground...

Right then, all the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment became still for a short while...

"Kill him!"

Some of the people standing on that hillside who had so far looked calm furiously growled, their voices drifting through the whole battlefield. The icy blue battle-qi totems on them immediately burst out...

Zhang Tie only had time to protect his head before smashing down against a great amount of soldiers with a loud boom. After rolling dozens of circles and striking down many people, he became dizzy.

At this moment, he remembered that feeling of when he had jumped into that bottomless cave of gold-eating boas...

The whole battlefield froze for a short while before heating up once again...

All the military officers of the Brilliant Feathers Army who had looked calm, all the surrounding soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp and Battalion Commander Reinhardt all surged towards Zhang Tie at the same time...

'F*ck!'

Zhang Tie realized that the real moment where his life would be

on the line would soon arrive. Compared to the present, the bloody fight just now was totally a warm-up campaign...

At this time, lying on the ground, Zhang Tie had no other weapons except for a dagger. However, a dagger seemed useless when fighting the soldiers of Black Feathers Regiment.

At the sight of some ankles of some soldiers of the Black Feathers Regiment, Zhang Tie blindly captured two of them of two different people one in each hand. Not caring whether the two were dead or not, he just swung them like sticks, smashing the surrounding people away.

Zhang Tie's braveness shocked the entire battlefield once again...

At the same time, a formation of icy blue battle qi and more than ten weapons were thrusting towards him...

In ancient Chinese fantasies, fox could turn into human beings except for its tail. The fox' tail here is used to depict that Battalion Commander Reinhardt is very smart, able to find the people behind this raid.

Chapter 215: Heavily Wounded

When Zhang Tie recovered his awareness, he recalled the last scene in his mind—a formation of icy blue battle qi burst out before him. Soon after that, he was hit by people. His armor was broken to pieces. After spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood and almost losing his awareness, Zhang Tie faintly heard Reinhardt's furious growls. After seeing mountain-like sabers and spears thrusting towards him, Zhang Tie was in pitch darkness...

'Am I dead?

How are my brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp?

In the following minutes after he killed that old guy of Black Feathers Regiment, Zhang Tie clearly felt that the undying monsters were becoming restless. Their attacks were not as sharp as before.

'My brothers should be safe!'

After he recovered his awareness for the first time, Zhang Tie only faintly recalled what had happened that night. He then felt very fatigued. His body seemed to disappear as he was dragged into a bottomless pitch-black mire. Zhang Tie gradually lost all his senses.

...

When he came to the second time, he felt that his body had been foisted into a can. It was heavy and squeezed tight, as if there was no space around him. His body also felt like it was inserted with numerous pipes. Many people were beside him while the sound of leather shoes landing against the floor constantly drifted into his ears.

Someone was talking nearby...

"Miracle? Don't tell me miracle or not. Doc, I want him alive. He's the most excellent military officer of the Norman Empire and the hero of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division... Here's an advanced recovery medicament that I collected personally. You have to make him survive this regardless of any price. This is my order. Am I clear..."

"Yes, sir, general..."

The sound of leather shoes on the floor gradually faded away. The deep darkness attacked him once again. Zhang Tie tried his best to get rid of the oncoming darkness, but after only several seconds, his awareness sunk into the mire once again.

...

When he floated up above the mire for the third time, Zhang Tie felt as if he was set free from the can. However, he still didn't have any sense of his surroundings.

It was very quiet wherever he was. He wanted to open his eyes, but failed. After trying for quite a while, he didn't see any light at all. Finally, after endless effort, a part of his hand moved, and soon after that, he heard a scream of a woman with a great pair of lungs...

"His finger moved, his finger moved!"

Her scream was filled with great surprise. As she repeated the words, the woman ran off.

Only after ten seconds, many sounds of leather boots on the floor poured in to the room once again.

"Blood pressure is starting to rise again..."

"Pulse has already recovered to about 40 times a minute and is becoming more and more powerful..."

"Battle God bless, Second Lieutenant Javelin finally lives!"

"Thank god..."

Someone started to weep from delight. Everybody in the room suddenly let out relief filled breaths, immediately turning the room into a huge bellows. The huge bellows seemed have been pulled by someone as the entire room sounded "Hu"...

"Hurry up, go report to General Schwartz. We can't wait to announce this. The bravest military officer of the Iron-Horn Army has been saved by us..."

This voice rang with faint relief.

This time, Zhang Tie didn't sink into the mire any more, instead, he floated above like duckweed. After a while, he felt a strong desire to sleep as weakness took over him. Therefore, he fell asleep.

...

Zhang Tie didn't know for how long he'd slept, but when he woke up again, the body that had disappeared for many days returned to him once again along with the pain that had sunk into his marrow.

Sometimes, pain was also a gift as it could at least tell you that you were still alive.

Previously, Zhang Tie had experienced this pain many times in the trouble-reappearance situations. It was similar to the feeling of being torn to pieces by numerous wild wolves after you failed during the fight.

Now, Zhang Tie felt like he once again was torn to shreds.

Because of this extreme pain, he couldn't help but groan.

Then, more sounds of leather boots hitting the floor poured in.

In other words, even more people came.

"He recovered his senses, that's a good sign..."

"All indicators of his body begun to rise..."

"I suggest to inject micro SPC medicament in him..."

"I agree!"

Some seconds later, Zhang Tie's arm became cold, as if inserted with a needle. After that, he felt a cold sense gradually spread all through his body. His all-consuming pain was immediately relieved.

So Zhang Tie opened his eyes and saw a great many people in white coats in the room with solemn expressions. Almost everybody was staring at him with concerned eyes.

To tell the truth, it was Zhang Tie's first time being watched by so many stranger's concerned eyes ever since he was born.

A doctor was giving Zhang Tie's arm an injection. When he raised his head and saw Zhang Tie's opening eyes, his hand quivered, almost dropping the needle to the ground.

It was a bit disordered in the ward. All the doctors became excited. However, nobody talked. They only exchanged excitement filed glances.

Only a fifty-odd man standing in front of Zhang Tie's bed took a deep breath before carefully lowering his body. He then asked in a quiet voice, "Can you talk, how do you feel?"

"Than...thanks!" Zhang Tie forcefully poured out one word.

He knew that if it was not for these doctors, he would've been dead by now. Therefore, the first word he wanted to say when he woke up was a sincere thanks to everybody in the ward.

After straightening, the doctor took a deep breath and turned back, telling the other colleagues in the ward, "Thanks, he said thanks to all of us!"

All the doctors and nurses in the ward revealed smiles.

Zhang Tie continued to move his lips and poured out the second sentence. "How... how about the bro... brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp... how... how many of them survived?"

As Zhang Tie had recovered a bit, his words were heard by everybody in the ward.

"562 people of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division came back. They are in recuperation now..."

Hearing this reply, Zhang Tie's eyes immediately became wet. Another meaning of this data was that 657 people of the Iron-Blood Camp had died that night. Most of the soldiers who came back would probably also be wounded. Such an iron-like troop was almost disabled in that night's bloody fight. Numerous young lives were torn to pieces and fell to the ground along with iron filings. This was the cruelty of war.

Because he did not know how many familiar faces he would no longer be able to see again, Zhang Tie's eyes became wet. He just cried to himself, without making any sound.

Hero's tears could move people most. Sincere emotion could move one's heart most. Therefore, at this moment, many pairs of eyes of the doctors and nurses became red too.

...

On the first afternoon after waking up, Zhang Tie learned a lot of what had happened during the period of his unconsciousness. Many things were very unexpected to him.

The first was that since he was carried back from the battlefield, he was in a coma for two weeks. Today, he had opened his eyes for the first time.

The second unexpected thing was that during the period, Second Lieutenant Javelin Zhang Tie became well known in the Seventh Regiment of the Iron-Horn Army under the affiliation of Thirty Ninth Division. Even Shwartz, the regimental commander and major general knew of what had happened to him.

During the period Zhang Tie was in a coma, Major General Shwartz had even come here to visit him. In order to cure his wound, Major General Shwartz had also brought a private advanced recovery medicament for him.

The third unexpected thing was that he didn't even have a chance to visit Kalur City before he was forced to leave the frontier battle zone. The hospital he lied in was situated in Blapei, a small city over 120 km behind the battle zone of Kalur. Blapei was previously one of the seventeen cities of the Andaman Alliance, known for its grains and black beer.

The Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division was resting and reorganizing in a battle castle in the frontier. Due to his heavy wounds, there was little chance for him to return to the Iron-Blood Camp any more.

As to his wounds, although the doctors didn't tell Zhang Tie anything about them, he could feel that he was in a very poor condition. Although he had woken up, he still could not move. With a catheter on his p*nis, he felt very uncomfortable. Especially since his hand was still injected with some medical fluid coming down from bottles hanging on a rack. The fluid just entered his body and left through his p*nis, making Zhang Tie feel like a rusted and abandoned part that was being cleaned by engine oil.

Everyday, a young nurse who was responsible for taking care of Zhang Tie would help him turn onto one side so as to massage him. She said this could help dredge up the blood veins in Zhang Tie's back.

It was Zhang Tie's first time enjoying a massage since he was born. However, Zhang Tie didn't feel happy at all, instead, the premonition that there was a big problem with his health became stronger than before.

Zhang Tie was very dejected. The people who could bounce and jump wildly everywhere and could run even faster than wild wolves were most afraid of being sick and just lying on the bed.

The only thing that made Zhang Tie comfortable was that although he was wounded, he could still access that marvelous arched door of the Castle of Black Iron in his mind. Additionally, that golden swirl of spiritual energy in his mind was gradually recovering to its original appearance.

Five days after Zhang Tie woke up, the catheter on his p*nis was finally taken off. At this time, although he still had no strength, he could already support himself against the wall with his hands and get off the bed to take a walk.

On the same day, Zhang Tie finally learn about his condition. It was not a doctor who told him, but a major adjutant of Major General Shwartz who had come here specifically to visit him.

The major adjutant of Major General Shwartz brought an Iron-Blood medal for Zhang Tie, an order of commendation promoting him to the rank of first lieutenant, and news that Zhang Tie was most afraid of hearing.

"I'm sorry, First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, by the diagnosis of the best doctors in our army, you will most likely be unable to return to the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division anymore. General Shwartz appreciates your dauntless performance on the battlefield very much. As you cannot go to the battlefield anymore due to your health problems, major general has dispatched you to the logistics department of our army and arranged an easy clerical work for you. After your wounds recover, you can go report to the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army in Blapei."

Zhang Tie's face turned totally pale.

Chapter 216: The Alleged Life Or Death

Anyone else with Zhang Tie's wounds would have been long dead. By the time Zhang Tie was hurriedly sent to a field hospital on the frontier by military officers and common soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp, he had 186 wounds and 47 fractures. After being hit by the LV 8 sky battle qi, his guts were all heavily wounded. Even the amount of blood he had lost on the way would have brought two lives to an end.

The moment a doctor of the field hospital caught sight of Zhang Tie, he didn't even give him a second glance. After single one at his thoroughly broken imperial Sharp-Arrow Type-B light lieutenant armor, he had just shaken his head and told those military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp who had sent Zhang Tie here, "This person is dead, no need to save him any more."

Finally, once a great amount of field doctors were threatened by the military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp with sabers to their necks they started working on Zhang Tie.

It was a miracle that he was still not dead. After that, he was transferred to Blapei behind the frontier.

However, there were no more miracles for Zhang Tie. A broken earthen jar would never regain its original look, even if it was repaired. Would be unable to hold the items that it had once contained.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's body was like that earthen jar which

was fixed. His bones, guts, muscles, channels, and veins had suffered irreversible wounds. In the future, even though no scars were left on his skin, Zhang Tie would never be the same as before, as that invisible damage not only completely destroyed his cultivation but also would leave a lot of painful aftermath.

Zhang Tie's attending doctor told him that he might feel very uncomfortable and greatly pained in many places when the season changed in the future. He told him to pay more attention to his health. When he grew older, after 40 years old, these aftermath would show even more.

'Am I good for nothing now?'

It was actually very easy to test this conclusion. When Zhang Tie could walk, he attempted to sense and polish his burning points.

His head and p*nis were not heavily wounded while the golden swirl of spiritual energy still existed in his mind, the fact which made Zhang Tie feel very lucky.

The Shrine burning point and the three burning points on his spine were as if they had not been ignited at all. Zhang Tie couldn't feel them at all. When he forcefully moved his spiritual energy down towards the burning points in his body, that wisp of spiritual energy dispersed in his body the moment it left his head. No matter how many times he tried, compared to the past when he polished his burning points, this sense of dispersing spiritual energy made him so uncomfortable that he almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

In the past, Zhang Tie felt like his body was a water pipe. The spiritual energy was the water flowing in the water pipe while the burning points were the land to be irrigated. During cultivation, you needed to introduce the water to the burning points through the water pipe. However, this time, Zhang Tie felt that his body was not a water pipe any more, but instead a bamboo-woven basket. It was covered with holes. No matter how much water was poured into this basket, all of it would leak out. You could not use a bamboo basket to irrigate the land at all.

For several days, Zhang Tie dried all of his spiritual energy, but failed to turn the bamboo basket into a water pipe. He could not bring even a drop of his spiritual energy onto his burning points.

He gradually lost hope. The huge and proud spiritual energy in his mind could only be used to practice "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus" now. Even after activating the Trouble-Reappearance Fruits, he was given an alert that his health couldn't bear the spiritual impact from Trouble-Reappearance Fruits. Therefore, they could not be used either.

Zhang Tie felt that he had suddenly become a penniless beggar from a billionaire. If his spiritual energy could not even be used to ignite his Shrine burning point, what could it be used for?

'Is there truly no other way?' Zhang Tie asked himself.

'No, it's not the moment to despair yet.'

A bright light flashed across his mind. He still had the Castle of Black Iron and that marvelous small tree.

At this time, the two items were his final hope that kept him from collapsing spiritually.

After many experts' diagnosis, the hospital's conclusion was that Zhang Tie could only be a commoner who had not ignited Shrine burning points at all. In this age, this conclusion meant that Zhang Tie was a disabled man from then on.

A commoner who hadn't even ignited his Shrine burning point. He would not be able to cultivate, fight, or run as fast as wind with endless strength, neither would he be able to wave that "Man's Certificate" and "Woman's Excellence". He could not even do heavy labor. Any LV 2 warrior could easily take care of ten Zhang Tie. In the Iron-Horn Army, to tell the truth, Zhang Tie was not even qualified to be the lowest-ranked cannon fodder.

Therefore, Major General Shwartz dispatched Zhang Tie to the Logistics Department and arranged a civilian's post for him.

On the fifth day of being able to use a crutch to walk, he was out walking in the garden, supported by a nurse. When he returned to his ward, he saw Reinhardt, Guderian, Liu Xing, and some other military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp waiting for him.

"Boss!"

At the sight of them, Zhang Tie became very excited.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming back, all the military officers waiting in the ward revealed smiles and surrounded Zhang Tie.

"How's your body?" Reinhardt patted Zhang Tie's shoulders with a wisp of tiredness at his eye corners.

"Not bad, I can walk now." Saying this, Zhang Tie looked around the military officers in the ward as he failed to see some familiar faces, especially that generous bald tough guy. Zhang Tie's heart suddenly pounded. "Where's First Lieutenant Freo?"

After asking this, Zhang Tie cast a glance over them and noticed that their smiles lacked the joy and passion that they usually had. The moment they heard the name Freo, everybody's smiles faded away.

"Freo sacrificed that night!" Major Guderian answered Zhang Tie in a low voice.

"How could that be?"

Zhang Tie couldn't believe that. How could that first lieutenant who waved his double axes and was as fierce as a tiger have sacrificed himself? Zhang Tie remembered that after he threw out his last javelin to kill the flute-blowing guy, he could still hear Freo's tiger-like howls on the battlefield. At that moment, the Black Feathers Regiment had already become chaotic. As Freo was

still alive before this chaos, how could he have died after that.

"After you were heavily wounded and fell to the ground, in order to save you, First Lieutenant Freo rushed into the encirclement of Black Feathers Regiment. Because our enemy greatly outnumbered us and Freo wanted to protect you, when he picked you up and prepared to retreat, he held back many attacks for you..." First Lieutenant explained to Zhang Tie what had happened in a hoarse voice.

At that moment, Reinhardt, who had wanted to save Zhang Tie, was stopped by some high-ranked enemy fighters, as well as gotten surrounded by many common Black Feathers soldiers. Therefore, he could not break through the encirclement for quite some time. As Black Feathers Regiment was determined to kill Zhang Tie, the other members of the Iron-Blood Camp could not break through either. Without Freo, Zhang Tie would have definitely been slashed into flesh paste.

Freo sacrificed himself for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's tears came down in streaks down his cheeks...

"Don't be sad, from the moment you caught up with the train in Blackhot City, everybody in the Iron-Blood Camp was ready to sacrifice themselves for you like how you were ready to sacrifice yourself for everybody in the Iron-Blood Camp!"

Hearing Reinhardt's words, Zhang Tie burst into tears like a kid.

...

After the military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp came for visit him, Zhang Tie learned of the enemy's plot. That day, all the booty of the Iron-Blood Camp had been sprayed with a strange medicament by the Sun Dynasty, including weapons, armors, and coins. People could neither smell nor see that medicament, but an animal called black fox fed by Sun Dynasty could smell it. With a lot of common soldiers as bait, Sun Dynasty allowed Iron-Blood Camp to expose the location of its wolf den by winning a great amount of booty.

After learning of their encampment, the enemy then dispatched the most terrifying Black Feathers Regiment, and gathered a superior force of that many times outnumbered what the Iron-Blood Camp could muster, wanting to totally clear it out from that battle zone through a raid at midnight.

However, the raid failed and gradually turned into an common melee and finally evolved into a deep-night bloody battle between the elites of the Iron-Horn Army and Brilliant Feathers. In this bloody battle, the Iron-Blood Camp had lost more than 600 people while over 1700 people of the Black Feathers Regiment were killed after being chased down by the Iron-Blood Camp for over 20 km.

Given the numbers, the last winner in that battle was the Iron-Blood Camp. The total number of the soldiers in the Black Feathers Regiment—fed and trained with some secret medicament and other special methods—was less than 10,000 people in the whole Brilliant Feathers Army. And Iron-Blood Camp had killed 1/5 of the all the soldiers of the undying regiment that night. For a fight

between two regiments, this was a huge victory for the Iron-Blood Camp.

If Zhang Tie hadn't killed that Double-Moon Muling in the black robe who had commanded the Black Feathers Regiment by blowing the flute, the final outcome would have definitely been that the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division wouldn't exist any more, although over 1700 people of the Black Feathers Regiment were killed this time.

Judging by his military exploits, Zhang Tie was absolutely qualified to be promoted to be a first lieutenant. Nobody would speak ill of him about this promotion.

If Zhang Tie was the youngest second lieutenant of No. 39 Division before, he was now the youngest first lieutenant of the Iron-Horn Army.

Now, the Iron-Blood Camp was almost paralyzed, having suffered a great structural loss. It would take at least 3-4 months' of rest and reorganization for it to return to the battlefield again. For such an elite troop, it was not as easy as just piling up a number of people to recover its combat effectiveness.

"No matter what, you have to live well. Even if you cannot go back to the battlefield, you have to live well for Freo!" Reinhardt told Zhang Tie before he left.

Zhang Tie knew that his life was no longer only his own, but also Freo's. Therefore, no matter what, even if he was disabled, he had

to live well and brilliantly, not only for himself but also for Freo...

In the first month since coming to Kalur battle zone, Zhang Tie experienced four things: became the "One-Hundred People Down"; was promoted to first lieutenant; was disabled; and was dispatched away from the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division...

During this month, Zhang Tie, age fifteen, most importantly understood the truth of life—men should be born as summer flowers and die as spring thunders...

Chapter 217: First Lieutenant Director

When the skirmishes in Kalur escalated, Blapei, which was only over 100 km away from Kalur, became a huge frontier material transfer station. The logistics headquarter of the entire Iron-Horn Army was also set in here.

On the ninth day since Zhang Tie woke up on the sickbed, he finally left the hospital. At this moment, half a month had passed since he had left Blackhot City. During this period, Zhang Tie had experienced a life or death situation.

When he left the hospital, if not for his luggage brought by Reinhardt and the other military officers when they came to visit him, he might not have been able to find even a set of clothes after taking off his hospital gown.

Because he had not gone to report to the logistics department, when Zhang Tie left the hospital, he was still wearing the old dark red military uniform of second lieutenant. As he had just recovered from his wounds, he still looked a bit pale and thin. Previously, for the convenience of treatment, his hair had been shaved as well. It had just sprouted out some fresh hair these days. Without the military uniform, Zhang Tie looked like a malnourished adolescent.

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie gave a bitter smile. He then recalled something and immediately felt dejected.

After standing outside the hospital alone for a long time, Zhang

Tie stopped a carriage.

"Where are you going, sir?"

The carter glanced over Zhang Tie with a pair of uncertain eyes as Zhang Tie's age was really not in line with his military uniform.

"Do you know the logistics headquarters of the Iron-Horn Army?"

Zhang Tie threw his luggage onto the carriage. As to the 10 kg-odd luggage, Zhang Tie had held it like holding a hair before, however, now, Zhang Tie found it heavy after barely carrying it from the hospital ward to here. He felt that he was even weaker than a common 15-year-old adolescent.

"Got it! It's the previous parliament building in Blapei!"

After replying, the carter shook the rein and started the carriage.

The carriage was half-open. Sitting inside, Zhang Tie watched the city out of curiosity.

Although the fighting was just over 100 km away from Blapei, he could see no intense atmosphere here at all, instead, this city was filled with sense of relaxation. Besides the soldiers in military uniforms, commoners were walking at medium speed through the streets.

What impressed Zhang Tie were the alehouses on both sides of the streets. On the way, every dozen of meters or so, he would see an alehouse's brand waving in the air on the roadside. Although the beer business sharply declined due to the war between the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty, he could still see people sitting inside even in daytime.

As it was located in the plains, there were no sharp magical beasts around the city. Additionally, because Blapei was in the middle of some cities, he had no city walls; neither did it have any army. The moment the Iron-Horn Army drove in here, Blapei's parliament had already raised its blue-green flag, soon after which, they declared disbandment. The only vigilante group of this city followed the in the same path.

After that, the parliamentary and the vigilante group's members pretended that the parliament had never existed before and all went back home to find their own moms. Therefore, when the Iron-Horn Army occupied this city, they could not find a single person responsible it.

Residents here seemed to only do two things in their whole lives—farming and drinking beer. Even if the Iron-Horn Army arrived, their rhythm still remained unchanged. They felt that the war between the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty had nothing to do with them, just as if it was happening on another galaxy.

When Zhang Tie was in Blackhot City, he had heard of such a bizarre city in the Andaman Alliance. This time, after a small circle around the city, Zhang Tie realized that the legends about Blapei

were not exaggerated at all.

While the carter was driving the carriage, he took out his flagon to drink beer. Sitting behind the carter, Zhang Tie could also smell the fragrance of wheat drifting from the beer.

"Sir, do you want a try? This is brewed by my wife!"

The carter passed the flagon to Zhang Tie very enthusiastically.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to refuse, for some reason he suddenly recalled Freo. Beer, cigars, and women were the favorites of that iron-tower like bald tough man. Zhang Tie then felt a faint stab inside...

Taking the flagon, he started to mindlessly gulp it down. Seeing this, the carter revealed a big smile.

When the carriage arrived at the former parliament building of Blapei, Zhang Tie was already covered with the taste of beer. The price was only 20 copper coins; however after Zhang Tie praised his beer, the carter felt very proud and didn't even intend to take his cash. But Zhang Tie pulled out a silver coin and said it was for his beer. The carter then happily took it and drove away.

In Blapei, if you praised the beer brewed by a person's family members and wanted to pay for it, you were expressing your largest compliment to that person.

Besides some rich people who were sparsely spread through the the various castles in the city, there were few skyscrapers in Blapei. All buildings were lower than ten floors. The alleged former parliament building of Blapei was only a 6-floor building. Standing before it, Zhang took a good look at it. He felt that the exceptional dome in the middle of the roof was really like a huge beer barrel.

Compared to the sluggish pedestrians on the streets, the outside of the former parliament building, which was now the logistics headquarter of Iron-Horn Army, brought him an intense sense of war.

Lifting his luggage, Zhang Tie presented his former military officer's certificate to the entrance guard before entered the building. A young second lieutenant was really trivial in the logistics headquarters of Iron-Horn Army. Few of the to-and-fro walking soldiers would cast a second glance over Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie asked a soldier in the building about the location of the personnel affairs department. He then came to the office on the third floor of the building.

The door was open while someone was working inside, so Zhang Tie walked directly in.

"Hello, can I help you?"

The moment Zhang Tie entered, a 20-odd female military officer ranked second lieutenant had walked towards him as she asked.

"I'm here to report for duty; here's my certificate! "

Zhang Tie gave his military officer certificate to her.

Taking the certificate, the female military officer glanced at it and immediately revealed a faint expression of amazement.

"Are you that military officer from the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division?"

"If there was nobody else dispatched here, I think so!"

"Fine, take a seat for a moment please. Your personnel affairs archives have been transferred here several days ago. I'll go report to Colonel Scharo as he had told me that if you came here to report, he wanted to see you!"

"Fine, thanks!"

After saying that, the female second lieutenant immediately left.

Zhang Tie couldn't help but focus on her butt. Seeing that tightening and raising butt under the dark red military officer dress, Zhang Tie's heart slightly pounded twice.

He had not tasted a woman for over a month. Now, as he had just recovered a bit, he instinctively started to pay attention to women

beside him. However, thinking of his physical condition, Zhang Tie could only give a bitter smile. Donder said, as a man, unless you're dead, you would take conquering women as the undertaking of your whole life.

Zhang Tie also realized his own change. After becoming a real man, Zhang Tie had started to pay attention to different parts on women. Even if facing the same woman, he seemed to also have a very different sense of her now.

He didn't know whether each man would experience the same process on the way to maturity, but these couple of days, he usually thought about those crazy days with the girls in Blackhot City and the enchanting night with Pandora before he left.

In the following half an hour, Zhang Tie completed all the report formalities and saw Colonel Scharto, who was responsible for personnel affairs in the logistics headquarters of the Iron-Horn Army. Colonel Scharto, who was already over 60 years old, treated Zhang Tie in a very mild way.

During their conversation, he put it straight that he already knew of Zhang Tie's heroic actions in the Iron-Blood Camp. For his bravery and military exploits, he appreciated him very much. No matter how poor his health was at present, as a military officer of the Norman Empire who had been awarded with the Iron-Blood medal, he would never be allowed to suffer from any injustice in both the Iron-Horn Army and the Norman Empire.

In the end, Colonel Scharto told Zhang Tie that there were some positions that were suitable to him in this division's logistics

headquarters. Zhang Tie could choose the one that he liked the most.

Zhang Tie knew that he must be receiving the special treatment from Colonel Scharto so as to give face to General Schwartz, the regimental commander of the Seventh Regiment and the whole Iron-Blood Camp.

"Colonel, for the concrete work schedule, I have no other opinions and requirements. I know General Schwartz dispatched me here to let the logistics department take care of me, but I'm not qualified to assume any important position based on my physical condition and abilities. If it's alright, please arrange an easier position for me so that I won't make too many mistakes, regardless of the job or the treatment!"

Zhang Tie's calm and modesty left a good impression on Colonel Scharto. Generally speaking, soldiers of the Iron-Blood Camp who left the battlefield due to wounds would always have a bad temper. According to Colonel Scharto's experience, all the military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp who had killed numerous enemy soldiers on the battlefields were arrogant and unyielding.

It was also not Colonel Scharto's first time having contact with military officers of the Iron-Blood Camp; however, few young military officers made him comfortable like Zhang Tie when talking with them. As the logistics department was the most profitable one, many retired military officers tried everything to grab the position with the most profit and power. In contrast, Zhang Tie's attitude for retirement was highly praised by Colonel Scharto.

'I will not let such an innocent person suffer a loss!' he mumbled inside.

Therefore, after thinking for a few seconds, Colonel Scharto arranged a position for Zhang Tie, the full title of which was the Director of No. 9 Equipment Administration, Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army.

Chapter 218: Re-Entering The Castle Of Black Iron

When Zhang Tie left the logistics headquarters, he had received a new military officer's certificate. One more star was on the epaulet of his military uniform, indicating that Second Lieutenant Zhang Tie had been officially promoted to First Lieutenant Zhang Tie. Additionally, he got two months' pay and provisions. Along with various subsidies for his battle wounds, he received as much as 71 gold coins. Plus his private booty from the battlefield, Zhang Tie's purse, which had shrunk when he left Blackhot City, slightly bulged again this time as he had more than 100 gold coins in total.

As an old Chinese saying went, "Real men should not have no power while average men should not have no money", Zhang Tie felt that he was born to be an average man as he didn't care about power at all. Who knows why that was so, maybe because he was used to being poor. But once alive and having some gold coins in his pockets, he would felt reassured.

Colonel Scharto assigned a major from the Personnel Affairs Department to drive Zhang Tie around the place where he would work so as to help him recognize the road.

The alleged "No. 9 Equipment Administration, Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army" was actually a maintenance plant in the logistics base in the east of Blapei City. As Blapei had no city wall, Zhang Tie didn't know whether this logistics base was in Blapei or outside it.

This plant was not desolate for Zhang Tie could see a wide area of

cornfields surrounding it and a neighboring village. Strictly speaking, this plant seemed to be in the the suburbs. Close to this plant was a large-scale, airship landing field and several material warehouses.

There were many soldiers walking to-and-fro, as well as military vehicles, on the surrounding roads.

The major task of No. 9 Equipment Administration, Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch of the Logistics Department of Iron-Horn Army was the maintenance of Logistics Department's vehicles, so the plant occupied at least [10 mu](#). Half of it was made up of semi-closed sheds and garages temporarily built using steel frame and steel tiles. Many vehicles were parked inside them for maintenance.

Besides Zhang Tie, there were in total 136 people in the No. 9 Equipment Administration, Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army, most of whom were non-commissioned technical officers. Before Zhang Tie arrived here, the position of the director had already been vacant for more than five months, however, everything here was in normal operation, leaving no fault at all.

As the former director suffered from some health problems and had reached the age of retirement, he had retired before the Iron-Horn Army had attacked the Andaman Alliance.

After acquiring the relevant information, Zhang Tie understood that this position was especially provided for the aged. A first lieutenant would not be requested to repair vehicles. Additionally,

no big problems would happen in this plant as it was related to repairs.

Colonel Scharto had really arranged a good position for Zhang Tie.

The major from the Personnel Affairs Department directly summoned all the 136 people in the maintenance shop to greet Zhang Tie. Among them, the one with the highest rank was second lieutenant, namely the vice director. Of course, he became Zhang Tie's assistant here. Hearing the major introducing Zhang Tie's current status, the second lieutenant looked a bit weird.

"First Lieutenant Zhang Tie was previously a military officer of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division. Because of excellent military exploits, he has been awarded with the Iron-Blood medal only half a month after arriving to the Kalur battle zone!"

Noticing the weird expressions, the major only added one sentence that immediately made all the 136 people look solemn. Upon hearing that last sentence, many people were shocked and silently swallowed their saliva. At the same time, their eyes filled with respect.

Everybody in the Iron-Horn Army understood that there were only one kind of people in the Iron-Blood Camp who were awarded with the Iron-Blood medals—terrifying butchers who killed numerous enemies on the battlefield. However, this person had received an Iron-Blood medal only half a month after he came to the Kalur battle zone, which meant that this person had killed no less than the number of people standing right here in only half a

month.

Thinking of this, many people started to feel a shocking, icy killing intent coming from this young first lieutenant who had a poor face. This killing intent was the qi as fierce as tigers and wolves which had been accumulated through killing numerous people. All the tough Iron-Blood fighters would reveal such a killing intent.

After introducing Zhang Tie to them, that major turned to Zhang Tie and asked him, "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, what do you want to say to them?"

Zhang Tie glanced at that second lieutenant with a bulging abdomen whose eyes were still filled with awe.

"Since everything has run well before I came here, I hope it will continue do so from now on as well. You can do your own work now..."

Seeing them all leaving, that major smiled and talked to Zhang Tie. "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, I can see it, Colonel Scharto appreciates you very much, that's why he arranged this position for you. Once you stay longer, you will find this position very interesting!"

The major's words were full of hints, which moved Zhang Tie a bit. However, it was not the right time to ask for the details now. He had to first find settlement.

...

Seeing that major driving away, the 30-odd second lieutenant officer with a bulging abdomen revealed a big smile towards Zhang Tie. At the sight of the luggage in Zhang Tie's hand, he hurriedly stretched out his hand, intending to take it for him.

At first glance, Zhang Tie recalled the booth owners in the railway station's flea market in Blackhot City.

Noticing that the guy wanted to flatter him, Zhang Tie didn't refuse him, instead, he straight away threw his luggage into the man's hand. Never be too polite to this kind of person; if this kind of person flattered you, you should be polite to him. Otherwise it'd be similar to a gentleman showing his courtesy to you and you spitting saliva in his face.

As expected, seeing Zhang Tie directly throwing his luggage to him, that person's smile became even more enthusiastic than before, and even the oily gleam on his drunkard's nose became brighter.

"Second lieutenant, what's your name?"

"Director, I'm Pi Ping!" After giving Zhang Tie a careful look, he added, "Would you want to take a round or go to the office to check the files and account books?"

"No need, I'm very satisfied with everything here. As I've just left

the hospital today, I have no place to live. You find a vehicle and show me around to seek for a residence first!"

After staying in the hospital for such a long time, taken care of by people all the time, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to check the Castle of Black Iron.

Hearing Zhang Tie's order, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping became happier and hurriedly took Zhang Tie's luggage, walking away. "Wait a minute please, I will go get a car!"

As the whole Blapei had almost no military camps, all the available places and public facilities across the city had been occupied by the Iron-Horn Army for free. Except for No. 21 Division which occupied a military camp in Blapei and had some military officers allocated with a dorm, most of the other military officers of the Logistics Department had to rent a house by themselves. As Blapei was already the territory of the Norman Empire, of course, the soldiers of the Norman Empire could not disturb civilians and plunder their properties.

In less than half a minute, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping had already parked a Mountain Cat SUV before Zhang Tie. Opening the car's door, Zhang Tie sat down on the passenger seat. After that, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping drove out of the plant.

"Later, I will not usually come here; everything in No. 9 Equipment Administration runs like before. The major who just left here told me that the director position is very interesting. So you shall continue to deal with everything here for me. I don't want to make you lose your fun. Neither do I want to be treated as

an idiot. The moment I saw you, I knew you were clear. Don't let me down!"

Sitting in the car, Zhang Tie put it straight to Second Lieutenant Pi Ping. After staying in the Iron-Blood Camp for a while, he had no mood to waste time on such trivial things. Only people who had experienced life or death situation understood that for a soldier, with the exception of life or death situations, everything else was bullsh*t.

Not having imagined that Zhang Tie would be that straightforward, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping's hand slightly quivered before recovering its composure. He even became a bit thrilled.

"Trust me, director, I won't let you down!"

"That's fine!"

"Director, what kind of residence do you want? I've stayed here for several months and have become very familiar with all the streets and alleys!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping continued enthusiastically.

"As I'm not well, I need to stay tranquil during this period. Therefore, the place should not be too noisy..."

"Oh, I know a place that you may like..."

...

More than ten minutes later, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping brought Zhang Tie to a riverside in the north of Blapei, to a block with a relaxed atmosphere to it. That block's roads were paved with fine pebbles. On both sides of the roads stood many 3-4 story civilian houses and buildings. These houses and buildings were totally different from those in Blackhot City.

This place was truly much more tranquil than the downtown, and with a nice environment.

The moment Zhang Tie's car drove into the block and started to slow down, some 8-9 old kids started to chase after the SUV without any fear of strangers.

Because there had been no casualties in Blapei when it was occupied by the Iron-Horn Army and the good deeds of soldiers of the Norman Empire had won them good reputation, the civilians in Blapei didn't fear the figures in dark red military uniforms.

"Sir, you only need to give Rabby some copper coins, I will tell you everything you want to know!" A 8-9 old boy with freckles on his face ran close to Zhang Tie, chasing after the SUV while he introduced himself.

Zhang Tie told Pi Ping to park the car. Soon after the car was parked, Rabby also stopped running.

"I want to rent a house, do you know where can I get a proper one?" Zhang Tie asked the boy.

"Sir, I know everything here. Besides some beer hotels, there are more than 20 houses for rent in the neighboring blocks. Everyone would be very happy to rent their house to a generous military officer of the Norman Empire..."

Zhang Tie pulled out a silver coin and flicked it towards the boy. The boy called Rabby had a nice catch.

"Get in the car!"

Zhang Tie glanced at the back seat. The boy called Rabby then jubilantly jumped inside under the admiration filled eyes of his pals.

...

As Zhang Tie thought that beer hotels would be filled with people from all walks of life, he finally chose a rather tranquil house whose owners were also of a simple family background.

It was a four-story house. The owners were an old couple of more than 60 years old. They had no offspring and lived on the first floor. The second one was rented out to a couple with a 4-5 old son. It was said that on the third floor lived a woman, and the fourth one was vacant, therefore, Zhang Tie lived in the fourth floor.

The rooms on there were well cleaned by the owners. Everything was well matched: two bedrooms, one parlor, one kitchen, and a washroom. As the house was made of bricks and stones, there was also a fireplace in the parlor where you could light a fire on cold days.

The rent for the fourth floor was 16 silver coins per month, not including the water rate. Second Lieutenant Pi Ping strove to spend two gold coins for Zhang Tie at once for one year's rent and the water rate. After Zhang Tie decided to live in here, the vice-president drove the car and bought many daily-use goods for him. He was as solicitous as an order.

The entire afternoon after he left the hospital, Zhang Tie was always busy: reporting for duty, arranging work for his subordinates, and renting a house. When it was the time for supper, he ate a roasted beefsteak with Second Lieutenant Pi Ping in a hotel nearby. When Zhang Tie came back to the house he had rented, it was already dark.

A melodious sound of violin drifted from the owners' room. There was no way to know who was playing it. A kid's cries drifted from the second floor while the tenant on the third floor was not there.

Going back to his residence on the fourth floor, Zhang Tie didn't lit up the lamps. After locking the door and pulling the curtains down, he sat down on the sofa besides the fireplace alone in the parlor.

It had been a very long time since Zhang Tie had felt this tired.

He was very weak, to the point where he would even gasp when he climbed on to the fourth floor. When he finally reached it, Zhang Tie already felt a bit tired. His physical situation was even worse than he had imagined. Even worse than a commoner's. He was not even able to resist the wind, the idiom of not being able to bind a chicken being very proper to describe him.

As he had not entered the Castle of Black Iron for more than one month, even if he was able to enter it right now, Zhang Tie became slightly hesitant and afraid. He was a bit contradictory inside. For him at this moment, the small tree in the Castle of Black Iron carried all of his hopes.

Zhang Tie knew that it was very hilarious to count on the hope for solution on that small tree whenever he met a problem. It was almost visionary and foolish to solve problems that way. Because it was karma on what fruit the small tree would bear. It would never bear a fruit according to his own demand for no reason.

Zhang Tie only hoped that the small tree could give him a chance to recover.

After sitting in the pitch-dark house for a long time, Zhang Tie finally gritted his teeth. 'I've already died one time, nothing is more terrifying than death.'

After locking on that marvelous arch door in his mind, with a slight shake, Zhang Tie disappeared from the dark parlor.

——Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the

Castle of Black Iron!

Mu is an ancient Chinese unit of land. It translates to around 1 mu = 666.67 square meters, so the plant is around 6666.7 square meters in size.

Chapter 219: Fruit Of Judgment

By now, the inside of the Castle of Black Iron had become verdant. Entering it after a month and a half, Zhang Tie felt like he was in the suburban area of Blackhot City. The feeling was especially brought out by the two buildings that he had built near the small tree. They really gave him a sense of wasteland reclamation in the wild.

After loading off his burden inside, Zhang Tie treated himself as a bachelor with a cheap life. He took a deep breath and immediately thought it through. No matter what, as long as he was still alive and could enter the Castle of Black Iron, he could still use it to do a lot of things such as helping his beloved people, even if his cultivation had been completely disabled.

With this mentality, the following dialog boxes that popped out didn't shock him too much.

——Because the energy maintenance system of Castle Lord had been severely damaged, the Leakless Fruit could not collect energy. The Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree will terminate the bearing of Leakless Fruits.

——Castle Lord, because your bones, muscles, veins, channels, as well as your guts, had been heavily wounded and have not yet recovered, your automatic recovery function was at the edge of collapse. Your physical condition didn't even meet the minimum conditions to form Iron-Body Fruit. The Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree will terminate the bearing of Iron-Body Fruit.

——Based on the above reasons, because your body could not bear the renewal and the expansion of your life energy from

Wild Wolf Seven-Strength Fruit, Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree will terminate the bearing of Wild Wolf Seven-Strength Fruit. Based on the same reasons, the Trouble-Reappearance Fruits will also be unavailable.

——Special alert: Castle Lord, until your health and life energy completely recover, the effects of the first Toxin-Resistance Fruit that you ate will be reduced by 92%.

The continual dialog boxes and the content inside them brought Zhang Tie a sense of being peeled off and turning from a rich man to a beggar. The price for joining the Kalur battle was so huge that he couldn't stand it.

After slightly recovering his composure, Zhang Tie touched the management panel of Castle of Black Iron to check the current basic attributes.

- Castle of Black Iron
- Length: 1 Krosa
- Width: 1 Krosa
- Aura value: 89713
- Merit value: 32135
- Basic energy storage: 712
- Special output: basic aura yeast.

The growth of aura value points was within Zhang Tie's expectation. The basic energy storage of 712 remained unchanged since he had come back from the survival training. What really startled Zhang Tie though were the merit value points. He remembered that when he checked them last time, they were just a

bit over 6000. How could they increase by so much?

Zhang Tie opened the log on merit value points to check inside carefully. When the first evolved and mutated living beings "Basic Aura Yeast" formed in the Castle of Black Iron, because he killed a number of scumbags in the prison of Blackhot City, Zhang Tie's merit value points had surged to more than 6000. After that, he didn't check the merit value points any more. Based on his experiences, after he donated to the orphanage twice, his merit value points should have grown.

But he hadn't made a point to check it for a long time.

For the first donation, he spent more than 20 gold coins to buy a truck of food which won him 876 merit value points; for the second donation, he directly gave the orphanage 200 gold coins and won himself 3617 merit value points. Additionally, when he sent rice soup to the orphanage and donated 10 copper coins at the beginning, he had won more than 30 merit value points.

According to the exchange ratio, it seemed that the merit value points could not be equally exchanged by the items or money he donated to the orphanage. There was a sophisticated karma between his donations and the merit value points as payment. Based on the exchange ratio, the 10 copper coins and that rice soup he had donated when he was in the poorest situation brought him more merit value points.

Since he had no idea how that worked, Zhang Tie didn't bother to think about this question any more. What really caught his attention were the two messages after.

"On August 22, 889th year of Black Iron Calendar, Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord saved 61 golden uangs who were going to be killed and helped them regain freedom and a new chance at life. As a result, merit value was increased by 286 points."

...

"...Do the righteous thing for the heavens. You killed the Double-Moon Muling of the Sun Dynasty and ended his evil life, sending his evil soul into the darkness, which allowed the mercy of gods to reappear in the world. As a result, merit value was increased by 21018 points in total..."

The first log was really unexpected. Zhang Tie had not imagined that when he killed Samira in the Blackhot City and casually grabbed Master Abyan's uangs which were going to be killed for tests and set them free in mother nature, he would gain some merit value points as payment.

Of course, Zhang Tie was very pleased with these unexpected merit value points.

However, what he hadn't imagined even more was were that the merit value points he gained after killed a muling of the Sun Dynasty would be almost equal to killing 20 of the heinous red-scarf burglars like Huck and Snade. From this, Zhang Tie learned how many bad things those bastard priests and mulings who believed in the Brilliant God of the Sun Dynasty had done.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie let out a long breath. It was worth it to kill such a scumbag and give a chance to survive for his brothers of the Iron-Blood Camp in this battle even if his cultivation base had been fully disabled for it.

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie relaxed.

After shutting off the log windows, Zhang Tie walked towards that small tree. He felt that after killing that scumbag, he would not have only gained merit value points, but also at least a Fruit of Brilliance. According to the tip just now, the Fruit of Brilliance was not included in the fruits that could not be produced on the small tree, which meant that he could still enjoy one kind of fruit.

Before Zhang Tie drew close to the twig where which used to produce the Fruit of Brilliance, he saw a round fruit. It was dark golden with wisps of golden luster on it.

What else if it was not a Fruit of Brilliance?

——Fruit of Brilliance has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

Reading this message, Zhang Tie revealed a wisp of a smile.

He didn't immediately eat it, instead, he moved to the other side of the small tree.

Compared to the twig that bore Fruit of Brilliance, the twigs that bore Leakless Fruits and Iron-Body Fruits were cleared. Additionally, the ripe Leakless Fruits and the unripe Iron-Body Fruit had all disappeared.

Ah!

When Zhang Tie moved to the Fruit of Brilliance to check how much spiritual energy it could bring him, he was stunned. Behind the weird tree leaves of a twig beside the one that used to bear Leakless Fruits, a fruit that Zhang Tie had never seen before was hanging.

It was a weird fruit in the shape of a cross dart. It was all dark, containing a weird tadpole-like rune swimming inside like gathered starlight.

Greatly shocked inside, Zhang Tie stretched his hand toward it.

——Fruit of Judgment has become ripe. This Fruit of Judgment contains a god's rune, the effect of which is to "bind". Usage: Pick and paste it between your eyebrows, then activate with your spiritual energy. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. This fruit can only be activated and integrated by Castle Lord. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

As he read that paragraph, Zhang Tie's hands started to tremble. However, it was not the end.

——The people who profaned celestial beings in the name of celestial beings and those people who did evil things in the name of celestial beings are doomed to be judged. Their existence is the greatest harm to all the beautiful and kind things, and the greatest profanity to gods. Their dirty lives and deeds shall be ended by sabers and swords. This is the condition for bearing a Fruit of Judgment, and the biggest award from gods to a dauntless man who dares to wave his saber towards dark forces. Ah! The brave man who spreads the gods' glorious light over his mother land. Please take this reward and use the strength gifted by it to judge those who profane the gods so as to relieve people's fear about celestial beings. Gods don't need their fear as fear is the food of ghosts. According to the law of creation, the more judgments you make, the more power you will have to judge with.

After reading this paragraph, Zhang Tie immediately understood that, the Brilliant God School was carrying out a very terrifying coercion in the entire Sun Dynasty in terms of people's belief in celestial beings. This coercion was profaning celestial beings in the name of celestial beings. They were doing evil things in the name of celestial beings. In this case, since he killed that Double-Moon Muling in the black robe of the Brilliant God School that night, the Fruit of Judgment's condition was triggered.

Looking at that cross-dart like weird fruit and that weird group of runes composed of tadpoles inside it, a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. He instantly raised his right hand and took off the ring on his right hand.

——Ring of Energy. It can recover your physical strength 4% faster after you use it up, enabling the wearer to be more energetic. This item was made by rune master Andariel.

Although Zhang Tie had not seen a rune item before, the Ring of Energy and that Fruit of Judgment on the twig let him know that all rune items were exceptional, especially the god's rune that fruit on the twig contained; it seemed greater.

There was always a way to survive. In this case, he could still gain such a marvelous fruit, which meant that the small tree considered that he could use this fruit even now. The effect of the god's rune was to "bind", which seemed simple, yet its usage would be unknown until it was used.

When Zhang Tie prepared to pick off this Fruit of Judgment to activate and integrate it, he was stunned when his eyes caught onto a twig in the middle of the small tree. He was immediately overcome with great surprise...

Chapter 220: Redemption

More than a month had passed since the last time he'd entered the Castle of Black Iron. Soon after he did so this time, Zhang Tie found that his cardiac function was facing a severe challenge.

At this moment, his heart kept on fiercely pounding because right on this small tree he found a new fruit. He slightly recovered his composure as he put on his ring of energy onto his right index finger again.

He hadn't noticed the fruit until now because it was really well hidden. Compared to the various fruits that Zhang Tie had gained and seen on the outside twigs, right in the open, this one was more hidden as it was growing on in the middle of the small tree, close to the trunk. If one wasn't observing carefully, it would be almost impossible to see this fruit for it was covered by overlapped tree leaves.

It was a thumb-sized fruit in the shape of a heart, pale green of color, really like a cute peach.

Zhang Tie had never seen this fruit before.

The moment he saw this new fruit, Zhang Tie stretched his hand out to check its attributes like usual.

After slightly moving the two twigs beside the fruit, Zhang Tie put his hand on it.

——Fruit of Redemption. It comes from the strength of golden uangs. Not ripe yet.

Before Zhang Tie could get depressed from what he saw, his heart pounded so heavily that it almost jumped out of his throat when he read the following paragraphs.

——Once this fruit becomes ripe, after eating it, Castle Lord will gain 71.5 kg's strength, namely the weight of your body.

——Fruit of Redemption. It comes from intellectual living beings' appreciation to the one who gave them new life and saved them out from their death situation. Each living being's mood and awareness full of this kind of appreciation will contain great energy, especially when owned by this kind of living being. This great energy will be projected onto the savior through an infinite net and become the key to opening the sealed, precious gene bank of the savior's body. The fire of intelligence, the most remarkable trait of any intellectual beings, can light up and brighten the genes with the same properties on the savior's body and grant the savior with the same ability.

——The one who has benevolence and kindness, you are the existence standing at the peak of intellectual living beings. The God created you based on his own image. Therefore, your body contains everything like the God's. Although you have forgotten that you were great, please don't despise your trivial being now. The karma is absolutely true. If you want to get something, go pay for it as what you had paid will return to you and more. The greatest secret of life is love, which is the answer to everything. Love can open the sealed shackles in your body and liberate you from your trivial consciousness. Finally, you would enter the divine being.

...

Actually, this Fruit of Redemption should have long existed, since after he killed Samira and set free those golden uangs in Blackhot City. However, after killing Samira that day, Zhang Tie had immediately returned to his apartment and entered the Castle of Black Iron to build the two houses. Previously, because he had felt that nothing special had happened in that period, he didn't pay attention to this small tree.

Of course, he had never imagined that that small tree would have produced a marvelous fruit at that time. Therefore, this marvelous Fruit of Redemption had kept growing under the overlapped leaves of the small tree until he found it now.

Fruit of Redemption was not ripe yet. It was not edible now. For some reason, when Zhang Tie read the above paragraphs, his eyes turned wet and he wanted to cry. He had not imagined that such a minor benevolent move of setting those golden uangs free could bring him such a miracle.

Zhang Tie didn't fully understand the above words. However, after he read them, he still bore in mind two key points.

First, because the golden uangs had super great power, after he saved dozens of them, this small tree bore a fruit that could increase his strength.

Second, as many genes inside his body were not activated yet and the key to activating them was redemption, if he saved any living

beings, the life trait of that living being might be passed on to him.

Zhang Tie faintly saw a beacon of hope that might help his body recover. However, he felt a thin curtain between him and this beacon of hope which stopped it from manifesting.

Zhang Tie knew that the thin curtain was his shortage of biology. Even though he knew something, even some secrets, he still could not turn what he had learned into useful knowledge. This was also the weakness of the preliminary education of Blackhot City. People learning there might know something of all common knowledge, yet they would not be deep versed in any of the fields. Sometimes, when he faced some slightly deeper knowledge, Zhang Tie would feel semi-illiterate.

The Fruit of Redemption today simply pushed open a wholly new gate open for Zhang Tie's life. He was filled with appreciation now. This space of the Castle of Black Iron and the small tree showed him the hope to move forward.

Leaving the Fruit of Redemption alone for now, Zhang Tie became a bit thrilled as he circled around the small tree twice. After consideration, he decided to pick Fruit of Brilliance before eating the Fruit of Judgment. The Fruit of Brilliance could still improve his spiritual energy which was still useful for him even now. No matter what, after he increased his spiritual energy, he could always gain a greater strength. After this, he could eat the ripe Fruit of Redemption more easily.

Zhang Tie became a bit curious about the spiritual energy of the black-robed Double-Moon Muling of the Black Feathers Regiment.

Thinking of that person who had blow that weird musical instrument to control those undying monsters, Zhang Tie thought that he might have cultivated his spiritual energy.

After picking the Fruit of Brilliance, Zhang Tie sat down under the tree with legs crossed. He then threw the Fruit of Brilliance into his mouth and broke it with his teeth at once...

Because his health was not as good as before, only after sitting there for more than 20 minutes with his legs crossed, Zhang Tie felt his legs and waist starting to ache. Thankfully, by then, all the spiritual energy in the Fruit of Brilliance had been absorbed by the golden spiritual energy swirl in Zhang Tie's mind. After a rough estimation, Zhang Tie became very excited.

If his spiritual energy was regarded as one before he got the Castle of Black Iron, after the fight in the hidden cell in the prison of Blackhot City along with his cultivation these days, yesterday, his spiritual energy had almost reached 40. However, after eating the Fruit of Brilliance that contained all the spiritual energy of the Double-Moon Muling of the Sun Dynasty, his spiritual energy had immediately surged to 58, an increase of almost a half. As expected, that old guy truly had had a much more powerful spiritual energy than that of commoners.

After eating the Fruit of Brilliance, Zhang Tie slightly moved his numb and stiff body. When he glanced at the ring of energy on his right hand, he became slightly disappointed. As this was a rune item that could help him recover from fatigue 4% faster than before, without it his health would be worse.

Zhang Tie thought of it, unable to wait to pick the small cross-dart like Fruit of Judgment. According to the instructions he had read before, he had to paste that fruit in-between his eyebrows. After that, he would have to slowly inject his spiritual energy that had increased a lot into this bizarre Fruit of Judgment.

For some reason, after he inserted his spiritual energy into the Fruit of Judgment, Zhang Tie only felt that the fruit pasted on his skin of normal temperature was becoming increasingly cooler. Soon after that, the entire fruit seemed become fluid as it started to enter in to his mind, making his entire brain and head feel very comfortable and refreshed. During this period, Zhang Tie felt as if his head had become a sponge that could absorb water as that fruit's juices pushed inside without encountering any obstacles.

Finally, his hand that was put on the fruit started to touch the skin of his forehead. At the same time, that golden spiritual energy swirl in Zhang Tie's mind started to boil up. Its most middle point suddenly formed a weird symbol that Zhang Tie had seen before on the fruit. When that weird symbol appeared there, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy in his mind seemed to cheer up and started to push into that rune with all it had.

While Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was making its way into that weird rune, some information appeared in his mind. He immediately understood everything about that rune.

He knew that rune meant "bind"...

He also knew how to use this god rune.

He knew that the "bind" function of this god rune would directly work on the target person's spirit and awareness. It could temporarily shield and cut the connection between the target's brain and his body. After this connection was cut off, that target's body would remain still, like a machine not yet started or something bound by a rope.

When one third of Zhang Tie's spiritual energy entered that mysterious rune, the god rune suddenly radiated golden rays. As if having been laid like an egg, after the devouring of the spiritual energy, an item in the shape of a chain appeared beside that rune radiating golden rays. After that, it started to rotate around that rune like a snake swimming in water...

——The first binding chain has been formed!

——Starting to form the god rune's binding skill for Castle Lord.

Chapter 221: The Binding Skill

In this age, knowledge was very expensive, which led to the spread of mysterious knowledge from individuals to individuals, and the appearance of private libraries. It was said that before the catastrophe, there were large-scale public library in many cities and regions. Those libraries would always contain tens of thousands, hundreds of thousands of books, or even millions of books. At that time, people could absorb the knowledge that they needed from the sea of knowledge at the cost of little money or none at all. However, in this age, that kind of scene was completely unimaginable.

As far as Zhang Tie knew, there wasn't a single public library in the entire Andaman Alliance, even across the whole Blackson Human Clan Corridor. In this age, all the libraries were private, while all the books were very important personal assets. To manage a private library was the same to managing a plant or a shop as they could all bring you profit.

There were two private libraries in Blackhot City. They were all operated by the families that had once predominated the Coal, Steel, and Iron Federation. Although Zhang Tie stayed in Blackhot City for over ten years, he had not entered them even once. When he had time to visit there, he had no money, while when he had money, he had no time to visit.

For Zhang Tie, the position of the director of No. 9 Equipment Administration could almost be ignored. After seeing the hope of recovery in the Fruit of Redemption, he left his tenement early the next morning. He had a lot of questions and some unclear thoughts in his mind, which all needed to be solved and clearly formed by

knowledge.

If this was Blackhot City and the guy Donder was still there, Zhang Tie would have definitely asked him about all of his questions. However, in Blapei, he knew no one and nobody could solve his problems or enlighten his unclear thoughts.

What could solve his problems and enlighten his unclear thoughts was only knowledge. If he wanted to obtain it, the simplest way was to go to a library. After all, he had enough time to spend there now. Like what was said before the catastrophe, he was going to "charge himself".

Although he had not recovered yet, the ripe Fruit of Brilliance and the unripe Fruit of Judgment made Zhang Tie's spirits rise in the morning once more. He looked energetic as he finally didn't feel like he was too weak to even catch a bound chicken. The god rune's "bind" effect implied that Zhang Tie could protect himself without even relying on his own hands.

After putting on his clothes and cleaning his face and teeth, Zhang Tie left the room. At this moment, he used his spiritual energy to present the list of binding skill's attributes in his mind.

God rune's binding skill!

Rank - preliminary.

The current number/maximum storage number of binding chain - 2/18.

Attack Radius - 17 inch.

Attack Effect - Spiritual attack. It can temporarily cut and

terminate the nerve chain of the opponent's brain, putting a screen between the opponent's brain and its body. The one hit will be stiff all over and unable to move at all.

Applicable Targets - LV 7 fighters and those below, who have the same brain structure as Castle Lord.

The sustainable attacking time of preliminary binding chain is calculated as follows: the spiritual energy attack strength of Castle Lord minus the spiritual attack immunity effect of the opponent. After that, multiply the previous result by ten seconds, namely the basic sustainable time of one preliminary binding chain.

The maximal superposed number of binding chains that can be born by an individual being attacked is three.

These were the attributes of the binding skill after the god rune formed its first binding chain. This skill seemed to be able upgrade.

After Zhang Tie had almost exhausted his spiritual energy last night, the god rune formed two binding chains. Now, the two binding chains were swimming around that god rune like two small snakes in Zhang Tie's mind.

Zhang Tie planned to exert his utmost effort to form all the 18 binding chains in the next few days. That god rune was like a finished factory. As long as Zhang Tie constantly injected his spiritual energy into it, it could process his spiritual energy into binding chains. He estimated that the distance of 17 inches was equal to 7-8 m or so. Needless to say, the target of binding chains should have similar brain structure as Zhang Tie.

For the duration of the attack, after thinking for a while, Zhang Tie finally decided that if the target had not been blessed by some spiritual defense skill or had no similar equipment, its spiritual defense effect would be basically equal to zero. Therefore, this formula was almost simplified to Zhang Tie's spiritual energy divided by the target's spiritual energy and multiplied by ten seconds.

If Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was twice that of the opponent's, the opponent would not move for twenty seconds after being attacked by the binding chain. If Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was thrice that of the opponent, the opponent would not move for 30 seconds after being hit. Similarly, if Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was four times that of the opponent, the opponent would not move for 40 seconds.

For this preliminary binding skill, if Zhang Tie's opponent with the same spiritual energy had not reached LV 8, after being attacked with three binding chains consecutively, that guy would also not move for about half a minute. In this time, even if Zhang Tie's health was in a very poor condition, he could still stab that guy to death with his dagger.

In contrast, if he met a commoner who had almost the same spiritual energy as him at school, with only one binding chain, he would be able to keep him still for 9-10 minutes. Even if the target was Huck or Snade, after being attacked by the binding chain, they would also not be able to move for three minutes.

For spiritual defense, it had to be a rare mysterious knowledge that Zhang Tie had not heard of before. It could never be seen on

commoners.

When Zhang Tie wanted to launch the binding skill, once he gazed at someone, he would be able to do a long-distance attack in a pattern that he couldn't understand. For his current physical condition, this was simply a hidden sharp weapon.

Although this preliminary binding skill only worked on people below LV 7, had very short range, and was far off of he could do with his power and combat effectiveness of when he was healthy, at least this binding skill enabled Zhang Tie to protect himself when he couldn't fight at all.

Feeling like he was "useful" again, Zhang Tie was in a pretty good mood today.

In the early morning, the tenant of the third floor was still not back as her door was still closed. When Zhang Tie came to the second floor, the 20-odd man of the couple was readying himself to leave, seemingly wanting to go to work while the 20-odd women was seeing him off outside the room while pulling a kid. They were bidding farewell to each other.

Right then, as the couple caught sight of Zhang Tie walking downstairs, both of them became slightly amazed. Not until then did they know that the new tenant who had moved in upstairs yesterday was a young military officer of the Norman Empire. Although he looked young, he was already a first lieutenant.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming downstairs, that young woman silently

pulled her kid closer to herself.

Zhang Tie forced out a smile while slightly nodding to them before walking downstairs.

In the early morning, the owners Mr and Mrs Green were watering flowers, grasses, onions, and fiddleheads that they grew for entertainment in the garden outside their residence.

"Good morning..." Zhang Tie greeted the owners of the house.

Mr. Green raised his grass hat to show his courtesy.

...

Leaving the house of Mr and Mrs Green, Zhang Tie came to a tranquil street. After walking through the one meter wide street paved with pebbles for dozens of meters, Zhang Tie arrived at the avenue.

Similar to Blackhot City, when people could not take public transport, most of the commoners in Blapei would then choose carriages to travel around the downtown. This transport, which could provide convenience for people in downtown areas, had an universal name across the Blackson Human Clan Corridor - Horse Taxi.

Seeing a green horse taxi driving past, Zhang Tie hurriedly waved his hand towards the driver before jumping inside.

"Where's the best private library in Blapei?"

"Sir, there's only one private library in Blapei; therefore, no matter what, it is the best one!"

Zhang Tie was somewhat stunned.

"Well, let's go there then!"

"It's not cheap there!" The driver kept driving the carriage while shaking his head. "I really don't understand why people like reading books. Aren't beer and women more interesting than paper that could neither speak nor be eaten?"

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie didn't say anything. This must be different personal pursuits.

...

After more than half an hour, the carriage finally brought Zhang Tie to his destination. After learning about the function of his spiritual energy, he had visualized two 13-column abacuses in his mind at the same time during the journey. He practiced different operations on two abacuses at the same time.

It was hard to say whether it was because of his sharply increased spiritual energy, but when he carried out different operations on

two visualized abacuses, Zhang Tie felt that it went much smoother. The sense of the two abacuses' independence became more clear. Additionally, "interconnected faults" obviously decreased a lot during the calculations.

"Here we are, sir, here is the best private library that five generations of Grant Family has operated in Blapei!"

The horse taxi that carried Zhang Tie parked before a place which looked more luxurious than this city's parliament building.

After paying fifty copper coins, Zhang Tie jumped off the carriage. With his eyes fixed on this seven-story building, Zhang Tie took a deep breath.

'This private library is very large. It should contain a lot of books. I hope it won't disappoint me.'

Like high-end hotels, this private library had a very gorgeous gate. Outside it stood two rows of doormen and armored guards. The entrance was marked with the name of this library—Grant's Library.

This was a library named after its owner's family name.

The library's first floor was an elegant hall with several rest zones. In them stood dozens of rows of cabinets which looked like lockers. Zhang Tie didn't know what they were used for.

The moment he entered through the gate, he saw several plates placed in the most eye-catching place, on which were the terms of service. Besides them there was a board with reading instructions and another with instructions on using bibliographic retrieval. After carefully reviewing the two, Zhang Tie understood what the dozens of cabinets in the rest zones beside the hall were used for—they contained the list with all the books in the library and where each one is placed.

After swearing himself a rustic inside, Zhang Tie came to the bibliographic retrieval zone and started to look for books that he wanted to read. Time reading would be charged, but looking through the list was free.

The bibliographic retrieval in the library contained very sophisticated classifications. Zhang Tie spent a whole hour searching through the complex retrieval catalog cards.

After searching there for quite a while, he took the paper on which he'd copied down a couple retrieval numbers of books that interested him and came to the library's service table. The one standing behind it was a 60-odd man.

After receiving the retrieval numbers, the old man lowered his head and looked behind the counter for a while. Then, some time later, he raised turned back.

"Sir, the books you chose are available now. With the exception of the book 'Initial Exploration of Human Beings' Special Professions in Black Iron Age', 'Gods' Codes', 'Oriental Occultism Phenomena', and 'Water Knows the Answer' are all rare books that

our library purchased from the ruins of the prehistorical human cities. As they're human publications of before the catastrophe, they are in the Human Ruins' Reading Area on the fourth floor.

"The charge of reading on the fourth floor is two gold coins per day. Besides the books on the fourth floor, you can also read the books on the third and second floors. The charge of books on the third floor is sixty silver coins a day. If you want to read books on the third floor, you can not read the books that you chose on the fourth floor today. Can you tell me which floor's books you'd like to read?"

The old man spoke in an inflexible manner.

Hearing his explanation, Zhang Tie almost wanted to swear at him. Although he was much richer than before, he hadn't imagined that it would cost him two gold coins a day to read books on the fourth floor.

'F*ck, this is almost equal to my dad's two-month salary.'

It had cost him only two gold coins to rent Mr and Mrs Green's house for a whole year. Although, Zhang Tie knew that the price of entering private libraries was very expensive, he had never imagined it could be this expensive.

In this age, the price of knowledge was absolutely out of most people's imaginations. With two gold coins, Zhang Tie could only read books for one day in the private library. However, the business time of the library was from 9 am. to 9 pm., which meant

that he could at most read for twelve hours. During the process, he could neither copy nor take photos. He should also wear a pair of gloves and pay for the damages according to preset prices if he made any.

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie swore inside.

He then took out two gold coins. After signing a service contract, he was led into the Human Ruins' Readings Area on the fourth floor.

Zhang Tie had not seen the alleged human ruins of before the catastrophe in his life. He had only heard that most of the ruins were of cities and other regions where many humans lived, crashed by the fragments of the God's Star. They were in a special force field and existence brought about by the fragments of the God's Star. As a result, all the inanimate objects in the ruins still remained unchanged even after one thousand years, as if the catastrophe had happened yesterday.

Driven by a dream of becoming rich overnight after discovering some human ruins of before the catastrophe, numerous pioneers were heading everyday for remote areas on all the continents to explore the wastelands.

Glancing over the books on the shelves in the room that covered less than 500 square meters, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth, swearing to read as much as was the value of two gold coins.

Chapter 222: The Value Of Knowledge

Most of publications before the catastrophe were easy to be identified. The printing skills of people before the catastrophe could not be surpassed by people of today at all. Many books in that age contained delicate images or photos, at the sight of which, people would know which age those particular books belonged to. What concerned that roughly printed book "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus" that Zhang Tie had bought from a roadside booth in the railway station which only had a few pages with no pictures except for an abacus on its cover, Zhang Tie was definitely very lucky to own it.

Consumers who were able to read on the fourth floor were matched with a personal reading room, like a chartered room. When one read on the fourth floor, one should wear a pair of white gloves. In each reading room, there was a serviceman who just watched from the side in case you tried to copy or damage one of these books as valuable as cultural relics. Of course, you could also ask the serviceman to bring you books that you wanted to read.

As a "high-end customer" who paid two gold coins in the library at once, Zhang Tie was also provided with two sumptuous meals, a lunch and a supper. If he was tired, he could also take a rest in the reading room. You could even take a nap on the sofa. The serviceman would also prepare a woolen blanket for you.

However, nobody would feel like sleeping here at the cost of two gold coins which would leave only several hours to read. At least, Zhang Tie would feel great regret if he did that. With the exception of eating lunch and going to the toilet, he was immersed in reading for the entire day. He grit his teeth, wanting to make the two gold

coins cost-efficient.

With sharper spiritual energy, Zhang Tie found that he could read much faster than before. Additionally, his memory had also become very terrifying. He skimmed through the pages. He could read ten lines with only one glance, and it would take him only a bit more than ten seconds to finish reading a page.

Even with such an amazing speed, Zhang Tie found that he could still clearly remember all the content on the pages. This time he found found another usage for his sharp spiritual energy besides remembering the sizes of the girls of the Rose Association.

The fact was that Zhang Tie's two gold coins were very cost-efficient. In over ten hours, he gained a lot of knowledge and information from the books.

From the book "Gods' Codes" written by a geneticist before the catastrophe, Zhang Tie learned what human DNA was and the differences between human DNA and other living beings' DNAs. Additionally, he came to understand that millions of his gene fragments were not activated yet, which accounted for above 98% of his total gene fragments. During the very long period before the catastrophe, as no discovery was made on these gene fragments, they were taken as useless "waste genes". However, the author of "Gods' Codes" firmly believed that the creator would not just put so many "wastes" into human body for no reason.

As a geneticist, after dozens of years' research, the author found that the alleged "waste genes" in human body were not useless; instead, as their coded structures were too weird, they were not

activated yet. After many years' research, the author also discovered that among the gene fragments that were not activated yet, there seemed to be weird codes that enabled people to survive in more special and extreme environments...

In the end of the book, the author of "Gods' Codes" also posed a puzzling presumption and prediction that if all the gene fragments in human body were activated, humans' DNA structure would totally change from double-spiral structure to 12-spiral structure. Maybe the alleged God's DNA was in a 12-spiral structure.

Why not in 11-spiral structure or 13-spiral structure or other spiral structures? Because basically everything was composed of energy of different frequencies. The whole universe is a huge acoustic generator that can perform all the the sounds with different frequencies. The frequencies and sounds performed by this acoustic generator can not be perfectly harmonious and balanced without being evolved from the twelve tone equal temperament of the music theory. Therefore, according to the author's presumption, the 12-spiral DNA structure is in line with the essence of the universe. This is a structure that can satisfy one's will at any place in this universe.

After reading this book, Zhang Tie recalled a human body's description that he had read in the Castle of Black Iron last night—"your body contains everything like the God's". Zhang Tie felt like he understood something now. Although the 12-spiral DNA was just a brave presumption of the author of the book "Gods' Codes", its entirety instantly broadened his vision and horizons. He saw something very exciting from the book.

By this point already, Zhang Tie felt that the two gold coins had been valuable.

In the book "Oriental Occultism Phenomena", Zhang Tie had some more surprising discoveries. The author of this book mentioned that in the east, since the ancient times, monks and masters from mysterious schools had been guiding their believers to set free various animals to cure their diseases and health problems. Many tricky diseases that puzzled doctors in hospitals could see amazing treatment effects after the patients set free live animals. The author of the book also recorded how he accompanied a businessman who had a long-term eye disease to visit a master to cure that person's eyes. The occultism master told the patient that if he wanted to cure his eye disease, he only needed to set free crabs.

After hearing the master's enlightenment, that person truly went to the crab sales center to buy some crabs and then set them free in the sea. He insisted on doing that twice a week. Each time he would buy several bamboo baskets of crabs. Several months later, the miracle happened. His eyes were cured without even taking any medicine.

That person then went to the temple to extend his thanks to that master and asked him about the karma. The master told that person that as those crabs on the market were supposed to be cooked by people, before they were killed, all of them would become blind first. Since the man had saved those crabs and gave them a new life and sight, as payment, they gave him their sight too.

The author of this book was a scholar in the western continent. He attributed this phenomenon to intricate oriental occultism. However, Zhang Tie knew this was not occultism at all; it was true karma. All the crabs's appreciation to that person for saving their lives converged into spiritual energy which could help that person recover his health.

The spiritual energy could not be seen by naked eye. However, water could sense it. The author of "Water Knows the Answer" was a scientist before the catastrophe. Through studying water, he found that the awareness energy of human and all other living beings could be projected onto places outside their bodies. This energy projected onto places outside their bodies then could influence the surrounding environment on macro substance level.

When this energy was projected into a cup of water, it could make water form various crystals. The more love and positive emotions were included in the energy, the more regular and beautiful the water crystals would be. The more hatred, fear, and greed were included in the energy, the more disordered and ugly the water crystals would be.

When he read this, Zhang Tie was suddenly enlightened. He understood the source of the Fruit of Redemption. Each Fruit of Redemption came from condensed positive awareness energy of some organisms projected onto Zhang Tie because of their appreciation for his act of saving them.

As Zhang Tie had that marvelous small tree, it could gather all the positive energy and present it in the form of the Fruit of Redemption. Since others had no such marvelous small trees,

although the same energy worked on them and could also bring great benefits to them, they could not see it nor know the method of extracting and converting this energy into a precious item.

When he read this, Zhang Tie felt that the two gold coins were very valuable. He recalled the "story of an ugly stone" told by Donder—the same thing had different values for different people.

For a cart driver, if you wanted him to spend two gold coins to read some books, he would regard it as a waste of money. He wouldn't understand how the content in these books could benefit him either. In contrast, for Zhang Tie, the knowledge and information in these books performed as a pair of super clear glasses, enabling him to see farther and think of many things that he had not thought of before.

The alleged cultivation could be carried out in a more special pattern.

Zhang Tie was filled with pleasure.

In the book "Initial Exploration of Human Beings' Special Professions in Black Iron Age", Zhang Tie saw the introduction to that mysterious profession of rune master for the first time. In that age, due to studies and the development of mysterious runes, some mysterious and powerful professions had come into being, among which, rune master was the top one.

What concerned rune origin and their principles, the author didn't know them either. He only knew that the application of

runes was related to people's spiritual energy, which might be one of the top secrets in the world. From the time when the runes appeared, they could be categorized into two kinds.

Before the catastrophe, there were many mysterious knowledges about various runes in various religions and mysterious groups in all the ancient civilized countries headed by China in the eastern continent. After the catastrophe, people discovered some runes in the earth core world and some prehistoric civilized ruins.

After one-thousand years' integration, the two rune systems formed the universal runes usage pattern in the world today.

In this book, the author only gave a brief introduction to various knowledges and mysterious professions dealing with runes. From it, Zhang Tie could see that the author didn't know much about the runes. After reading this book, besides confirming that his binding skill was a rare kind of rune skill, Zhang Tie got nothing new.

Since he read the books very fast, after finishing the previous books, he had a lot of time left. He then hurriedly read some more. As the books on the fourth floor were all relatively expensive, Zhang Tie chose to read the publications off before the catastrophe here first.

That's how he ended up reading two books on the Internet, which was a miracle before the catastrophe.

Zhang Tie was really puzzled by that marvelous Internet world. There, what Zhang Tie did in this private library was really

inconceivable. With that Internet, anybody could do a lot of things: obtain mountains of information, interact with other people, make friends, write letters, talk with others, entertain themselves, make money, hold conferences, find wives, pilfer, monitor and follow-up that news, etc.. That Internet could even manipulate various machines and weapons to launch wars.

That world was really too unimaginable for modern people.

After reading the books on the marvelous Internet, Zhang Tie searched for books about organisms, especially weird animals.

In a book "Animals Galaxy", when Zhang Tie saw the introduction about some earth worms on a colorful photo, he was shocked as if struck by a lightning bolt. His body started to quiver all over. The paragraph of words and the photo finally cleared up his inspiration that had flashed across his mind last night like a light that broke the darkness.

Earth worms, as trivial annelids, had strong vitality. They could grow new parts no matter how severe their injuries were, even if they were slashed into several fragments. Because of this strong vitality property, small earth worms became one of the most powerful organisms in this galaxy.

Compared to the earth worm's super strong recovery ability, Zhang Tie's wounds were trivial.

Zhang Tie finally caught that inspiration that had flashed across his mind...

...

He ate his supper in the library too. Not until the place was going to be closed did Zhang Tie leave this private library. After that, he stopped a horse taxi and told the cart driver to drive him to a neighboring cheap adults' clothing shop. After buying several sets of average clothes for changing, Zhang Tie returned to his rental estate.

When he came back, Zhang Tie took out his pocket watch to check the time. It was already later than 10 pm. . Mr and Mrs Green on the first floor and the young couple on the second floor had long fallen asleep. With common fluorite lamps hanging above the passageway, it was neither too dark nor too bright.

In order not to wake them up with his footsteps, Zhang Tie stealthily moved upstairs with many bags of clothes, big and small. The room on the third floor was also dark, but Zhang Tie didn't pay much attention to it. However, when he came to the fourth floor, he saw a person pulling his door handle, trying to use the key in her hand to insert in to the lock, yet continuing to fail.

Chapter 223: Female Tenant And Earthworms

From the person's back, Zhang Tie realized that it was a woman as she wore a pair of high-heeled shoes and a short skirt, the bottom of which reached her knees. She seemed drunk. She kept swaying right and left as she tried to pull the door handle.

"Hmm... it's so strange, how can this lock have so... many holes... which one is real... are you cheating me too..." the woman murmured as if in sleep. At the same time, she repetitively attempted to insert the key into the lock, yet failed again and again...

Standing behind that woman, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes on her. After confirming that this was not a trap, he finally walked close to her and patted her shoulder.

The woman slowly turned back. She was a 30-odd mature woman with wavy maroon hair. With a fair face, she would've been very enchanting, but her face was all red from drinking too much.

Because she wore a pair of high-heeled shoes, when the woman turned back, she was even a bit taller than Zhang Tie.

"Lady, this is my residence. I think you've come to the wrong place. You must live downstairs!"

Zhang Tie tried to behave like a gentleman.

"Even you... a kid.. .is also trying to cheat me?"

The woman lowered her head and watched Zhang Tie with drunk eyes before starting to cry.

Hearing the woman's drunk words, Zhang Tie was really startled.

The moment he took out his key, ready to say something more, he did not expect that the woman would quiver as she bent in her waist and made a sound, "Wu...". At the same time, she covered her mouth with his hand.

When Zhang Tie felt that something was not right, the woman had already vomited something wet onto him, splattering most of his shirt. After that, the woman felt weak and went directly to the ground where she instantly fell asleep right outside the door's of Zhang Tie's residence.

Dumbfounded, Zhang Tie just stood there. He felt a bit dizzy from the wet and weird odor of drunkenness below his neck.

"Ah..!"

After realizing what had happened, Zhang Tie burst in to shrill shrieks. He then opened the door and rushed into the residence as soon as possible. After throwing away the paper bags, he immediately rushed into the washroom. Peeling off all the clothes, he turned on the shower head and hurriedly washed himself.

Even if the cold water made him quiver all over, Zhang Tie couldn't wait a moment. He just gritted his teeth and soaped himself. After scrubbing himself clean under the shower head for ten minutes, he finally walked out of the washroom in a clean bathrobe, his mouth and face turned green.

When he walked out of the washroom, Zhang Tie was still quivering all over due to coldness. But he was furious inside. After hurriedly putting on two sets of slightly warmer underwear, he opened the door once again, aiming to find the woman trouble. Unexpectedly, when he walked out, she was still lying on the floor outside.

Squatting down, Zhang Tie patted her face and got no response, instead, his hands got wet with her tears. He then pushed her, but still got no response. Zhang Tie then became dumbfounded as he scratched his head, not knowing what to do.

Should he just leave this woman who had vomited all over him here alone?

Zhang Tie intended to ignore her, however, at the sight of her lying on the ground like this, he started to pity her.

'Well, I will send her downstairs.'

Zhang Tie's plan was not bad, however, the moment he wanted to pull the woman up, he remembered that his physical condition didn't allow him to pick that woman up. He could not even move

such a heavy person by dragging her.

In the end, Zhang Tie could only sigh. Squatting behind the woman, he lifted her upper body. After that, he pushed his hands below her armpits. With his hands crossed before the woman's breasts, he intended to drag her into his residence.

Zhang Tie almost forgot that it was a woman instead of Huck or Snade. Although there was a layer of cloth between them, the soft and super plump touch of the woman's breasts made his heart pound. Zhang Tie hurriedly moved his hand lower and put them below her breasts, exerting his utmost effort to drag the woman beside the sofa in the parlor.

Previously, he could carry half a ton of items for dozens of kilometers, but right now, he felt tired even after dragging a woman for a few steps.

After getting her into the parlor and pushing hard with his hands and shoulders to place her onto the sofa, Zhang Tie was already oozing sweat all over from such a short exercise.

Sitting down on the ground, he panted for a while. After that, he took off the woman's high-heeled shoes and closed the door. Deciding that the woman will not wake up any time soon, Zhang Tie went back to the washroom to clean his military uniform which was dirtied by the woman and hung it on the rack.

It was almost 12 pm. by the time Zhang Tie finished washing his clothes. When he came back to the parlor, the woman was still

sleeping soundly, so soundly that she even looked like she'd lost her consciousness.

Zhang Tie carefully glanced over her—at the age of about 30 years, she was plump and tall, and wore a short skirt, shirt, and a black ceremonial robe. With concave and convex parts, her figure was very charming. Additionally, she had a good features. Sleeping on the sofa, the woman was filled with a mature woman's lure, especially that pair of beautiful and glamorous breasts beneath a thin shirt which were really like those of Miss Daina.

Zhang Tie's heart started to pound for no reason.

At this time, it was a bit cold outside. Seemingly feeling the chill in the air, the woman started to tightly hug herself around the waist. Because of this instinctive movement, she almost popped her breasts out of the collar of her shirt.

Zhang Tie then took a deep breath and moved his eyes away from the woman's sexy parts. After that, he returned to his bedroom and fetched a thick blanket to cover the woman's body. A bit later, he also threw some firewood into the fireplace in the parlor. He then poured pine oil on to the firewood and lit them. After a short while, the entire parlor warmed up.

Zhang Tie had no experience in looking after drunk women. After checking everything in the parlor, he felt it was okay and returned to his bedroom, closing the door of his bedroom as he was used to. After the whole day long torture, Zhang Tie felt tired. He threw himself onto the bed and fell asleep.

...

The next morning, he was woken up by a shrill scream. Hearing it, Zhang Tie quickly rushed out of his bedroom. When he came to the parlor, he found the woman kneeling down on the sofa, using his blanket to cover her crotch with an expression full of fear.

"Who are you? Where am I? What did you do to me last night?"

Seeing Zhang Tie coming out, the woman instantly became nervous and asked Zhang Tie the top three questions in her head.

"I'm the tenant of Mr. and Mrs. Green's house of the fourth floor. This is my residence..." Zhang Tie felt his teeth aching. "I covered you with that blanket, so please don't respond like you've been raped. Don't cover there using my blanket as you're still wearing knickers. When you were drunk last night, you lay outside my door, even vomited on me. I dragged you inside. Don't you remember it?"

With a sound of "Ah!", the woman immediately covered her mouth with her hand. She seemed to have recalled something. Although she was drunk last night, she didn't lose her memory. Putting down the blanket, she found that she was still wearing her clothes, including her knickers. The shrill scream and the movement of grabbing the blanket to cover her lower part were just an instinctive response of a woman who woke up to find herself in an unfamiliar place.

"Sorry, sorry, I drunk too much last night. I'm afraid that I went one more floor upstairs by mistake last night..."

After saying that, the woman's face blushed and she hurriedly escaped towards the door, having no face to stay here any more.

The moment she opened the door of Zhang Tie's residence, she realized that she was bare-footed. With a "sorry", she hurriedly ran back to the sofa and lifted her shoes before running out.

The moment she ran out, she found that her handbag was still on the table beside the sofa. With another "sorry", she hurriedly returned to take her handbag before leaving as fast as possible.

With the third "sorry", she returned and got her key from the sofa.

Zhang Tie was standing in pajamas in the parlor. Without saying anything, he just watched the woman going back and forth several times with her "sorry". It was his first time seeing a beautiful and mature woman in such an embarrassed state, therefore, he found it very interesting. In the end, he couldn't take it any more and burst out laughing. As a result, the misunderstanding due to being vomited all over by that woman last night immediately dispersed.

Now that he had already gotten up, Zhang Tie didn't plan to go back to sleep again. It was his big day today.

After he finished cleaning his face and teeth, he put on a set of

average clothes and went out.

He ate breakfast in a roadside restaurant. When he walked out of it, he saw Rabby, who had made a silver coin yesterday, playing with several kids in a nearby garden.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he took a silver coin from his pocket; tossing it in his hand, he walked towards them.

The boy called Rabby noticed Zhang Tie walking towards them first, as well as the silver coin in his hand. Although seeing him in different clothes, the little boy could still remember Zhang Tie's appearance.

"Sir, what can I do for you?" Rabby asked with his eyes fixed on Zhang Tie's shiny silver coin. A silver coin meant a great amount of money for a little boy.

The other kids also ran over. With raised heads, they kept their eyes on that silver coin in Zhang Tie's hand as they forcefully swallowed their saliva.

"I have some questions, the one whose answer satisfies me will have this silver coin!"

The little boys nodded their heads repeatedly like chicks eating rice.

"Do you know earthworms?"

Everybody hurriedly nodded.

"Do you know where can I buy earthworms?"

All the little boys exchanged glances with each other while frowning their foreheads. They started to carefully think about it.

"Earthworms? Does anyone sell such little things? I've never heard of it before!"

"Sir..." After hesitating for a while, the little boy finally opened his mouth under the allure of the silver coin. "I've not heard about anyone selling earthworms in the whole of Blapei, but I know a place with a lot of earthworms!"

"Where?"

Zhang Tie revealed an interested expression.

"Last time when I went to my grandma's home with my mom, I saw a lot of earthworms. As my grandma lives in a rural area, many residents there tend to raise earthworms.

'Someone raises earthworms!' This was really a surprise for Zhang Tie. Heart pounding, he calmly asked, "Is that true? What do they raise them for?"

"They raise earthworms to feed chickens and ducks. My grandma told me that chickens and ducks grow very fast and lay better eggs after they eat earthworms!"

"Where's your grandma's home?"

"Right in the village called Chevli beside the small town Tonikas outside the city..."

"Here's one silver coin!"

Zhang Tie tossed that silver coin to that little boy who caught it with excitement.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could be that thrilled when he heard the news that someone raised earthworms.

He howled inside, 'Earthworms of Blapei, your savior's coming!'

Chapter 224: Chevli

In the north of Blapei, Tonikas was a somewhat prosperous small town located in the suburbs. Beside it were vast, unoccupied lands. In an area of several square kilometers, there were some sparse farm villages. Zhang Tie estimated that the little boy's grandma was living in one of them.

By a horse taxi, Zhang Tie came to the small town Tonikas. When he arrived there, the elegant four-wheeled carriage that was only suitable to be driven on flat city roads could not continue moving forward in the wild as the path here was covered with pits, which was only suitable to ox carts, which moved slowly, or directly riding a horse.

After paying a few dozens of copper coins, Zhang Tie got off the carriage at the small town Tonikas. He first inquired about the location of Chevli from someone in the small town, then walked directly towards it as it was only 2-3 km away from where he was now.

People in Blapei were honest and kind; additionally, Zhang Tie had his first lieutenant officer's certificate in his pocket. He was not afraid of troubles even moving alone.

The surrounding farming land was verdant and vigorous. Many farmers were working in their fields. At this time, the farmers in the farming areas surrounding Blapei had just finished sowing autumn wheat.

With wheat seeds, they could produce beer. Therefore, sowing wheat seeds became a great event in Blapei. By next summer, when they had to reap them, the people here would hold a grand wheat reaping festival.

Zhang Tie had heard from the driver that in order to celebrate the good harvest of the past year and that the wheat seeds were sowed, the beer festival, the most boisterous festival in Blapei every year, would be held next month. In it, all the girls in Blapei would present the beer which was brewed by them. The single girls who could brew the best beer would be the stars pursued by all the lads in the city. In the eyes of all men in Blapei, it was the happiest thing to marry such an excellent girl.

Zhang Tie kept walking on the path as he enjoyed the surrounding landscape. At the same time, he was considering all the details of saving those earthworms. This was the first but would not be the last deal that'll require him to set free earthworms. In order to make the Fruit of Redemption ripen and his body recover as soon as possible, Zhang Tie was well prepared to keep doing this for a long term.

A person from another place suddenly wishing to buy earthworms that were usually taken as fodder for chickens and ducks, this would arise others' suspicions in any place. If he did not want to become their focus and be held back, he had better find a proper reason to persuade them.

Should he tell them that it was the secret to cure a disease in the east? He was afraid that everybody then would take him for a lunatic. What about other excuses then that would make others

not to be curious about why he constantly set earthworms free?

Zhang Tie recalled Guardian God School which was a school that worshiped mother nature. The doctrine of this school included caring for everything of the mother nature's and letting her recover balance. The worshipers of that school loved flowers and grasses; of course, they also loved small animals. He might be able to use this point. Grandma Teresa had told him that some believers of this school truly had set free some animals that were locked up, enslaved, or going to be killed.

'Maybe I have to launch the Cave Barbarian Survival Mode once again this time' Zhang Tie mumbled inside.

After walking on the path beside a field for about one kilometer, creaks of wheels rotating around the axles drifted into Zhang Tie's ears. He looked back and saw an oxcart slowly driving towards him, carrying half a cart of dried wheat straws. The driver of the oxcart was a 60-odd man in a grass hat and coarse white linen clothes. Because the path beside the field was very narrow, at the sight of the oxcart driving here, Zhang Tie hurriedly stood aside, giving way.

"Lad, where are you going?" the old man asked enthusiastically, seeing Zhang Tie walking alone.

"Chevli!"

"Hoho, if you like, get on the cart, I'm going to Chevli too!"

The old man then stopped the ox.

Giving a smile, Zhang Tie climbed onto the oxcart and sat on the pile of wheat straws. Together with the old man, he headed for Chevli.

"Lad, you don't look like a resident of Chevli, what are you going there for, friends or relatives?" the old man asked.

"Hmm, I've just been in Blapei for a short time. I was told many families in Chevli were raising earthworms. Therefore, I want to have a look there!" Realizing that the old man might be a local resident, Zhang Tie immediately launched his "Cave Barbarian Survival Mode".

"Earthworms? Why?" the old man asked out of curiosity. "Shouldn't they be interesting only the the chickens and ducks?"

"The biggest function of earthworms is not animals' fodder!" Zhang Tie revealed a pious and innocent expression. "If I set them free in a wild field, they could make the soil more fertile when the spring arrives. Benefiting from this, the land will be more vigorous and everything will flourish. Those trivial organisms are the gifts from Gaya, the Mother of Land!"

As he heard Zhang Tie's explanation, amazement flashed across the old man's face. He then glanced over him once again. "Are you a believer of Guardian God School?"

"Yes, I lived in Blackhot City before where I made contact with the Guardian God School. I'm a pious believer of the Guardian God School!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

The old man then hesitated for a while. "There are truly many people raising earthworms in Chevli village and its surrounding villages. You're right. However, it might be very difficult to persuade them to gift their earthworms to you because of what you say, but you should go and try. Maybe someone really would like to do that!"

"Of course I will not let others gift their earthworms to me for nothing. No matter what, the earthworms were their private properties. Therefore, I plan to buy the earthworms that they raised before setting them free!"

"Buy them, you mean you want to buy the useless organisms?"

The old man became even more startled.

"Of course, even if I'm a pious believer of the Guardian God School, none of the doctrines tell us to plunder others' properties or support ourselves by letting others suffer from a loss for a right thing!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, after several seconds, the old man felt a bit a bit shameful as he asked Zhang Tie in a low voice, "Uhm... if you want to buy, how much do you want? I raise a pond of earthworms too!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet an earthworm raiser in such a short time. It was really as lucky as having a pillow whenever you want to have a sleep.

"How much do you feel I should pay for the earthworms they raise there?" Zhang Tie asked the old man.

"If you can pay 20... no, only 18 silver coins for a pond of earthworms, I guess most people will want to let you have those useless organisms!"

The old man's face slightly blushed as he felt uncomfortable about bargaining with a kind young man for those little things that nobody would buy at all before.

'He's really an adorable old man.' Zhang Tie smiled inside.

"Then I will pay you 21 silver coins for one pond of earthworms..." Zhang Tie looked solemn and merciful. "As long as I can send these adorable little things back to Gaya, the Mother of Land, and enable this land to be more vigorous, I won't mind spending a bit more."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the old man became even more bashful.

The oxcart kept rocking on the path as it drove forward. After leaving the path, the road became a bit broader so two ox carts could pass at the same time. However, the road situation was still

not good. Sitting on the oxcart, Zhang Tie chatted with the old man and gradually learned many new things.

The old man was named Harley, a local farmer of Chevli. Many people in the village were truly raising earthworms, even many families in the surrounding villages were raising earthworms too. People raised them here for two reasons: first, it was convenient to raise earthworms; second, if earthworms were used as fodder for chickens and ducks, they could save a lot of grains.

After rocking for over ten minutes, Zhang Tie finally arrived at Chevli village, which only included more than a hundred households. Few outsiders would visit this small village normally. Especially, people like Zhang Tie, who was a Chinese youth. Sitting on the oxcart, once he entered the village together with Harley, he had caught many people's attention.

"Hey, Harley, who's that Chinese youth sitting on your cart? Is he Hanna's man..." someone started to ask standing beside the road.

"Go away..." Harley became impatient as he waved his whip. He didn't explain what Zhang Tie was here for at all. When there were fewer people around them, he became nervous as he turned back and said, "Uhm... my earthworms..."

"Don't worry, I will definitely buy your earthworms before considering others'!"

After working in the grocery store for several years, Zhang Tie owned a pair of sharp eyes. Certainly he knew what Harley was

concerned about. Although Blapei's people were simple and honest, they were still not hostile to money. Especially in rural areas, like in other such places, besides selling some grains in harvest seasons, people normally would have few chances to make extra money.

Zhang Tie soon caught sight of the place where Harley raised his earthworms.

It was a small pond built of bricks and cement which was deeper than 30 cm, while covering 7-8 square meters. The small pond was surrounded by hedges in case chickens and ducks came inside to eat them. It was covered with straws to prevent sunshine from reaching it as well. Beneath the straws were a pile of cow and fowl dung, duck feces, and soil.

This was how people raised earthworms. After piling up the dung of livestock together with wastes and covering them with straws, they didn't need to care about the fodder for chickens and ducks any more.

Zhang Tie knew that his last hope and the holy miracle of redemption lay in the dirty dung and wastes.

For the first time, Zhang Tie was filled with awe with the creator's arrangement for each life.

Chapter 225: Setting Free Earthworms

"Who's he, grandpa?"

When Zhang Tie and Harley were looking at that pile of dung and soil beside that earthworm pond, a maiden came towards them from the grassland behind Harley's house with a milk jug in her hand.

With sleeves rolled up, she wore a white shirt with patterns on it and a pale blue skirt. Outside the shirt was a blue skintight vest which covered her skirt with an apron. This was the favorite dressing of peasant maidens in Blapei and the Andaman Alliance as a whole.

The maiden was 18-19 years old and looked a bit older than Zhang Tie. She was very beautiful. With a string binding her hair, she had two golden braids hanging on either side, while her red face and shiny eyes were filled with vitality. Additionally, her skintight vest outlined the elegant curves of her waist and breasts.

These rural maidens' bodies were even more amazing than those of those girls of Rose Association due to better development. In addition, they were exceptionally beautiful.

Only with one glance at this maiden, Zhang Tie had become slightly ashamed. The maiden carrying a milk jug looked both energetic and capable. She was simply a heifer. Coincidentally, all the heifers were extremely attractive to Zhang Tie.

"Hanna, this is our guest, he's here to buy our earthworms!" Harley explained.

"Buy earthworms?" Having just milked the cow, Hanna carried a milk jug as she walked towards them. At the same time, she peered at Zhang Tie several times before said straightforwardly, "You must be a liar!"

"Of course not. I've negotiated with your grandpa, cash on delivery!" Zhang Tie smiled while peering at that girl's breasts that were G cup size, which were even bigger than those of Sharapova and Alice. Based on his sharp eyes formed by the girls of the Rose Association, Zhang Tie instantly judged the size of Hanna's breasts.

'That's really a heifer.'

Zhang Tie silently swallowed his saliva.

"Are you that rich? Why do you buy these things that nobody would buy at all?"

"Dream and belief can not be measured by money!"

In the cave barbarian survival mode, Zhang Tie's words and behavior were so perfect that nobody could find any fault with him at all.

The maiden glanced at Zhang Tie with a pair of dubious eyes.

"Hanna, this young man is a pious believer of Guardian God School..."

Standing nearby, old Harley repeated what Zhang Tie had fabricated to him.

This lie was truly believable. After all, these small things that existed everywhere, almost no other idiot would buy them at all.

Hearing old Harley's explanation, Hanna's eyes revealed a bit of interest towards Zhang Tie. At the sight of his granddaughter being interested in this black-haired lad, old Harley who had experienced love affairs hurriedly assigned Hanna with a job.

"Hanna, have you milked the cows just now? Hurry up and take the milk to the kitchen to filter it before boiling. If it keeps still too long, it will not be yummy."

Old Harley didn't want to sell his granddaughter at the price of only several silver coins. Before being f*cked by a man, the female had to be interested in that man at the beginning. Nobody knew how long an outsider like Zhang Tie would stay in Blapei. Therefore, old Harley didn't want to assume the risk of allowing the lad to make Hanna pregnant before fleeing. Even though this lad was a pious believer of Guardian God School, there was no doctrine there on forbidding a believer to make a female pregnant.

Hanna then carried the milk jug away while turning back on her way to cast another glance at Zhang Tie.

Seeing Hanna going away, Zhang Tie continued to talk about earthworms with old Harley. Old Harley moved away a part of the straws covering the pile of dung and soil, then thrust a small wooden stick inside to open the dung. Zhang Tie then saw more than ten earthworms twisting under the dung, hurriedly worming and shrinking into the soil.

These earthworms were all fat and strong. If Zhang Tie didn't come here to buy them, they were destined to become the fodder of chickens and ducks.

"How many earthworms are in this pit?" Zhang Tie asked old Harley.

"At least one hundred thousand. No one can count them. To tell the truth, this organism reproduces very fast, having a very strong reproductive capability. Each earthworm will lay eggs three-four times a year, giving birth to dozens of babies each time. So one earthworm can give birth to more than one hundred new ones a year. I usually take some from here as fodder for chickens and ducks. As long as you add some wastes and cow dung, they will give birth to some babies in a few days. So I've never seen their numbers decrease!"

"Do you have a vehicle? I cannot carry a pond of earthworms and dung in to the wild and bury them just by hand!"

"Of course I have, I have a wooden handcart used for carrying cow dung and a spade. If you can not do it by yourself, I can find

two helpers for you if you can pay me another two silver coins a day!"

"Fine!" After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie directly pulled out his purse and counted out 25 silver coins before handing them to old Harley. "21 silver coins are for earthworms, one silver coin is for renting your handcart and tools while the remaining three are for the helper you'll find for me from the village!"

Taking the silver coins, old Harley instantly revealed a smile. After a short while, a human-driven wooden handcart smelling of cow dung, two spades, and a strong male youth appeared before Zhang Tie. That male youth was old Harley's grandson, Hanna's elder brother.

He hadn't imagined that the pond of earthworms was worth 21 silver coins. Additionally he could also make three silver coins today. Even lending two spades would bring them a silver coin. Hanna's elder brother and the other family members of old Harley became very happy.

Generous people would gain a warm welcome everywhere they went.

The moment the tools were brought over, Zhang Tie and Hanna's elder brother started to work hard. They firstly moved away the straws off the earthworms; after that, they directly spaded the earthworms out of the pond and moved them onto the wooden handcart.

Zhang Tie was filled with excitement. He had never imagined it would go so smooth today.

With his physical condition much worse than before, Zhang Tie only worked for less than three minutes before starting to pant heavily. Supporting himself on the handle of his spade, Zhang Tie took a rest nearby while Hanna's elder brother became more and more energetic.

"Hehe, you'd better take a rest. I can finish this work alone!"

Seeing Zhang Tie's weak look, Hanna's elder brother burst out laughing as he moved his spade faster. In only a few minutes, the wooden handcart was already fully loaded with cow dung and soil. It at least contained ten thousand earthworms.

Seeing those earthworms rolling on the vehicle, Zhang Tie hurriedly covered it with some straws to avoid the adorable earthworms from being shined on by the sun.

"Where are we heading to?" Hanna's elder brother asked Zhang Tie.

"I'm not familiar with the neighboring topography. If you feel that there's a suitable place somewhere around for these earthworms to settle down, you can guide me there!"

Finally, Hanna's elder brother guided Zhang Tie to a riverside south of Chevli village. The river was dug a couple of years ago.

Below its banks was silt which had been carried out of the river. Many trees were planted on the riverside. A bit farther away from there were vegetable fields. Many people piled the rotten vegetable leaves onto a concave land near the river, which had been covered with weeds. Zhang Tie decided that the environment here was really suitable for the earthworms to survive.

He opened the soil near the concave land using his spade and checked it. He found that the soil here was soft and had many earthworms. The moment Zhang Tie broke the earth, the earthworms had tried to hide into the soil from the sun's light.

For the earthworms who lived in the small pond before and were destined to be fodder for chickens and ducks, this place, although not being paradise, was almost like a Shangri-la.

Now that Zhang Tie was determined to set free his earthworms here, the following steps were easy. He worked together with Hanna's elder brother as they dug out a pit of 30-40 cm in depth. They then moved the dung along with earthworms into the pit with their spades. After that, they covered some fine land on it, making it ready for the earthworms to settle down here.

The process of setting free these earthworms was simply an engineering work. It took Zhang Tie and Hanna's elder brother almost a whole day only to clean 95% of all the earthworms and dung from that pond at old Harley's house. Finally, only a part of dung and soil the size of a dustpan in that pond which covered 7-8 square meters was left. According to old Harley's explanation, they were left to reproduce. Only by adding some dung and wastes, the pond would be fully filled with earthworms again in less than a

year.

For the whole day, Zhang Tie and Hanna's elder brother pulled the wooden handcart and walked to-and-fro many times. At the same time, the message that Zhang Tie was buying earthworms also spread across the village. As a result, all the farmers in Chevli knew that a pious believer of Guardian God School came to Chevli, who wanted to set free their raised earthworms in to the wild. This person was not only pious, but also generous as he paid 25 silver coins to old Harley's family today. It was admirable for local residents to make so much extra money in one day. How could those earthworms value so much?

Because of his generosity, Zhang Tie received a passionate treatment in old Harley's house. He enjoyed a free lunch and a free supper. But because he was in too much hurry to go back to check his Fruit of Redemption, after supper, he didn't stay in old Harley's home any more, instead, he directly returned to his residence.

"Do you want more earthworms? I raise some too..."

"My earthworm pond is larger than that of old Harley. It contains more earthworms than his as well. I only want 20 silver coins for all of them..."

"I only need 19 silver coins!"

Seeing people arguing around him, Zhang Tie felt dizzy and shouted out loudly standing on the oxcart, "Be quiet!"

Everybody then became quiet with their eyes fixed on Zhang Tie, who was standing on the oxcart. As Zhang Tie was a military officer of the Iron-Blood Camp, since he left the battlefield, he had a special, firm personality, which could definitely help him control the situation at this moment.

"Please go back home, I will return in a couple of days. I want all your earthworms. Don't worry, I will come back to buy earthworms one house by another. I only buy those raised by you in your own pond. For the wild ones, I don't buy them. The price of your earthworms will be the same as that in old Harley's house today!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, everybody left satisfied.

Standing outside her home, Hanna watched Zhang Tie standing on the oxcart, persuading all the other people to leave with only a couple of sentences. Her eyes then became shiny.

Zhang Tie didn't know that as a handsome Chinese youth, who was utterly different from those muscled youths in the village, in many girls' eyes in this village, he was filled with an exceptionally "exotic" aura. What he did in this normal village aroused many girls' interests, like Hanna's.

...

When Zhang Tie returned to his rental estate, it was already dark outside. The sound of a violin still drifted from Mr. and Mrs. Green's residence on the first floor; the noise of the kid still came

from the residence of the young couple on the second floor; and it was still empty on the third floor, while on the door of Zhang Tie's residence was a taped paper.

"I'm sorry for what happened last night. Thanks for your care. If I contaminated your clothes, you can take them downstairs and put outside my door. I will help you wash them all——Linda"

'It seems that woman is called Linda, and she came here to find me!'

Zhang Tie had almost forgotten this trivial thing. As she was just drunk, it was not necessary for him to be angry about her. Revealing a smile, he tore off the paper as he opened the door and walked inside.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's heart had long been pounded like boiling water. He was just trying to recover his composure.

'Patience is virtue!' he warned himself once again.

Because he had sweated too much today and the work today was not clean, Zhang Tie was still full of smell of dung and wastes. Before he entered the Castle of Black Iron, he spent ten minutes taking a bath and changing his clothes.

...

——Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the

Castle of Black Iron!

When this line of words slowly disappeared, Zhang Tie took a deep breath as he walked towards the small tree.

The small tree or the true karma rule didn't let Zhang Tie down. At this moment, on the twig in the middle of the small tree were quietly hanging two fruits.

The two fruits were both Fruits of Redemption: one was pale green while the other had become pink. They were like two peaches, one was already ripe while the other was not ripe yet.

The pale green one was "golden uangs' strength" which was not ripe yet. Zhang Tie didn't pay much attention to it, instead, he directly stretched out his hand towards the pink heart-shaped peach.

——Fruit of Redemption, from earthworms' appreciation, has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit can recover your wounds by 1.3%.

With more than twenty silver coins, Zhang Tie could improve his physical condition by 1.3%. After reading this, he became dumbfounded, then burst out laughing loudly. At this moment, Zhang Tie understood that money was very important, though it was not the standard to measure the value of everything. Without those earthworms, no matter how much he spent, he could not

recover his body at all.

Maybe similar to the human kind before the catastrophe, people in this age were used to measuring the value of everything with money. He set free at least 70,000-80,000 earthworms today. Although those lives were only worth some silver coins in someone's eyes, they didn't know that all the lives were the manifestation of the creator, whose value could not be measured by money. In the eyes of the creator, a live grass and a small earthworm might be more valuable than a magnificent palace.

Should the alleged wealth of a person be measured by the eyes of human kind or the eyes of the creator? In other words, a real rich man should be rich from the perspectives of both human kind and the creator!

The above enlightenment flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

The heart-shaped Fruit of Redemption brought people an exotic sense that made their pores expanded due to excitement. After picking the fruit and eating it, it started to worm through Zhang Tie's body by creeping like an earthworm. Zhang Tie could obviously feel that the places where he felt uncomfortable before became comfortable after the warm flow crept through.

It was too nice eating this fruit. During the whole process, Zhang Tie felt like numerous small hands were giving him a massage both inside and outside. He was so immersed in that process that even after the fruit's effect had long ended, he was still sitting on the ground and enjoying it's memory for a long time before standing up.

After getting up, Zhang Tie made some movements to feel his current physical condition. Although it only recovered 1.3%, Zhang Tie could still feel a bit better than before. Because his physical condition was very bad, even with 1.3%'s recovery, he could still feel a very obvious improvement.

As long as he could insist on setting free earthworms, he would fully recover to a normal person in several months.

Zhang Tie let out a long breath inside...

At this speed, he knew that he would fully recover, as if by a miracle, in only 3-4 months. Perhaps when he had fully recovered, the reconditioning of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division would have not completed yet. After all, the loss for the Iron-Blood Camp was really big this time.

If he could fully recover, would he go back to the Iron-Blood Camp? When he thought of this question, Zhang Tie became hesitant inside. He knew that if he just went back like nothing had happened after being judged a disabled man by a lot of doctors due to his terrifying experience, he would then be truly "well-known" in the entire Iron-Horn Army. He was afraid that if he did that, many people would start to doubt his lie about being struck by a lightning bolt. No matter how sharp a man with the Post-Lightning Stroke Savant Syndrome was, he could not do something like that.

Iron-Horn Army was not Blackhot City. If he aroused someone's

suspensions, Zhang Tie wasn't sure whether he could keep the secret of the Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie was really puzzled by this question. However, only after several seconds, he pushed it out of his mind. No matter what, whether he would recover or the Iron-Blood Camp would finish its reconditioning and reorganization, it would be at least 3-4 months later. He didn't need to think about this question now.

Thinking this way, Zhang Tie relaxed.

Because he had enough free time tonight, he firstly cultivated in the Castle of Black Iron for a while, then continued to produce two more binding chains using his spiritual energy. After that, he practiced mental arithmetic by two abacuses at the same time so as to recover his spiritual energy a bit. After doing all the above things, he felt very satisfied and fell asleep.

Later on, Zhang Tie became the most popular person in the whole Chevli village...

Chapter 226: The Most Popular Person In Chevli

On an empty land outside the Chevli village were stacks of dried wheat straw. Many households' wheat straw stacks were piled here in bundles. They were like rolling mountains. Additionally, the sparse wheat straws covering the land looked like a thick carpet. Even if people jumped off from the top of the stacks, they would not get hurt. Therefore, this place also became the most natural and enjoyable children's playground in the Chevli village as a whole.

In order to hide themselves well when they played the hide and seek game, the kids had emptied the bottoms of many tall wheat straw stacks. After blocking the entrances of the caves in them, one could sleep inside overnight.

The insides of the wheat straw stacks were ventilated, warm, and very soft.

The place where the wheat straws were piled was really a mini-maze in Chevli village.

Certainly, not only kids liked it there, even Zhang Tie liked it too.

At this moment, the sky was covered with stars. The kids in Chevly had just had supper after being called back home by their parents before dusk. They were preparing to play in groups outside.

In the period between the kids being called back home to eat supper and them returning to play outside, the whole wheat straw drying field was vacant. During this over 2-h period, people could do a lot of things here.

From the day before yesterday, Zhang Tie had fallen in love with this place.

After setting free earthworms the first time, he passed by this wheat straws drying field. He saw Hanna with her two golden braids on his way. She was hiding behind a wheat straw stack, peeking out only with her head and silently waving her hand towards him, who was walking after her elder brother and another helper in the village.

As the work today had been finished, Zhang Tie told the two helpers to go back first. He then found an excuse to take a rest around here. When they were far away, Zhang Tie stealthily moved to that wheat straws stack where Hanna was hiding.

Pulling Zhang Tie's hand, she said nothing but walked around the field in circles before guiding him in front of a wheat straw stack. She then pulled away a bundle of wheat straws from below, revealing a hole. Pulling her skirt up, she gave him a smile as she lowered her body and crawled inside, followed by Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie came in, Hanna's hot lips pasted onto his while her hands reached for his leather belt.

As a man, of course, Zhang Tie didn't wait at all. The following thing was needless to mention.

One lad and one maiden, staying alone, soon wrestled with each other.

It was Zhang Tie's first time doing this in a wheat straw stack. He felt it very stimulative and full of fun.

From that day onward, Zhang Tie also started to like these wheat straw stacks. At each dusk, Hanna would wait for him there. After he finished work each day, Zhang Tie would find an excuse to meet Hanna here like what he did that day.

Zhang Tie couldn't remember how many times had Hanna started her contractive spasm, but he could remember that after each time they made love, the greater part of the undid and padded apron under her body would be wet. He was really amazed when he learned that a woman's apron had such a function.

Each time when Hanna started to spasm, she would make shrill shrieks unconsciously. Therefore, each time at this moment Zhang Tie would hurriedly kiss her lips.

Zhang Tie also enjoyed this sense of spasm as he felt a sense of achievement both physically and mentally.

This time, Hanna's spasm lasted as long as 3-4 minutes. Zhang Tie didn't move this time, instead, he just lay on Hanna's body and

kissed her. Sucking Hanna's tongue, he could sense the coldness on her tongue's tip. Occasionally, he would move his d*ck which was in her body to make her quiver from excitement.

Zhang Tie liked to see a woman losing her mind under him.

Coming back from the paradise to the human world, Hanna could still feel the hardness of Zhang Tie's d*ck inside her body. At this moment, she was still soft all over. She had no more strength left while the apron under her was all wet and a bit swollen.

She had not experienced this crazy thing before. From the first time, she had felt that Zhang Tie was like a weird beast who grew up more and more powerful in a crazy way as days passed. Each time she felt like she was torn to pieces by him. Whenever she thought of Zhang Tie's panting after he had used the spade while working for only two minutes, she would be certain that that bad guy must be pretending at that time.

"Ha... have you ejected it?" Hanna gasped, face turning completely red.

"You guess."

Zhang Tie gave an obscene smile while moving his d*ck inside her body again, making Hanna's body quiver heavily.

"Ah... could you stop? I know what you're waiting for. I knew it when you saw me for the first time. Don't lift my legs any more,

put them down, please, they are already sore..."

At this time, Hanna's skirt had been undid and been circled around her waist while her underwear were moved onto her knees. She was still wearing fine-heeled leather shoes, revealing a pair of snow-white legs. Her plump thighs were pressed by Zhang Tie to curl up close to each other. Zhang Tie then separated her legs and brought her knees against his chest.

After that, Zhang Tie put down Hanna's legs.

She then undid her skintight vest and moved it lower from her body. After that, she undid the buttons of the shirt under the vest and the front-button type corsage, exposing her huge and snow-white G-sized cup at once.

Hanna pushed them using her hands and forced a deep plump and soft ravine. After that, she cast an enchanting glance at Zhang Tie and bit his ear.

"Come on, you scumbag, my sister-in-law taught me yesterday..."

With shiny eyes, Zhang Tie then did more funny gestures...

...

After twenty minutes, Zhang Tie was the first to walk out of the wheat straw stack with a refreshed look. Looking at the sky, he realized that they had played longer than yesterday. Like how she

looked after milking the cow, this heifer was really gratified and was really good at milking.

Face blushed, Hanna drilled out of the wheat straw stack too while arranging her dress.

Zhang Tie then helped her to arrange her clothes and fastened the ropes on her vest.

After picking the straws from the other's clothes and hair, they smiled at each other.

"Will you come here tomorrow?" Hanna asked, staring at Zhang Tie full of affection.

"I have something to deal with in Blapei tomorrow, so I will come here the day after tomorrow!" Zhang Tie explained.

Even though he was the Director of the No. 9 Equipment Administration of the Comprehensive Relief Branch of the Logistics Department of Iron-Horn Army, Zhang Tie had not went over to the plant for almost two weeks, since the first day after he had left the hospital. Additionally, the war was continuing on the frontline. Even if this was a leisurely position for retired officers, Zhang Tie still felt bashful being that lazy. He should go there and greet them at least.

"Then I will wait for you here the day after tomorrow!"

"Great!" Saying this, Zhang Tie suddenly thought of something. "What gift do you want, I'll bring it back for you from Blapei!"

Inclining her head, Hanna thought for a moment. "Bring me a packet of beer yeast then. As the beer festival will arrive in a few days, by then, each girl in the village will display the beer they brewed themselves, but there didn't seem to be enough beer yeast at home, so just buy one packet for me!"

"Okay!"

They then kissed before the wheat straw stack and stealthily departed from each other in different directions.

Now that it was a clandestine love affair, they were both very careful.

...

Only a few minutes after Zhang Tie left the wheat straw stack, before he walked out of the Chevli village, he encountered old Harley who was looking for Hanna.

The moment he caught sight of Zhang Tie, old Harley became stunned. "Zhang Tie, have you seen Hanna..."

"No... no!" Zhang Tie stammered out, unconfident like a thief.

"Why do you leave so late?" Old Harley gazed at Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"Uhm... I was a bit tired today... after the work, I took a rest. When I woke up, it was already somewhat late! Hanna should be in the village or with her friends. No more chit-chat, it's hard to walk in the night. I have to go back!"

Zhang Tie hurriedly escaped.

Looking at Zhang Tie's anxious look, old Harley had a feeling of something wrong...

...

After setting the earthworms free, Zhang Tie had lingered with Hanna for more than two hours before returning to Tonikas town alone in the evening. After a casual supper in some hotel, he finally found a horse taxi to drive him back to the rental estate.

Today, Zhang Tie came back after 11 o'clock pm, later than usual. By now, all the people on the first and the second floor had fallen asleep. In order to not disturb them, Zhang Tie quietly moved upstairs.

...

"Linda, as I sent you back, why not invite me in to have a cup of coffee?"

The moment Zhang Tie moved on to the second floor, he heard the voice of a middle-aged man from the third floor.

‘F*ck, you want to drink a cup of coffee in her residence at such a late time, I think you motherf*cker want her to drink your milk!’

Hearing that voice, Zhang Tie immediately understood what was happening. It was very normal and had nothing to do with Zhang Tie. He only felt that the man was a bit hypocritical.

"No... it's a bit too late, thanks for sending me back. I'm a bit uncomfortable. See you!"

The woman, who lived on the third floor, obviously knew what the man was thinking about. So after a slight hesitation, she refused his wish to "drink a cup of coffee".

"Are you uncomfortable? What's wrong? Let me see!" the man asked in an anxious voice.

"No need, I drank too much. I'll be okay after a rest... ah!"

When Zhang Tie arrived at the third floor, he saw a man in tidy clothes hugging the woman who lived in the residence on the third floor in the dim stairwell. The woman was struggling in resistance, grabbing that man's hand to stop him from fumbling all over her body. At the same time, she inclined her head to avoid being kissed by him as well.

Hearing Zhang Tie's footsteps, the man and the woman both stopped. At the sight of him, that woman seemed to become a bit embarrassed while the man older than forty frowned.

As it had nothing to do with him, Zhang Tie just pretended to ignore them. After a casual glance over them, he went directly upstairs.

The man stared at Zhang Tie, but after realizing that he just lived up the stairs, he relaxed and started to fumble again.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the fourth floor and prepared to open the door of his own residence, the man downstairs became more presumptuous.

"Ah... no... let me go, if not, I'll call the police..." the woman older than thirty exclaimed.

"Linda, I love you. Once you promise to be my woman, I can delay the debt of your distillery..."

The man started to gasp.

"Ah... haven't you agreed to delay it for me at the table!"

The woman still struggled to get out of his grasp.

"It depends on your performance tonight. Don't pretend to be a goddess any more. I know that women like you only want more benefits at the critical moment. Once you promise to be my mistress and make me comfortable on the bed later on, then, nothing is a problem..."

The man's voice became increasingly more anxious while the sound of their clothes moving about became louder. "Do... do you know, Linda, since the first time I saw you, I wanted to crazily f*ck you. At the sight of your little mouth, I wanted to make you kneel down in front of me and lick my pole. If you make me comfortable tonight, nothing is a problem later on..."

Besides more crazy movements, the man's words became more foul...

"Pah..."

The woman smacked the man. Soon after, her mouth was blocked by something, and she started weeping. With a sound of "Hua...", her clothes were torn to pieces.

Previously, as Zhang Tie had felt it had nothing to do with him, he planned to ignore it. However, at this moment when he inserted his key into the door, he couldn't stand it any more. He turned and rapidly went downstairs to the third floor.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the third floor, the man had already forced the woman to a corner of the stairwell. With one hand covering her mouth, he pinched her neck with his other hand. Part

of her clothes had been torn open. Evidently, the man was going to use force to conquer her.

Zhang Tie instantly rushed forward and pinched the vein on the man's neck, dragging him off from the woman's body. Being pinched in a certain location on his neck, the man immediately felt dizzy and unconsciously let go of the woman.

After setting the earthworms free for one week, Zhang Tie had already become as healthy as a normal person and had some strength. Plus, with his rich experience in killing people on the battlefield, the man wasn't even able to resist before being thrown to the ground.

He instantly became dizzy and didn't realize what had happened until ten more seconds passed. Before he could open his mouth, Zhang Tie, who had killed numerous people when he was in the Iron-Blood Camp, smacked him, having no wish to waste time talking to such a man. He then kept smacking the two sides of his face for more than ten times. The 40-odd man's face was soon turned into a pig-head covered with blood.

"If I see you again, I'll chop you to pieces and feed the dogs on the street."

Flustered, the man looked at Zhang Tie, who was filled with killing intent formed by killing numerous people on the battlefield. Even if he was not as sharp as before, once with a solemn face, he could still present a terrifying strength to others.

The man couldn't speak any more, so instead he just nodded.

Zhang Tie then gave him a fierce kick. "Piss off!".

The man then tumbled downstairs in a very embarrassed way. He even fell down on as it was dark there. Like a ball, he kept rolling to the second floor before escaping outside. He didn't even dare to look back.

Not until the man escaped away did Zhang Tie turn back and look at the woman who was standing outside her door on the third floor, hands on her corsage that had been torn open.

"Are you okay?" Zhang Tie mildly asked.

"Thank you!" the woman replied in a low voice, half of her body in the shadow.

Zhang Tie couldn't see clearly her expression, but the curve below her waist under the fluorite lamp was really seductive, to the point that he even wanted to commit a crime.

The woman was wearing a super short skintight skirt with scattered small flowers and plants, under which was a pair of slim legs. Additionally, she was wearing a pair of high-heeled shoes. All this exposed her mature and sexy figure at once.

'No wonder that man became a beast!' Zhang Tie mumbled inside. If it was him who had sent such a woman home at the

midnight, he might not have been able to stop himself from being impulsive outside her door either.

"Have a good rest then! If he comes here to find you trouble later, just call me!"

After casting another glance at her, Zhang Tie went upstairs.

Not until she heard Zhang Tie opening his own door and entering his residence that the woman who was curling in the shadow pulled out her key and open her own door.

On that day, because she was drunk and the fluorite lamp in the stairwell was a bit dim, after vomiting on Zhang Tie's clothes, she could not remember how he looked in a military uniform. She thought of him as a kid, but at this moment, his brutality, real strength and righteousness that were far greater than that of an average 15-16 youth totally subverted his image in her mind.

When she thought back to that scene of her sleeping in Zhang Tie's residence and escaping from his parlor with embarrassment, as well as his taunting loud laugh as he stood wearing a night robe, the woman had a weird feeling towards Zhang Tie.

When he entered his residence, Zhang Tie took a bath first before entering the Castle of Black Iron. After eating today's Fruit of Redemption from earthworms' appreciation, his total recovery was 15.8%, a bit more than yesterday. Now, Zhang Tie had finally reached the healthy state of a 15-old youth he was before he gained the Castle of Black Iron. Although he had no great strength,

thankfully, he was a normal person at least.

——The system has detected that the physical condition of Castle Lord has recovered to the minimal physical condition that can bear the impact of Trouble-Reappearance Fruit. Therefore, the Trouble-Reappearance Fruit is available now.

This news was definitely the best gift Zhang Tie had received today. He burst out into loud laughter.

After that, he cultivated his spiritual energy in the Castle of Black Iron for awhile and formed another "binding chain". He then felt a bit tired, so he went back to his bedroom and had a good night's sleep.

...

At midnight, Zhang Tie was woken up by a loud sound that could shock the entire Blapei. He hurriedly came to the parlor and pulled away the curtain, catching sight of a place in the south of Blapei. Over there, flames were leaping to the sky, half of it already dyed red. Zhang Tie could barely remember that that place was an important logistics warehouse of Blapei...

Later on, a shrill air-defense alert started to reverberate across Blapei.

Dumbfounded, Zhang Tie gazed at the flaring flames in the horizon and that looming airship above the flames. A question flashed across his mind, 'Was that loud sound the legendary

explosion?’

Ever since he was born, this was Zhang Tie’s first time seeing an explosion.

Chapter 227: The Fall Of The Curtain Of Science

It was said that it was very simple to make explosives before the catastrophe. In that age, people had grasped a lot of methods to explode substances. They could also make bombs with terrifying power. With only one bomb, they could even destroy a city, killing millions of people. Many people could even easily make a lot of explosives at home.

With the arrival of the catastrophe and the God's star, every rule in the world had changed, which caused people to lose their ability to make explosives for hundreds years after the catastrophe. This lasted until the time before the second holy war between humans and demons, when during an excavation of underground relics and under the enlightenment of far-east civilization, people gained this ability once again. It was said that this ability was related to crystals. However, compared to before the catastrophe, the number of people who were able to make explosives was even less than the number of rare animals in the zoo before the catastrophe.

Many people were still attempting to find the mystery of why the substances that could explode before the catastrophe failed to do so after it. They posed many explanations, the most famous two being: first, the string change theory based on the opinion of the string science of universe; second, the God's particles theory based on the God's star.

According to the string change school, the catastrophe and the God's star changed the string state of materials, the basic constitution state of substances in this galaxy. As a result, many

basic rules in this galaxy changed.

This opinion had a lot of supporters. The string theory was still disputable before the catastrophe. Although the opinion of string change theory seemed able to explain everything after the catastrophe—it was meaningless. Because average people could not understand it.

Besides the string theory, there was a theory about mysterious particles brought by the God's star. This theory also had a lot of basis and supporters. According to the God's particles theory, the God's star brought a kind of mysterious particles. After they were cast in this galaxy, every rule in this galaxy changed.

Besides always mentioning people's successful researches on the macro world before the catastrophe, people who supported the God's particles theory favored the "one vacant chair theory"—in a classroom with 50 chairs, even if 49 of them were occupied, with one chair vacant, all the other 49 people could change their locations for free. Because no matter how they changed, there was always a vacant chair.

This was the scientific rule worshiped by the world before the catastrophe. The foundation of this rule was that vacant chair in the classroom. With that vacant seat, everybody in the classroom could remain mobile and active to a certain degree.

However, after the catastrophe, the God's star occupied the vacant chair in the classroom. As a result, the mobility and activeness that was in the classroom suddenly disappeared. Although there was no vacant chair any more, with the brilliant

rays of the God's star, the people in the classroom could now see the outside world. They started to realize the limit of their original living space. At the same time, they also begun to enjoy the colors of the outside space where they thought was nothing but darkness before.

This was the most popular opinion. The science teacher at Zhang Tie's school was also a supporter of this opinion. According to the current study and understanding of the human world before the catastrophe, humans before the catastrophe had already collapsed into an alleged "scientific trap" under the seduction of the demons and extreme self-consciousness.

In that age, people blindly thought that the science they grasped was the only and ultimate truth in this universe. However, the truth was that people's crazy worshiping of science was just [a game of blind people touching the elephant](#) that most people played under the guidance of others. The elephant was the overall existence and truth of the universe while human science was not even a finger in front of the overall existence and truth. Even if it was a finger, the moment it touched the skin of the elephant, people would mistake the universe as a rough and flexible wall that could confine people's living space.

In ancient China, a king told a chancellor to present an elephant to a group of blind people. The blind people then touched the elephant with their hands. One touched its ear and said it was a winnowing fan; one touched its head and said it was a rock; one touched its nose and said it was a round wooden bar, bigger on one end and smaller on the other end, which was used to grind rice in ancient China; one touched its foot and said it was a mortar; one touched its back and said it was a bed; one touched its abdomen and said it was a jar; one touched its tail and said it was a rope.

The largest myth of science was rooted in the limits of people's senses and awareness. What people could see, hear, smell and touch was actually an existing form of a substance within the range of a narrow frequency of visible light. The frequency within that range that people could perceive was only a bowl of water in the water vat or a key on the entire keyboard of the piano. When the hand of science pressed that key, people heard the sound and took that single key as the whole piano.

The alleged science was just an extension of people's five senses and awareness in exploring the universe. The limits of people's five senses and awareness led to the limits of science. At the beginning, the science that people grasped truly had played a positive role in their development. But after that, especially in the hundreds of years before the catastrophe, the alleged science became the shackles of confinement and the tool that demons used to destroy human beings.

At that time, the "science spokesman" told people that humans were the only smart life on this galaxy, even the entire universe...

At that time, the "science spokesman" told people that the galaxy was solid. Besides magma and rocks, nothing was inside...

At that time, the "science spokesman" told people that the full potential of people was to run faster, jump higher, and be more intelligent...

At that time, the "science spokesman" told people that the

ancestors of human beings was a kind of carbon-based protein existence formed by a lightning bolt hitting water. After many years' evolution, the carbon-based protein finally became a kind of single-cell organism. After another long period of evolution, it became another kind of living being... In the end, apes became human beings. Human beings had no history at all. As long as you walked around a zoo and a geological fossil museum, you would understand it.

Oh, at that time, "science" told people that above 98% of human genes were wastes.

People trusted it. As a result, demons hiding among them became very happy.

At that time, humans were actually a lamb led to slaughter, its eyes covered with a black cloth by the demons. Humans were killed by demons in great batches in various ways, however, they didn't know who did it. In the human world, when unprecedented progress was made in science, the biggest role of science was actually to weld the cage that contained human beings more closely, to tighten people with ropes, to kill them in more terrifying ways, and to bring forth something new from the old to play the people.

Many people before the catastrophe were inserted with chips controlled by the demons the moment they were born. They were then tightly monitored by the demons.

In the name of injecting vaccines, some viruses would be injected in their bodies so as to completely destroy people's immune

system. Those viruses could even restrict people's potential, as well as further improving and liberating people's DNA. After that, everybody was thrown into that terrifying world full of terrors, enmity, and violence designed by the demons.

In that world, people were killed in wars, chaos, environment that people had damaged and polluted. Besides, people were killed by the food that had been renovated by demons, the animosity, the gap between the rich and the poor and the oppressive system... Everybody was serving a set of terrifying orders that would finally eliminate all the people knowingly or not.

Many people in this age believed that the God's star had set people free from that terrifying, internecine trap. Most of people attributed all the changes that happened in this world to that God's star, expecting to find the answer to explain everything in it.

The arrival of the God's star indicated that the human science's curtain fell and the Black Iron Age started. Therefore, the God's particles theory became more influential.

Besides the above two explanations, Zhang Tie had heard another explanation from Donder—starting from the catastrophe and the arrival of the God's star, the galaxy in which the people were living in had entered another time and space density in the position of the universe. In a different time and space density, all the substances had different properties and performance. This theory of different time and space had already existed before the catastrophe, spread around in some mysterious associations. It was the most aged theory.

Based on Zhang Tie's knowledge and intelligence, he could not identify whether these theories were true or not. He only focused on the facts before him. These theories and hypotheses only stated one fact—in this age when the curtain of science had fallen, substances that could explode and the producers of explosives were both jewels.

Average people could not even have a chance to see a single explosion in their whole lives. Even in wars, explosives were rarely used. It didn't mean that they were useless, but the opposite - too useful. Few people could afford them. Using explosives in wars was akin to hitting people with gold bricks. Without above ten times' return, nobody would like to hit people with gold bricks.

Explosives came with thunder-like loud sounds and flames, which were two important features in identifying explosions, or so Donder had said. Because Zhang Tie had not seen explosions before, he was not absolutely sure whether it was an explosion or not. He only felt that the flames in the sky outside the window were very amazing at the midnight.

After that loud sound, the whole Blapei turned chaotic for the rest of the night.

...

The next day, when Zhang Tie prepared to leave his residence in his first lieutenant's military uniform, he found the streets in Blapei covered with soldiers in dark red military uniforms. They were interrogating passers-by. The atmosphere in the whole Blapei became ten times more intense compared to yesterday.

Since Blapei was only over 100 km or one hour's drive away from the frontline, the smoke and destruction due to gradually escalating battles between the two countries unavoidably extended toward it from the frontline after two weeks since Zhang Tie had come to the logistics department...

The tranquility of Blapei was broken.

The troubled times were coming. Where was peaceful?

A sense of crisis rose in Zhang Tie's heart once again.

Chapter 228: Alchemists And Secret Police

"It's so nice to know you're all right, sir!"

Whether it was true or not, when Zhang Tie caught sight of Pi Ping's slippery expression, he really felt warm inside and not hostile toward him. Zhang Tie was very good at making contact with these kind of people when he was in Donder's grocery store, so when he saw Second Lieutenant Pi Ping, he was not modest to him either. He instead hooked his hand around Second Lieutenant Pi Ping's shoulders and brought him into his office.

Since he became the director of the logistics administration two weeks ago, it was Zhang Tie's first time entering the director's office of this vehicle maintenance plant.

The office featured a military style—a desk, a sofa, a filing cabinet, some drawings on the structures of steam-driven engines and vehicles hanging on the wall. No more decoration besides these items. However, although Zhang Tie hadn't come here these days, the office was still well cleaned.

Entering the office, Zhang Tie instantly threw himself onto the sofa with eyes fixed on Second Lieutenant Pi Ping.

"Well, no crap, I know you're well-informed. Tell me what happened last night..."

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping had already realized that this military officer retired from the Iron-Blood Camp was different from others

as he was more easygoing. However, actually, he was more complicated. As his subordinate, Pi Ping actually liked this kind of military officer. What Second Lieutenant Pi Ping feared most were those eccentric guys who didn't know anything but wanted to manage everything. If such a director came to the No. 9 Equipment Administration, that would be the nightmare of everybody here.

What Zhang Tie didn't know was that during the past two weeks, his indifferent attitude was even praised by people here. They all felt that he was a good officer and a good director.

Before telling Zhang Tie the news, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping glanced outside the office. After ensuring that nobody was there, he closed the door himself before moving close to Zhang Tie like a thief.

"I have a friend in the air-defense camp. He said many people were killed last night. One important warehouse of our Logistics Department was exploded by the airship of the Brilliant Feathers!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping said, his voice low.

Zhang Tie became curious. "Was that really an explosive?"

"Really!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping nodded. "It's said that this was Sun Dynasty's revenge. Because a couple of days ago, our Mad Shark Airship threw some heavy-type white phosphorous gel combustion bombs at the battle castle where their headquarters was located in the evening. Many people were killed there. The morale of Sun Dynasty was also weakened. Therefore, their move last night was to avenge themselves!"

Zhang Tie only felt frustrated. More revenge?

Sometimes, wars between two countries and between two armies were no different from brawls between 3-5 year old kids. When you give me a fist, I will give you a kick. No one wanted to suffer a loss. However, compared to brawls between kids, this revenge was more terrifying and bloody and would cause more people to lose their lives.

After the heads of the people of the Iron-Horn Army were chopped off, the people of the Iron-Blood Camp had to chop off their enemy's heads in revenge. As the Iron-Horn Army's air troop threw heavy-type white phosphorous gel combustion bombs towards the battle castle where the opponent's headquarters was located, the opponent drove an airship into the air territory of Blapei and threw off explosives onto a logistics base of the Iron-Horn Army,

Zhang Tie felt that perhaps, the battle castle in the frontline had long prepared for the sneak attack from the Brilliant Feathers. Then, since they couldn't find a chance to launch a sneak attack in there, the Brilliant Feathers extended the battle line to the back of the Iron-Horn Army and directly hit the most important part. Due to the limited transportation capabilities, the logistics guarantee was truly one of the most essential parts of the Iron-Horn Army.

"Have their airship been brought down?"

After asking this question, Zhang Tie felt like an idiot. If the

opponent's airship could casually drop off bombs onto the Iron-Horn Army's logistics base in Blapei which was more than 100 km away from the frontline and leave without sustaining any damage, the war would not have lasted this long.

"Done, that's what the trouble is!"

"Why?"

"It's said that our air-defense troop had truly hit their airship, so it crashed in a location over 20 km away to the south of Blapei. However, when our troop arrived there, with the exception of some dead people in the airship, all the rest had disappeared. This is the biggest trouble. Now, nobody knows where the rest people from the airship had gone."

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping let out a sigh.

"We didn't find many corpses on the airship, which means that all the others had left. This is big trouble since nobody knows whether those guys escaped back to their zone or are staying here. If some intelligence agents of the opponent who were lurking in Blapei take action together with those people who had fled, nobody can know what may happen next. If those guys have another bomb, they might even directly rush into the parliament house of Blapei as suicide bombers!"

Hearing Pi Ping's words, Zhang Tie understood why the atmosphere in Blapei suddenly became tense. This was not only because of the explosion that occurred last night but that it had

been confirmed that the dangerous opponents were lurking somewhere in Blapei. Even in his military uniform, Zhang Tie had still been requested to present his military officer's certificate three times on the way from his residence to the maintenance plant of the Ninth Equipment Administration of the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Department.

In order to catch those fleeing people, all the soldiers of the division stationed in Blapei walked through the streets. They started to set checking points to investigate all the passers-by. By doing this, although they could not immediately catch those potential dangerous people, they could at least limit their movements to a degree. Before finally catching or killing them, this was the only method to deal with those people.

"Does the Iron-Horn Army have explosives?"

The word bomb reminded Zhang Tie of a question that he was interested in.

"Yes, they have. But the explosives of the army are the most important strategic material. Because they're very rare and precious, all the explosives's assignments and use had to be approved and signed by the commander of the Iron-Horn Army. In the entire Norman Empire, all the explosives are controlled by the imperial households. The only two alchemist masters who can produce explosives in the Norman Empire are both members of the royal seniors cabinet!"

Zhang Tie had only heard of the alchemist profession in legends. It was mentioned in the book "Initial Exploration about the Special

Professions of Human Beings in the Black Iron Age" a couple of days ago. Whether in legends or reality, alchemists were ten times more rare than medicinal pharmacists. It was regarded as the most mysterious, wealthy, and terrifying profession in the Black Iron Age.

Although many cities of the former Andaman Alliance had medicinal pharmacists like Abyan, in the entire Andaman Alliance, there were no alchemists at all. Alchemists would spend their whole lives dealing with various weird stones and crystals. As long as they had a stone or a crystal, they would be able to turn it into a treasure that could be used to fight, cultivate, cure diseases, even to improve the attributes of a number of metals and machines.

After being processed by alchemists, many common crystals and stones could become ten thousand times more valuable, even more expensive than gold. As these people were truly able to touch a stone and turn it into gold, they were called alchemists. It was not only a description of their profession but people's obvious admiration for it.

Alchemists were the only group of people who could produce explosives. A person, once he became an alchemist, would never care about money any more. If one took the Norman Empire as an example, once any alchemist in this country was found to be able to produce explosives, he could instantly marry a royal offspring. Through kinship, that person would then benefit the Norman Empire on a military aspect.

Alchemists had many nicknames like "treasure producers", "mobile vaults", "human bombs", and "thermal weapon time-

travelers in cold weapons era". It seemed that because of the last nickname which mentioned both science and technology before the catastrophe, many countries in the Blackson Human Clan Corridor would take owning an alchemist who could produce explosives as the symbol of powerful national strength and status.

The former Andaman Alliance had once intended to attract an alchemist with the chief position and a great amount of benefits. Unluckily, they failed.

...

When Zhang Tie arrived at the logistics base in the wild, over 30 km south of Blapei, the airship which had caused great turmoil and damage was scattered on the ground in pieces. This airship which was used to launch the sneak attack was painted dark.

Its pod was over 15 m in height. At this moment, the airship originally longer than 50 m had become a transformed rigid skeleton. For the coated fabric of the airship's air sac, besides a few remains, all the other parts were burned into solid pitch-dark carbides and were scattered around the pod and the airship's skeleton. Some corpses in aqua blue military uniforms were lying inside the wrecked pod in various shapes.

A group of soldiers in dark red military uniform of the Norman Empire had already blocked the scene. A group of people in black windbreakers were looking for something among the dead soldiers of Sun Dynasty, accompanied by some military officers of the Norman Empire. The surrounding soldiers were glancing at the sanguine gloves of those people in black windbreakers with weird

eyes.

Those people in sanguine gloves were the main characters in all the darkest stories of the Norman Empire. They were the representatives of the cold and bloody side of the Norman Empire. If its soldiers were a group of fierce tigers, the group of people in sanguine gloves were a weird hybrid of jackals that lived on rotten meat and vipers that sprouted venom.

These people came from another powerful department of the Norman Empire besides the army—Order Review Committee. These people were "national secret police on order maintenance" under the affiliation of the Order Review Committee.

In Nordinburg, everybody knew that the viscount Nordinton, the head of secret police, and marshal Lin Changjiang didn't like each other.

Besides their superior, nobody else liked them in the entire Norman Empire.

Because of the explosion last night, these people appeared in Blapei like flies that had smelt a stink. This event was within the governing category of the Iron-Horn Army, however, these people in sanguine gloves wanted to get involve due to two reasons.

First, the explosion was a special event threatening national security. With the exception of explosions on the battlefield, the investigation of all the other explosions in the Norman Empire was carried out by the Order Review Committee.

Second, according to the laws of the Norman Empire, the Iron-Horn Army could only govern the area within 100 km of the frontline of Kalur's battle zone. Since Blapei was out of this area, although the victim of this explosion case was the Iron-Horn Army, the Order Review Committee still had the right to investigate this case.

Because the Order Review Committee of Nordinburg had sent a notice to the Iron-Horn Army, they expected that it would coordinate with the secret police to investigate this explosion case. So once they came to Blapei, even though unwilling, the military officers of the Iron-Horn Army were dispatched here to assist these people who accomplished their own tasks with cold expressions. Additionally, they should report the latest events and discoveries of the Iron-Horn Army to those in sanguine gloves when the latter inquired about what had happened last night.

The head of these people in red sanguine gloves and black windbreakers was a major, a 30-odd man with white hair and a pair of eyes as cruel as those of a wolf.

"Major, after our troop arrived here, we blocked the scene and it had remained unchanged. On the ground over 500 m away from the site where the airship crashed, our soldiers discovered truck tire marks which extended to the south. It's estimated that those fleeing had been picked up. We..."

The man in gray hair who was carefully checking the corpses revealed a wisp of an icy smile. At the same time, he raised his hand and interrupted the military officer who was reporting what

had happened last night.

"No need to say it, I've already guessed what happened next. Your people found that truck over 10 km away with nobody inside. Then you investigated the source of that truck and learned that the truck has been stolen in Blapei several days ago. After that, you judged that those people had escaped to the south, right captain?"

Revealing a surprised expression, the captain asked, "How do you know?"

"Congratulations, captain, you've successfully let go of a group of dangerous Sun Dynasty's people. When you were attracted by that truck driving to the south, the remaining saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty had escaped to the north. If you had changed your direction and chased after them at once, we might not be here. Those spies of the Sun Dynasty who hid in Blapei clearly knew how to trick you..."

That gray-haired major put it straightforwardly. The captain's face blushed so much that he could not even say a word, while a major who belonged to the same No. 21 Division as the captain wanted to argue more.

"Major Franca, our soldiers tried our best last night. With only one glance, how could you confirm those people on the airship had fled to the north, instead of the south?"

"Of course I can!" Major Franca from the the Order Review Committee of Norman Empire said with an icy expression.

He took off his gloves and stretched his index finger. In front of the military officers of No. 21 Division, he squatted down and thrust his index finger into the hard skull of a corpse like he was thrusting it into a bean curd.

He then moved up his index finger into the cranial cavity of that corpse before pulling it out with red and white brains juice. He then directly put it into his mouth and started to carefully taste it, eyes closed, as if he was tasting a yummy food.

Although the military officers of No. 21 Division standing nearby were used to seeing corpses, at the sight of this behavior of tasting dead people's brains, their faces turned pale at once. They felt a bit disgusted and chilled, especially by that weird smile on Major Franca's face when he tasted the brains.

After a long while, Major Franca opened his eyes and licked his lips as if he had enjoyed the taste of the brains.

"These people's brains taste like bitter *Parmelia saxatilis*. It's the aftereffect of Sun Dynasty's secret medicine when it was applied on people. Those who take it would trigger their physical potential for a short time. They also become very clear-minded, although they don't live too long.

"Only dare-to-die corps would take this secret medicine. After taking it, in the troops of the Sun Dynasty, they had only one target—death instead of fleeing. These people would also face a death penalty even if they fled back.

"Before they arrived here, all of them had prepared not to go back alive. Therefore, they escaped to the north instead of to the south. If they escaped to the south, they would be held back by your frontline troops, however, if they escaped to the north, they could deal their damage to the greatest extent. In Blapei, they were picked up by spies of the Sun Dynasty. Additionally, their airship crashed in the south in order to cause an illusion for you that they were escaping to the south..."

"This is still your presumption!" the major of No. 21 Division kept arguing, face turning a bit pale.

"These people on the airship had died when the airship crashed. Those fleeing had to have been wounded, some even heavily. As they could not get medical treatment when escaping, even if they had strong vitality, their wounds must be deteriorating, which led to inconvenient movement. They would encumber the whole team. Based on the style of the Sun Dynasty, in this case, those heavily wounded people would be killed.

"Once we search all the way to the north while avoiding major routes, we will discover something..." Major Franca gazed at the officers of No. 21 Division with wolf-like sharp eyes, revealing a contemptuous smile. "You're good at fighting on the battlefield, but I'm not here to be your counter-intelligence enlightening teacher. I only hope that if what I said is true, before finding those potential saboteurs, you won't interfere with my moves in Blapei. As my time is very precious, I don't want to waste too much time in Blapei for some trivial roles."

Forcefully holding back their fury, the military officers of No. 21 Division exchanged glances with each other before nodding.

"Fuck, if not assigned here, nobody would want to stay with these guys in red gloves," they mumbled inside.

Twenty minutes later, in a wild ditch 5 km to the north of the crashing site, they found the first corpse. It was buried underground. However, as it had not been buried too long ago and was hurriedly dealt with in the evening, even though the people of the Sun Dynasty had covered it up, it was still discovered by Major Franca.

In another place less than 2 km away from the first one, the second corpse was discovered...

Chapter 229: Learning

Zhang Tie only stayed in the maintenance plant for one morning. By afternoon, the notice from the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army about that sneak attack had been delivered to various subordinate organs and departments. The No. 9 Equipment Administration had already received one formal notice.

It arrived in time. When many people in the entire Blapei became restless due to that loud sound and the flames last night, this notice made most of them recover their composure at once.

In all times, people were not afraid of fact or truth, instead, they were afraid of having it concealed or getting cheated.

The notice that Zhang Tie saw contained the details of the attack last night.

The airship that launched the sneak attack on Blapei was a disguised paradise-level war-time airship of the Sun Dynasty. This airship detoured around the air-defense frontline in Kalur and dropped off an explosive in Blapei, which destroyed an important logistics warehouse. The explosion and the following big fire caused 116 casualties in the Iron-Horn Army. Soon after that, the war-time airship of the Sun Dynasty was shot down. Twenty-seven corpses were found on the wrecked airship.

Additionally, 11-15 saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty had fled after the airship crashed. With the help of Sun Dynasty's moles in Blapei, they might have already entered the city and were preparing to

implement destructive activities. Now, the soldiers of the Norman Empire stationed in Blapei were chasing after these saboteurs. If anyone could provide any clues on these people, once the information was verified, they would gain a reward of 2000 gold coins from the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army...

The reward of 2000 gold coins was alluring, but speaking of gold coins, Zhang Tie realized that the No. 9 Equipment Administration under his management, a small first lieutenant director, had so many hidden profits that they were even out of his imagination. After Second Lieutenant Pi Ping brought old account books of the Equipment Administration and explained the mysteries inside, Zhang Tie finally understood why this position was a lot of fun.

The mysteries of No. 9 Equipment Administration was in the treatment of the wasted equipment here. Based on the rules on the management of military logistics equipment of the Norman Empire, in order to guarantee the quality and capability of the logistics transportation of the troops, besides normal wear, many parts and large-scale components like engines of the vehicles also had service limits. Once they were reached, the workers would be forced to discard them as useless and replace them with new parts and components.

The hidden profits and gray income of the No. 9 Equipment Department lay in the vehicles and various parts and components of vehicles that were to be discarded as useless when they reached their service limits.

Although those parts and components had reached their service limits, it didn't mean that they didn't work. If one took

automobiles' engines for an instance, the service limit of a steam-driven engine regulated by the troops was ten years. However, if they were in good maintenance, many steam-based engines were still working even after fifteen years.

That's why due to strict requirements on the quality of military products, the one's discard as useless were very popular among commoners. This also brought a huge profit for the No. 9 Equipment Department.

After an overhaul and assemblage of the parts and components of automobiles, even whole vehicles might be discarded as useless iron when they reached their service limits. But they could be seen again and then sold, which was the largest legal income of the No. 9 Equipment Department.

The people of No. 9 Equipment Department weren't the only ones who knew this, even some major officers of the logistics department of the army knew it too. But this deed got the acquiescence of the superiors. Why? Because if the No. 9 Equipment Department wanted to gain this part of revenue, they had to do a good job on the maintenance of all the vehicles of the logistics department. Those whole automobiles and the parts and components of automobiles couldn't be sold and bring hidden profits until they were forced to be discard as useless.

This was also an acquiesced reward and a means used to stimulate the subordinate departments to work seriously by the officers of the logistics administration of the army. The better the subordinate worked, the more they would gain.

There were mainly three parties on this interest chain: the No. 9 Equipment Department; the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch of the Logistics Administration of the Iron-Horn Army which was the direct superior of No. 9 Equipment Department; a business group of the Norman Empire which had long cooperated with the Logistics Administration of the Iron-Horn Army.

No. 9 Equipment Department was responsible for renovation, recovery, and assemblage of whole vehicles as well as parts and components of vehicles that were discarded as useless. Some officers of the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Branch were responsible for selling these whole vehicles as well as parts and components of vehicles which were still available after renovation. The business group which had cooperated with the army's Logistics Administration was responsible for receiving deliveries. In this whole process, a set of stream-like profit distribution and working mode was formed from which all three parties could gain benefits.

After learning of the "mysteries" inside it, Zhang Tie had a better image of the Norman Empire. Besides the strict hierarchical system, its other aspects were actually flexible. Certainly, people's nature for profit remained unchanged no matter which country they were in.

The No. 9 Equipment Department that fought in the frontline could share 60% of the profits while the rest 40% of profits were taken away. For the 60% of profits, based on the current distribution mode of No. 9 Equipment Department, all the soldiers received half of the profits, namely 30% of the total profits. Second Lieutenant Pi Ping, the vice director of No. 9 Equipment Administration who was mainly responsible for managing the

maintenance plant and solving various concrete problems could gain 10% of the total profits, while the director of No. 9 Equipment Department could gain 20% of the total profits.

After practicing for many years, the 4-3-2-1 distribution mode could satisfy everybody on this interest chain.

Only two weeks after he became the director of No. 9 Equipment Department, Zhang Tie had already gained 21 gold coins from profit sharing, which was many times higher than his salary as a first lieutenant. Additionally, it was legal. Zhang Tie knew that Colonel Scharo had really found a good position for him given his contribution to the Iron-Blood Camp.

After staying in the plant for a whole day, Zhang Tie found that he could learn a lot from the Iron-Horn Army. When in the Iron-Blood Camp, he learned how to fight and kill. While in the No. 9 Equipment Department in the back, he could still learn a lot.

Through the attitude of Logistics Administration to the No. 9 Equipment Department, he learned how to manage his subordinates. Although the system was fixed, the management was flexible. Everything was determined by the decision-maker's choices and attitude. Of course, the officers of the Logistics Administration could choose another way such as forcing the No. 9 Equipment Department to submit all the whole vehicles as well as parts and components of the vehicles that were discarded as useless.

However, if they truly did so, what they submitted might truly be useless. Additionally, in the Logistics Administration of the entire

Iron-Horn Army, the number of accidents that arose due to improper maintenance would increase greatly. No matter what, once problems were found, they only needed to apply for new parts, components, or equipment and request for a superior's assignment. Nobody wanted to smell engine oil by lying under the vehicles everyday.

From that gray interest chain, Zhang Tie learned a secret on long-term development—teamwork and profit distribution. If a person could not finish it, then, you could gather a group of people, enabling them to share benefits from their contributions.

Besides, he also learned the most solid and practicable knowledge from the No. 9 Equipment Department—maintenance!

After taking off his first lieutenant's uniform, Zhang Tie put on work clothes and stayed with those technical sergeants in the maintenance workshop for an afternoon. He felt that he had learned more of maintenance here than that he had at school after three years. During this afternoon, he was taught how to change vehicles' tires and main driving axle and gained a general idea of vehicle maintenance.

Even Zhang Tie himself didn't know how his nickname "Second Lieutenant Mummy" had spread to the No. 9 Equipment Department. With this special nickname, he was not like an officer at all.

Besides, he was also kind to others. When he was confused about something, he would modestly ask the soldiers to explain it to him. Like when he came to the Iron-Blood Camp at the beginning,

Zhang Tie quickly integrated himself with the people in the No. 9 Equipment Department in only one day. Everybody here now knew that the new first lieutenant was a funny guy.

After staying in the logistics base for a day, Zhang Tie left at dusk. This was a harvest day for him as he had come here with empty hands but left with gold coins and a lot of knowledge.

Zhang Tie wanted to buy some beer yeast and prepare some gifts for Hanna and see what other animals he could set free, so he didn't take a car. Instead, he got ready to look around Blapei after he walked out of the logistics base.

Zhang Tie didn't know that two farmers in grass hats who were bending over to do farming work on the roadside field close to the logistics base had their eyes fixed onto him from the moment he walked out of the base.

"A first lieutenant at a young age who can freely access this place..."

"From his walking pattern and strength, he seems to be lacking physical strength..."

"In the Norman Empire, officers in the logistics base don't need to have great strength..."

"Will we do it..."

"We need to test his real strength. Nowadays, these red-hide dogs are more anxious than us. Since we've lurked in Blapei for so long, we have to do a big one this time..."

The two farmers didn't say anything else, instead, they just exchanged glances which contained a lot of information.

...

Zhang Tie didn't know that he had been watched by others.

After hiring a horse taxi, he looked around Blapei for a while. In one shop, he bought a packet of beer yeast. The moment he held it, Zhang Tie recalled something. 'Oh, I almost forgot about the mutated yeast in the Castle of Black Iron. Mom said that that kind of yeast can be used to brew some light drinks. Why not let Hanna have a try?'

Chapter 230: Crisis In Paradise

In the next few days, Zhang Tie lived a tranquil life. Although the atmosphere was still intense in Blapei, he felt that it had basically nothing to do with him. He was almost a "disabled man" now who was just doing nothing on a post in the Logistics Department while that job of chasing after fleeing saboteurs had nothing to do with him.

With this mentality, Zhang Tie didn't feel restless at all. However, he didn't know that since he had not completely recovered, his sense for danger being close to him was not as sharp as before.

Zhang Tie didn't perceive any danger drawing close to him. In Chevli, he was still the most popular person. Each day, after setting the earthworms free, he would go to the wheat straws drying site to have a hot kiss with Hanna before returning to his rental estate downtown.

Using the special output function of the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie only spent a bit of basic energy storage, aura value points, and merit value points before producing a packet of aura value yeast powder and gifting it to Hanna. The content of each indicator in that packet of yeast powder was only one third of the original content. Because Zhang Tie didn't know whether it would bring trouble if he took out the complete yeast, he only took out an abridged version. But even though he did that, it was still unique.

With the exception of yeast powder, Zhang Tie also sent a small gift to Hanna. Based on his style, like how he had sent gifts to the

girls of the Rose Association, this small gift also worked well at the critical moment, which could also capture girl's heart.

He gifted Hanna with a pair of beautiful gold bracelets heavier than 200 grams that he bought in a jewelry store in Blapei. Hanna's skin was white and smooth, additionally, she was more plump than average girls. Zhang Tie felt that she should be more beautiful in this pair of bracelets as there was a sharp color difference between the gold and her skin, so he bought it. No matter what, Zhang Tie didn't lack money. If he was killed in a battle like that night's bloody fight one day, what would his remaining money be used for? For buying himself a cemetery?

Only by spending all the money he had to satisfy his beloved ones could it be meaningful. Otherwise, there was no difference between a kilogram of gold coins and a kilogram of iron sheets.

When Hanna received that pair of gold bracelets in that secret space under the wheat straw stack, she cried. Seeing such a sunny girl crying for the first time, Zhang Tie was so scared that he hurriedly comforted her for quite a while before managing to stop her tears. Hanna told Zhang Tie that even if she married someone later, she would not receive such expensive betrothal presents. This pair of bracelets could already be her family heirloom in the future.

"If you take this pair of bracelets to propose to me in my home, I'm sure, my parents would very willingly take you as a son-in-law to bear the bride's family name, although you don't seem like able to work harder than my elder brother in the fields..." Hanna said.

However, after saying this, before Zhang Tie could open his mouth, she had already giggled as she supported his face and kissed him, putting it straightforwardly and honestly, "However, I know you won't stay too long in Blapei. From the first day I saw you, I already knew that you were not meant for this kind of farming work.

"But I am doomed to live here. It's impossible for you and me to stay together forever. Since the first time when we started carrying on with this clandestine love affair, I've known that you must have a lot of women. Perhaps your women are waiting for you back home or maybe you like to thrust your bad thing into different women's bodies to conquer them. You want to let them beg forgiveness in front of you and heavily f*ck them so that they can obediently kneel down before you to drink your milk like me. Is it true or not, my little man?"

Hearing the words "little man", Zhang Tie's d*ck became so hard that it instantly became crazy. When he entered Hanna's body, he hadn't even taken off his pants. He just raised her skirt violently and pressed her onto the wheat straw stack. The next moment he pushed away her underwear and revealed her vagina. With Hanna's exclamations, a crazy storm arrived...

That day, Hanna cried twice: once for her soul being moved and once for having collapsed physically.

However, since that day onward, Hanna and Zhang Tie had carried out their clandestine love affair in a braver way. She usually stimulated Zhang Tie with the words like "little man", after which he always became rude and violent.

Zhang Tie liked that stimulation and excitement brought by the clandestine love affair between him and Hanna. He usually immersed in the limitless pleasure brought by her body. Additionally, when Hanna brought him pleasure, she also touched the most hidden side of their love affair.

Since he heard the appellation "little man" which triggered his passion on that day, each time they stayed with each other, Hanna would always stimulate Zhang Tie's nerves and tap the hidden source of excitement in his inner heart. From this, Hanna seemed to obtain the greatest pleasure and an unspeakable satisfaction.

If the girls of the Rose Association and Pandora, Beverly, and Alice had slightly opened one door inside Zhang Tie's body, Hanna had completely pushed it open.

In this average village, Zhang Tie felt that he was living in an absolute paradise these days. When he set the earthworms free, saw them drill into the soil and avoid becoming fodder, he really felt energy converging in his body. It immediately made him feel like he was filled with pleasure and lightness both mentally and physically. He felt like he was taking a bath in a river of pleasure, which made each of his cells cheer up, bringing him a sense of new birth.

That was the pleasure from the earthworms which was transferred to him, making him cheer up through a mysterious link pattern.

Whether it was a pleasure from setting the earthworms free or from staying with Hanna, Zhang Tie felt cool physically and mentally and had an impulse to immerse himself into it and never change.

Everyday, he would try his best to set free earthworms, take off his pants to f*ck a woman, and go back home to eat fruits. Such a life made Zhang Tie feel like living in a paradise. He thought that this might be the right lifestyle that people should have—redemption, pleasure, recovery and growth everyday. To please both oneself and others and to not harm anyone, isn't such a life better than the life full of intrigues and plots?

Go to hell, motherf*cking Kalur; go to hell, motherf*cking war!

In this happiness, Zhang Tie's wounds were rapidly recovering. Soon, his wounds had recovered by about one fifth, reaching 21.8% of his original physical condition. Although the strength of his burning points and his hidden strength of the Iron-Blood Fist skill were still not available, the effects of the numerous Wild Wolf Seven-Strength Fruits that he had eaten could already slightly be seen. At this moment, Zhang Tie's strength had almost reached that of LV 2 Glaze...

"Is there a mature woman who's much older than you in your heart? She's tall with plump breasts and buttocks. She's very womanly and might be the senior in your life. She's your teacher, right?"

Today, after making love, when the two put on clothes in the wheat straw stack, Hanna who was buttoning on her bras suddenly

asked Zhang Tie.

Hearing Hanna's presumption, Zhang Tie became abruptly dumbfounded, stopping midway putting on his pants. With an amazed expression, he stared at Hanna.

"How did you know?"

"Each time I treat you as a kid these days, you want to prove yourself to me. At that time, you would always use more strength when grabbing my breasts and butt. You would try to grab me as a whole and would f*ck me forcefully. Today you wanted to prove it more than before..."

Hanna pointed at several marks left by Zhang Tie's hands on her plump breasts, which were caused soon after she said, "little man, come for your teacher",so today, Zhang Tie had become more barbarous than before.

'Are women born to be psychologists? How could she think of this?'

After being dumbfounded for quite a while, Zhang Tie became bashful and forced a smile. "I'm sorry, I don't know how could I become like this, is it painful now?"

Hanna shook her head and smiled.

"It doesn't matter, you're just taking me as that woman in your

sub-consciousness. I also like this..." Hanna replied, squatting on the straws.

When she finished putting on her corsage, she grabbed Zhang Tie's mummy and swam her little golden fish around it. After that, she put it in her mouth, forcefully sucking and spitting several times. After that, she helped Zhang Tie put his pants back with a giggle and pulled up the zipper. She then slightly patted it.

"You bad thing, you most like to f*ck those mature women, right? I'll show you something next time!"

Being stimulated like this by Hanna, Zhang Tie almost could not stand it. However, as it was a bit late now, he held it in. Besides, Zhang Tie remembered something.

"Oh, I almost forgot it, do any people in your village want to lease their house?"

"What? Do you want to rent a house in our village?"

Hanna cast a weird eye at Zhang Tie before she quickly put away the apron that was spread on the ground.

"Yes, I feel like I'm wasting so much time on the way from the downtown to your village. I want to buy all the earthworms in your village and since there're many households queuing up, I have to come to your village everyday, which is too troublesome. I'd better just live here and go back to the downtown once a week

from then on!"

After coming and going many times, Zhang Tie decided that he was a bit foolish. Why make it this troublesome? Why not just rent a room here in Chevli? Given the recovery of his body, Zhang Tie felt that he had to come here quite often. If he rented out a room here, it would not be necessary for him to spent a couple hours each day traveling back and forth. More so, it would not even cost him a gold coin to rent a house for a year here.

Hanna rolled her eyes in a witty way. "I can find you a house, but what's your reward?"

"Isn't this enough?"

Not knowing what Hanna was thinking, Zhang Tie felt very funny and forcefully pinched her butt twice.

"Of course not enough, I want you to give me a gift!" she said like a spoiled child.

"What gift?"

Zhang Tie became a bit curious. He knew that Hanna was not a greedy woman. As long as they've been staying together, unless he took the initiative, she had never asked for anything before; it was Hanna's first time asking him for a gift.

"You can buy me a set of clothes that your favorite woman always

liked to wear," she whispered in his ear, exhaling.

Hearing her words, Zhang Tie was dumbfounded. He had never imagined that she might want this.

"All right!"

...

When he left Chevli once again, Zhang Tie was still recalling Hanna's requirement. After Hanna let him know that he likes most those mature and much older sexy women, Zhang Tie also realized that she had some weird hobbies of her own these days. When she made love with Zhang Tie, she seemed to treat him as any other person while fantasizing some scenes. The more rude he became, the happier she would be.

Hanna let Zhang Tie understand that perhaps everybody had a bit weird and utterly different thoughts about sex. He liked mature women while Hanna liked weird fantasies. Zhang Tie wondered whether those sanctimonious people liked some even weirder things or not.

...

Zhang Tie walked alone on the country lane from Chevli to Tonikas this time. Although he hadn't been familiar with the route when he came here some time ago, now, he could already return even in darkness.

As there were not many plants and chimneys, the sky of Blapei in the evening was more resplendent than that in Blackhot City. In a nice mood, Zhang Tie whistled as he walked on the country lane alone, thinking some weird thoughts inside. He was trying to recall in which set of clothes Miss Daina looked most beautiful. After carefully thinking it over a couple times, Zhang Tie still couldn't decide as Miss Daina was always the most beautiful no matter what she wore.

'What kind of clothes should I gift Hanna?'

Zhang Tie was puzzled by this problem. That goblin must be thinking of playing some tricks. However, thinking of the pleasures that Hanna brought him, Zhang Tie's heart pounded. No matter whether it was sprinting by embracing her butt or riding on her to enjoy a special tenderness, Zhang Tie would always feel that Hanna made him more comfortable and excited with her more mature tenderness than the girls of the Rose Association or Alice, Beverly, and Pandora.

While he was considering what kind of clothes he could send to Hanna, an image of a woman in a skintight skirt and high-heeled boots, full of temptation, suddenly appeared in Zhang Tie's mind. She was feeling helpless, and was covering her breasts while standing in the shadow.

It was the female tenant who had vomited on Zhang Tie the first time she saw him. She lived on the third floor of Mr. and Mrs. Green's house.

The moment he thought back to that mature and alluring woman, the 15-year old mummy suddenly became hard again. Hanna was right. He liked most those mature women who were much older than him as they were extremely attractive to him. He didn't know whether all male adolescents thought so or not.

A person seemed to be sitting on the roadside up ahead. That person who looked like a farmer was groaning, hugging his feet. He seemed to be suffering from a wound on his feet.

Walking closer, Zhang Tie didn't think too much about it. He just paused for a second before directly walking towards him, squatting down. "Hi, do you need help?"

That person then turned and stared at Zhang Tie with no pain in his expression. When Zhang Tie felt that something was not right, that person suddenly revealed a thin pipe in his mouth. Soon after that, a needle blew out from that fine pipe. Before Zhang Tie could make any response, he felt that his neck was stung. Moments later, heavy sense of dizziness attacked him like a huge wave. Squatting on the ground, Zhang Tie swayed twice before falling down.

"Come on, we got him!" that farmer said in a low voice.

A moment before he passed out, Zhang Tie saw people rushing out of the reeds next to the roadside and walking towards him.

Motherf*ckers, I did nothing these days, whom have I offended...

An irresistible darkness suddenly attacked him.

Zhang Tie was put into a bag and hefted up. The group of people then quickly disappeared from the country lane.

...

Chapter 231: Abducted

Zhang Tie was woken up by a basin of cold water. He quivered at once. The moment he wanted to move, he realized that his hands could not move. When he opened his eyes, a brilliant fluorite lamp was lifted before his face. Affected by the strong light, Zhang Tie instinctively closed his eyes again while turning his head in the direction the light wasn't as strong.

When Zhang Tie's eyes adapted to the light, he turned and checked his current situation.

It seemed like he was inside a warehouse where many barrels were piled. This place seemed to be used to store beer. The moment he saw those beer barrels, Zhang Tie knew that he was still near Blapei because these beer barrels were the forever symbol of Blapei.

Right in this warehouse, Zhang Tie could even smell the fragrance of beer in those barrels.

Zhang Tie was sitting on a chair while two people were pressing his hands with much greater strength than he had now. Although his own current strength was almost like that of a LV 2 warrior, he felt that the two people on his sides were much stronger than him as they seemed to be suppressing him very easily.

Given their strength that was close to that of LV 4-5 warriors, Zhang Tie knew that at this moment if he wanted to fight these people with his trivial fighting strength, any one of them could

casually beat him up. Perhaps he could have dealt with them all before he was wounded, but he was not able to do that at the moment.

Before him were a lot of people who were gazing at him with icy eyes, in which, Zhang Tie saw a bloody madness that he could hardly understand.

What was really out of his imagination was that these people, including the two people who held him on his sides were in the military uniforms of the Norman Empire.

'What the hell!'

Zhang Tie became slightly muddle-headed as he had not offended anybody in the Iron-Horn Army.

"Who are you, what do you want?"

After experiencing the life or death situations on the battlefield, Zhang Tie recovered his composure at once, fixing his icy eyes on these people without any fear on his face.

Zhang Tie knew that he had only one chance for a comeback. Once it was missed, he would really be in danger tonight.

"You are truly an officer retired from the Iron-Blood Camp. It's said you've even gotten an Iron-Blood medal. How many people have you killed to get that..."

One of the soldiers walked towards Zhang Tie. His face was a bit familiar, as if Zhang Tie had seen him before. But before he could recall where he had seen this person, that person punched with his fist at Zhang Tie's lower abdomen. Zhang Tie quivered all over, the blue veins on his neck raising. In a split second, sweat covered his forehead.

Gritting his teeth, Zhang Tie didn't utter even a sound.

"Hoho, I've not realized that although young, you are a tough man!"

Saying this, that man punched another fist into Zhang Tie's lower abdomen. If not being held down by others, Zhang Tie might have been sent flying through the air. After the second fist, Zhang Tie's face suddenly turned pale while a wisp of blood appeared at his mouth corners.

"Red-hide dog, it's said that you were very great on the battlefield. Are you good at killing? Show me!"

With these words, that guy suddenly became grim and took a fierce hold on Zhang Tie's neck. Zhang Tie instantly felt it hard to breathe.

Ten seconds later, Zhang Tie started to feel dizzy.

"It's enough. Keep him alive. We need him to coordinate with us

in the follow-up actions!"

Another person from the crowd opened his mouth. Hearing his words, the first person moved his hand away from Zhang Tie's neck.

After coughing twice, Zhang Tie heavily panted. Facing these people, after hearing that appellation "red-hide dog", Zhang Tie immediately understood something.

"You... are not soldiers of the Norman Empire!"

"Of course, we are descendants of the Brilliant God!"

Another person, who was that farmer lying on the roadside, walked closer. At the sight of him, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled why that person who punched him just now looked familiar. Several days ago, when he was in Tonikas town, he had met that person. He had crashed into him on the road and almost pulled him down.

Zhang Tie finally realized that the man had crashed into him on purpose as he wanted to test his real strength. In that simple way, they knew that his real strength was almost like a LV 2 warrior's. It seemed that these guys had noticed him at least a few days ago.

"You are the fleeing soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers Army from that airship?"

Zhang Tie immediately understood their status.

"Hoho, you're not foolish. I like dealing with smart guys. Now that you know our status, you should understand your own situation!"

"As you didn't kill me, you must want to reach your target with my help, right?"

"Right, if you'll cooperate with us, we'll consider letting you go!"

'Letting me go?' Zhang Tie sneered inside.

These people truly took him for an idiot! He had seen them and now knew where they lurked. Some of them might even be Sun Dynasty's spies in Blapei. In such a case, how could these people let him go?

Seeing Zhang Tie become silent, that guy who had crashed into Zhang Tie slightly smiled as the brilliance in his eyes weirdly flashed. "I know what you're thinking. Once you help us escape from Blapei, we won't kill you. I know your experience in the Iron-Horn Army. You might not know that, but since you killed the Double-Moon Muling in a black robe of the Brilliant Feathers Army, if we could bring you back, we would make a meritorious deed. Therefore, it's more meaningful to keep you alive than killing you."

Zhang Tie sneered inside as he pretended to be dumbfounded. He

understood that these people wanted to give him a beacon of hope by saying that so that he would obediently cooperate with them. They must be thinking that if he clearly knew that he was doomed to be killed, he would never be obedient.

This was a psywar, aimed to soften his willingness to resist. Additionally, Zhang Tie was just a small role—a disabled first lieutenant. Of course he was not worth for Brilliant Feathers' Army to send an airship and so many people to arrest him here. That would be ridiculous!

"Will I stay alive if I'm taken to the Sun Dynasty?" Zhang Tie sneered. "Now that I'm destined to be killed sooner or later, why would I choose to be killed after being taken to the Sun Dynasty by you?"

"You will definitely not die if we bring you back. You might be more useful to the Sun Dynasty if you're alive. Here's one chance. As you're only 15-16 years old, you have a lot of time left. You can experience many splendid things and have a lot of women. As you were a resident of Blackhot City before and had joined Norman Empire only for a few months, you should think twice whether it deserves you to sacrifice your life for it. If you cooperate with us, you can at least live a bit longer; however, if you refuse, you will die at once!"

Once he said this, the man took out a dagger and put the icy blade to Zhang Tie's neck.

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie exclaimed inside, 'Sharp!'.

Although the truth of those words were doubtful, each sentence was persuasive. To tell the truth, besides really stubborn people, anyone hearing them would dream of living for at least a few days more by cooperating with them.

This person was too shrewd and good at persuading people. He could never be one of those dare-to-die soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers Army on the airship, but instead could only be a spy of the Sun Dynasty in Blapei.

All the others in the warehouse had their eyes fixed on Zhang Tie. His life or death would be determined in one split second.

Through the questioning, Zhang Tie had already counted how many people were in the warehouse. Besides himself, there were twelve with none of them being farther than four meters away from him.

'I only have one chance. I should double-check it as I don't want to die together with these guys,' Zhang Tie told to himself inside.

Pretending to struggle, Zhang Tie considered it for several seconds while the dagger on his neck was being pressed with greater strength.

Zhang Tie then looked down, and his shoulders seemed to collapse at once. "What do you want me to do? I know that Blapei is under strict investigation now. Do you want me to send you out of Blapei directly?"

At his words, the dagger on his neck became loose.

"We truly want you to send us out of Blapei, but before that, we should make a chaos in Blapei to attract others' attention, which would be beneficial for us when leaving here!"

"What chaos?"

I know you can freely access the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Base, so before leaving Blapei, we need you to bring us in. If some material warehouses catch on fire tonight, the whole of Blapei would be in chaos. If that happens, we can leave much more easily!"

They man looked sincere when he said this, his eyes shiny with an exceptional brilliance.

Zhang Tie knew that the true reason that they abducted him and took him here was that they wanted him to bring them into the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Base in Blapei. They would then destroy things inside, as well as him, instead of taking him back for some reward. His life might come to an end when he took these guys into the base.

'Damn, these bitches really found a cowardly lion to deal with. F*ck!'

"If we're going to the base, I have to change my clothes. I need to

get my officer's uniform from my residence!" Zhang Tie replied after thinking for a while.

"Don't worry, we've already prepared your clothes. You can change here. Since you have your officer certificate with you as well, you've saved us a lot of time!"

Ridicule flashed on his face. He then waved his hand while another man in a soldier's clothes of the Norman Empire threw a military uniform in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't know how these people had gotten these military uniforms, but this problem was trivial right now, so he just ignored it. As spies of the Sun Dynasty in Blapei, if they couldn't do this, they would be too stupid.

Zhang Tie then pretended to change into the military uniform, but he noticed that his hands couldn't move at all. He then glanced at the person who had talked to him. That man then looked at the two men on Zhang Tie's sides, who then let go of his arms.

No matter what, a great amount of people were watching Zhang Tie. Additionally he had been searched all over, so they didn't fear such a simple guy playing any trick.

Zhang Tie rubbed his wrists that had been heavily pinched by the two guys and had turned purple. Standing up from the chair, he bent over to pick up the military uniform. Under the others' gazes, he obediently took off his clothes and put on that first lieutenant's military uniform, including the military boots.

After putting on this the military uniform, Zhang Tie naturally moved the length of his height. He faced the twelve people in the warehouse. Everybody was then in his vision and within four meters of him.

Seeing Zhang Tie cooperating with them so well, these people who were gazing tightly at him became slightly relaxed. At the same time, a wisp of a sneer and contempt appeared on their faces.

'Red-hide dog, you want to live, humph humph... It seems that the one who has gained the Iron-

Blood Medal of the Norman Empire was not as sharp as in the legend!' they thought to themselves.

Not until Zhang Tie put on that military uniform and fasten his belt, when he found them most relaxed, did he ask a casual question .

"How many people do you have? If you have too many, I cannot bring all of you in to the base!"

"We have fifteen!" Seeing Zhang Tie wanting to cooperate, the first man also slightly relaxed. He didn't know what Zhang Tie had truly meant by asking him about their numbers, so he immediately added, "Besides the twelve here, we've got three guards outside the warehouse. We've already got a military SUV. You and me will sit in the cab. When we drive in, you just tell them we're here to repair vehicles."

"Fifteen?" Zhang Tie double-checked.

"Fifteen!"

That man nodded while he giving Zhang Tie a weird look. Unexpectedly, he found an intricate expression on Zhang Tie's face.

"Then..." Zhang Tie took a deep breath as the smile on his face disappeared. At the same time, his two eyes radiated killing intent. "You can go die now!"

Soon after he said this, the twelve binding chains that swam around the mysterious rune in his mind flew out of the middle of his eyebrows and immediately hit the twelve people in the warehouse like invincible lightning bolts and chains...

Chapter 232: Unexpected

The second Zhang Tie activated the binding skill in the warehouse like an invisible storm, he knew that he had succeeded because the effect of the chains hitting all the twelve people was brought to his mind at once.

Among these people, the highest rank was LV 6 while the lowest was LV 2. The effect of binding skill ranged from over three to over eight minutes, which depended on the ratio of their spiritual energy to that of Zhang Tie.

Before releasing the binding skill, Zhang Tie had bet that no figure above LV 7 was in this warehouse. As spies of the Sun Dynasty, they should have high intelligence instead of high fighting strength, so their levels should not be too high.

What Zhang Tie was most concerned about were those fleeing guys from the airship. He was not sure about the highest level among the figures sent from the Sun Dynasty.

Zhang Tie didn't know that those people had taken the secret medicine of the Sun Dynasty before coming here and didn't plan to come back alive, so he presumed based on usual rules. But in reality, since those people were doomed to die in this mission, the Sun Dynasty would not have assigned officers with high levels. After all, fighters above LV 6 were not cheap white cabbages.

He was right. The highest level of the people in the warehouse was that person's who had punched him just now, a LV 6 fighter

whose battle-qi totem was black spider.

The whole warehouse immediately froze up. With the exception of Zhang Tie, the rest could only move their eyes. Nobody understood what was happening. The moment they were hit by the binding chains, everybody lost control of their body. They could still see, sense, and think, but not move.

What was happening?

Zhang Tie then moved his wrist and grabbed the dagger from that guy who had wanted to trick him just now. In a split second, that guy's eyes were full of fear and shock. He wanted to say something, but he could not even open his mouth. As if posed with an immobilization skill, he just stood there like an idiot with eyes widely opened, watching Zhang Tie taking the dagger from his hand.

After taking the dagger, Zhang Tie cast a smile at that person. "Unexpected, right? What you wanted to do had nothing to do with me, so I didn't want to kill you, but now that you want to kill me, I have to say sorry..."

Putting his left arm on that person's shoulder, Zhang Tie fiercely thrust the dagger into his chest, directly hitting his heart. Once the man's eyes lost their spirit, Zhang Tie then carefully put him on the ground without making any sound.

Due to his experience in the Iron-Blood Camp, Zhang Tie didn't hesitate to kill a person. He did it fast, like killing a chicken.

After killing this one, Zhang Tie walked towards the person who had beat him just now. It was the only LV 6 fighter among them. Putting his arm around that person's shoulder like how he did to the first one, Zhang Tie thrust the dagger into his chests and slowly lowered him to the ground.

In a minute, Zhang Tie quickly ended the lives of all the twelve people in the warehouse the same way.

He had not imagined that he would have to kill so many people when he used his binding skill for the first time. Actually, he didn't want to kill them. He had killed too many people on the battlefields. Previously, he thought that he could remain peaceful in Blapei, but unexpectedly, he had to kill people again. In this age, many things were out of one's control!

After killing the twelve people in the warehouse, Zhang Tie sighed inside. He cleaned the dagger on the last person's military uniform, then silently walked around the wooden barrels, towards the exit of the warehouse. When he reached it, he saw clearly that this warehouse was on the second floor of a building, so, he walked downstairs to the first floor.

In the "hide the blade" move, he put the blade against his wrist and slowly walked downstairs, leaning against the wall.

A pile of sundries were piled under the stairs, while a truck marked with the symbol of the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army parked nearby.

...

Two people in the military uniform of the Norman Empire's soldiers were guarding that truck with their eyes fixed on the entrance of the building. If that person didn't lie to him, with the exception of the two near the truck, there should be another sentry in the courtyard outside the distillery to make them fifteen people in total.

The distance between the entrance of the building and the truck was over ten meters. The gate of the distillery was right in front of the truck. If he wanted to leave, he had to kill the two people next to the truck without catching the attention of the sentry outside. After thinking for a while in the entrance, Zhang Tie came up with an idea.

Making some noise on purpose, he walked out of the shadow at the entrance of the building towards the two people at a medium speed, moving towards the truck.

The moment the two people caught sight of Zhang Tie casually walking out of the entrance in military uniform, they became stunned.

"Is it that truck? It looks nice. But something's not right with it. I agree to take you into the logistics base, but if you want to pretend this truck needs to be repaired, you have to make it look dirty..."

As if not seeing the two people at all, Zhang Tie walked towards

them and started to judge the truck.

"Stop, where are the others?"

The two soldiers immediately became alert.

"They're arranging their uniforms upstairs. For average soldiers, their military uniforms are too clean. If they want to pretend to be soldiers coming back from the battlefield or the transportation team, this would bring them trouble, so they told me to come downstairs first. Your clothes should be a bit dirty too..."

Ignoring their suspicions, Zhang Tie still moved closer toward them. Soon, he was less than eight meters away.

Zhang Tie's leisurely attitude and his familiarity with tonight's plan stunned the two for a bit more. They felt that what he said was reasonable, and he could not have killed all the people upstairs alone, so they instantly loosened their vigilance around him.

When he was seven meters away from them, Zhang Tie let out a breath and immediately froze the two people with binding chins. As a result, they could only stare at him with fearful eyes.

"Where's another one? Hurry up, call him in. We're going to set off. If it's too late, the investigation on the vehicles accessing the base would be stricter..." Zhang Tie shouted loudly on purpose as he passed by the two soldiers and opened the side door of the warehouse. He then exclaimed towards outside impatiently,

"Hurry up, come on in, after preparations we'll have to go!"

After saying this, although his heart pounded, Zhang Tie still pretended to sit down calmly at a desk in front of the two frozen soldiers, seemingly waiting for that person outside to come in.

Through the open side door of the warehouse, the sentry outside could easily see the two soldiers standing beside Zhang Tie, safe and sound.

Zhang Tie just sat there and waited for that one to come in. Based on the effect of the binding chains on the two soldiers, he had eight minutes left. He didn't believe that the sentry outside would not come inside to have a look when he saw the side door opened and was called inside for preparations.

Generally speaking, sentries outside would always stay in a very hidden place. Compared to finding that person out at the risk of his life, it was wiser for Zhang Tie to let that sentry come in by himself.

Certainly, after less than half a minute, a head popped out from the side door of the distillery. Although a bit suspicious, at the sight of Zhang Tie sitting well on the chair while the two soldiers were standing beside him that sentry immediately loosened his vigilance and walked in.

When he came, that sentry was still holding a crossbow with a bolt on it. At the sight it in that person's hands, Zhang Tie was drenched in cold sweat all over. If he had hurriedly slipped out of

the distillery just now, he might have already been a corpse.

Zhang Tie's decision was right. Binding skill was not an all-purpose skill, especially in crisis when a calm mindset, courage, and insight counted most. Although risky, his decision had saved his life tonight again.

Zhang Tie then let out a long breath inside.

"Where are Victor and the others?" asked the sentry in a very meticulous way, becoming doubtful as he came in.

Zhang Tie didn't know who was Victor, but he knew he must be a partner of this guy.

"They're dressing upstairs..."

Right then, the sentry caught sight of the two frozen people beside Zhang Tie. As Zhang Tie was paying full attention to the sentry's expressions, the moment he saw his face suddenly changing, Zhang Tie immediately threw the desk before himself. Almost in a split second, with a sound of "duo", Zhang Tie felt was shocked as a half of a sharp arrowhead with icy light penetrated through the thick desk and stopped right before his forehead.

Zhang Tie then rolled on the ground. At the same time, that person pulled out his dagger and rushed towards Zhang tie. As a result, the distance between the two of them was immediately reduced to seven meters.

Zhang Tie felt a bit cold between his eyebrows...

A binding chain flew out like an invisible lightning bolt...

While that person rushing forward fell to the ground...

The whole distillery became calm once again.

Zhang Tie panted heavily. The past two seconds were as adventurous as that bloody fight that night. If he was a bit slower or the desk was a bit thinner, it would have been a totally different outcome.

After gasping a couple times, Zhang Tie stood up from the ground. He then walked towards that person fallen on the ground. Ignoring the vacancy and shock in that person's eyes, Zhang Tie immediately pulled out his dagger and directly thrust it into his chest. With eyes popped out, that person then sprouted blood from his mouth corner before finally tilting his head to one side and moving no more.

Zhang Tie then walked before the two soldiers who had been struck by binding chains and carefully stared at their faces for awhile. After staring for a short time, he finally discovered the problem. They had their eye popped out and weren't blinking at all! Additionally, there was a wisp of panic in their eyes. Once having watched it for several seconds, careful people would find that there was something wrong with their faces.

'Thank God.'

Zhang Tie let out a long breath...

Several seconds later, nobody was alive except for Zhang Tie inside the distillery. After dressing up, he stealthily slipped away.

Although 2000 gold coins' reward was a huge sum of money, Zhang Tie was not mad enough to make money by exposing his secret. At this time, he didn't lack money at all. If he was questioned how he could kill so many people alone as a disabled person who had not even recovered yet, how would he reply? Telling them that he ate a Fruit of Judgment or that the saboteurs and spies of the Sun Dynasty suddenly became idiots and just stood still to be thrust to death by him?

Zhang Tie didn't want to be notice, so he silently left this place!

After leaving the warehouse, Zhang Tie didn't know that in a building on the opposite side of the road, a person with wholly gray hair, black coat, and sanguine gloves was standing in a dark room with his eyes fixed on him who was slipping away from the courtyard of the warehouse. All of a sudden, the man's eyes as sharp as that of wolves radiated faint lights...

Fifteen minutes after Zhang Tie left the distillery, the man who was standing before the windowsill waved his hand and a group of people in black coats suddenly rushed into that distillery like ghosts that appeared in the darkness.

...

Nobody in this world could grasp and predict everything. Zhang Tie had not predicted that he could be abducted by others; those people who abducted him had not predicted that the first lieutenant of the logistics department who had been almost disabled had such a terrifying trump card. Additionally, Zhang Tie had not predicted that when he left the distillery, all his movements had been watched by other people as this warehouse had been monitored for several days.

That person with gray hair and sanguine gloves had not predicted that the good play that he had been expecting for tonight would cease all of a sudden. According to his plan, those saboteurs and spies of the Sun Dynasty were just a tool which could be used to smack someone's face while making others pleased. From the start, he fully understood what these people's plan was. Since the third day he arrived at Blapei, they had been completely under his control.

The Iron-Horn Army might be very sharp on the battle field, but speaking of the ways used to deal with these mice, the elephant Iron-Horn Army didn't enjoy a good reputation. Although they could turn cities into battlefields by building wire meshes and moats, they didn't know that those mice were exceptionally good at accessing wire meshes and moats.

The most perfect plot was that when the saboteurs and spies of the Sun Dynasty made the whole Blapei chaotic, the dark robed guys would catch the boring mice and send them to Nordinburg,

which could make these guys in red gloves more attractive in some big figures' eyes, just like cockroaches on a cake or mice in a ball!

This was how this world went. No matter whether you liked it or not, many people would encounter each other due to various emergencies like two trains driving on the same rail from opposite directions, which, after crashing into each other, would change their directions out of control...

Whether they would derail or fly out of the precipice and cause damage and casualties, only God knew...

Chapter 233: Chop You To Feed Dogs

Zhang Tie didn't feel good. Nobody would feel good after experiencing what happened tonight—being plotted against, abducted, lied to walk into a deathtrap, used by others like a tool; he had almost lost his life. Additionally, he had to even use his trump card to escape...

He had no other choice but to kill fifteen people in total.

Because it was not too late yet, after leaving that distillery, Zhang Tie stopped a horse taxi and arrived at the block where his residence was located in only a bit more than twenty minutes.

Not until his belly uttered 'gulu gulu' after he got off the horse taxi did Zhang Tie realize that he had not eaten supper.

Damned.

After hurriedly eating supper in a roadside hotel, Zhang Tie came back to his residence with a gloomy expression.

He intended to leave here two days later. After that, he intended to come back at most once a week. In wartime, Blapei was not a peaceful land any more. If he put on his military uniform, he would stir up many troubles downtown, such as this time. In contrast, the Chevli village was like a paradise where he could set free earthworms and f*ck women, bringing himself power and happiness. Although Chevli was a small village, Zhang Tie only wanted to completely recover in that small village.

After experiencing another fatal danger, he sincerely felt the importance of real strength required to live in this world. This time, if he had been a bit weaker or didn't have that binding skill brought by the god rune, he might have been killed in the rear instead of a battlefield.

'Real strength, real strength, real strength...' Zhang Tie mumbled inside several times as he walked out of the hotel, even more strongly wishing to move to Chevli. If he moved there and made good use of his time, he could set free earthworms several times faster than before.

Zhang Tie had already made his decision.

Nevertheless, he had not expected that his bad luck tonight hadn't yet ended.

Mr. Green was silently waiting for him at the end of the lane. The moment he caught sight of Zhang Tie, the landowner ran out at once.

"More than ten people are looking for you. They look ferocious and are waiting for you to return..." Mr. Green told Zhang Tie, full of concern.

'More than ten people are waiting for me? Ferocious?' Zhang Tie frowned. 'After killing so many people in the battlefield with the other members of the Iron-Blood Camp, even breaking my "Woman's Excellence" and "Man's Certificate" and killing fifteen

people just now, how could anyone still dare to find me trouble? Vicious? They dare to play this role in front of me...'

"Do they wear military uniforms?" Zhang only asked Mr. Green one question.

"No, but many of them are holding steel pipes and iron chains..."

Saying this, Mr. Green glanced at Zhang Tie's weak body.

Since Blapei had been peaceful for a long time, everybody had become too relaxed. When the Iron-Horn Army arrived here, no casualties were caused, so most people here, including the innocent Mr. and Mrs. Green, might have forgotten what the military uniform he wore meant. Did they consider the Iron-Horn Army as the vigilante group in Blapei composed of volunteers?

'Someone dares to find trouble for military officers of the Norman Empire on a newly occupied land?'

Zhang Tie was so annoyed that he almost became thrilled. They really didn't know what death meant.

"Mr. Green, thanks for your warning. You go back first and close your gate. Forget about them. I will solve this trouble!"

After comforting Mr. Green for a while, Zhang Tie then asked him to go back first before leaving this lane.

As those spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty in Blapei had not been caught, there were many patrols and sentries of No. 21 Division on the streets.

Only after less than 100 m, Zhang Tie had already found a team of patrolling soldiers of the No. 21 Division. He casually showed his military officer's certificate to them and explained what was happening. All the soldiers then pulled out their sabers and followed Zhang Tie back full of killing intent.

Before Mr. and Mrs. Green's house, more than ten people were lazily standing in the shadow under the tree.

"Mr. Beise, don't forget the benefits you've promised us after we deal with that lad for you..."

A ruffian with a ring hanging off his nose and legs full of tattoos was talking to a 40-odd man who had been ferociously beaten up by Zhang Tie last time and driven away from the female tenant's on the third floor door.

After a week, most of that middle-aged man's wounds had recovered, except for a plaster on his forehead. The moment he heard someone beside him mention that lad who had beaten him up that day, he gritted his teeth. That day, Zhang Tie had not only ruined his happiness but also deeply impressed him with the ferocious beating.

What he couldn't understand and felt a bit humiliated by was

that he was scared away by a brat of 15-16 years old. This really annoyed him. So the moment his wounds were almost all recovered, he immediately fetched some helpers to find Zhang Tie trouble.

On that day, when Zhang Tie had beaten him, he was wearing plain clothes, so, he had not imagined that the kid would be an officer of the Iron-Horn Army. Additionally, Zhang Tie was truly much younger than him. Due to such simple negligence, Mr. Beise would encounter a great tragedy.

"Besides that brat, I'll definitely get that woman tonight!" After those words, the man thought of Linda's hot figure and charming face and felt his lower body becoming slightly hot. "Linda, bitch, you really thought that the brat could help you refuse me? I'll show you something tonight..."

"I've heard that the woman is very beautiful!" The guy with a ring in his nose said, revealing an obscene smile. "I think Mr. Beise will not mind me receiving some benefits from her!"

Hearing this, all the other guys with iron rods, sabers, and iron chains burst into laughter.

However, that middle-aged man became a bit uncomfortable. Nevertheless, knowing that he had to rely on them to deal with Zhang Tie, he responded with a 'Hmm'. It was just a woman. After he enjoyed Linda himself, it would be good to punish her in this way so that she would be a bit more obedient from then on.

While they were talking about how to distribute the rewards, Zhang Tie slowly showed himself in the lane near Mr. Green's house. As there was no lamplight on the two sides of this lane and outside Mr. Green's house, they could only see Zhang Tie's figure when he walked out of the darkness. They could not see clearly what he was wearing, neither did they notice that he was not alone but followed by a team of soldiers.

"That's him..." Zhang Tie's figure and height were deeply impressed in Mr. Beise's mind, so the moment Zhang Tie appeared, Mr. Beise caught sight of him. Afraid of the boy escaping, he pointed at him and shouted loudly, "Don't let him escape, beat him to death!"

After waiting there for quite a while, over ten "ferocious" ruffians and rogues rushed out with various weapons. That guy with a ring on his nose and an iron chain in his hand ran fastest. Not until he rushed in front of Zhang Tie did he clearly see Zhang Tie's military uniform. The brim of the hat covered a small half of his face, while Zhang Tie was followed by a team of soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army who had long pulled out their sabers. They were all full of killing intent.

In a split second, that guy froze as if struck by a lightning bolt. His face immediately turned pale while the other ruffians followed up with exclamations and grim expressions...

"Keep them alive..."

After delivering the order, Zhang Tie waved his hand, and all the soldiers of No. 21 Division behind him growled and rushed out of

the darkness.

Before the soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army who were as ferocious as wolves and tigers, those ruffians didn't have a chance to make any response before being beaten up and left sprawled on the ground, wailing like ghosts and howling like wolves. After a single round, in less than five seconds, all of them were already lying. If it was not Zhang Tie's order, none of these people would've been still alive tonight.

The ruffians were instantly shocked. Until then, they still hadn't thought it through. Weren't they here to deal with a brat? How could so many soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army have rushed out? At the sight of Zhang Tie's icy expression, they were more spiritually afraid than physically pained.

However, as Blapei had been peaceful for such a long time, even now, not everyone had understood their situation. Some muddle-headed person from among the ruffians was used to being brutal. He still thought that there was no difference between these guys in dark red military uniforms and the former vigilante groups.

"Bastard, you bastards, do you know who I am. You dare to tramp me. You're doomed to death. I'm..."

"Kill him!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's emotionless order, one of the soldiers instantly slashed with his saber. Almost at the same time, a head with a mouth still opening to swear rolled to Zhang Tie's feet.

Without even an extra blink, Zhang Tie casually kicked it to one side.

In a split second, all the ruffians lying on the ground peed from fright. When that soldier flicked his saber, Zhang Tie heard an exclamation from the residence on the second floor and a hurried closing of a window. He guessed that the young couple must have been terrified when they saw the scene here, same as Mr. and Mrs. Green's whose residence's curtains were also drawn at the same time.

Zhang Tie didn't see those ruffians lying on the ground at all, instead, he just pulled out the saber from the waist of one soldier standing beside him and walked directly to that man who had been ferociously beaten up that day.

At the sight of Zhang Tie walking toward him with a saber in hand, Mr. Beise quivered how a mandarin duck did to shake off water from its feathers and immediately knelt down on to the ground.

Patting Mr. Beise's forehead with the blade of the saber, Zhang Tie said, "Do you remember what I said last time. If I see you again, I'll chop you to feed dogs. Now, I will count from 1 to 10. If you cannot give me a reason to forgive you, I will chop off your head to feed dogs..."

Chapter 234: Mercy And Tactics

"One..."

Zhang Tie opened his mouth without any mood.

"Ah, it's my fault, it's my fault..."

That middle-aged man's face turned pale.

"Two..."

"I didn't know you were a military officer of the Norman Empire..."

The man started to ooze cold sweat.

"Three..."

"I just wanted to give you a lesson. I didn't want to kill you, ah..."
that man cried out.

"Four..."

"I didn't mean it..."

He became soft all over.

"Five..."

"I will never think about Linda any more! That woman is yours, she's yours! You can do whatever you want..."

The man's mind entered a confused state.

"Six..."

"Linda owes me 187 gold coins. I won't ask her for any of it any more... I won't want it any more. Here's the contract between us..."

The man pulled out a paper from the inside of his coat and put it before Zhang Tie in his quivering hand...

"Seven..."

Zhang Tie's voice remained unchanged at all.

"I'm just an average businessman. Forgive me please..."

Fart and pee were almost scared out of the man...

"Eight..."

Zhang Tie raised his shiny long saber...

"It's my fault... it's really my fault..."

The man was in such despair that he started to weep...

"Nine..."

Zhang Tie raised his long saber high, readying himself to slash down to kill this guy. He would never feel reluctant in killing someone who had been exclaiming to attack an officer of the Norman Empire and beat him to death. If he did that, he would not have any trouble at all. When that person shouted to beat Zhang Tie to death, all the others' lives had come in possession of Zhang Tie.

"...I have three kids to feed at home, I'm sorry for them..."

By now, the man's face was covered with nasal mucus and saliva. At the last moment, he just sat down on the ground, losing all hope and started to mumble whatever came to his mind.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie slightly lowered his saber, then raised it up again, intending to slash down. However, after thinking for a while, he let out a sigh. He then put down his saber again. Given this guy's age, his three kids might be at a young age. For some reason, the moment he heard this guy caring about his kids at home at the critical moment of life or death, he grew soft-hearted

and stopped his slash.

After throwing the saber to the soldier beside him, Zhang Tie grabbed the contract from Mr. Beise's hand and glanced at it twice. The alleged contract was just a delivery contract between that guy and a distillery which was signed several months ago. In Blapei, these kind of contracts could often be seen. Since Blapei's beer was sold to the whole former Andaman Alliance, many dealers had similar agreements with distilleries on delivering: how much beer, at what price, in which period, and how to deal with it if one party could not fulfill this agreement.

After a single glance at the contract Zhang Tie understood what was happening. Obviously, this time, the distillery didn't fulfill the agreement. This agreement was signed before the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty encountered the former Andaman Alliance, and the the delivery should have been fulfilled two weeks ago. The price of beer on the contract was also calculated based on the market price before the war.

Previously, there was no problem with this contract. However, after the war broke out, the market price of grains soared while the cost of beer brewed with wheat had risen more than once. If they continued to delivery goods based on the contracted price, the distillers would need a lot of money to fulfill this contract. The liquidated damages were 187 gold coins, which was twice the contracted trading volume of beer. This was not a small amount of money for a small distillery.

Did this man then use the debt which was due to force that woman on the third floor to be his mattress? Zhang Tie

immediately understood what had happened. That distillery might have been opened by that woman's family members.

Zhang Tie then threw the contract to the man. "Remember what you said just now. Eat this contract, then I will forgive you!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that man hurriedly tore the contract and put it into his mouth before forcefully chewing on it. He then directly swallowed it. Finally, he opened his mouth and let Zhang Tie check it.

Zhang Tie then left this man alive before looking around at all the other ruffians of Blapei. When one of them had his head chopped off, all the others had become so scared that they almost lost their minds. Seeing Zhang Tie coming towards them, they all quivered like screening rice chaff.

Zhang Tie then glanced at the weapons left by these craps on the ground. He then pointed at one iron rod and casually stared at one of those guys on the ground being trampled by soldiers.

"You have one minute to break others' legs using this iron rod. If you can do that, I will not chop off your head!" After saying this, Zhang Tie ordered two soldiers standing on two sides of this guy, "You check the time. From this moment if he cannot do it in one minute, you will chop off his head!"

"Ah..."

At Zhang Tie's words, that guy became stunned for a second before screaming like a lunatic and jumping up from the ground. Without any hesitation, he hefted up that iron rod and started to knock at his partners' legs.

Among the continual sounds of breaking bones and miserable screams, all the other ruffians had their legs broken. That person truly completed his mission in one minute. However, the fear of those ruffians towards Zhang Tie and the soldiers of the Norman Empire had already become animosity. They all stared at him with flaring eyes. The survival law of ruffians was very simple. As they wanted to find Zhang Tie trouble, they found him trouble due to his lack of any background. Therefore, they should owe their bad luck to Mr. Beise, but facing their partner's betrayal, all them started to swear...

"Pah... Bilis, you bastard, we're really cheated by you..."

"...Don't fall in our hands from now on..."

"Ah... you bastard, you really broke my knee..."

"...I will kill you..."

Zhang Tie then glanced at them with an icy expression. From then on, these ruffians became as uncooperative as a plate of sparse sand. The guy called Bilis was also over. If he didn't want to be thrust with something to death by others, he'd better bury his name and hide far away in an alien area. If he still wanted to stay in Blapei, he would soon become a corpse thrown into a dark ditch.

Otherwise, if he was smart enough, he had another choice...

He did not know since when, but Zhang Tie perceived that he could use tactics. Perhaps, this was the alleged growth.

"Take away your partner's corpse and clean up here. You're not allowed to leave even half a drop of blood before Mr. Green's house. Then, you can roll out of here!"

...

In the next ten minutes, after arranging the corpse who had its head chopped off, all the other ruffians including Mr. Beise left as if they'd lost their souls, except for one who had his head lowered, not even daring to look at Zhang Tie. From all the people, Bilis was the only guy who was safe and sound. Before all the other ruffians left, they cast dagger-like eyes towards him, which really made him tremble.

When Bilis was going to leave, not knowing what to do next, Zhang Tie glanced at him. Whether he lived or not, it depended on his choice tonight.

...

"Brothers, thanks for solving such trivial trouble!"

After those bastards left, Zhang Tie extended his appreciation to those soldiers that had followed him here.

"It's our honor to solve such a little thing for an officer who has gained an Iron-Blood Medal! Sir, what you have done in the battlefield can reduce a lot of casualties of brothers like us."

A first class sergeant and all the other soldiers then gave a military salute to Zhang Tie.

On Zhang Tie's military officer's certificate were the records of his retirement due to his wounds, and the honors in the Iron-Blood Camp. Each soldier of the Norman Empire clearly knew the extremely low possibility for an officer of the Iron-Blood Camp gaining an Iron-Blood Medal in a battlefield. They knew that Zhang Tie might have killed more officers of the Sun Dynasty than there was of them.

After reading the records on Zhang Tie's retirement and what honors he had gained, those soldiers paid more tribute to him. This explained how a tiger still looked ferocious although sick. Any soldier who had won the Iron-Blood Medal could gain respect in any place across the Norman Empire, let alone in the army.

After seeing them off, Zhang Tie returned to his residence on the fourth floor. When he walked upstairs, the couple on the second floor immediately turned off their lamps. Zhang Tie guessed that they must be too flustered as they toppled over something on the ground and caused some noise. Hearing no footsteps from the inside of their residence, Zhang Tie knew that they were probably holding their breath and waiting for him to go upstairs before dealing with the broken item.

Shaking his head, Zhang Tie forced a smile. Because he had killed so many people today, he didn't want to kill anyone else. He had been too merciful to those bastards by only killing one of them. Although for him it was too soft, this kind of event might be too bloody for average people. Zhang Tie knew that he had changed a lot compared to himself several months ago. If it was back then, facing this affair, he might respond similarly to the young couple on the second floor.

Returning to his residence, Zhang Tie took a bath, ate a fruit, and cultivated his spiritual energy.

The Fruit of Redemption today helped him recover 1.2% more. However, he only had three binding chains left. These items which could save his life, Zhang Tie certainly could not ignore them. He then hurriedly consumed his spiritual energy to process two more binding chains, using that god rune in his mind sea. After that, he slightly recovered his composure. No matter what, five binding chains were more powerful than three.

Finally, after processing the binding chains, Zhang Tie cultivated "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus" for more than an hour to slightly recover his spiritual energy before sinking in to sleep.

Previously, "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus" was very effective in recovering his spiritual energy, but after his spiritual energy had surged dozens of times, that recovery effect was becoming increasing more trivial, however, it was better than nothing at all.

The next morning, after he got up and cleaned himself, Zhang Tie went downstairs to see someone already waiting for him

outside Mr. and Mrs. Green house—Bilis.

Chapter 235: Hatchet Men And Lackeys

Bilis squatted on the side of Mr. and Mrs. Green house's parterre, eyes red, face blue. He was quivering all over with some dew on his clothes. Given his look, this ruffian might have waited next to the stairs through the whole night. Since it was already autumn, even if he was a 30-odd youth, it was still not easy for Bilis to stay overnight outside.

The moment he caught sight of Zhang Tie going downstairs, Bilis picked himself up and walked towards him. He then immediately knelt down before him with tearful eyes.

"I will follow your orders from now on, and will do whatever you want me to do!"

Last night, Bilis didn't even dare to return home; instead, he hid here for the night. Previously, he considered to leaving at once, but if he left this familiar place, he didn't know where he could go and what he could do in the chaotic world.

If he stayed in Blapei, though, Bilis knew that once those people whom he had crippled recovered, what awaited him was a pain-to-death outcome. After thinking it over carefully, Bilis found that his means of livelihood was that place where he picked up the iron rod last night. That young officer who could beat him into the hell with only one word was his last hope.

Even now that person could kill him at any time, but he could also make him live at any time. He had no other choice but this.

Of Zhang Tie, after experiencing what had happened last night, he had an instinctive fear—those ruffians would use weapons to kill people, but Zhang Tie only needed to move his lips. Certainly, Bilis knew who was sharper.

"It seems that you're not that foolish. Have you thought it through?" Zhang Tie asked him.

The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, Bilis showed more awe to him. It turned out that this man already knew what was his next step. Forcefully swallowing his saliva, Bilis nodded.

"Then, follow me!"

Zhang Tie walked in to the lane, closely followed by Bilis.

...

He went to eat breakfast in a hotel on the block. He also ordered one for Bilis along with a glass of brandy to help him warm up. This made Bilis feel really flattered. Although they sat on the same table, Bilis was as obedient as a primary school student. He dared not make a noise when he drank and ate.

Zhang Tie kept eating his own breakfast without a word. He didn't even glance at Bilis. After breakfast, he cleaned his mouth with a napkin and put down his knife and fork.

Seeing Zhang Tie putting down his knife and fork, Bilis, who kept gnawing at food, not daring to make a noise, hurriedly swallowed and put down his own knife and fork. With hands on his knees, he obediently listened to Zhang Tie's words.

Zhang Tie was less than half his age, but before him Bilis was as obedient as a rabbit in front of a tiger.

"Your name is..."

"My name is Bilis..."

The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, Bilis hurriedly answered, afraid of offending him.

"Hmm!" Zhang Tie cast a glance at him. "How much did that guy pay you to beat me last night?"

"Two... two gold coins!"

When the conversation shifted to what had happened last night, Bilis started to restlessly twist on his chair. He knew that the scumbags led by Beise would never dare to offend an officer of the Norman Empire. Beise was really a bad-luck scumbag, who didn't even figure out Zhang Tie's status before moving against the latter. The outcome was that everybody got a miserable lesson.

'Two gold coins?' Zhang Tie became slightly dumbfounded. 'There were at least ten ruffians last night. Would they risk their

lives for only two gold coins?'

Thinking of this, he found that his attitude was now different from before, especially on money.

Two gold coins was a small amount of money to Zhang Tie now, but it was a great sum of money for small figures living at the bottom of society. Of course they would agree to beat him up for over ten silver coins per person, as this amount of money were not a small figure for both villagers of Chevli and those ruffians.

Wasn't he himself very jubilant after gaining two silver coins after being beaten up by fatty and the other members of the Hit-Plane Brotherhood several months ago? At that time, he even begrudged spending several copper coins to go to school by a public vehicle.

As he started to recall his previous living, Zhang Tie became slightly dumbfounded. When he spoke up again, it was already half a minute later.

Bilis was nervously watching him, afraid of him being annoyed.

"Don't worry, I just recalled something before!" Zhang Tie smiled as he comforted Bilis. "Do you know what I want you to do now?"

"No... I don't know!" After saying this, Bilis flattered Zhang Tie once again, "I'll do whatever you want me to do!"

"Go to Beise and get back your compensation!"

"Ah..."

Bilis widely opened his mouth. He really had not imagined that Zhang Tie would order him to do this.

"However, the amount is not two gold coins, but twenty gold coins. You go to Beise and tell him this is the price for him finding people to beat me. I dispatch you there, so he'll definitely give you the money!"

Zhang Tie leisurely sipped a mouthful of juice.

Bilis tried his best to remain calm as he forcefully swallowed his saliva. "Do you want me to bring this money back to you?"

Zhang Tie forced a smile as he joyfully looked at Bilis. "Do you think I'm that kind of person who would rip someone off using this affair, or that I urgently need twenty gold coins?"

"Oh, no, of course not, I just, I just..."

Since he was a bit nervous, a lot of sweat oozed out on Bilis' forehead at once.

Zhang Tie then interrupted his speech. "No more explanations, I know what you want to say. I don't need that money. It's for you.

You will arrange this amount of money, then take it and go find your partners whose legs you've broken last night. This amount of money will be for their medical treatment and settling-in allowance during this period. Tell them that you're working for me and let them follow your orders. Do you need me to teach you about such a simple thing!"

Face blushed, Bilis thought of something before his face turned gloomy once again. "Then, how should I deal with my bo... boss then?"

"Boss?"

Zhang Tie didn't understand what Bilis meant for a second as the moment he heard the appellation, he immediately thought of Reinhardt.

"I mean that guy who rushed towards you, the guy with a nose ring. He's our boss. His name is..."

Seeing Zhang Tie's narrowed eyes, Bilis lowered his voice. Finally, he didn't even dare to look straight into at those eyes...

Saying nothing, Zhang Tie just calmly looked at Bilis, who then became as restless as if he was sitting on a needle. Under the silent gaze for more than seconds, Bilis gritted his teeth and bottomed up the cup of brandy in front him.

"I know what to do next..."

Several minutes later, Bilis left the hotel. Before which, Zhang Tie told him their secret way of contacting each other and then told him to collect recent news about the spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty in Blapei.

After experiencing what had happened last night, Zhang Tie found that his power was too weak in Blapei. This place was not like Blackhot City where he had a lot of friends and brothers who could look after each other in an emergency. If it was not Mr. Green who had stealthily warned him, he might have suffered a lot from those ruffians.

Given their performance last night, among the ruffians, two of them were LV 2, one of them was LV 3 while others were all LV 1. On the premise that he had not enough binding chains and based on his current situation, he might have been wounded if he got surrounded by them.

Feeling the crisis, Zhang Tie made the arrangement last night. These guys might not help him too much, but if they could be his lackeys, they could also help him a lot. In emergencies, these lackeys could also be dispatched at any time so as to prevent a similar situation.

They were all jobless people who usually hung round with those scumbags in the entertainment venues and beer hotels at the bottom in Blapei and survived on casually solving small troubles for others. Their lives were in the poorest situation as they could only keep themselves from starving to death. They were scumbags who would fight others for only dozens of copper coins and and get

killed.

What had happened last night, this kind of business paying two gold coins was the biggest one that they received for the past half a year. Their monthly compensation might not be enough for Zhang Tie to buy a pond of earthworms in Chevli village.

He only needed to throw 2-3 gold coins to these people per month to make them obediently follow all his orders. Even if they were ten lowest-level hatchet men, they would definitely work for him for only 2-3 gold coins. No matter what, he didn't lack money now.

...

The atmosphere in Blapei wasn't at ease yet. The amount of sentries and patrolling soldiers across the city were no less than yesterday. Zhang Tie thought that maybe what he had done to those spies of the Sun Dynasty last night had not been discovered.

He took a round in the Equipment Administration today again. Whether he was talking with Second Lieutenant Pi Ping or learning vehicle repairing after taking off his military uniform and lying on the ground, Zhang Tie felt that he was really learning a lot.

Facing such an officer who liked learning without lording over others and could get along well with other people, all the experienced technical sergeants in the Equipment Administration surrounded Zhang Tie to impart all their experiences and technologies on repairing vehicles to him. In this way, with

experienced teachers' hand-to-hand teaching and a great number of vehicles suffering from various problems, Zhang Tie today learned more than many people could learn in a month at school. .

Chapter 236: An Encounter

The leisurely atmosphere in Blapei could not be completely felt until night.

Even if there was war... even if the atmosphere in the city was a bit tense because of the spies and the escaped saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty... even if the price of beer was already twice of what it was before, the businesses of beer hotels and bars in Blapei were not influenced at all. For those who didn't forget to have a glass of beer in the evening even in this situation, what they should do was to only take their ID certificate with them.

Men in Blapei didn't have to smoke, eat too much, even dress too good, but they had to drink beer. Even if the most prosperous streets here lacked a bit of magnificence compared to the Avenue Bright in "rural areas" like Blackhot City, even if there were fewer gentlemen and fair ladies in high-consumption places here than in Blackhot City, after supper, men here always left home with a casual coat to head to their favorite beer bars or hotels. So did women here. Without having to dress in delicate and expensive clothes, they displayed their own beauty.

Men and women drank beer, talked, and laughed, and flirted with each other in the beer hotels or bars, which became one of the most important parts of people's lives in Blapei. In the former Andaman Alliance, with the exception of its beer, Blapei was also famous for its uninhibited life.

Even if people here got married, they could still have their own dalliances. The significant other just ignored that as long as their

partner didn't break the bottom line, such as bringing his or her paramour back home in the presence of the other one.

The marriage here lacked that sacred sense of marriages in other places. It was more like a certificate for two people to willingly live together for a period of time. For many couples that had gotten married, the roles of wife and husband were just another appellation of "main lover".

Men had their favorite places to drink beer, while women had their favorite places to drink beer too. As one of the weird phenomena in the downtown of Blapei, except for some specific societal activities with family as the unit, few couples would drink in the same place. Couples here had their own pleasures. They treated each other very good. What made someone in the former Andaman Alliance puzzled was that the divorce rate in this "indulgent place" was the lowest across Andaman Alliance, even across the Blackson Human Clan Corridor. Why? Perhaps only anthropologists or sociologists could answer it.

When he went to "strike a bell[1]" in the Equipment Administration today, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping of No. 9 Equipment Administration proudly told Zhang Tie that he had two mistresses in Blapei. Women in Blapei all liked officers of the Iron-Horn Army. Therefore, many officers of the Logistics Department had mistresses in Blapei. In order to strike up an acquaintance with Zhang Tie, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping didn't even mind being a "pimp". He told Zhang Tie that if there was a need, he could introduce some mistresses to him.

Walking on the most prosperous street of this city and listening

to the laughter of men and women and the music drifting from the beer hotels and bars, Zhang Tie suddenly had an absurd thought—with the exception of the geographic location of Blapei, one reason that the officers and marshals of the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army had set their headquarters here was for the convenience of finding willing women here. This was not impossible; sometimes, the most absurd and unspoken reason might also be the most important one.

In this city, men were dissolute and women were audacious. Actually, compared to Blackhot City, Zhang Tie liked here more as this place was very close to his dream of being surrounded by a great number of gold coins and women.

Just now, walking on the road, Zhang Tie even experienced "flirting" for the first time—some beautiful girls, older than 20 years old, in short skirts saw him outside a beer bar. Then, one of them started to whistle towards him, and all of them laughed. They then entered the boisterous beer bar beside him. Before entering the bar, that girl who had whistled towards Zhang Tie even looked back and smiled at him...

Zhang Tie seemed to see Hanna stealthily waving her hands towards him from behind the wheat straw stack.

Seeing that 20-odd girl's smile, Zhang Tie's mummy became grim like a wolf again. As a 15-year old juvenile, his hormone content was always at a high level all day long. After the flirting, the reading jumped up like the mercury in the mercury column...

Perhaps Hanna was right. He truly liked to thrust into different

women's body so as to conquer them using his d*ck, enjoying the delight of conquering them. If one took that 20-odd beautiful girl for an instance, wasn't it nice to conquer such a girl and make both him and her happy by irrigating her like how he irrigated Hanna.

Although he thought so inside and his heart started to pound, Zhang Tie didn't follow the girls into the boisterous beer bar, instead, he still wandered through the street. He still remembered his promise to bring a gift for Hanna tomorrow—a gift that could make Miss Daina, the goddess in his dream, most beautiful and sexy.

By the time he finished supper, Zhang Tie had already wandered through many women's clothing stores in the streets of Blapei. However, he didn't see any proper clothes. Generally, few people would visit these stores, so the moment Zhang Tie entered, he would always gain some weird gazes. However, having long gotten used to it when he was in Blackhot City, he didn't care about it at all. He had even bought whole sets of underclothes for 85 women at once, not to mention now.

There was one average women's clothing store in front of him. In the glass showcase outside the store some wooden models were standing in beautiful skirts along with some pairs of leather boots, sandals, and some accessories on two small counters. This store sold solely women's items, although it was evening, under the special lamp lights, the decorations of the store still looked very ambient and stylish.

This was a clothing store full of womanly style.

With a casual attitude, Zhang Tie pushed in to the store and walked inside. What he had not imagined was that after wandering through the streets for a long while, he would encounter two familiar people here—Blapei was really too small.

Hearing the bell rings when Zhang Tie pushed in, the two people in the store both turned around. In a split second, three of them became dumbfounded.

At the sight of Zhang Tie coming in, Mr. Beise's face turned pale once again. Looking at Zhang Tie, he stammered, "You... you... don't misunderstand, I... I'm here to give the real... real estate contract of this store that Linda had pledged to me back to her... our debts have been cleared last night... I didn't know that you would come here to pick her up; I will not be here from this moment on then... wish you a good night!"

After saying this, before Zhang Tie had even uttered a word, Mr. Beise quickly escaped without even having the courage to look back at Zhang Tie.

This store only occupied over forty square meters. After Mr. Beise hurriedly escaped, there were only two people in the store—Zhang Tie and that female tenant on the third floor of Mr. and Mrs. Green house.

The atmosphere in the store was a bit embarrassing and ambiguous. Neither of them knew how to start the topic, especially after hearing the last sentence of Mr. Beise before he left. The 30-odd female boss looked quite bashful.

Zhang Tie became embarrassed too. God knew that he was here only to buy clothes. He had never imagined that he would meet the two people here. However, if he explained this now, will she trust him? This woman seemed to know what had happened last night. However, he appeared at this moment when she was going to go off job, which seemed to contain something special. How to say... it seemed... seemed that he was threatening her to get some reward...

"I... I didn't know you were here.. .I'm just... just... here to buy a set of clothes!"

For some reason, seeing this 30-odd mature and delicate woman who was as old as Miss Daina standing behind the cashier of the store and looking at him with intricate eyes, Zhang Tie also became flurried like Mr. Beise.

Seeing Zhang Tie's embarrassment, Linda's intricate eyes became tender at once.

After biting her lips, the female boss moved away from the cashier. "No matter what, thank you very much. When I have enough money, I'll pay you back!"

"Really no need, I just beat him up last night as I didn't like him... uhm, I'm really here to buy clothes!" Zhang Tie kept explaining with his eyes fixed on the body of the beautiful female boss.

She was wearing an overskirt that looked great on a mature

woman. The black overskirt with floral patterns was skintight while a circle of lace was exposed from the deep, upturned V type collar of the overskirt, making her very womanly. Additionally, the lotus leaf decoration over her waist made her upper body and her lower curve more outstanding and plump. When she moved close to Zhang Tie, he smelt a special perfume that almost immediately made his mummy expand and become hard.

Zhang Tie finally understood the difference between mature women and female students, namely mature women would be more sensitive and insightful to the man next to them. When the female boss's expression became weird, Zhang Tie then looked along her eyes before noticing that a high tent was rose up in his pants. A bit bashful, Zhang Tie hurriedly used his "Right Hand Covering Skill". In a split second, the two people both felt their faces becoming hot while pretending that nothing had happened...

Chapter 237: Choices

Mature women were both sensitive and compromising. Although Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed, the female boss seemed to not mind it at all. After a loud laughter, she started to introduce her products to Zhang Tie like a warm-hearted guide, easily settling his embarrassment. Zhang Tie then finally let out a long breath, making the atmosphere in the store more relaxed.

In the end, he bought a skirt, a pair of leather shoes, and a set of inner wear for Hanna. In total, these only cost him over ten silver coins.

"No need to pay. Just take it as my appreciation for dirtying your clothes and that you took care of me for the night. If you don't feel comfortable doing that, you can invite me for a tankard of beer a bit later! After all, I'm going to close my store soon; let's go back together!"

The female boss looked calm yet seemed to be indicating something, which made Zhang Tie's heart pound.

Zhang Tie was truly the last guest in her store tonight. After packing the items for him, she closed the door with his assistance, and they then left together.

When they left, Linda naturally held Zhang Tie's arm. In a split second, his arm had a sense of a plump and soft side of her breast, making his heart race like a beating drum.

Walking on the streets, they encountered a lot of people's ambiguous glances.

Zhang Tie spent the next hour in a nearby, tranquil beer bar, where he learned of what had happened to this female tenant.

It started when the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty dispatched their troops towards the Andaman Alliance. Such a huge change truly changed numerous people's fates, including this women's fate.

Previously, she had a happy family. She had a father and a fiancée. Her father managed a family beer distillery in Blapei with her fiancée as an assistant; she had a women's clothing store. Although the distillery was not large, it was well reputed in this area. Her family was well-off. If everything had remained unchanged, this December, she and her fiancée would have gotten married as they had been engaged.

However, everything changed due to this war.

Before the war, her father's beer distillery received many transactions like usual. However, the sudden arrival of the war turned those transaction contracts into terrifying bills. With the exception of the contract that he had signed with Mr. Beise, there were ten more contracts which meant over 1000 gold coins of debt. This amount of debt could completely destroy a well-off family.

On the second day since the Norman Empire dispatched troops towards the Andaman Alliance, the price of grains across Blapei

surged several times at once, which immediately led to her father's heart disease. As a result, her dad passed away.

The moment her father's funeral ceremony ended, a group of businessmen heard the news and came to her house to ask for explanations with contracts in hand. She then was forced to sell her real estate and distillery to pay for the debt. Linda even sold her matrimonial house that she had bought using her own money as well as her wedding jewelry.

In the end, she still owed Beise some liquidated damages. However, she only had her one-story store left, which was worth less than 100 gold coins. Even if she sold her store, she would still owe Beise a lot of money, which was a huge sum that a lone woman could not pay off without many years' hard work.

After that, when the woman needed someone's support and comfort, her fiancée declared that he's canceling off his engagement with her. When the man left her, he put it straight that he had not planned to marry her for love but for her distillery. Because he didn't want to live always paying off debts after marriage, he left her.

Linda then moved into that residence on the third floor of Mr. and Mrs. Green house, trying her best to pay off debts while carefully managing her store. At the same time, she had to deal with Beise, who was obsessed with her beauty and had the contract in his hand for an excuse.

The story was very simple, containing no adventurous or stimulative plot. The whole story was about how over 1000 gold

coins changed an average woman's daily life and some familiar or obscure faces that appeared in her life. When he brought this mature woman to drink beer for the first time, Zhang Tie was a bit thrilled; he even started to indulge in fantasy. However, after hearing her story, all the fantasies in his mind disappeared, only leaving sympathy...

...

After drinking beer, they went back to Mr. and Mrs. Green's house. The most challenging period was when Linda went upstairs, followed by Zhang Tie. Because of her twisting plump and sexy butt and that pair of beautiful legs below her skirt, the short passage became the most challenging thing that Zhang Tie had experienced tonight. He took a deep breath.

Soon after, they arrived at the third floor.

Linda took out her key and inserted it into the lock of her door. After that, she looked back at Zhang Tie with something special in her eyes. "Do you want to... come in and drink something?"

To tell the truth, Zhang Tie's heart really raced uncontrollably at once.

"No, thanks, it's too late, you need to have a rest!" Zhang Tie smiled as he looked at this beautiful and weak woman who had to be firm. He was then moved. "Don't consider Beise's affair any more.

You don't owe me anything, so don't feel stressed inside. I don't lack money. Additionally, I won't stay in Blapei for too long. I'll move to the rural area tomorrow and come back here only once a week. If you have any problems and need my help, you can leave a slip of paper or a letter through the space under my door, I will see it when I'm back!"

Linda just gazed at Zhang Tie with intricate eyes, not knowing what to say...

"Good night!" Zhang Tie smiled as he waved his hand and went upstairs.

As a mature woman, Linda had an irresistible allure. For Zhang Tie, it was happiness to conquer a woman; however, he didn't want to find a chance for happiness from a woman's bad luck. Neither would he like to turn it into a threat and exchange for his assistance. Therefore, he left.

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie and Linda almost simultaneously walked in to their own washrooms and took a bath. As the residences on the third and fourth floor had the same structure, the two washrooms were only separated by a floor. So, Zhang Tie heard the sound of Linda taking a bath downstairs. At the same time, Linda heard Zhang Tie taking a bath upstairs too. Right then, both of them started to imagine how the other one was taking a bath without wearing any clothes. They then both had a weird feeling...

This night, both tenants on the third and fourth floor couldn't sleep well.

...

The same night, in Blapei, when someone found it hard to sleep by rolling left and right on the bed, someone else didn't sleep at all.

Major Franca was one of those people who didn't sleep at all.

If you had to use a word to describe the efficiency of secret police in the Norman Empire, it was "terrifying". After barely a bit more than twenty hours, a complete personal record of Zhang Tie was put on the desk of Major Franca. It was so detailed that even Zhang Tie didn't know some of it. At least he had not seen his original birth certificate in Blackhot City.

There was a thick pile of documents about him. Besides those, there was another pile of documents in front of Major Franca—all the studies about "Post-Lightning Strike Savant Syndrome" that he could collect from the difference engine in the National Archives of the Norman Empire using his own privilege.

Would people become extremely powerful after being struck by a lightning bolt? Would one form the Iron-Blood hidden strength after being struck by lightning bolt? Would one not be afraid of the toxicity of blue frost after being struck by a lightning bolt? Would one master excellent spear throwing skills after being struck by a lightning bolt? All the above questions might belong to a mysterious region that nobody could figure out.

However, could one be able to kill people by letting them remain

still after being struck by a lightning bolt? Obviously not possible! However, according to the autopsy report and the on-site survey, Major Franca was clearly told what had happened. With the exception of one person who had shown resistance before being killed, all the other spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty had been standing still, waiting for someone to thrust his dagger into their hearts with eyes wide-open. They didn't resist nor struggle at all. Neither had they been poisoned.

How could that person do that? How could a first lieutenant who was almost as weak as an average person after recovering from his heavy wounds force them to stand still and wait for him to kill them after being abducted by them? What was more, he was afraid of being recognized by others and chose to slip away while giving up on honor and reward.

The only reason was that the person didn't want to tell others of what he had done so as to protect his cover for it was far more important than the reward he would win. Now that he could force others to stand still and wait for him to kill them, the question to be asked should be whether his other talents were from a different cause as well, the ones such as not being afraid of the toxicity of blue frost, suddenly forming Iron-Blood hidden strength, and suddenly becoming extremely powerful...

'Being struck by a lightning bolt was only a lie that he used to bury his own secret. What if I can get his secret...'

...

Major France didn't sleep the whole night as he immersed

himself in the piles of documents and words. Once dawn arrived, his sharp eyes like those of a wolf radiated a wisp of bloody brilliance because of excitement, as if he'd discovered a treasure.

After reading those documents through the night, he burned them all in a fireplace. Additionally, he mashed those ashes with tongs before leaving the room.

The only problem was that they were in Blapei and under the control of the Iron-Horn Army while that person was a small first lieutenant of the Iron-Horn Army who had won an iron-blood medal.

This would be a bit troublesome...

Chapter 238: A New Attempt

After putting some clothes into a bag, Zhang Tie came to Chevli. Knowing that he was going to be here today, Hanna was waiting for him at the entrance of the village. At the sight of him walking towards her, she started running towards him with two cute golden braids.

If one didn't see how Hanna ran, they would never know what were the true roaring waves.

Even though Zhang Tie had ridden this girl who was three years older than him many times, at the sight of her running towards him, he still forcefully swallowed his saliva. After a careful comparison, he realized that after being irrigated by him these days, Hanna already looked more brilliant and alluring than when he saw her for the first time.

Hanna never minded holding Zhang Tie's hand, and he didn't mind that either. After staying in Blapei for many days, Zhang Tie found that the residents in Chevli were very bold and unrestrained. They were very compromising with the love affairs between men and women. As long as you didn't do something too excessively in public, nobody would care about you.

Certainly, in front of Hanna's family members, they had better not be too casual. Her grandpa seemed to worry that Zhang Tie might escape after making Hanna pregnant. In this village, abortion was almost like murder; it was one hundred times more serious than having a stealthy love affair. Women who had abortion would have a bad reputation here because residents here

thought that they had bad luck, were unable to marry others.

Hand in hand, the two of them walked inside the village with jokes and laughter. On the way, besides some people teasing them, all the others thought it was normal.

"Zhang Tie, will you come to my house today?"

The one who was even more eager for Zhang Tie's arrival than Hanna was another peasant household in the village who raised earthworms. As Zhang Tie was here to purchase earthworms home by home, they all queued up. Whichever household he came to, the family members of that household would be very happy; while those households which he hadn't come to yet would always worry that he, the pious believer of the Motherland Goddess, would not come to their households. After all, such an idiot who would buy earthworms could not be easily encountered every year.

Zhang Tie remembered that the farmer who was waiting for him to buy his earthworms was called Billy. The 30-odd man raised four sons, the eldest among which was 11-12 years old. His economic status was not very good, so he was very eager to sell his earthworms. Besides Hanna, this person also squatted at the entrance of the village, waiting for Zhang Tie's arrival.

"Okay, you can go back home and prepare for it, I will come to your house soon!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that man became happy and hurriedly wanted to leave. However, Zhang Tie stopped him.

"Are there any laborers in the village these days?"

"Yes, there are. As it's already autumn, after sowing wheat seeds, men in the village are free!"

"Fine, besides you, I want you to find five more people for me. Take your own tools and wooden handcarts, I will pay you three silver coins a day per person!"

Billy then happily left. Hanna became curious and looked at Zhang Tie.

"Why would you hire so many people?"

"Because I want to accelerate my speed of setting the earthworms free!"

After experiencing the abduction that day, Zhang Tie was stimulated. Due to this crisis, he felt that he was recovering a bit too slowly, so he wanted to speed up his recovery. Previously, he thought that he had to free the earthworms by himself, so as to gather their appreciation onto himself. However, these days, he had thought about it for a while and wanted to test it whether he could speed up his redemption and increase the amount of earthworms being set free so as to increase the effects of the Fruit of Redemption only by paying and performing as a commander. If this method worked, he had already made a plan inside which could definitely accelerate his recovery greatly.

"Have you found a place for me to settle in?" Zhang Tie asked Hanna.

"Of course!"

"Where?"

"Guess?"

Hanna then peered at Zhang Tie in exceedingly fascinating and charming way, like how she looked back at him when he hugged her butt and heavily crashed into her.

At the sight of Hanna's alluring look, Zhang Tie's heart pounded and he abruptly thought of one possibility. "In your home?"

"Right!" Hanna giggled as her enchanting figure shivered. "I didn't expect that you could hit it."

"Aren't you afraid?" Zhang Tie asked her.

"Afraid of what?" Hanna asked in reply.

"Will your grandpa like me?"

"You'll rent his house, why won't he like you. In addition, won't

he be more reassured if he can keep you and me under his vision!"

'Sounds right.' Zhang Tie scratched his head speechlessly. 'However, if so, it won't be that convenient to do that stimulative thing with Hanna.'

Even if they could still date in the hay like before, even idiots could figure it out what happened if they always appeared and disappeared from the house at the same time.

"What were you thinking about just now?"

Hanna seemed to guess that Zhang Tie was thinking about something, so she threw another alluring glance at him.

"Nothing!" Zhang Tie replied, pretending that he was thinking about nothing.

"Really?"

Looking at Hanna's teasing smile, Zhang Tie then looked around and found nobody else, so he drew his head close to her ear while thrusting one finger into her butt. He pressed his finger onto her skirt and directly hit a part in the deep groove of her butt. After that, he even kneaded that place.

"I'm thinking that if I live in your home, it might become inconvenient if I want to thrust you with this bad thing!"

Zhang Tie's brave stimulation slightly disturbed Hanna's walking frequency. Face blushed, she hurriedly beat off Zhang Tie's weird hand.

"You little rascal!"

...

There was truly a vacant room in Hanna's home. It was above the room piled with farming tools, grains, and some random items. Hanna's elder brother had lived there before. After Hanna's elder brother got married, that room was left vacant. Hanna had already cleaned it yesterday, so Zhang Tie could move in straight away.

At first, old Harley didn't like Zhang Tie living in their home, but it quickly changed once Zhang Tie used gold coins to satisfy him along with Hanna's parents, elder brother, and elder sister-in-law.

Three gold coins for living in Hanna's home for three months, three meals a day. This payment could enable Zhang Tie to live in high-end beer hotels in Blapei or Tonikas, let alone in a peasant household of Chevli, though the first choice might even cost him less.

Thus, Zhang Tie lived in Hanna's home.

...

Including Hanna's elder brother, Zhang Tie hired seven people that day in Chevli village to set free earthworms together with him. This way, he could accelerate his redemption speed by three times.

Through paying and commanding other people to work for him, he emptied three earthworm ponds in Chevli in one day, which contained over 300,000 earthworms in total.

Zhang Tie estimated that if what they did today was effective, he could at least recover 4% today. If this method didn't work, he would just take this as a lesson and would honestly do it by himself from then on.

In others' eyes, Zhang Tie performed very calmly today, but he himself knew that he was not calm inside at all. He was waiting for the small tree's judgment.

...

Seemingly to greet Zhang Tie's arrival and appreciate his generosity, Hanna's family made bumper lunch and supper today. At supper, at the sight of the chicken on the table, Zhang Tie knew that this must be much better than what they usually eat. In rural areas, few households would eat fish and meat every meal, especially chickens. Because many households raised chickens to lay eggs instead of eating them.

"The supper is too hearty, I know you want to show your

appreciation to me, but you'd better not treat me so solemnly. I'll eat what you usually eat from today on. I wasn't used to eating so good before!" Zhang Tie sincerely explained to Hanna's family members.

Seeing this juvenile being so polite, Hanna's family members were all very happy. Even old Harley, who had always been dubious, felt that Zhang Tie was a good person.

"Where's Hanna?" Zhang Tie asked as he didn't see her at the table.

"She's heading for the Tonikas town to have a perm with the other girls in the village. She's coming back late tonight!" Hanna's elder sister-in-law answered.

...

Not until Zhang Tie finished supper and took a bath in the washroom of old Harley's home did Hanna, who had had a perm in the Tonikas town, come back home.

Before the catastrophe, people had already invented a bathing equipment heated by solar energy. It was very convenient wherever it was. There was also one set of this kind of bathing equipment in old Harley's home. They built a small bath room beside the courtyard. When Hanna came back, the dusk had just fallen. After taking a bath, Zhang Tie walked out of the bath room with a basin and a towel in hand and instantly noticed Hanna.

Her two long braids had disappeared and become golden wavy hair. This hairstyle seemed to match her face better, making her more womanly and alluring.

Hanna then revealed a smile to Zhang Tie, making him slightly dizzy.

After the bath, Zhang Tie came to his own room in the small building. After closing his door, he calmly sat inside for awhile to recover his composure. He was used to doing this as he needed to recover composure before anything important.

After sitting quietly for ten minutes, Zhang Tie took a deep breath and entered the Castle of Black Iron.

——Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the Castle of Black Iron!

Zhang Tie walked towards the small tree. Like a couple of days ago, on the twig in the middle of the small tree, there seemed to be hanging a ripe Fruit of Redemption.

He stretched out his hand...

——Fruit of Redemption, from earthworms' appreciation, has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit can recover your wounds by 4.6%.

Zhang Tie rubbed his eyes and then lowered his hand back. He then stretch out his hand again. It was still 4.6%.

'No change... no change... no change...'

"Hahahaha..."

Thrilled, Zhang Tie burst out laughing.

'That's too great! It turns out that my wounds can recover faster!'

Without saying anything, Zhang Tie immediately picked the Fruit of Redemption and put it in front of his nose. After taking a deep and intoxicating breath, he then swallowed it at once...

After a long while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes while a powerful sense that had not appeared for a long time reappeared in him.

His wounds had recovered by over 25%...

...

At midnight, when Zhang Tie was sleeping soundly, he heard someone lightly knocking at his door. He then got off his bed to open the door.

In an alluring pose, Hanna was standing outside the door. Under

the dim light, Zhang Tie recognized her look. Right now, Hanna had already put on those clothes and that pair of high-heeled leather shoes that Zhang Tie had gifted her.

It had a super short hip skirt, its side only a palm's distance away from Hanna's bottom. In this set of clothes, her curves became outstanding, putting on display her huge and plump breasts, while that place between her pair of snow white thighs and her raising butt was looming.

Along with her beautiful wavy blond hair, Hanna became full of womanly charm that could not even be described in words.

Not until then did Zhang Tie realize that those clothes that he had gifted to Hanna were the same as those of the female tenant on the third floor that he'd seen in the passage. No wonder the female boss' expression became slightly weird when he bought these clothes. As he bought them unconsciously, Zhang Tie didn't think too much, neither did he know what he was thinking at that time.

"Little boy, your teacher will follow your orders tonight. You should be kind to your teacher."

Hanna lightly entered the room and closed the door. After a short while, various weird sounds and voices could be heard from the room...

As he was going to completely recover very soon and a beauty in a sexy skirt had entered his room at midnight, who was very obedient and tempted him in various ways, Zhang Tie felt very

cool during the night...

This night, Zhang Tie found that he truly could not resist in front of a hip length skirt...

Chapter 239: Preliminary Recovery Body

In the next few days, those farmers who were queuing up, worried that Zhang Tie won't purchase their earthworms finally became reassured. Zhang Tie, living in Chevli village, not only continued to purchase their earthworms, but also accelerated his purchasing frequency. He hired many men who were free at home to help him purchase and set the earthworms free.

He paid each person three silver coins a day which was enough for many people in Chevli village to long for that.

After moving into the Chevli village, on the first day, Zhang Tie hired seven people and bought three households' earthworms.

On the second day, he hired eighteen people and bought ten households' earthworms.

On the third day, he hired over forty people. A lot of the men were working for Zhang Tie that day and helped him buy twenty households' earthworms.

On the fourth day, he hired over sixty people to buy another thirty households' earthworms.

On the fifth day, he hired over one hundred people. All the men who were free in the village started to work, and on that day, all the earthworms in Chevli village returned to mother nature. Because he set many earthworms free that day, for the whole day long, Zhang Tie could feel a weird pleasant energy from it. The

energy brought him a sense of lightness and pleasure.

That day, although they finished working very late, many people in Chevli village were very happy. Because Zhang Tie had paid each of them an extra silver coin. Additionally, no one had to worry anymore about when this idiot would leave and had finally sold their own earthworms. All those who did so today were also very happy.

And so were Hanna's family members. Zhang Tie had paid them ten silver coins yesterday to let them prepare a bumper supper tonight to celebrate it. Although they didn't know why this tenant would celebrate, now that Zhang Tie had paid for that, they would celebrate it. In places like Chevli village, it might not even take them seven silver coins to prepare for a bumper meal. Zhang Tie's generosity made old Harley reveal a big smile.

After living in old Harley's home for less than a week, all the family members there found that Zhang Tie was actually a very easygoing person. Even when Harley's dog tore his nice clothes that he had washed and hung over the rope, Zhang Tie still replied with a loud laugh and didn't order for someone to take responsibility.

He didn't blame the dog either. What was more, after supper these days, whenever Zhang Tie saw that dog, he would always play with it by throwing a bone to it, touching its head, scratching its stomach, making the dog so comfortable that it rolled over on the ground.

Therefore, the moment the dog saw Zhang Tie these days, it

would always wave its tail like a windmill. A person who could even please a dog would also easily please people.

After he gave the last silver coin to a villager who had a big smile, it was already full dark. Taking today's compensation, all the villagers in Chevli smiled and greeted Zhang Tie before returning to their own homes and eating supper. Zhang Tie also felt as if he'd relieved a 500-kg burden inside, feeling very relaxed.

He knew that he would fully recover today. Yesterday, his inner wounds were already recovered by 93.6%, so after cleaning all the earthworms of the last over seventy households, the Fruit of Redemption on the small tree should definitely make him completely recover. It might even bring him some other surprises, because the biggest function of these Fruits of Redemption was to activate some DNA and genes of his which were related to the recovery ability of earthworms.

Zhang Tie really respected the strong vitality of the earthworms.

Today, something special might really happen. From the early morning to now, Zhang Tie kept feeling a stream of pleasure flowing inside him. Like an underground spring, that stream of pleasure gurgled out of each of his cell, bringing an unexpected pleasant state to his body and spirit.

Benefiting from this, Zhang Tie found everything as tender as a refreshing breeze and bright moon, even that dirty dung and those strange laborers. It was very marvelous. This was the effect of setting the earthworms free. The effect seemed especially strong today, dozens of times stronger than that several days ago.

'Is this the feeling after some of my genes and DNA is activated?'

Walking on the path, Zhang Tie thought about it with a bit excitement. Right then, he found that it was bright everywhere. It was already evening now, so how could it suddenly become as bright as in the daytime? He could see everything clearly, including the path, the plants in the fields, even that hay field not far away from him.

Zhang Tie was stunned and stopped. Raising his head, he saw two moons in the sky.

'How could that be? The sun has not risen yet. '

Such a feeling lasted for over ten seconds before everything surrounding Zhang Tie recovered. It was still evening, not daytime at all!

Seeing Zhang Tie stop walking and raising his head towards the sky with mouth wide-open, Hanna's elder brother who was walking together with him also stopped.

"What's wrong?" he asked Zhang Tie.

"Didn't you see that just now?" Zhang Tie asked him with a dumbfounded look.

"What?"

Having made four silver coins, Hanna's elder brother, who was very excited, scratched his head and looked at Zhang Tie with a weird expression.

"Didn't you see daybreak?" Zhang Tie asked the others beside him as well.

All the others exchanged glances at before saying, "Daybreak? How could that be? The sun has just set. It would be at least ten hours before daybreak!"

"You didn't see light either?" Zhang Tie asked another person.

"No!"

Realizing that their expressions became a bit weird, Zhang Tie didn't ask any more; instead, he just fabricated a reason while still being curious about the ten-odd seconds just now. He didn't think that he was dizzy. How could one feel that the evening was as bright as daytime? Additionally... after such a short while, Zhang Tie felt that his mind seemed to have become more active.

He could only bury this question in his mind and walk towards Hanna's home together with her elder brother.

This was the outcome without the guidance a famous teacher. If Zhang Tie had a famous teacher from the Eastern Continent beside

him at this moment, he would know that what he had felt was not an illusion, but the situation of "seeing everything bright when having no distracting thoughts inside", namely a weird and innocent situation that one immersed in both physically and spiritually.

It was a phenomenon that one could sense when one opened the gate of the treasure bank of one's physical potential. That brilliance was radiated from inside the treasure bank of one's physical potential, like what one would see after pushing open the gate of a brilliant palace. That brilliance originated from one's inner existence instead of one's outside.

Many people would not even have a chance to feel this after having cultivated their whole lives. However, Zhang Tie sensed it at such a young age yet didn't know what it meant, so he could only keep the question in his mind.

When Zhang Tie and Hanna's elder brother returned home together, the home had already prepared a table of bumper supper, which contained roasted goose, sausage, cheese. Hanna's elder sister-in-law even took out the beer that she had brewed.

When everybody sat down before the table, Hanna's family members all looked at Zhang Tie. Because it was Zhang Tie who paid for this supper, certainly, he needed to say something before it.

'Is this supper used to celebrate his complete recovery?' Of course not...

Raising his glass, Zhang Tie became a scumbag priest once again. In sacred and genial expression, he uttered, "This supper is to celebrate that tens of millions of earthworms in Chevli that have been set free to the Gaia, the mother of the land. Hopefully, the land under our feet can be forever fertile and full of vitality and provide endless grains and output for everybody. For Gaia!"

"For Gaia!"

Hanna's family members also raised their glasses respectfully and followed Zhang Tie. Even old Harley and Hanna's father looked sanctimonious too.

Although Zhang Tie was trying to remain as a scumbag priest for a long while, only after less than two minutes, he already couldn't stand it any more. At first, everybody at the table was eating supper regularly. When they talked about the beer festival in Blapei that would be held one week later, Hanna and Zhang Tie interrupted them from time, making it a happy meal.

Under the table, a beautiful foot of Hanna, who was sitting opposite Zhang Tie, was stretched toward him. Being covered with the table cloth, she constantly tempted Zhang Tie by slightly rubbing his sensitive part between the shin and the thigh using her instep.

Of course, superficially, Hanna was still eating supper at the table. Only Zhang Tie knew that since the start of the meal, she had not stopped her temptation all.

Not only below the table, even above, Hanna tempted Zhang Tie by some detailed movements that could not easily arise others' suspicions. For instance, when Hanna ate a sausage, she inserted the sausage using her fork and moved it over her mouth. When she was tilting her head and talking with the one beside her, she carelessly rubbed her lips using the top of the sausage. Finally, she carelessly opened her lips with the sausage on her fork before opening her mouth.

After rapidly licking the top of the sausage twice, she put it into her mouth before slowly chewing and swallowing it. However, even though she put in more, she ate less. She just rubbed the sausage between her lips, in and out. Hanna moved so fluently that with the exception of Zhang Tie, nobody else could identify so many familiar, special details from her movements.

After this meal, Zhang Tie felt hot and extremely stimulated. He could only keep drinking beer. Midway through the meal, after exchanging glances with each other, Zhang Tie, who had just drunk a mouthful of beer, dropped the napkin onto the ground on purpose. By the chance picking up the napkin, he peered at Hanna's legs on the opposite side of below the table.

"Puff!"

Only after one glance, Zhang Tie couldn't stand it any more. He then spat out the whole mouthful of beer onto the ground the moment he bent over.

"Ah, what's wrong? Are you choked?"

Sitting beside Zhang Tie, Hanna's elder brother patted his back with concern.

"Cough... cough..." Zhang Tie kept coughing as he sat up straight. "Yes, yes, I choked..."

"Hahahaha..." Hanna's elder brother burst out laughing. "My wife's beer is very famous in Chevli village. Drink slowly, we have more!"

"Yes, I drunk too fast just now!" Zhang Tie answered as he sat up well.

After glancing at Hanna, who was also looking over with concern like all the other members of her family, on the opposite side Zhang Tie immediately captured a wisp of temptation in her eyes.

Among all the people at the table, only Zhang Tie knew that the damned girl was wearing nothing under her apron and skirt, sitting regularly before him. When Zhang Tie lowered his head just now, he caught sight of Hanna slightly opening her legs, exposing everything below her skirt to him. The grass land last night had already become an adorable bald glen now...

...

As usual, after supper, Zhang Tie took a bath and returned to his

own room. Because Hanna would stealthily come here in the deep night, Zhang Tie was free now, so after closing the door, he entered the Castle of Black Iron at once.

——Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the Castle of Black Iron!

When the familiar dialog box disappeared. Zhang Tie walked towards the small tree.

As usual, in the middle of the small tree hung a ripe Fruit of Redemption. However, compared to the ones before, this one was not bronze, but close to golden.

Zhang Tie's heart raced. Fruits of Redemption of different colors would definitely have different effects.

——Fruit of Redemption, from the appreciation of earthworms, has become ripe. Usage: Pick and direct eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit can recover your wounds by 6.4%, helping you completely recover.

——After Castle Lord completely recovers, some DNA and genes concerning physical recovery and healing ability will be completely activated.

——Through this activation, Castle Lord's body will be advanced to preliminary recovery body.

——The effect of preliminary recovery body is as follows:

1. The healing and recovery ability of all Castle Lord's wounds will increase by 215%. In the evening and underground, this ability will double.

2. Castle Lord's ability to bear fatal trauma will increase by 31%.

3. Smooth and clean skin. All wounds on your body will not leave any scars after recovery.

4. Castle Lord's immunity to all toxins will increase by 5%.

5. Castle Lord's digestive and absorptive ability of various food will increase by 18%.

——Castle Lord needs to set 160,000,000 earthworms free to advance to medium recovery body.

——Current progress towards medium recovery body: 0/160,000,000.

When he read this, Zhang Tie almost screamed. The preliminary recovery body had already turned him into a powerhouse as vigorous as a cockroach. All the wounds on him could recover and heal by 215% in the same period of time. That meant that he could recover from the same wounds in one day that would have required three previously. Additionally, similar to earthworms, this ability would double in the evening or underground.

The second function could also greatly increase his survivability. Some wounds that might be fatal to others might be survived by him. The third function was also good for him as at least he didn't need to worry about his face being ruined. The fourth and the fifty functions were also very powerful which could help him reinforce his digestive ability and his resistance to toxins. They would be very useful at a critical moment. Especially the fifth function which indicated that he could gain more energy from various foods

and be more energetic and adaptive.

Generally speaking, this preliminary recovery body reflected earthworms' traits and abilities in special environment.

What made Zhang Tie excited was the last function. As long as the number of earthworms that he set free could reach 160,000,000, his preliminary recovery body could be advanced to a sharper medium recovery body. As a preliminary version had already made Zhang Tie so excited, the advancement would be even more shocking.

The moment he thought of the medium recovery body, the even a greater advanced recovery body, Zhang Tie was very fascinated. He dreamed that one day he could have the ability to regenerate broken limbs like earthworms.

At this moment, he didn't wait but carefully picked this Fruit of Redemption and swallowed it.

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie picked himself up from where he had been sitting, legs crossed. After slightly stretching his body, loud cracking sounds came from his muscles and bones. A familiar and wholly new physical experience rose in Zhang Tie.

Words started to show up in front of him one line after another...

——Congratulations, Castle Lord, you have completely recovered and advanced to the preliminary recovery body.

——Leakless Fruit has started to collect your physical energy and would start to grow...

——Iron-Body Fruit's growth conditions were satisfied, it will begin growing again...

——Seven-Strength Fruit's growth conditions were satisfied, it will begin growing again...

——All the effects of the first Toxin-Resistance Fruit have been recovered...

Zhang Tie howled for a long while...

Chapter 240: Weird

Zhang Tie only stayed in the Castle of Black Iron for less than two hours. The first thing he did after leaving was to find a dagger and cut a 2-cm long shallow wound on his left index finger like how he might get hurt when carelessly peeling a fruit. When he moved his dagger away, crimson blood started to flow out his finger.

Having long gotten used to being torn into pieces by a pack of wild wolves in the Trouble-Reappearance Situations, Zhang Tie certainly didn't fear this little pain. He put the bleeding finger under the lamplight in the room to carefully watch it without even blinking.

If it was under normal circumstances, such a small wound would stop bleeding in at least ten minutes. Zhang Tie wanted to see the effect of his preliminary recovery body. Because earthworms didn't like light, in the evening, preliminary recovery body could bring him a double effect, namely 430%. Zhang Tie couldn't control his inner excitement as he waited to have an actual experience of this preliminary recovery body.

After cutting a wound on his finger, Zhang Tie specially checked his pocket watch - 23:14:36.

In the beginning, blood drops rolled down his finger. Slowly, under the lamp light in the room, Zhang Tie found that the rolling blood drops on his finger were shrinking at a recognizable speed. Gradually, they even turned into a crimson string. Finally, when the wound didn't bleed any more, Zhang Tie had another look at the watch - 23:16: 54.

It took him two minutes and eighteen seconds to stop bleeding, which was truly about four times faster than the normal speed. Additionally, Zhang Tie felt that the pain also disappeared much faster.

If he had not exclaimed quite a while in the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie might have been shouting loudly now.

Right then, a familiar rat-a-tat drifted from the door.

These couple of days, Hanna had become increasingly more audacious. When she came to his room the first time, it was midnight; after that, she came here earlier day by day. In rural areas, people went to bed at an early time. Most of them would go to bed between 9-10 pm. so these couple of days, this mad girl even slipped into Zhang Tie's room at 12:00 pm. Today, she came here earlier, when it was not even 12:00 pm yet.

Zhang Tie estimated that old Harley and Hanna's elder sister-in-law might already know about the clandestine affair between Hanna and him, although they pretended not to know about it. After all, Hanna was an adult and nobody suffered a loss in such an affair.

Especially at the table today, Hanna's elder sister-in-law seemed to have found something. When they finished supper, she stealthily pinched Hanna's butt while Hanna made a grimace by sticking her tongue out. All these had been noticed by Zhang Tie.

As expected, when he opened the door, Hanna embraced him while her hot lips were put onto his and a fragrant tongue immediately broke into his mouth and started to crazily and bravely wrestle with his own tongue, making him breathless.

Zhang Tie felt that Hanna was a bit hotter and more enthusiastic than before.

After a long while, the two separated and Hanna noticed Zhang Tie's wounded finger.

"Ah, what's happening to your finger?"

"I was playing with a dagger just now and carelessly cut it!"

"Let me have a look!"

Saying this, Hanna put Zhang Tie's wounded index finger into her mouth and started to suck on it. Undoubtedly, this was another temptation.

When he saw Hanna holding his finger and making it touch her lips on purpose while she licked his finger with a pair of big eyes watching him full of emotions, although Zhang Tie's finger didn't bleed, a part of him started to expand and become grim.

When Zhang Tie was prepared to deal with her, Hanna giggled and immediately held Zhang Tie's mummy and avoided his first invasion.

"Easy, follow me to my room. I'll show you something interesting..." Hanna told Zhang Tie with narrowed, alluring eyes as she continued to move her hand on Zhang Tie's mummy.

"In your room?"

Zhang Tie was a bit shocked.

"Don't you dare, little man?"

Hanna threw a contemptuous glance at Zhang Tie on purpose.

"Never..."

Few people would admit that they were timid at this moment. So was Zhang Tie. After saying this, he blew out the lamp before stealthily leaving his room together with Hanna.

Holding Zhang Tie's hand, she walked ahead. They both softened their footsteps. Not until now did Zhang Tie noticed that Hanna was wearing a skirt that he had never seen before yet one that looked a bit familiar.

"Is this your skirt? I've not seen it before."

"My elder sister-in-law gave it to me. It's a skirt for a young mature woman. Is it familiar?"

Hanna lowered her voice in the darkness while her eyes filled with excitement. Her lips almost touched Zhang Tie's ear, making it itchy.

The two of them then silently went downstairs and went through the passageway there. In the darkness, they went upstairs. Seeing that raised, plump butt waving in front of him, Zhang Tie immediately recalled the sight under her skirt at supper. Heavily stimulated, he was almost driven berserk.

The moment they reached the end of the staircase on the second floor, they were really startled by old Harley's cough in a room beside them. In the darkness, they both stopped and held their breath. At this moment, Zhang Tie became even more nervous than when he had launched a sneak attack on the base of the Brilliant Feathers Army for the first time.

After waiting for several seconds, they heard no other sounds from that room. They then once again begun to quietly move towards Hanna's room. Although it was risky, they finally reached their goal. Zhang Tie silently closed the door and let out a breath.

Hanna then lighted up her room, adjusting the luminescence to make it dim. The room was filled with a special fragrance that always existed in women's bedrooms.

Hanna didn't say anything, just pulled Zhang Tie's hand and came in front of a mirror hanging on the wall of her room. After removing the mirror from the wall, Hanna pulled out a small bar,

revealing a narrow crevice.

"Come on, have a look inside!' she called to Zhang Tie full of excitement.

Zhang Tie had already heard something weird, but he still couldn't help but move his head there.

Through the crevice they could see the room of Hanna's elder brother and her elder sister-in-law. They were showing a big play. Hanna's elder sister-in-law had her open legs slightly bent as they were bound to the pillars at the head of the bed. The woman's mouth was bound with a towel. Hanna's elder brother was lying on her body and forcefully invading her by holding her snow-white butt, causing her breasts and butt to move like waves.

It was very bright in that room while the crevice was beside a cabinet not far from them. Under the reflection of the lamp lights in the opposite room, Zhang Tie and Hanna could even see clearly the oozing sweat on Hanna's elder brother and hear clearly those weird noises and sounds.

After watching for several seconds, Zhang Tie felt his face turning red and mouth becoming dry. It turned out that this was the "interesting thing" that Hanna wanted to show him...

...

Until way past midnight, after staying in Hanna's room for over

four hours, Zhang Tie slipped out of there and returned to his own room. In that time, nobody knew what were they doing in Hanna's room except for themselves.

...

The next day, Zhang Tie woke up naturally. After that, lying on the bed, he started to carefully sense the crystal clear feeling in his mind and the energetic feeling after he had completely recovered. He was so happy that he broke into a big smile. Then he immediately got up and found it was over 8 am, which was not too late.

He then glanced at the wound on his left index finger. Only in one night, that small wound had almost healed, leaving only a fine line as if had been wounded several days ago. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie became merry and felt full of drive.

The breakfast was milk and oat bread. When he ate the breakfast, Zhang Tie peered at Hanna's elder brother and elder sister-in-law once again. He then felt weird inside. Hanna's elder brother and elder sister-in-law both looked frank and normal. Zhang Tie could never imagine that they had such a heavy taste.

Perhaps that was just like an interesting game that they both enjoyed, so it had nothing to do with others whatever they wished to play. However, they might not have imagined that ever since they got married, there was a hole in their wall. So under their gradual daily influence, several years later, an innocent heifer was ruined.

As Zhang Tie was thinking this, he didn't hear what the others were talking at the table.

"Have you heard what my elder brother asked you just now?"

Sitting on the opposite of Zhang Tie, Hanna slightly kicked him below the table.

"Ah, sorry, I was thinking about something just now!"

"My elder brother asked you whether you need assistants today. Villagers are relatively free these days!"

Hanna rolled up her eyes at Zhang Tie.

"Oh, are there any more households neighboring Chevli raising earthworms?" Zhang Tie asked Hanna's elder brother.

"Most of households that raise earthworms were in Chevli, but there are also households in the nearby villages that raise them. 20-30 households in total!" Hanna's elder brother answered after thinking for a moment.

"Are you familiar with those villages?"

"Of course, as I grew up here since I was born, how could I not be familiar with them!"

"Do you think those people who raise earthworms would sell them like you?"

"As long as you can pay as much as what you paid in Chevli, I think nobody would refuse!"

"Well, how about this, I'll pay you six silver coins. Can you help me buy those earthworms in the neighboring villages and set free those earthworms in the wild like what we did in Chevli?"

"Six silver coins a day?"

Hanna's elder brother widely opened his eyes and his hand holding the bread started to quiver.

"Hmm, six silver coins a day, and you're my agent!"

"What about the money for buying earthworms and hiring helpers?"

"I'll pay you 25 silver coins for a pond of earthworms and the helpers! Additionally, I'll pay you six silver coins a day as an agency fee!" Zhang Tie replied.

"Fine!" Hanna's elder brother immediately agreed. He then felt a bit bashful as he scratched his head, "Isn't six silver coins a day too much?"

"Not that much. This time, as you'll be the commander, you deserve that amount!"

Based on the principle that locusts were also meat, of course Zhang Tie would not let go those earthworms in the nearby villages. Additionally, this time, he wanted to try and see whether he could get the benefits from setting the earthworms free only by paying the money and doing the overall coordination.

If that truly worked, he would have a broader source for Fruit of Redemption. Sometimes, even if he was far away, he could still control and guide others to do this for him. Otherwise, it would not be that easy to reach the next target of advancing to the medium recovery body by gathering the appreciative energy of 160,000,000 earthworms.

After staying in Chevli for so long, he had only set free over 10,000,000 earthworms. Besides money, he might hardly find a second Chevli across the former Andaman Alliance, even the whole Blackson Human Clan Corridor.

If he had to come to Chevli once a year, it would take him at least sixteen years to reach this target. And since the holy war between humans and demons was coming, god only knew how the world would be in a few years, let alone sixteen years later.

Perhaps just like what Donder had told him, many things in this world were not determined by you but by chance, without which, even if you had great talent, you could still not reach the target.

Zhang Tie had met this chance in Chevli which would make him appreciate it for the rest of his life. As to whether there will be another chance like this, that really depended.

After negotiating the details at the table, Zhang Tie pulled out one gold coin and gave it to Hanna's elder brother, letting him use it for the following days.

After that, Zhang Tie recalled another thing, "Does anyone sell golden uangs in Blapei?"

"Golden uangs?" Startled, Hanna's elder brother and old Harley glanced at Zhang Tie. "It's just an insect that kids usually play with by chance. Who would sell this? If you need, you can pay someone to find them for you. I think you can get some!"

"I'm just wondering!"

Hearing that explanation, Zhang Tie completely gave up on that idea. What Hanna's elder brother said was true. Besides being useful for a few people, who would raise them and wait for others to buy them? Additionally, if he paid others to catch them and then set them free, based on the rules on forming the Fruit of Redemption, it would be useless.

As he had already completed the evolution of the preliminary recovery body in Blapei, he should not be too greedy. Later on, if there was a chance, he would see whether he could set free a batch of golden uangs. If he gained too many benefits in the same way, he thought even god would not stand it.

...

After eating breakfast at Hanna's home, Zhang Tie caught a chance to tell Hanna that he needed to go back to the city and stay there for a couple of days.

"Do you have a mistress downtown?"

Hanna stared at Zhang Tie with a weird expression.

"No!"

Zhang Tie didn't know why she would Hanna ask this.

"Liar!" Hanna pouted. "Why would you leave today, right after I told you that I'll start menstruating last night? Do you think that I can not satisfy you these days?"

Zhang Tie became speechless at once. He didn't know how to explain to Hanna that he had completely recovered. After recovery, he had to deal with something back in Blapei.

Hanna was so hot yesterday with high, rising desires. Last night, after Zhang Tie conquered her several times, she told him that she would especially want to make love several days before and after the menstruation every month. It seemed that many women were like that and would have a greater desire for making love before

and after their menstruation, including Hanna's elder sister-in-law.

Hanna told Zhang Tie that her menstruation was coming today. Zhang Tie then told her that he was going to leave today; no wonder Hanna would misunderstand it.

...

Finally, after comforting Hanna, Zhang Tie left Chevli and came to Tonikas town. He then came to Blapei by a horse taxi.

For some reason, the atmosphere in Blapei hadn't become relaxed but rather even more intense. The moment Zhang Tie left Tonikas, he met two sentries on the way. He was then stopped and investigated. The carter told Zhang Tie that this was because the group of saboteurs and spies of the Sun Dynasty had not been caught by the Iron-Horn Army yet. Since that explosion two weeks ago, these people were as if they had disappeared, making the whole Blapei feel tense.

'Weren't those people killed by me? Haven't their corpses and that warehouse been discovered by others? How could that be...'

Sitting in the horse taxi, Zhang Tie looked through the window at those solemn soldiers of the Norman Empire moving in teams.

'If those corpses have not been discovered, should I send an anonymous letter to the headquarters of the logistics department

to end the intense atmosphere in Blapei?'

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie directly told the carter to turn a direction...

Half an hour later, they passed by a suburban street. Sitting in the horse taxi, Zhang Tie noticed that the warehouse which he had left that night was burned into ruins. Like that charred charcoal in the ruins, Zhang Tie's face turned black...

Chapter 241: Mist

For some reason, since he caught sight of that warehouse burned to ruins, Zhang Tie, sitting on the horse taxi, had a bad premonition. He couldn't figure out the reason but felt a burden of a heavy stone in his heart, making him a bit uncomfortable.

'Who burnt the warehouse to destroy the scene?'

'Were they accomplices of those spies of the Sun Dynasty?'

That was possible. The fifteen people that he had killed that night might not have been all of the spies. There might be others in this city who might know that this warehouse was one of their secret bases in Blapei.

However, why would they ruin this place? To destroy the evidence? That was possible. But wouldn't it be too attention-seeking to set a fire? If there were truly other spies alive, what would they do after finding that all of their partners had been killed?

'If it were me, in that case, I would definitely escape at once. I would never stay in Blapei any more, let alone set a fire.'

'I wonder whether those corpses were still in the fire. In that was the case, someone should have come here to investigate the fire accident. If more than ten corpses were suddenly found in a fire accident, it would never be ignored no matter where it was.'

'In the Norman Empire, according to the rules, any scene of fire would be surrounded with a yellow cordon once it was found. That cordon would remain for a very long time. However, just now, Zhang Tie had not seen any cordon around the scene of the fire accident. Did that mean that those corpses had been moved away by the time the investigators arrived...'

It was a good day, but the previous questions made Zhang Tie feel like he was surrounded by mist.

Because this event involved him and his top secret, Zhang Tie couldn't just ignore it. He had a weird and startling feeling about the place being burnt to ruins.

In the horse taxi, Zhang Tie arrived at the block where Mr. and Mrs. Green house was located. He then got off the vehicle and made a mark on a roadside lamp before returning to his residence.

As usual, in the early morning, Mr. and Mrs. Green were still looking after their vegetables in the garden before their building. Perhaps what Zhang Tie had done on that night one week before had greatly shocked them, for at the sight of Zhang Tie this time, although Mr. Green still took off his hat to greet him, Zhang Tie saw a wisp of fear and hesitation on the faces of this old couple.

For two seniors who had peacefully lived in Blapei for dozens of years, Zhang Tie's cold-blooded deed of ordering a soldier to chop off a person's head without any hesitation that night made them very frightened of this military officer of Norman Empire, even if

Zhang Tie felt that he was 100% merciful at that time.

Zhang Tie went upstairs. At the entrance of the stairs of the first floor, he saw the woman of the young couple living on the second floor preparing to go off to buy vegetables with a basket. At the sight of him, her face immediately turned pale.

Previously, she was walking in the middle of the stairs, but when she caught sight of Zhang Tie, she immediately became still and leaned against the guardrail of the stairs, forcing a smile and waiting for him to go upstairs first.

Zhang Tie felt speechless, let out a sigh inside, and rapidly strode upstairs, arriving at his own residence on the fourth floor.

Several minutes later, after putting on his military uniform, Zhang Tie left the residence. On the roadside, he stopped a horse taxi before directly driving towards the base of the No. 9 Equipment Administration of the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Center.

Upon Zhang Tie's arrival, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping still expressed his passionate greetings like before; however, he obviously misunderstood the intention of Zhang Tie's arrival. Soon after Zhang Tie arrived in the office, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping gave him an account book and a purse. As the gray income of the 9th Equipment Center was once per two weeks, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping thought that Zhang Tie was here for the money.

The top and bottom of standard gold coins of the Norman Empire

were respectively spinulose tree fern and two crossed spears of the Battle God. The first one was the national flower of the Norman Empire while the second was the symbol of the national church of the Norman Empire.

Rubbing that delicate gold coin in his hand, Zhang Tie sighed inside. This life was rightly what he had dreamed of before. He could have a lot of money without doing anything each day. Although not being fabulously rich, he was already well-off. With this amount of money, he could purchase real estate or have a great number of women. After that, he could just be accompanied by a lot of women and gold coins like a pig.

This kind of life seemed being so close to him. However, Zhang Tie knew that if he didn't try his best to run forward, he might not be able to live this way for too many days before everything that he owned might turn to nothing.

For instance, there seemed to be a thing that might bring him a great trouble at the present.

Seeing Zhang Tie holding a gold coin and sighing, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping, who had been watching his face, thought that Zhang Tie might not be satisfied with his share.

"Although this share is not too much, it's a tradition of No. 9 Equipment Administration that has been formed for many years. If you want to break this tradition, you might offend many people.

Previously there were some people in your position who wanted a

bigger share, but in the end, none of them could stay long in this position!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping carefully explained to Zhang Tie.

After all, people were usually moved by money. When one could receive a share of 10% of the profits, one would consider gaining a share of 20% percent. Second Lieutenant thought that new first lieutenant administrator might want to receive more than what he was receiving, that 20%.

After glancing at Second Lieutenant Pi Ping, who was sitting in front of him, Zhang Tie forced a smile as he put the purse inside his coat. He weighed it and felt that there were at least 22 gold coins inside, which was about the amount of his father's two-year salary. For commoners, this was not a small amount of money.

"Second lieutenant, I'm very satisfied with the current situation and don't have any intention to change anything, so you don't need to worry about that!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping let out a sigh inside.

After drinking a mouth of water, Zhang Tie casually asked, "I've been in the rural area to recuperate during the past week, so why do I feel that the atmosphere in Blapei has become even more intense than last week. Haven't those saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty been caught?"

"On Wednesday, two soldiers of the No. 21 Division got lost in

Blapei. Because of this, the atmosphere in Blapei became intense again this couple of days!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping lowered his voice. "Because the Iron-Blood Army didn't want to cause any more tenseness in Blapei, they didn't release this news to the public!"

Zhang Tie became dumbfounded. "Was that done by the spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty?"

"It's very possible. But I don't know the details either. It's those red gloves of the Norman Empire who are responsible for catching those people. Pitifully, they didn't make any achievements since they came here for two weeks ago. It seems that those guys only enjoy an undeserved fame..."

As he said this, a sarcastic smile appeared on Second Lieutenant Pi Ping's face.

"Red gloves?" Hearing the name for the first time, Zhang Tie became confused and he glanced at Second Lieutenant Pi Ping. "What are red gloves?"

Not until then did Second Lieutenant Pi Ping realize that this new officer from Blackhot City might not know who were those "red gloves", so he carefully explained it to Zhang Tie. Even if he was very talkative, speaking of those people, he still couldn't keep from showing a disgusted expression. Nobody across the Iron-Horn Army would like those guys in red gloves.

"You mean it's the secret police under the affiliation of the Order Review Committee of the Norman Empire who's responsible for

catching those saboteurs and spies in Blapei?"

Learning of this news, Zhang Tie was shocked inside.

"Right, those guys might be involved with the conflicts between big figures above them. It's said that there were contradictions between marshal Lin Changjiang and some big figures of Order Review Committee of the Norman Empire..."

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping then explained Zhang Tie the inside story about those red gloves who came to Blapei to investigate the explosion case.

"Because two soldiers of the No. 21 Division disappeared, everybody doubted that it was done by those spies of the Sun Dynasty, but nobody knew what to do next. The higher officers were very irritated, so the atmosphere in Blapei became a bit tense these days. Additionally, many more red gloves were dispatched to Blapei this week..."

'Does that mean that there is another batch of spies in Blapei besides those who were killed by me?'

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie let out a small breath inside. Perhaps the warehouse was truly burnt by them. They really didn't fear death and didn't escape at once after the event was revealed. There might even be some unknown secret in that warehouse that they didn't want to expose to the public. After all, he was too hurried at that time and didn't make any careful check around the warehouse.

Zhang Tie then thought about several "proper reasons" inside for everything that had happened.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't feel that there was any connection between those "red gloves" mentioned by Second Lieutenant Pi Ping and him. "Red gloves" were just a fighting tool that was thrown into Blapei by a big figure, targeting those spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty. How could he be involved with those small figures?

Thinking this, although being still a bit confused, Zhang Tie just ignored it.

"Do you have an acquaintance in the Equipment Center of the Army?" Zhang Tie asked Pi Ping.

"I know every military officer in the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army!" Second Lieutenant Pi Ping proudly said.

People like Second Lieutenant Pi Ping were always well-informed. Additionally, he could help you get acquainted with a lot of friends. Although people like Leinhardt were very awe-inspiring on a battlefield, people like Second Lieutenant Pi Ping could also be very helpful in some aspects.

"Then go to drive a car, I will go to the Equipment Center of the Army."

"What are you going to... sir"

"I was told that the one who earns the Iron-Blood Medal can receive a special weapon in the Equipment Center of the Army."

Zhang Tie smiled. Since he was almost disabled several days ago, he didn't think about the reward at the time. After all, he would not be able to use it, however, he had completely recovered now, so of course he would go to get such a benefit. He didn't have a proper weapon either, so it sounded reasonable to select a weapon in the Equipment Center.

Since it was the Equipment Center of the entire army, it should have many items that were better than those in the arsenal in Blackhot City.

Chapter 242: In The Arsenal

In the Norman Empire, which is strictly hierarchical, of course weapons for soldiers were also divided into many classes and ranks. A proper weapon was almost equal to a second life for those who usually fought in battlefields. So the more remarkable contributions soldiers made to the army on the battlefields, the higher their ranks would be, and certainly, the more excellent their weapons would be. Both the craftsmanship and the materials used could never be matched by common, standard equipment.

The super heavy "Man's Certificate" that Zhang Tie had once used was made of LV 2 tungsten manganese alloy while the weapons used by common soldiers of the Norman Empire were usually made of some average LV 1 alloy. For field officers, their weapons and equipment would be made of LV 3 special alloy, the value of which was greater than that of the the same weight of gold.

As a reward, warriors who won the Iron-Blood Medal could select non-standard equipment which was made of at least LV 3 special alloy in the arsenal of the Iron-Horn Army.

Now that there was such a great benefit, Zhang Tie, who had completely recovered, of course would not miss that.

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping then drove Zhang Tie into the base of the Equipment Center of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army in less than half an hour.

Because they were all officers of the Logistics Department, they could easily talk with each other. Additionally, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping had someone familiar here, so after learning of their purpose, a first lieutenant of the Logistics Department verified Zhang Tie's status before directly taking the two of them to the arsenal.

Compared to the arsenal of No. 39 Division, the weapons and equipment here were over ten times more numerous. Entering the army's arsenal for the first time, Zhang Tie really broadened his vision. Weapons and equipment that were even more exaggerated than the "Man's Certificate" were put everywhere, and all of them were well maintained.

As all the standard equipment was put into cases, Zhang Tie could only see non-standard weapons and equipment which could only be used by officers above lieutenant. Among those weapons and equipment, there were a terrifying shield covered with dense barbed nails the size of a gate, a person-high wheel axe, a horrible battle hammer weighing more than 500 kgs, a super heavy, grim flail with nine thorny hammers, a double-bladed spear longer than 5 m, and a super heavy knapsack crossbow which when fully loaded would weigh 1.2 tons. Zhang Tie wondered what tough man could carry such a great weapon to a battlefield.

Besides those, there were many other weapons and equipment, some of which, Zhang Tie didn't even know.

If he was to put his "Man's Certificate" in here, it would look trivial.

Zhang Tie smelt the richest breath of war across Blapei in this arsenal.

When he caught sight of several terrifying battle bows hung on the hangers in a row, for some reason, Zhang Tie remembered something special. Although he had never touched a battle bow before, at the sight of these battle bows, he suddenly felt very interested.

"Is there any troop that's equipped with battle bows in the army?" Zhang Tie asked that first lieutenant in the Equipment Center.

"As it would cost too much to curtain a bowman than a crossbowman, all the battle bows in the Norman Empire are non-standard. These battle bows were purchased from foreign countries for some powerhouses who are good at using bows!"

"Purchased from foreign countries?" Zhang Tie became curious and glanced at the first lieutenant. "Does it mean that the Norman Empire could not afford making battle bows?"

"There's a strict manufacturing process required for battle bows, as well as special materials. Of course the Norman Empire could also produce battle bows, but the most excellent ones in the Blackson Human Clan Corridor are produced by Jinyun country in the east of the corridor..."

Saying this, the first lieutenant glanced at Zhang Tie.

"Jinyun country is a human country predominated by Chinese. Those who can use bows in battlefields are all powerhouses who are highly praised by high-ranked officers. However, they have very bigoted, high requirements on the manufacturing process and materials of battle bows. Therefore..."

After that, that first lieutenant didn't continue. However, Zhang Tie understood what he meant, namely, none of those who were talented and confident in using bows in battlefields would want to use second-class battle bows produced by the Norman Empire. Instead, they all liked the battle bows produced in Jinyun country.

So the Norman Empire didn't want to produce any which would lose them face. Additionally, they were just non-standard equipment. The Iron-Horn Army didn't prepare too many of them, just directly purchased some from foreign countries to meet the demands of those powerhouses.

At the sight of these battle bows, Zhang Tie recalled Blues. Based on Zhang Tie's understanding of him, if that guy could make a choice, he would definitely choose the best battle bow. It was estimated that bowmen all had weird temperaments.

Jinyun country. Zhang Tie remembered this country's name. As a Chinese, he was a bit proud, but as two officers of the Norman Empire were standing in front of him, he hid his sense of pride from his face; instead, he just took a battle bow and had a look at it.

It was very heavy, over 20 kg. The handle of the battle bow was made of a weird material, which was neither gold nor wood. Zhang

Tie didn't know what it was. The entire battle bow was well made. Holding it, Zhang Tie felt a sense of sharpness and killing intent.

After putting it back, he noticed two seal Chinese characters "Huai Yuan" on the handle of the bow.

...

Because weapons and equipment made of LV 3 special alloy were only available to field officers, the warehouse for these weapons was a bit smaller, only occupying less than 100 sq m. The weapons were put in a room deep inside the arsenal. They needed to pass another door before entering it.

Under the guidance of that first lieutenant, Zhang Tie and Second Lieutenant Pi Ping came to this room with more advanced weapons.

Compared to those weapons with terrifying looks and volumes outside, perhaps due to the precious materials, the weapons inside this room looked much more "normal". None of them weighed several kgs or even close to 1 ton like those before. Instead, the most numerous weapons in this room were sabers, spears, and swords as well as some weird items, less than 200 in total. Because they were all non-standard weapons, each weapon here looked unique.

Looking at these shiny, excellent weapons on the hangers, Zhang Tie's eyes were even brighter than ten thousand years' fluorite lamps.

Undoubtedly, these were the most valuable and excellent weapons that Zhang Tie had ever seen since he was born.

After taking Zhang Tie in, the officer casually pulled out a shiny long sword with fish scale-like grains and took an average finger-thick steel rod. Without using any strength, he put the steel rod horizontally in front of him while flicking the sword towards it.

With a sound of "clang", that steel rod was cut in two, part of it falling to the ground, rolling towards Zhang Tie's foot. Lowering his body, he picked it up and saw that the section was as smooth as a mirror.

Such a weapon really deserved the description—slashing iron as easily as slashing mud. Average weapons would be easily broken by it. The first lieutenant then brought the sword to Zhang Tie. Although it had cut the steel rod, Zhang Tie found that the blade did not even have a mark—it was as shiny as before.

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping also forcefully swallowed his saliva. These weapons meant a pile of gold coins in his eyes.

"Do all the weapons here reach this standard?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Almost like that. But they're different from each other. LV 3 special alloy have some weird attributes. Take this one for an example..." Taking a specially designed shield, the first lieutenant explained, "This shield is made of LV 3 memory alloy. No matter how you pound it, it would never lose its shape. As long as you heat

it up above fire, it would soon recover its original look. "

After putting down that shield, that first lieutenant took up a heavy crossbow. Noticing him taking a heavy crossbow by one hand, both Zhang Tie and Second Lieutenant Pi Ping were startled.

The first lieutenant gave them a smile. "It looks to be very heavy, but actually, because it's made of special alloy, it's much lighter than a light cross bow; however, its power remains unchanged! Look at the weapons carefully, you can select one as you will..."

Zhang Tie then started to wander through the excellent weapons. Because most of the field officers in the army would select a long saber or a long sword here while brigade officers preferred long spears, the place was filled with the three weapons. However, there were also many other items in this room. Zhang Tie even saw two advanced battle bows.

Second Lieutenant Pi Ping suggested Zhang Tie to select a long sword. However, Zhang Tie shook his head. Although long swords were nice, they were too eye-catching. So were those sabers and spears. Actually, Zhang Tie wanted to select an item that he could use to fight at any time, so it had to be not that attention grabbing. If he had had such a weapon, it would have undoubtedly been much easier for him to respond to that abduction.

Finally, what caught his attention was a weird item. Unlike other weapons that were hung on the hangers, this item was put in a dark red tray. It was rolled up there like a waist band. Among all the other shiny and eccentric weapons, it was as humble as an ugly duckling...

Chapter 243: Red-Snake Sword

Zhang Tie picked that rolled up item and took a careful look at it. F*ck, it was truly a leather waistband. Although it looked nice and was worth dozens of silver coins, it was still a bit weird to see it put together with the advanced weapons that were only available to field officers.

Hold on...

Zhang Tie found something eccentric as the buckle of the leather waistband was a bit special. It was much bigger than that of average waistbands; besides, it was two snakes that wrestled with each other. Although grungy, it was also gorgeous. The space formed by the two wrestling snakes seemed like it could be used hold the waistband.

Zhang Tie noticed a raised button under the waistband buckle. The moment he pressed it, the metal buckle jumped upward and was tightly held in his hand.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie thought that this leather waistband was a soft sword that could be fastened around his waist. Donder once sold similar items in his grocery store. However, when the handle-like snake-shaped metal item jumped out, Zhang Tie thought this was a hidden dagger. However, when he held it, he became dumbfounded as this was neither a soft sword nor a dagger but purely just a sword handle without a blade at all.

Zhang Tie took a careful look at it. It was truly a handle with a 2-

cm wide gap in the hand-guard where the two snakes were opening their mouths. It was so small, just like the wound that Zhang Tie had cut on his own hand last night.

'What's this? A hidden weapon? Although it holds good, there's no hidden button or switch on the snake-shaped handle at all. '

"What's this?"

Before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, Second Lieutenant Pi Ping who was standing beside him, asked.

"It's a very special sword!" first lieutenant said and took the item from Zhang Tie's hand.

"Keep away from me, I will display to you how to use this sword!"

Zhang Tie and Pi Ping moved several steps back.

"You'd better keep two meters away. This sword is a bit special, I cannot well control it..."

Zhang Tie and Pi Ping then moved several more steps back until they were two meters away from the first lieutenant. At the same time, they were wondering what kind of sword it was.

"Keep your eyes on it!"

Soon after he finished talking, the officer took a deep breath and flicked that sword in his hand. With a light sound of "cha", a sharp and thin sword blade popped out of that snake-shaped handle. A sharp, chilly light flashed and a steel rod on a hanger one meter ahead of the first lieutenant was cut into two parts.

And the chilly light kept sweeping over and striking in another direction disorderly for several times like a disobedient spring. Two times it even struck towards Zhang Tie and Pi Ping, who were so scared that they moved two steps back at once. That first lieutenant then forcefully controlled that sword handle to calm the freely jumping blade.

"The blade of this sword is completely hidden in the handle. You need to use your hidden strength, invisible strength, or battle qi to force it out. Because the blade of this sword is soft, thin, and flexible, it's hard to control. If one makes a mistake, one might easily hurt himself. That's why it has been here for a very long time, no officers wanting to select it..."

After the officer said his piece, Zhang Tie walked towards that sword. He pinched the blade which was as thick as cicada's wings and a bit wider than two centimeters with his two fingers and took a careful look at it. At this moment, the blade was not longer than 1 m. However, he had felt before that the blade was over longer than that.

"Watch out, I'm using my hidden strength to push the blade. If I collect my hidden strength, the blade would draw back and wound your hand..."

"What's the full length of the blade?" Zhang Tie asked.

"About 3 m. You can pull the blade by hand. I will slowly push it out using my hidden strength to show you its full length!"

Thus, Zhang Tie pinched the tip of the blade with his two fingers and moved back. Being slowly pushed by the first lieutenant officer's hidden strength, the blade was slowly pulled out. It was truly about 3 m in full length.

F*ck! Gazing at such an exaggeratedly thin and narrow blade, Zhang Tie immediately understood the source of the creator's inspiration.

Metallic tape!

The source of the inspiration for inventing this sword was such a common item in people's daily life. Zhang Tie could still remember that when he was very young, he took out his dad's metallic tape to play. In the end, because the tape drew back too fast, it wounded his face and hand at the same time. For this, he was even beaten by his mom, which really left a deep impression in his mind.

The blade of this sword was like the metallic tape which was rolled and hidden in the sword handle. One had to use special strength to push it out. Once that strength disappeared, it would draw back itself. With the exception of the materials, the craftsmanship, and that gorgeous handle, was there any difference between this special long sword and a metallic tape that cost only dozens of copper coins on principle and originality?

Was it because the inventor of this sword was once wounded by a metallic tape when he was young at home that he had such an idea when he grew up—it was definitely like that.

For powerhouses, plain clothes could be taken as rags, let alone such a delicate and sharp weapon. Besides hard control, the reason that the weapon had not been selected by others was mainly that it was designed a bit womanly in both style and usage, which was a bit inconsistent with the masculine, gorgeous, and magnificent weapons that were pursued by the soldiers who followed the Battle God.

Although others didn't like this weapon, for Zhang Tie, it was very proper.

That waistband was basically a portable hanger for that weapon. This portable and unattractive item was not suitable to Zhang Tie's current situation.

As for its usage in actual combat, the Trouble-Reappearance Fruits could solve this problem very soon.

This special sword had a very proper name—Red-Snake Sword!

Red snakes were poisonous. According to the first lieutenant, there were some special red decorative patterns on the blade that had undergone special treatment. When one used his hidden strength to push it out, one would see a shiny, swimming red snake. Additionally, based on one's strength to push it out, the

colors and the quantity of red snakes displayed would also be different.

Undoubtedly, although a bit weird, this red snake sword was definitely qualified to be put in here.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Tie chose it straight away.

Because he could not easily try it here, nor did he want to reveal the truth that he had completely recovered, he chose this sword without even trying it once. Instead, he signed a document of taking it away before leaving with Pi Ping. By the time they arrived at the gate of the Equipment Center, Zhang Tie had undone his own average waistband and thrown it into a dustbin. Soon after that, he fastened the red-snake sword around his waist.

He was in a very good mood.

...

In the evening, Zhang Tie ate supper in the same hotel where he ate with Bilis last time. This time, he felt that his appetite had increased by almost 20%. It seemed like an effect brought by his preliminary recovery body. After eating the same amount of food as usual, Zhang Tie ordered one more steak, after eating which, he felt almost full.

After this meal, Zhang Tie felt that after digesting the food, the nutrients and energy in the food were making him more energetic,

both spiritually and physically at a faster speed. There seemed to be one more warm qi inside him when he ate the food, which made him very comfortable.

Zhang Tie was certain since when Bilis was standing in front of him respectfully. After eating supper, Zhang Tie glanced at Bilis. After one week, the man had changed his clothes. He was wearing a casquette and looked good, at least much more decent than the last time.

"Take a seat..."

After being allowed to sit, Bilis carefully sat opposite of Zhang Tie and reported about what had happened this week.

As was expected, after the allocation of the twenty gold coins that Zhang Tie had blackmailed from Mr. Beise to those ruffians whose legs were broken by him, none of them hesitated. They all received the treatment fee and started to work for Bilis. For those ruffians, it was one hundred times more honorable to rely on Zhang Tie than that guy who had a ring on his nose.

Zhang Tie felt a bit pleasant inside as he experienced the effect of compliments and warnings for the first time. It also brought him a sense of achievement to have tamed some ruffians into his lackeys.

"I told you to collect information about those spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty. How about that?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, Bilis became a bit nervous. "It's said that those people who were responsible for capturing those people were the secret police of the Norman Empire. As they work very secretly, I could not get any relevant news!"

This answer was also within Zhang Tie's expectations. As Bilis could tell him who were responsible for catching those spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty, it seemed that he had done a lot. However, people like him could only collect some gossip instead of secret news.

After the report, Bilis became a bit nervous and glanced at Zhang Tie. "Uhm... I've got one problem!"

"What's that?"

"Those people... still don't trust that I'm working for you. They... they want to see you, their true boss before being certain!"

Zhang Tie slightly frowned at first, but soon calmed down. This was also within his expectations.

"Have they recovered?"

"Not yet, but after receiving treatment, many of them can walk now!"

"Someday next week I'll meet them!"

"Okay!"

Bilis then lowered his head...

...

Now, Zhang Tie didn't have time to care about this trivial affair at all. What he mostly wanted to do was to return to his residence and enter the Trouble-Reappearance Situation to try his Red-Snake Sword...

Chapter 244: Carnival

All the average wild wolves and huge wolves in the surrounding mountains and plains surged towards Zhang Tie in waves...

At this time, the red-snake sword had become a flexible, spiritual snake that was swimming in the space 1 m-3 m in front of Zhang Tie. All the wild wolves that rushed into this space would be losing their heads or receiving terrifying wounds on their bodies, spattering blood; they wailed mournfully and rolled on the ground before dying.

Another three wild wolves charged at Zhang Tie with one in the front and two behind. Zhang Tie waved his red-snake sword and chopped off the head of the first wild wolf which was over 1 m away from him. Right after that, the blade elongated once again and reached 3 m away. After drawing an elegant "S" curve, it cut two terrifying two-feet long wounds on the wild wolves behind. Those wounds went from their heads to their tails, causing them to scream miserably.

The wild wolves attacked Zhang Tie like an endless tide. The moment he killed the three wild wolves, another one charged at him. When the wild wolf was about to open its bloody mouth and bite at Zhang Tie's shin, the blade that had been reaching 3 m away immediately drew back like a lightning bolt. Before Zhang Tie moved, that blade bounced back and flew past that wild wolf. As a result, the moment the wild wolf moved close to Zhang Tie, it spattered a great amount of fresh blood, then mournfully wailed and rolled away.

The blade was almost completely drawn back, only revealing a small section of less than 20 cm from the handle. Zhang Tie rapidly moved aside and avoided a huge wolf that had silently sneaked close and then fiercely charged at the most critical moment. However, while it was still in the air, Zhang Tie had used his dagger-like sword to thrust at it several times...

As a result, the moment the huge wolf fell on to the ground, it tilted down.

More wild wolves charged at him and just after a wave of his hand, an over 2-m long blade cut through the wild wolves like how it had dealt with the others before...

Then the blade drew back once again and turned into a 1-m long sword, like an average sword. Holding it, Zhang Tie felt as if he was using an average long sword. He then rushed into the wolf pack and brought a foul wind and a rain of blood...

Ten minutes later, Zhang Tie thrust his long sword into the last huge wolf's mouth. The rapidly elongating blade directly cut through the huge wolf's body and drilled out from its bottom before drawing back. Holding the sword, Zhang Tie glanced over the shiny blade with no fresh blood on it since the beginning of this massacre. He burst out laughing...

If Second Lieutenant Pi Ping and that first lieutenant of the Equipment Center would have caught sight of him using this red-snake sword so adroitly, they would've been greatly amazed, so much that their mouths could even hold a big duck egg.

The Trouble-Reappearance Situation broke into light dots once again.

...

Today was the third day after Zhang Tie got his red-snake sword. The fact was that if you wanted to adapt to a weapon, you had to practice it on a battlefield.

These days, holding this sword, Zhang Tie had experienced many battles and deaths in the Trouble-Reappearance Situations. He had been wounded by the sword many times due to his improper use.

After experiencing so many battles and deaths at the cost of his life and fresh blood, after being attacked by thousands of wild wolves and huge wolves in total, Zhang Tie sensed the secret of red-snake sword for the first time. Holding the sword, he finally understood how to flexibly use this sword from his inner heart.

Zhang Tie realized that he had truly gotten a treasure. This red-snake sword was definitely a top weapon in the arsenal. If Zhang Tie would've been asked to name it, the name he would grant would definitely give people a feeling of coarseness - Man's D*ck.

The whole sword could change length and hardness at his will. What else was it if not a man's d*ck.

The secret to manipulating the red-snake sword so adroitly lay in

the frequently changing hidden strength that was poured into the blade. With hidden strength, the sword's blade could become hard and elongate. If it was too long, the blade would be a bit flexible which would make it hard to control.

At this time, the swordsman should make adjustments to the hidden strength that he had injected into the blade for the sake of performance so that the hidden strength that in the blade could keep in a mobile balance with the weird performance of the blade. This way, the swordsman would be able to freely manipulate this sword and exert its power to its largest extent.

For a warrior, when he used a weapon, the strength he injected into the weapon was relatively stable, so it was a huge challenge for many people to inject a changing hidden strength into the weapon they used. When one used this weapon, he needed to calculate and frequently change the amount of the hidden strength that was injected based on different situations, which meant a heavy burden on one's mentality and physical strength. Especially in combat, this burden could not be born by many people. However, for Zhang Tie, who had terrifying spiritual energy and the extremely great mental arithmetic by abacus, it was even simpler than drinking cold water in this case.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie had not adapted to this sword well, but after figuring out the know-how of changing the amount of the hidden strength according to the blade's performance and the actual situation when the blade was pushed out to a certain length through numerous times of practice, he was able to exert its power to the utmost.

Sometimes, Zhang Tie felt that the item in his hand was a mix a sophisticated weapon instead of being just a sword. It might be more fitting to see it as a cross-disciplinary weapon.

When the blade only reached a bit longer than 20 cm, this sword could be used as a dagger or a short saber.

When the blade reached a bit longer than 1 m, it could retain its largest rigidity and have a proper tenacity after being injected with hidden strength. This sword then could be used as a delicate long sword that could easily cut iron like cutting mud.

When the 3 m blade was fully extended, this sword could be used as a terrifying battle sword that could even match the "Man's Certificate". Its attack radius could reach over 4 m if counting Zhang Tie's arms and steps. Additionally, the super thin blade made of unknown metal was definitely more effective than that of the "Man's Certificate". Used with enough strength, this red-snake sword could definitely be used as a whip and a spear.

When one used it as a whip, its blade could whip the opponent. After using it adroitly, one could bundle something using the sword and bring it in front of him. When one used it as a spear, the sharp sword tip, it could easily cut through a huge sword or a varanid within 2-4 m. After being injected with hidden strength, the triangular-shaped sword tip could rapidly stretch out like a hidden weapon to reinforce the piercing effect.

The guy who invented this sword was definitely a genius. However, a genius' work would always be isolated and buried among a great amount of fierce weapons that shone with icy lights.

Even if someone didn't complain about its feminine look and took a casual look at it, how could one immediately know the design's essence and usage of this weapon. They would only feel it was not easily controlled. Due to various reasons, the red-snake sword was in the end discovered by Zhang Tie.

In truth, if not because Zhang Tie didn't want to expose his real strength and was not in the frontier, he would not have chosen this weird weapon as the reward for him winning the Iron-Blood Medal. However, based on the weapon's capabilities, he made the right choice this time. He was filled with surprise inside.

...

The next few days were Zhang Tie's most relaxed and pleasant days in Blapei.

Being in the weird state where she bled yet wasn't wounded, Hanna became obedient and didn't come to Zhang Tie at midnight like before, giving him more time to immerse himself in the Trouble-Reappearance Situations to constantly improve his fighting skills.

In contrast, Hanna's elder brother always got up early and returned home late each day as the "agent" for setting free earthworms for Zhang Tie. The farming households in the neighboring villages of Chevli eagerly sold their earthworms to Hanna's elder brother, whom then had all the earthworms set free in the wild.

Although Zhang Tie wasn't set the earthworms free himself, the merit value points of having Hanna's elder brother do it were still making the Fruit of Redemption grow, the effect of which was still on Zhang Tie.

He could check the effect of having Hanna's elder brother set the earthworms free, which really surprised him. Learning that it was truly feasible, Zhang Tie estimated that even if he didn't have to go to Blapei, he could still have an agent like Hanna's elder brother to set the earthworms free for him. Perhaps in a few years, even before the holy war, he would have achieved the medium recovery body. He was really happy from eating fruits at such a stable frequency.

Additionally, the affair of Zhang Tie buying earthworms in Chevli village had not only spread across Chevli but also the neighboring villages. Tempted by the silver coins, some households in Chevli and some in neighboring villages started to raise earthworms. Although they didn't know whether that idiot would come here to purchase their earthworms a year later, it was not bad to just have a try.

Of course, Zhang Tie was happy they thought of doing it.

During the most leisurely and relaxed days, many people across Blapei and even in the Chevli village were actually busy in a nervous and joyful state, because a few days later, the most important and grandest annual beer festival in Blapei would arrive.

On the day of the beer festival, villages like Chevli would

organize several festooned vehicles to travel to downtown in Blapei. The strongest men and the most beautiful women and the most delicious beer in Chevli would go together with the festooned vehicles to celebrate the carnival for one day in downtown. It was a big event for the entire village.

With such a hot atmosphere, the carnival of the beer festival in Blapei was coming...

Chapter 245: An Elder From Zhang Clan

At dusk, an airship appeared above the civic square of Blackhot City. It arrived so abruptly as if it was emerging out of the void. Before most people in Blackhot City noticed, it had already appeared.

For most average citizens in Blackhot City, airships were a rarity. That's why when some people with sharp eyes noticed the sudden appearance of an airship above the civic square of Blackhot City, many people nearby raised their heads and stared at that it hovering over 200 m above the ground.

Nobody had seen that airship before. The flat, smooth, and streamlined airship had two stable flaps like a bird's wings. It's light shone silver. Looking from the ground, it was like a flying silver fish floating in the sky.

Because it wasn't too high up, people on the ground could clearly see the propellers on the tail and the two flaps of the airship.

Generally speaking, this was an elegant and domineering airship. The moment people saw it, they would know it was definitely an advanced airship.

The arrival of the airship excited the photographers who were soliciting trades on the civic square. They adjusted the right angles and supporting their photographic equipment, saved the citizens of Blackhot City from missing such a chance to take a photo with such a beautiful airship. Certainly, there were many citizens who

wanted to take photos.

The airship kept hovering above the civic square. Nobody knew what it was going to do. Many people in Blackhot City speculated that it came from the Norman Empire. There might be a big figure inside.

Such a peaceful ambience remained unchanged for over ten minutes until a great amount of fully-armored soldiers and vehicles of the Norman Empire arrived as if to face a formidable enemy. An officer of the Norman Empire ordered the soldiers to evacuate the population from the civic square. Not until then did the citizens realized that something was not right and hurriedly left.

Looking at that airship, an officer of the land-to-air defense camp of No. 39 Division oozed fine sweat over his forehead. This airship moved so fast. The moment the air-defense troop in Blackhot City noticed it flying towards the air territory of Blackhot City without any symbol of the Norman Empire on it while its patterns and specifics didn't meet any airship in service or produced by the Norman Empire, the air-defense troop had delivered an air-defense warning to the land troop here.

Since the main stream-driven boiler of the air-defense weapons on the city wall of Blackhot City was in active state, after receiving the warning, the well-trained soldiers of the No. 39 Division pressurized the main boiler and prepared the air-defense weapons. During this process, the soldiers of the No. 39 Division really performed perfectly. However, this airship flew so fast that before the air-defense weapons were ready, it had already rushed into the

LV 1 air territory within the city walls.

Because this airship hadn't come from the Norman Empire, if not for the officers of the air-defense camp who were absolutely sure that there was no such airship in the Sun Dynasty, the air-defense warning would have long been rung throughout the city.

However, the officers of air-defense camp were still oozing cold sweat all over.

"Sir, the lamp message vehicle of air-defense camp is already in place!"

"Contact those people on the airship using plain codes, inquire their status and purpose here!" the on-site officer delivered the order.

...

On the ground of the civic square, a professional land-to-air communications vehicle was already ready. On the vehicle was a group of special optical communications equipment. After receiving the order, the soldier rapidly peeled off the cover off the equipment and sent the same lamplight message twice towards the airship.

The airship soon replied as its lamplight signal equipment also started to twinkle towards the land.

Seeing the airship contacting the land, the officer of the air-defense camp finally let out a breath.

...

In only a few minutes, Colonel Leibniz, who had received the news, arrived at the civic square in a vehicle. The people in the airship wanted to talk directly to him and Colonel Leibniz didn't find it improper at all, because no matter whether in the Norman Empire or elsewhere, any people who could take such a luxurious airship were undoubtedly big figures who had both great status and background. At least Colonel Leibniz was not qualified to take such an air traffic tool.

When he arrived at the civic square, Colonel Leibniz raised his head and looked at that beautiful airship. He then re-confirmed that none of the generals' airships in the entire Iron-Horn Army could match this airship. In the entire North Border Army of the Norman Empire, perhaps only the personal airship of marshal Lin Changjiang which was customized from the east could match this airship.

Colonel Leibniz wondered why any big figure would be interested in this remote, small city.

After receiving the news that the supreme commander of Blackhot City had arrived, the people inside the airship started to get off.

Yes, get off. They directly got off from hundreds meters high in

the air.

The moment the soldiers and officers of the air-defense camp of the Norman Empire caught sight of the black spots that jumped out of the airship in a tidy formation, everybody became dumbfounded as they widely opened their mouths. The black spots jumping out of the airship were people.

Those people rapidly jumped off the airship like dumplings diving into the water. They quickly narrowed the distance between them and the ground and reached the height of less than 50 m above the ground in a wink.

When everybody on the land thought those lunatics jumping out of the airship were going to become meat paste, they all felt that the sky had turned dark for a short while since all the lunatics had opened a helical rotor in hand which kept rotating. As a result, all the lunatics slowed down. Soon after that, they collected their parachutes before directly hitting the ground like meteors falling from the sky.

"Boom!"

All the soldiers standing around the square felt the ground tremble a bit. In a split second, many bricks on the ground broke into pieces like spider web stretching through the square.

All of a sudden, all the Chinese soldiers with black hair and eyes were standing straight like javelins, revealing a killing intent.

Seeing those people falling to the ground from several hundred meters high in a split second, everybody forcefully swallowed their saliva, including Colonel Leibniz. These people were powerful, very powerful, which could never be matched by the average troops of the No. 39 Division, or so the soldiers of No. 39 felt about them.

Face pale, the officer of the air-defense camp had watched those terrifying Chinese soldiers dropping from the airship to the ground at that fast speed, and he immediately recognized that the items they used just now were foldable rotachutes. What the most elite imperial airborne troops of the Norman Empire used were these rotachutes which were more advanced than common parachutes. This was not amazing. What made the face of the officer of the air-defense camp turn pale was their speed of descent, which was almost half of that needed by the imperial air troops.

This meant that if his troop was defending here, before all the land-to-air weapons were launched and a series of tactic movements such as locking on and aiming at those people were completed, they would have already fallen to the ground. In front of those people, the air-defense camp of the No. 39 Camp became absolutely useless. That was to say that those soldiers might face the overwhelming massacre next.

'Who are they? The Norman Empire cannot have such an elite troop!' the officer of the air-defense camp asked himself inside.

Not only the officer of the air-defense camp, even all the soldiers and the other officers of the No. 39 Division had the same question. Everybody was shocked by such a sudden appearance as the

moment they caught sight of these people, they knew that they could never match them.

Even though those powerful soldiers jumping off the airship shocked everybody who saw it, the next scene almost popped out their eyes.

Soon after those powerful Chinese soldiers landed, another person jumped off the airship. He moved as fast as an arrow shot downwards from the airship. Almost in a blink, he had already drawn close to the ground from several hundreds meters in the air. Compared to those powerful soldiers who jumped off the airship and decelerated using rotachutes, this person didn't even use any equipment to decelerate at all. When he was close to the ground, he just suddenly stilled like a feather before lightly landing on the ground like stepping off the last step on a staircase, not even arising any dust.

Many soldiers and officers of the Norman Empire below were forcefully rubbing their eyes repetitively. They couldn't believe their own eyes. Among them, only the hearts of a few officers including Colonel Leibniz kept racing fiercely as they knew what the last person's amazing ability meant—he was a knight, a real knight. Only people above LV 15 could display such an immortal ability.

In this age, those talents who reached knight ranks were the real back bone of human beings' survival on this continent.

In the Norman Empire, a knight undoubtedly meant an army. All the armies of the Norman Empire were battle groups centered on

knights. Any knight was qualified to be an army leader. The army leader of the Iron-Horn Army was a knight, a well-reputed knight in the Norman Empire—Black Iron Knight Lord Clausewitz. The Iron-Horn Army was an army centered around Lord Clausewitz.

Among all the countries and powers of Blackson Human Clan Corridor, the quantity of knights was the most direct and important standard of a country's national strength.

So undoubtedly, the last person getting off the airship would be able to match Lord Clausewitz's status regardless of his nationality. Of course Colonel Leibniz dared not neglect him.

Seeing that person focusing on him, Colonel Leibniz kept his shoulders square and walked towards him in a dignified way, giving him a military salute.

"I'm the highest ranking officer in Blackhot City, Colonel Leibniz, your excellency. Your airship has entered the LV 1 air territory of Blackhot City, may you tell me your purpose here?"

Because the opposite was a Chinese, Colonel Leibniz spoke in Chinese. In the Norman Empire, Chinese was a necessary language that had to be learned by everyone in the top class. It was also the standard language in all the top class receptions and salons. Chinese symbolized dignity. If Zhang Tie had heard Colonel Leibniz speaking Chinese so fluently, he would definitely have been stunned.

Hearing Colonel Leibniz's words, that old man who had gotten

off the airship slightly nodded towards him before waving his hand to let another soldier beside him present Colonel Leibniz with a document.

The moment Colonel Leibniz caught sight of the bloody dragon of the Norman Empire, his spirits rose and he carefully took that document, getting a look inside. There was a special communications certificate and an action memo in all the air territories of the Norman Empire jointly presented by the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and the Military Department of Norman Empire, based on which, that airship coming from Jinyun Country could legally enter the LV 1 air territory of any city in the Norman Empire.

Additionally, no matter what they did, they could still freely leave while the outcome should be charged on the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and the Military Department of Norman Empire. When necessary, at the sight of this document, any local officers and stationed army were obligated to assist and coordinate with the possessor of this document to carry out required actions.

Certainly, Colonel Leibniz could see through the truth of this document; however, the content made him muddle-headed—what for would a big figure ranked knight from Jinyun country come here with such a document? What was worth them traveling such a long distance?"

...

Of course, that airship hovering above the civic square of Blackhot City was very eye-catching. Not only the people in the

civic square could see it, actually, as long as they raised their heads, almost all the people in the city could see the huge airship that shone with silver lights.

Already promoted to the manager of the workshop, Zhang Tie's dad was walking back home after leaving work. When he noticed that people beside him were pointing and looking far into the sky, he raised his head. The moment he caught sight of that huge airship, he became stunned and his lips slightly trembled. He quickly returned home, face turning pale.

Zhang Tie's home had remained unchanged. As his parents had to look after elder sister-in-law who was pregnant and was going to deliver a baby, Zhang family's rice brew store had not been opened for a long time. Each day, Zhang Tie's mom would spend most of the time on her daughter-in-law. These days, Zhang family's kitchen was filled with the aroma of various foods and soups, making passers-by drool. For this, Zhang family's relatives by marriage were very satisfied.

When Zhang Tie's dad returned home, he found that his wife was still stewing soup in the kitchen but looked not as energetic and spirited as usual. The moment she saw him, she bit her lips and wanted to say something.

"I know, I already saw it on the way back, it's the silver-wind level airship of the Huaiyuan Palace of Zhang Family..."

"Can they be here for other things?" Zhang Tie's mom hopefully asked.

"There's a mark of the Clansman Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace. I'm sure!" Zhang Tie's dad gave a bitter smile. "This time, it must be the elders of the Clansman Pavilion who came here for our affair. If not, the elders of the Clansman Pavilion would have never come to this small city no matter what happened here!"

"We've been here for dozens of years. How could they find us?"

"I'm just a trivial figure in Huaiyuan Palace. At that time, I pretended to die to escape. Dozens of years soon passed with us being safe and sound. The fake corpse must have rotten away and been found by others recently. I guess that it must be Guoguo, he must have awakened his ancestral blood ties and exposed his trace..." Zhang Tie's dad smiled. "I didn't imagine that although I was average my whole life, but by marrying a good wife I'll have a son who will awaken the ancestral blood. I have no pity any more..."

Zhang Tie's mom stretched out her hands and took a tight hold of his, tears rolling down from her eyes while he comforted her by patting her hands.

"Don't worry, I just pretended to die and escaped together with you. It's not a big mistake. The worst that can happen is that I'll be recorded on the "Guilty Deeds Record" and be punished to do labor work for a few years back in the Huaiyuan Palace. As the recent years have been becoming less and less peaceful, perhaps with Huaiyuan Palace at my side, it'll be a good thing for me!"

"It's my mistake. You could have..."

Zhang Tie's mom's tears fell like rain...

"I wouldn't be qualified to be a man if I hadn't been brave enough to escape with you. Compared to you, that real estate was nothing at all. "

At this moment, Zhang Tie's dad became very masculine and fascinating.

...

At supper, Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder brother returned home after a day's work. Dad pulled him in to a room. Ten minutes later, Zhang Yang came out with a shocked expression. He then looked at his mom and his dad. He felt like seeing a fairytale, a real life love fairytale which had always been beside him during the past dozens of years. It was featured by daily firewood, rice, oil, and salt...

After supper, Zhang family was covered with a restless ambiance. About an hour later, when it became completely dark, the barks along the whole street outside suddenly stopped, replaced by the sound of "Kaka" caused by heavy and tidy footsteps.

Hearing the footsteps stopping outside their house, Zhang Tie's dad, mom, Zhang Yang, and elder sister-in-law all held their breath.

The gate of Zhang house opened by itself and a figure with crossed hands behind its back slowly walked inside.

The moment he saw that figure, Zhang Tie's dad trembled all over and hurriedly pulled his wife to kneel in front of him. Seeing their parents kneeling down, Zhang Tie's elder brother also hurriedly knelt down together with his wife.

"Zhang Ping, the unworthy descendant of Huaiyuan Palace of Zhang Clan welcomes Sixth Uncle..."

That one was rightly the last person who had jumped off the airship. Looking emotionless, that person didn't say anything. After glancing over everyone, he took a look at the rice brew store, the the kitchen, and finally the main hall. When he caught sight of the incense tablets that were placed respectively on the incense burner table in the middle of the main hall, his expression became a bit better.

The elder gave a cold harrumph through his nostrils. After glancing at the people kneeling on the ground, he pointed at the elder sister-in-law. "As you've married a member of the Zhang clan and are pregnant with a blood-tied descendant of Zhang clan, you don't have to do this, stand up!"

"Zhang Ping, do you know your fault?"

The elder's voice immediately became solemn...

At this time, when the dusk fell in Blackhot City and a group of people got off the airship and came to Zhang Tie's home, everybody in Blapei was making the final preparations for tomorrow's beer festival and carnival. The entire Chevli village was filled with a rich atmosphere of the upcoming festival.

As a girl who would travel along with tomorrow's festooned vehicle downtown, Hanna stayed with the girls in the village for almost the whole day. They were decorating the festooned vehicles, preparing new clothes, and dressing their hair. Of course, they would load their own beer into the barrels when they came back in the evening to sell them in Blapei tomorrow.

From unmarried girls in Blapei, the girl whose beer was the most delicious in tomorrow's competition, she would have the honor to win the title of "Beer Queen". For girls in Blapei, that was sovereign praise and agreement. What it meant to the girls of Blapei was what for an average soldier of the Iron-Horn Army would mean to suddenly become an army leader.

There was a "Beer Queen" from Chevli before, but it was over 30 years ago. Yet it was still often mentioned with pride by the villagers—Chevli was a treasure land which once had a Beer Queen! Additionally, this honor was not awarded every year. Only the girl who could brew the truly delicious beer that won everybody's praise had the chance to win this special honor. In the last four years, nobody had won this special honor in Blapei

Although Hanna also had the ambition to become the "Beer Queen" in the beer festival like all the other girls in Blapei, she knew that it was almost impossible. She had learned brewing beer

from her elder sister-in-law and her mom. Although it was not the worst, it could only reach an average level in Chevli village. It was really hard to make her craftsmanship outstanding among all the other girls. Even her family members didn't think that she could win such a special honor.

But no matter what, happiness counted most in the beer festival.

Hanna's family members thought this as they helped her pour the fermented beer into wooden barrels from the beer fermenter...

But the moment they opened the lid of the fermenter, old Harley was the first to smell the special fragrance which was utterly different from before. The moment he smelled it, old Harley loudly exclaimed.

Chapter 246: The Effect Of The Mutated Yeast

Zhang Tie came back a bit late tonight. In the past few days, once he was free at daytime, he would take a round in the neighboring villages and the wild for two purposes: first, to look for the animals raised in the neighboring farming households that could be set free and lead to the corresponding Fruit of Redemption; second, to cultivate by himself.

On a huge, bald rock on top of a hill several kilometers away from Chevli village, Zhang Tie found a good place that was suitable for him to cultivate the "Bear Back Iron Body Skill". Over there, no matter how he would hit that rock using his back, that huge rock weighing several thousands tons would remain unchanged. This brought Zhang Tie another chance to strengthen his body and promote the growth of Iron-Body Fruit.

Based on his current strength, if he practiced "Bear Back Iron Body Skill" against the wall of Hanna's house, once he exerted his full strength, he might collapse the wall. However, if he used less strength, he might not be able to achieve the ideal effect. That's why he had to find a proper place to practice this skill. If he could not find a stout tree, he had to find a huge rock or a cliff that could stand his thousands of kgs' force.

Zhang Tie guessed that one of the reasons why he wasn't killed during that bloody fight with the undying army of the Sun Dynasty might also lie in the Iron-Body Fruit. Although he had not eaten too many Iron-Body Fruits, the effect of those he had eaten must have been utilised at the most critical moment and saved his life.

Because of this, Zhang Tie started to pay more attention to the Iron-Body Fruits after his body fully recovered.

Especially now that his body had mutated to a preliminary recovery body, Zhang Tie had super great wound recovery and healing capability which suggested much more special ideas about his future cultivation road. The effect of the Iron-Body Fruit reinforced his physical defense and anti-striking capability. If he could further exert this effect together with the effect of his preliminary recovery body, he would definitely have a greater chance to survive and be as robust as a cockroach which had a super strong vitality.

Zhang Tie was actually very afraid of death, so after gaining the preliminary recovery body, he immediately became extremely concerned about the Iron-Body Fruit. That's why these days, he definitely spent more time practicing "Bear Back Iron-Body Skill" than ever before.

At daytime, he would ram his back against that huge rock. When he had to stop due to pain, he would forcefully pat his lower abdomen, chests, neck, thighs, and shins. After that, the pain on his back would have relieve somewhat and he would start to ram his back against the huge rock again.

He kept doing that all day long. Even though it were lunch or supper time, he would hurriedly eat some dried rations before returning to his practice.

Zhang Tie really regarded himself as a red iron plate that needed to be hammered. Each time he was hammered and rammed, he

would enjoy great happiness. Sometimes, as long as one's mentality changed, arduous and boring cultivation could also be filled with pleasure. For Zhang Tie, this cultivation process was actually a special individual game.

Since he constantly practiced like this, four days ago, the first Iron-Body Fruit after his complete recovery became mature. After eating it, Zhang Tie finally felt its sweet juices. It didn't make him suffer from diarrhea, just turned into a wisp of icy energy that penetrated into his skin and muscles from inside to the outside.

In the following two days, when Zhang Tie constantly patted and rammed himself, he had a different feeling as he felt a wisp of comfortable, warm qi and energy that started to fuse with his skin and muscles. In the process of alternatively warm cultivation and eating icy fruits, Zhang Tie really felt like a hot, red iron plate being quenched after being hammered.

After recovery, the second Iron-Body Fruit was 82% ripe yesterday. After today's practice, Zhang Tie estimated that it would have become completely ripe. Besides this Iron-Body Fruit, the first Leakless Fruit after recovery should also have ripened today. The moment he thought that he could engulf two fruits tonight, Zhang Tie became highly spirited.

After igniting two more burning points, he would be able to be promoted to a LV 5 warrior. As Blapei was peaceful now, and he had gained a preliminary recovery body, Zhang Tie was thinking about completing this promotion in the next month or two. Although this promotion was twice as difficult as the one before, it was of great significance to Zhang Tie at this moment.

If there was no emergency, he felt that his Iron-Blood hidden strength could be promoted to Iron-Blood invisible strength when he reached level 5. Controlled by the invisible strength, his Iron-Blood Fist and red-snake sword would be even more powerful. Additionally, when he reached level 5, his physical strength and potential would be further tapped, which meant that his javelin attacks would be more horrifying.

Actually, on that night when he fought with the undying army of the Sun Dynasty, the speed of the javelin that Zhang Tie had freely thrown had already reached the speed of sound. However, Zhang Tie clearly knew that the sonic boom skill that he could grasp had just passed the sound barrier. He could not fully play the role of the sonic boom yet as the effect of his sonic boom was not stable yet. But when he reached level 5, none of the above problems would exist. Perhaps by then, the javelins could fully exert their power in Zhang Tie's hand.

...

When Zhang Tie came back to Chevli, it was already night. However, the village was ten times more boisterous than usual. As the beer carnival was tomorrow, many people in Chevli village had started to make torches and festival lanterns. Additionally, many kids couldn't wait to ignite the torches and the festival lanterns and played with them. Looking from afar, the Chevli village was brightly lit and filled with people's laughter and joyful words.

People here enjoyed eating roasted geese in festivals. Tonight, from many houses in Chevli village drifted the aroma of roasted

gooses.

Speaking of them, Zhang Tie had made a new discovery these days—in Blapei, actually, he could set free some more animals, namely those chickens, ducks, and geese that were raised in many houses in the villages neighboring Blapei. It wouldn't even cost him too much money to set free those animals. To tell the truth, Zhang Tie was really curious what would the Fruit of Redemption look like after he set free those average livestock.

Although this idea was very good, Zhang Tie couldn't find any proper reason to do this. He was afraid that the moment he set those livestock in the wild, they would be caught back by others. It wouldn't work at all.

Although he could set them free in the Castle of Black Iron, where he didn't need to worry about them being caught back by others, it wasn't exactly the beset solution. He had brought some earthworms inside the Castle of Black Iron several days ago and made earthworms the second animal that settled there after the bees, but the livestock were much bigger than earthworms.

It would work if he brought a couple of into the Castle of Black Iron, but it would be too eye-catching if he brought too many of them inside. Additionally, since he was living in Hanna's home, if he often brought chickens and ducks back in to his room which would then disappear the next day, leaving nothing at all, how could he explain that to them. Even an idiot would notice something wrong. Of course, Zhang Tie didn't want to be the target of the public.

...

When he returned to Hanna's home, Hanna instantly pulled him back into the dining room. What made him surprised was that all of Hanna's family members were staring at a glass of beer on the table in the middle of the dining room. Old Harley, Hanna's dad, and Hanna's elder brother were piously gazing at that glass of beer on the table without even blinking. Hanna's mom and elder sister-in-law also were pretty nervous.

'Why are they staring at that glass of beer? What's happening? Is it a traditional ceremony that is going to be held before the beer festival?'

But before Zhang Tie could open his mouth, he saw Hanna silently glance at him, and so he swallowed his words back.

After a long while, old Harley who was staring at that glass of beer let out a sigh.

"Already six minutes!"

"The bubbles are still there!" Hanna's elder brother said, his eyes shining bright.

"The bubbles in the beginning definitely reached over three centimeters!" Hanna's dad added in an obviously trembling voice.

After that, the three men exchanged glances with evident

uncontrollable excitement and ecstasy.

Zhang Tie saw nothing special. After silently asking Hanna what was happening, she told him that for men who treated beer as their lives in Blapei, during the past hundreds of years, they had already concluded a series of methods to appraise the quality of beer. Besides tasting it, they could also judge it with their eyes. Take the bubbles of the beer for an instance, many people could judge the quality only by the bubbles and luster—the standard of top-class beer was that the bubbles could rise three centimeters above the mouth of the glass and remain unchanged for at least four-five minutes.

After smelling its odor, checking its luster and tasting it, its lasting time was the final procedure to appraise its quality. The result was super excellent like the other aspects, so all Hanna's family members became really excited by that.

...

"It looks perfect too. I drunk too fast just now and failed to appraise it's real taste. I will try it again..."

Licking his lips, Hanna's elder brother stretched out his hand to take that glass of beer on the table.

"Bastard, you've drunk one glass before!"

Hanna's dad pushed away the reaching hand of Hanna's elder

brother with a cold expression while stretching his own hand towards that glass of beer.

"Cough...cough..." Old Harley coughed twice.

Hearing that, Hanna's dad's hand froze in the air.

When old Harley was about to take that glass with a big smile, Hanna took the initiative and picked that glass of beer from the table. She then brought it in front of Zhang Tie. Old Harley gave an embarrassed smile as he drew back his hand.

"Try it!"

Hanna stared at Zhang Tie, full of expectations.

Zhang Tie held the glass and took a careful look. Given its luster, the glass of beer seemed to be more translucent and pure than those he had drunk before. Although it was under the lamp light in the evening, holding the glass, Zhang Tie felt like holding a big piece of excellent yellow crystal which had a very strong texture visually.

When he moved the beer close to his mouth, a unique fragrance brought a sense of liveliness. To tell the truth, Zhang Tie had not smelt such a good odor from beer ever since he was born.

The moment the golden liquid entered his mouth, it tasted both fine, smooth, and refreshing, seeming not to have that bitterness

and astringency of other beer. Instead, it was fully energetic. It seemed like every wisp of sunlight's essence had been absorbed by the raw materials that then were turned into alcohol.

With just a sip, Zhang Tie had become addicted to it.

Although he was not an expert in tasting beer, he clearly knew that the beer in his hand was definitely the most excellent one.

While the other three men in the room were forcefully swallowing their saliva, Zhang Tie bottomed that glass of beer.

After that, he glanced at Hanna with an expression of inquiry. Hanna slightly nodded. Zhang Tie then understood it at once.

This beer was brewed by Hanna using the mutated yeast that he had given to her!

At this moment Zhang Tie was so shocked that he became speechless.

This beer was brewed with the yeast that only contained one third of the properties of the original basic aura yeast. What if the original basic aura yeast was used?

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he suddenly remembered that what he had brewed in the Castle of Black Iron with those mutated yeast could be drinkable too.

His heart raced fiercely.

...

"Does the God bless our Hanna to be be this year's Beer Queen?"

Hanna's mom was so excited that she even dropped tears.

"It cannot be that. The beer that Hanna brewed before had not been this tasty. Since she brewed it like always, how could she make such special beer?" Hanna's elder brother became dubious. "No way, I will try another glass to check whether it was an illusion just now!"

"Nobody is allowed to taste Hanna's beer any more!" Old Harley solemnly glanced at Hanna's elder brother as he had immediately seen through his plot. "Tomorrow, the beer will conquer every man in Blapei; Hanna will definitely be the Beer Queen of Blapei!" Saying this, old Harley glanced at Zhang Tie and forced a smile. "Can you temporarily keep the secret of what happened tonight for Hanna?"

Zhang Tie nodded.

"You know, we've got one more thing to negotiate at home..."

Zhang Tie felt embarrassed at once. The moment he was going to

leave, his arm was grabbed by Hanna. Being straightforward, she directly revealed the secret to the other family members.

"Grandpa, you don't need to feel strange about that anymore. The reason that my beer is different from before is that Zhang Tie gifted me a packet of very special powder of beer yeast before..."

After being slightly stunned, Hanna' dad instantly sprung up from beside the table. He didn't let Zhang Tie leave, instead, he rushed outside and looked around. After finding no people there, he hurriedly closed the door.

Besides Hanna, everybody in the room focused their gleaming eyes on Zhang Tie, causing him to feel like he was surrounded by a pack of wolves...

Chapter 247: The Start Of The Carnival

The annual beer festival in Blapei would be fixed on the first weekend of each November. Because the beer festival originated from the festivity of farmers in the most leisurely time of Blapei, even though the month chosen was not as hot as June and July, people's passion for their favorite beer was enough to ignite the whole Blapei on the same day each year.

Even if facing the danger of war and just having suffered a bomb attack from the Sun Dynasty several weeks before, each house in Blapei today still became boisterous like flaring fire.

It seemed that because of having been oppressed by the upcoming war, people here became really mad and decided to give full vent to their inner emotions.

Old Harley said that the quantity of festooned vehicles from Chevli village this year was the largest in recent years. The festooned vehicles were also more beautiful than before.

For this festival, Zhang Tie also showed great interest. Since last night, old Harley had been ten times more enthusiastic about him than ever before. After learning that Zhang Tie had not prepared a traditional costume for the beer festival, in the early morning, he sent a whole new, decent costume to Zhang Tie.

This proper and decent costume included a jazz hat decorated with beautiful feathers, an average and good-looking jujube-wood walking stick, a black woolen coat without lapels, a small black

vest, a round, woolen half-body cloak, a pair of black leather jazz pants, a pair of stockings, and a pair of brown, round-head brogues.

Once he dressed in these clothes, Zhang Tie found himself very funny. Looking at himself in the mirror, he felt like he was much more mature. If a mustache was put on his mouth corner, he would look like a mature gentleman. Since he was almost 16 years old, Zhang Tie's lips were covered with fine cyan hair, making him as tender as a Chinese onion.

Zhang Tie estimated that this costume had cost old Harley at least 20-30 silver coins. When old Harley sent it here, he was even worried that Zhang Tie wouldn't receive it.

After Zhang Tie generously received the clothes, all the family members of old Harley became excited. After all, these items were really trivial compared to what Zhang Tie had promised them last night.

After what happened last night, he had turned from an ostentatious outsider to a respected guest of old Harley's family.

Hanna also changed to a set of beautiful clothes today. She wore a beautiful dress with corset and an open collar whose neckline was decorated with a circle of delicate folded lace. Her shoulders and breasts were decorated with a rectangular purple silky cloth of beautiful lace, on which was a bow knot and some beautiful bibelots. The sleeves of the skirt were bulging puff sleeves. The lower part of the skirt which was also decorated with many delicate ornaments reached her feet.

Of course, on the lower part of the skirt was an apron that greatly impressed Zhang Tie. It was said that an apron represented that the working woman was diligent.

As an unmarried woman, Hanna wore a beautiful garland woven of camellia.

In this costume, Hanna became more fascinating and beautiful. Zhang Tie liked it very much as it revealed her womanly figure and displayed her plump breasts and butt that attracted men's attention.

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie was standing near the windowsill in his room, revealing a weird expression. He seemed to be enjoying the scene, gasping, and watching the courtyard of Hanna's home.

Besides Zhang Tie, everybody in Hanna's home were wearing new clothes. Even old Harley had changed to a set of clean and decent clothes.

"Zhang Tie, have you seen Hanna?"

Seeing Zhang Tie standing next to the windowsill in his room and facing the courtyard, old Harley who was seeking for Hanna raised his head and asked.

"I saw her down there in the courtyard just now!" Zhang Tie answered loudly from upstairs.

"Where has that wicked girl gone..." Old Harley mumbled downstairs in the courtyard before turning back and leaving.

What Zhang Tie said just now was true. A moment ago, he truly had seen Hanna in the courtyard. but now...

Hearing Zhang Tie talking with old Harley, Hanna who was squatting down and working hard became more excited. After forcefully swallowing and spitting several times, Hanna's apex nasi had almost reached Zhang Tie's pubis on the lower abdomen. With eyes half closed, Hanna became slightly intoxicated. At a rhythm, she would slightly groan besides the "zi zi" sound made by her lips

getting in contact with Zhang Tie's d*ck. It seemed that this state could bring her a certain pleasure.

Zhang Tie was very pleased as he liked to do this very much, spiritually, physically, and even visually.

Because she was squatting in front of Zhang Tie in a dress with an open collar, her slightly raised head, revealed the beautiful curve of her neck and the part above her clavicle. Zhang Tie felt that Hanna was like a beautiful swan at this moment.

A beautiful swan singing a song for him...

Zhang Tie felt very lucky.

Around ten minutes later, Zhang Tie started to violently tremble. Out of consciousness, he hugged Hanna's hand with his own while Hanna also accelerated the frequency tacitly. Her blond hair started to crazily weave under the camellia corolla. Finally, Hanna's whole face almost lay on Zhang Tie's lower abdomen as she tightly held Zhang Tie's d*ck in her mouth and remained still. At the same time, Zhang Tie completed a thorough ejection in the deepest part of Hanna's mouth...

...

Hanna swallowed everything before extracting the last drop of body fluid of Zhang Tie with her lips and tongue and put that tamed thing into his jazz pants.

"Your waistband is very beautiful. Is it new? I've not seen it before..."

After arranging Zhang Tie's pants, Hanna noticed his new waistband.

"Yea, It's new!" Zhang Tie could only reply in this way.

Already having stood up, Hanna touched the red snakes which were embedded in the buckle of the waistband. "That's weird, it's two snakes; isn't it be a bit large for a buckle of a waistband? But it's very beautiful and gorgeous. Plus that weird snake, you have

three snakes now, one big and two small, hey hey..."

"You coquettish woman!"

Zhang Tie became slightly dumbfounded as he found that this woman was even more lewd than him.

"What? Don't you like it?"

Hanna stared at Zhang Tie in an enchanting way.

"I do like it!" Zhang Tie honestly answered.

"Many times last month you've forcefully ejected into my body by pressing me down, I was worried about being pregnant; unexpectedly, my menstruation still arrived last month on time!"

"Haven't I told you that if I don't want you to get pregnant, you won't get pregnant!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile as this was a mysterious function brought by the small tree.

Only when he wanted to have babies could the essence ejected from him contain the most important energy that could breed new lives. Normally, although the essence looked no different from usual, it would never make a woman pregnant.

When he made love with Pandora in Blackhot City for the first time, the selective dialog box had popped out in his mind at the

most critical moment, making Zhang Tie more relaxed and happier to make love with those girls of the Rose Association later on. This truly saved a lot of trouble for him by preventing the women from getting pregnant. Besides the fruits, Zhang Tie felt that this function of the small tree was the most considerate.

"You know what, I've already recovered today. Little boy, don't forget to wait for your teacher at night! Now, I have to go to the festooned vehicles..."

After stealthily glancing at the courtyard, Hanna kissed Zhang Tie's face, then rearranged her dress, and, walking on her tiptoes, quietly ran down the stairs from Zhang Tie's room.

...

Five minutes after Hanna had left, Zhang Tie also went downstairs like a thief.

Today, most of the people in Chevli village wanted to go along with the festooned vehicles to see the flower parade and the evening carnival in Blapei. Previously, old Harley and Hanna's dad had also wanted to be there; however, after what had happened last night, the two men of Hanna's family decided to stay at home.

Last night, when Hanna explained that the reason for the beer being so delicious lay in the special yeast powder gifted by Zhang Tie, all the other family members became thrilled. Of course, the quality of the yeast used to ferment the beer could not be judged by one's eyes or mouth. However, people in Blapei who had several

hundred years' traditions in brewing beer truly had their own method to test the quality of the yeast gifted so as to check the truth of Hanna's words.

Old Harley only took a small half glass of beer zymotic fluid from the fermenter. After that he fetched a vial and sprayed a bit of weird powder from the vial into it. He then slightly shook the bottle. After a short while, at the sight of the small half glass of zymotic fluid, old Harley became so thrilled that his words started to be disordered.

"Oh, my god, it's true; how could it be? There's no other anaerobia except for yeast in the zymotic fluid. This was really a wholly new yeast that I've never seen before..."

After Hanna explained it to Zhang Tie, he finally understood why old Harley was so excited.

In Chevli village, all the zymotic fluid left from brewed beer was recyclable. However, the recycling times were limited to 4-5 times. It would be ineffective after being recycled 6-7 times. The reason was as follows: during the process of beer fermentation, besides yeast, there would be other anaerobia. After each fermentation, the quantity of these anaerobia would increase. When the quantity and proportion of other anaerobia became greater than 20% of the total amount of yeast in the zymotic fluid, the beer brewed would taste bad.

For a long time, people in Blapei had concluded a series of methods to test the proportion of other anaerobia in zymotic fluid to determine the zymotic fluid's availability. Zhang Tie didn't

know what old Harley had sprayed into the zymotic fluid, but Hanna told him that if there were anaerobia inside, after spraying the powders inside, the color of the zymotic fluid would change accordingly. Experienced people could identify the proportion of anaerobia inside from the changing color.

After spraying the powders inside, old Harley was shocked by the result as there was almost no anaerobia inside the zymotic fluid. However, this phenomenon had never been seen during the past hundreds of years in Blapei. After being brewed for the first time, the content of anaerobia inside the zymotic fluid would usually increase by 3-5%. Old Harley's family members had not even heard about any zymotic fluid that would contain no anaerobia after being used once. Of course, the reason was the special yeast spices in the zymotic fluid.

Hanna's words were verified at once.

All the family members clearly knew what this meant.

Such zymotic fluid could be recycled forever. However, this wasn't the real deal. What was most important was that as long as they were not afraid of trouble, after some filtering procedures, they could use the yeast in the zymotic fluid to cultivate more of the same yeast, which could be used to brew more top-quality beer. And top-quality beer symbolized great honor and a great amount of money in Blapei...

A bright road suddenly appeared in front of Hanna's family members!

However, Hanna's family members didn't know that the yeast was fully under the control of Zhang Tie. As it was a mutated species from his Castle of Black Iron, if Zhang Tie didn't like something, he could lock and change some of the yeast's gene functions to stop its reproduction. After eating the Fruit of Creator which could control the yeast, once Zhang Tie sent an order in his mind, he could kill all the yeasts which had been carried out of the Castle of Black Iron at once.

Facing the eyes of Hanna's family members that were full of desire, Zhang Tie had made an agreement with them last night which almost drove them mad.

...

The beer brewing workshop in Hanna' home was locked for today while the remaining zymotic fluid was carefully stored away. But even so, they were still not reassured, so two men stayed to keep an eye on the treasure.

In Blapei, the value of yeast that could improve beer's quality could almost drive everybody mad.

From last night, the affair of Zhang Tie gifting his mutated yeast to Hanna had become the top secret in old Harley's home.

...

Because he planned to go back downtown today, Zhang Tie followed the festooned vehicles and the teams to head for Blapei after taking a very roundabout way.

Hanna took her beer and sat on the predominant festooned vehicle while everybody in Chevli village including the village head surrounded her like numerous stars circling around the shiny moon. Last night, old Harley had silently called the village head into his home. After drinking a glass of Hanna's beer, the village head decided to let Hanna represent Chevli village to compete for this year's Beer Queen...

The news that Hanna was going to compete for the title of Beer Queen immediately shocked the whole Chevli village.

As Hanna hadn't brewed too much beer using the yeast given by Zhang Tie, not everyone could have a chance to taste her beer to verify her qualification. But after the village head shown the same "bubble certificate" in the public like what Zhang Tie had seen last night, all the villagers in Chevli were conquered.

For people in Blapei, the quality of beer could be identified by eyes.

The moment they opened Hanna's barrel, the fragrance of the beer almost caused a chaos among the team that had entered Blapei.

After the chaos, the team of festooned vehicles of Chevli village no longer looked like going for a parade in Blapei any more,

instead, they looked more like an army heading for a battle as everybody was highly spirited and with a high morale. If there was truly a Beer Queen in Chevli village, it would be a huge pride and honor for all the villagers in Chevli.

In this atmosphere, Zhang Tie was ignored by others and was pushed to the end of the team. Nevertheless, he didn't mind it at all.

Seeing Hanna's happiness while being surrounded by the people as if she was a queen, Zhang Tie also felt glad for her.

He was truly in a good mood today!

At least good at this moment!

...

After the arrival of the teams of festooned vehicles from surrounding villages, the grand beer carnival in Blapei officially kicked off at noon.

Today, every place in Blapei was well decorated. Roadside stores, houses, and lamp poles—all were covered with colored ribbons, flags, and various joyful symbols.

The first news that Zhang Tie heard after arriving to the downtown area was not about the beer festival but about the war. Last night, in revenge, a brave airship of the Iron-Horn Army had

dashed into the air territory of the Sun Dynasty and dropped two bombs on to an important logistics base of the Brilliant Feathers in Lazian City which was 160 km away from the frontier of the two armies, which greatly shocked the Sun Dynasty and its predominant army—the Brilliant Feathers.

Zhang Tie read the news in the official newspaper of Blapei. Although it made him speechless, it was still very inspiring. Certainly, it might also be a propaganda act to deliver such news to a city which had been attacked by the Brilliant Feathers of the Sun Dynasty on the same day of the beer festival.

After all, the spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty had not been caught yet. However, it seemed that the rare patrolling soldiers of the No. 21 Division could be seen on the streets in such a festival atmosphere because of the arrival of such a grand festival and the two bombs last night.

Previously, Zhang Tie had wanted to follow the festooned vehicles of Chevli to watch how Hanna competed for the title of the Beer Queen, but sadly soon after he entered the downtown area, he lost contact with the team of the festooned vehicles...

Chapter 248: Trap And Honor

The boisterous atmosphere in Blapei because of the beer festival was almost out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Walking through the streets, he could see many people in holiday clothes surrounding the teams of festooned vehicles which were heading downtown. Those festooned vehicles came from all the suburban areas around Blapei. Additionally, many communities and business groups downtown also organized festooned vehicles to parade through the streets. Some were even matched with bands and dressed clowns walking on stilts. The festooned vehicles passed by with flying colorful ribbons and flags.

When Zhang Tie came to a populated place, he saw beautiful women displaying themselves by constantly sending air kisses in all directions and tossing great amounts of petals. Some of them were even tossing small trinkets like locusts woven from wheat straws, which made the surrounding kids reach to grab them.

Beer brewing workshops, roadside bars, and beer hotels in Blapei pushed out many competitions. As a result, the whole city became extremely boisterous.

Among the various competitions, the most common one was beer drinking in a limited amount of time that anyone could participate in at the cost of only one silver coin. The final winner would have a chance to win a bonus besides tasting many kinds of beer for free.

Zhang Tie had intended to push into the civic square to watch the Competition for the title of Beer Queen. However, because the area around the civic square was the most boisterous place today, when

Zhang Tie was two blocks away from the civic square, the road became so crowded that he could not even move. Even if he tried for the two other directions, the dense population still held him back like a flesh wall. After pushing for ten minutes, Zhang Tie still had not moved even ten meters forward.

In the crowded streets, women screams could be heard from time to time, someone having stealthily touched their bodies.

Seeing what was happening around him, Zhang Tie had no other choice but to stop. If Hanna became this year's Beer Queen, he would learn of it at night. Each year, after the Beer Queen was selected, she would gain a great bonus and an imperial crown. The Beer Queen would sit on a special festooned vehicle and travel across Blapei.

For women in Blapei, Beer Queen was almost the highest praise and the most brilliant honor that they could gain in their whole lives. The selection of the Beer Queen was the start of the climax of the entire beer festival and carnival of Blapei. However, according to the customs, the Beer Queen could not be selected until the dusk fell and torches were ignited.

Zhang Tie really wanted to see how Hanna looked when she was selected as the Beer Queen. Since that cute girl had brought him so much happiness these days, he hoped that today could be the happiest day in her life. Zhang Tie didn't know the quality of the other women's beers as he was a layman about beer, but seeing her family members, the village head, the villagers of Chevli village becoming so confident about her, he also became confident of her success.

Old Harley casually mentioned that he slept very well after drinking two glasses of beer that Hanna had brewed using that marvelous yeast. These years, as he was growing old, he usually coughed at night. However, it was very strange last night as he didn't cough at all. Until this morning, he was still highly spirited.

Although others didn't put much weight on what old Harley had said, Zhang Tie bore it in mind as he remembered that when he had health problems or felt uncomfortable at a young age such as coughing or catching cold, his mom would always feed him the fruit yeast solution which was used to make the rice brew. It was very marvelous. Each time he drunk that, his health would become much better, so Zhang Tie had not gone for a doctor since he was young, neither did he suffer from any big disease while those small problems could be solved at home.

Perhaps the yeast could extract the substances from plants that were beneficial to people's health. Benefiting from this, old Harley slept quite well last night. Thinking this, after Zhang Tie came back to his residence last night, he ate two fruits to enhance his real strength. Additionally, he also took a look at those vats of fruit yeast solution that he had brewed in the lab of the Castle of Black Iron.

He had brewed too much, and the craftsmanship that he used to brew the fruit yeast fluid was obviously different from one used to brew beer. After a month, the fruits in the solution had not been completely decomposed. It meant that it would take a longer time for the yeast fluid to complete its final fermentation. However, the fragrance from the vats of yeast fluid had already filled the air, making him intoxicated.

The beer brewed from the yeast that only had one third of the properties of the basic aura yeast was great to drink, so the original basic aura yeast should be even more outstanding.

As for why the fluid fermented by yeast would have so many marvelous functions, Zhang Tie could not figure it out due to the limited knowledge that he had received since he was born.

Zhang Tie was thinking that perhaps he should go to the private library once again today to read a few more books and have a good study on the functions of yeast as the beer that Hanna had brewed using his yeast had made him realize that such trivial things might be very useful in the future.

...

The parading festooned vehicles parked in the afternoon in every street of Blapei. They became mobile stalls for selling beer and roasted meat. Zhang Tie then spent three silver coins to drink a few glasses of beer and eat some roasted meat in a festooned vehicle, accompanied by beautiful and passionate girls of Blapei who danced happily in the melodious music of a violin.

In such a boisterous and happy atmosphere, Zhang Tie really didn't want to wear his military uniform and return to the No. 9 Equipment Center and face a pile of worn-out machines. Right now he might as well do something else.

So after leaving the secret signal in the rendezvous point to Bilis,

Zhang Tie came to the Grant's Library once again. He stayed in the retrieval area for two hours. Finally, he grew disappointed and left. Although there were some books on yeast, all of them were only related to beer brewing. No other aspects about yeast were mentioned in those books.

In such a private library, due to limited quantity of books, one could not usually find the knowledge that he truly needed. Perhaps he truly had really good luck last time.

After leaving the library, Zhang Tie soon arrived at the rendezvous point where he usually met Bilis.

As was expected, Bilis was already there.

"You're really responsive today, I thought you might not see my secret signal until night!" Zhang Tie leisurely told Bilis.

"I... I've been waiting for your news these days, so those guys even started to doubt the words that I told them several days ago!" Bilis seemed to be a bit nervous. "If you don't show up in a couple of days, I might not even dare to see them anymore!"

"Ho...ho..." Zhang Tie gave a smile. He also felt that Bilis was nervous. However, he didn't care about that as he guessed that he was nervous because he couldn't control those guys. "Don't worry, I will go see them with you today. I hope they can recognize me in this costume!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bilis let out a breath. "That's great! If you can show up in front of them, it will be more convenient for me to serve you from then on!"

"Where are they?"

"Some of them are at home; but as we often kill time in a billiard room in Xicheng District, many of them are also there today!"

"Well, I will go meet them then!"

Because of traffic control in Blapei today, with the exception of parading festooned vehicles and military vehicles, all other vehicles were forbidden to move on the roads downtown, so the two people could only go to that place on foot.

Compared to other places in Blapei, there seemed to be more poor people in Xicheng District. Buildings here were old. There were many slums and some factories. The coke-oven plants and the only steel plant in Blapei were also located in this district, so as one could imagine, the environment here was very bad.

Bilis guided Zhang Tie through the roads in the downtown area. Seeing the narrow and dirty lanes that he was walking through and the exceptionally less wealthy population which formed a sharp contrast with the boisterous atmosphere that he had seen, Zhang Tie slightly frowned. Many people here looked dumb, indifferent, grim and fierce, making him very uncomfortable.

"Do you usually stay here?"

"Yea, most of us do. This is the most chaotic area, this Xicheng District of Blapei. About two thirds of thieves, liars, rogues, rapists, prostitutes, jobless workers, low-level hatchet men, and drug addicts of the city live here. Previously, many criminals who were wanted by the Andaman Alliance also stayed here!" Bilis carefully answered.

Thinking of that night when Bilis and the other guys came to find him trouble for only two gold coins, Zhang Tie shook his head inside.

"Once you follow me, I promise you that you will soon leave this place and get to live a decent life!" Zhang Tie told Bilis very seriously.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bilis suddenly slowed his speed, his shoulders and neck becoming stiff.

For some reason, since he entered this region, Zhang Tie felt like he was being watched. He glanced over all sorts of people who were silently looking at him from behind dim windows and doors and the prostitutes who had started to solicit trades under roadside lamps by leaning against dim wall corners at dusk. He then shook his head and forced a self-mocking smile. His clothes were truly not congruous with this place, so no wonder he would attract others' attention.

Bilis guided Zhang Tie into a beer hotel in a dim lane. The hotel

had a very poor business with only a couple of people drinking beer inside. Zhang Tie glanced over the hotel and found nothing special.

"The billiard room is behind the hotel..."

Zhang Tie then followed Bilis into the billiard room which was made to entertain the guests of the hotel.

The size of the billiard room here was medium with 4-5 billiard tables inside, but for some reason, nobody was inside at all.

"Where are they? Can you wait here for a minute, please? Those guys might be hugging women upstairs. As they don't know you are here, I will call them downstairs!" Bilis said, lowering his head.

Zhang Tie nodded and Bilis left the billiard room. For some reason, Zhang Tie felt that the man was a bit flustered when he left.

After ten more seconds, Zhang Tie frowned as he felt that something was not right. Additionally, he smelt something bloody...

When Zhang Tie's face turned pale, with a loud "boom", a wall on the hotel's side was suddenly pushed down. The entire wall collapsed outward. Before Zhang Tie could make any response, a pile of people "flew" inside from the direction of the collapsed wall.

In this case, of course Zhang Tie instinctively avoided them. However, these people seemed weird as they all lay on the ground after "flying" inside...

They were not "flying" inside but being "thrown" inside. They were not live people but a pile of corpses in dark red military uniforms of the Norman Empire with various wounds on them. Strangely their faces felt familiar to Zhang Tie.

The fifteen corpses filled the whole billiard room at once. The nearest corpse was one meter away from Zhang Tie, face turned upward. Zhang Tie immediately recognized him—it was the guy who had beaten him and whom he had killed that night two weeks ago .

"We found the saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty!" someone loudly screamed outside.

Soon after that, many guys in red gloves rushed inside from the collapsed wall. With weapons in hands, they immediately surrounded Zhang Tie. Many red gloves then slashed towards the corpses on the ground and the surrounding walls and worn-out billiard tables. Some of them even slashed on themselves, none of the wounds fatal.

All of a sudden, the billiard room in the beer hotel seemed to have witnessed a fierce battle.

A red glove with silver hair then slowly walked out of the crowd gazing at Zhang Tie like how a wolf gazes at its prey.

"Major Franca, the remaining forces of the Sun Dynasty refused to be caught, so we've killed them all except for one person. When we rushed inside just now, this person was negotiating with these saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty. He was submitting an item to the saboteurs."

After his words, a red glove ranked first lieutenant searched out an item from a corpse lying on the ground and gave it to Major Franca.

That major then carefully unfolded that item with blood stains on it. He took a glance at it before facing Zhang Tie with a smile. "This item is the map containing the defenses of the Comprehensive Logistics Relief Base of Blapei and all the material warehouses. Who are you? How could you have this item?"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie knew that he was set up once again. The pit that he was in was bottomless...

"You bastard, motherf*cker!" Zhang Tie fiercely swore...

...

When Zhang Tie was surrounded by a group of red gloves, on the civic square of Blapei, after the afternoon's competition, the final result of the competition for the title of the Beer Queen was revealed: the winner today overwhelmed all her competitors and conquered all the 21 beer tasters from the Blapei Beer Industry Association.

Today, the civic square witnessed a miracle, a miracle that could make all the 21 beer tasters to vote for the same person without any hesitation. This had never happened in the history of Blapei. In the recent years, there was not even one woman who could gain more than half the votes from all the beer tasters and put on the crown of the Beer Queen of Blapei.

At this moment, in the center of the civic square, a single name gradually resonated. "Hanna... Hanna... Hanna..."

In the beginning, only a few people were shouting, but as time passed all the population in the square started repeating it while some of them even shouted loudly...

"Citizens of Blapei, please shout as you will, Blapei has its Beer Queen this year once again. This year's Beer Queen is Hanna. Hanna here brew the greatest beer in the history of Blapei. She conquered all the 21 honorable beer tasters..."

Tens of thousands of people started to cheer while many people from Chevli village were so excited that they even started to drop tears...

Chapter 249: Pulling Out The Sword

Zhang Tie knew that he had already fallen into a delicately designed trap. At the sight of those corpses that he had killed two weeks ago, although being very infuriated, Zhang Tie still remained extremely calm.

Facing these strictly hierarchical and terrifying secret police of the Norman Empire, as long as he made one mistake, he would disappear from this world.

Although these people had died two weeks ago, they were still well preserved like having been killed just now. Zhang Tie was not that foolish to ask how they could have preserved these corpses so well as it was just a trivial problem. Donder had told him many methods to preserve corpses such as the most commonly seen freezing or if something slightly more complex - ointment or paste. There were many methods that could be used to keep corpses "fresh", allowing the others to set him up.

The moment he saw those corpses, Zhang Tie immediately figured out a couple things. First, these were the people who had burned the warehouse. They did this to destroy the scene and prevent him from noticing that the corpses had disappeared when he went back to check on them. Zhang Tie had then believed that the fire was set by other saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty.

Second, when he killed those people from the Sun Dynasty, the process was definitely under these people's monitoring. They had to have been hiding in the darkness. They must have witnessed how he killed those people or discovered it through investigation.

After understanding those two things, Zhang Tie became more clear-minded.

"You must be responsible for the two missing soldiers of the No. 21 Division. You did that to make me trust that Sun Dynasty's saboteurs were still in Blapei and make me believe that the fire was set by the saboteurs to destroy evidence inside and eliminate my doubts?" Zhang Tie asked icily, staring at the silver-haired Major Franca.

Major Franca then flicked his hand to let all the other red gloves surrounding Zhang Tie exit, leaving only him, Zhang Tie, and the corpses all over the ground in this messy billiard room of the beer hotel.

Zhang Tie's pupils immediately shrunk from his actions. At this moment, this one still dared to face him alone. This meant that this guy was at least a fighter above LV 8 and was very confident in defeating him. Zhang Tie didn't believe that this person who had been thinking about setting him up for such a long time didn't know his performance in the Iron-Blood Camp. Although being a LV 4 warrior, he could easily deal with LV 6-7 fighters.

"You're right. I assume the responsibility for the two missing soldiers of No. 21 Division to make everybody believe that the spies and saboteurs of the Sun Dynasty were still in Blapei. Given the effect, it worked!" Major Franca casually said as if chatting with Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, he took off his red gloves and slapped them onto one palm.

"It's said that there's a disagreement between members of the Order Committee of the Norman Empire and Marshal Lin Changjiang. Could that difference in views between the top-class figures truly make you so frenzied that you'd kill soldiers and frame military officers of the Norman Empire?"

Zhang Tie stared at Major Franca with sharp and fierce eyes.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Major Franca started to laugh like a lunatic.

"Now that you know what we've done, you must know our role in Blapei. Hehehehe, in the eyes of the big figures, small figures like us can only make someone disgusting. We are like a pile of rotten meat covered with worms or vomit, a number of beggars or dirty shit. We were dispatched here to make someone frown, lose appetite, or better lose temper several times at the sight of us. Do you know how we feel being treated as worms, rotten meat, shit and vomit? You could never know..." Major Franca's face twisted slightly. "In order to get rid of such life and easily throw out a pile of people like me as if cleaning up vomit, it's nothing serious to kill two soldiers and set up a military officer."

Under the laughter and wolf-like eyes of Major Franca, Zhang Tie saw an oppressed ambition, madness, and a terrifying man.

"That is to say, from the beginning, those spies of the Sun Dynasty had been under your monitoring."

"Hehe, smart!" Major Franca rubbed his thumb and his third

finger, making a crispy sound, before pointed at those corpses lying on the ground. "Soon after coming to Blapei, I had clear trace of these mice and scumbags. Previously, I was just waiting for them to cause enough damage before catching them to satisfy the superior who had dispatched me to Blapei.

"These mice and scumbags were very far-sighted as they caught a disabled first lieutenant of the logistics department to force you to bring them into the logistics base of Blapei to cause great damage there. This was really a great idea. I actually hoped they would succeed there; sadly, against my expectations, you killed them all and completely destroyed my plan. Nevertheless, this was also a good thing as I found something more valuable from you!"

Major Franca licked his lips as he greedily stared at Zhang Tie.

"What do you want from me?" Zhang Tie asked icily.

"Not get, but trade!" Major Franca said, full of confidence. "As long as you tell me your secret, I will forget what happened here today. Nobody will have seen you here. You will continue to be a first lieutenant of the Iron-Horn Army and enjoy your life by making love with your mistress in Blapei and continue to enjoy your 'Woman's Excellence'."

Major Franca even told the name of a weapon that Zhang had Tie once used on battlefields.

"What secret?"

Zhang Tie's heart suddenly raced.

"Ho... ho... don't be nervous. I know you're very nervous. You've got too many secrets. For instance, how did you kill those people before they could react? How did you suddenly form Iron-Blood hidden strength? Why weren't you afraid of blue frost? How could you become a terrifying, powerful soldier from an average student in Blackhot City in only several months?" Major Franca then let out a sigh while his voice and eyes became tender. "Actually, I also want to be like you. If I can have your abilities, I can get rid of my life being regarded as vomit. Can you help me?"

Zhang Tie knew that it was useless to explain that he was struck by a lightning bolt any more. This man had set him up for the secret that could make him so powerful. Everything that happened today originated from this man's ambition and greed.

"What if I don't tell you?"

"Hehe, those people who sent me here would be interested in a young military officer from the Iron-Horn Army who would betray the Norman Empire!" Major Franca seriously looked at Zhang Tie. "I bet you don't know how the Order Review Committee and the secret police of the Norman Empire deal with traitors.

"You, your family members, even your friends will regret having come to this world. Even if you've formed the Iron-Blood Battle Qi, nobody will be able to save you. Even the Iron-Horn Army, Lin Changjiang, and the special protection tradition of the Battle God Church will not be able save you. Besides, you're just a trivial first lieutenant who has only formed the Iron-Blood Hidden

Strength..."

Zhang Tie lowered his head. It was very weird that he didn't feel infuriated at all. For some reason, hearing Major Franca's words, he only recalled the scene at school several months ago. That day he had been leisurely sitting under a tree. Then some guys walked in front of him and threw down some dining plates, ignoring whether he would refuse or not...

Sometimes life was like this. You leisurely sat under a tree and watched the sky when some bastards decided that you were easily bullied and threw some dining plates in front of you, letting you make a choice between humiliation and pain.

Today, that person who threw a pile of dirty dining plates in front of him became someone from the secret police of the Norman Empire, the silver-haired Major Franca.

The same choice was put in front of Zhang Tie.

Franca thought it was a choice; however, it was not a choice for Zhang Tie at all as the two paths were both dead.

Raising his head, Zhang Tie glanced at Major Franca. "Although you've talked much just now, only one sentence is right!"

"Which sentence?"

"You're really disgusting. It was really proper to send you here to

Blapei!" Zhang Tie calmly said.

Major Franca' face immediately turned blue...

"Have you made the decision? Do you know the outcome of refusing me at this moment..."

Major Franca fiercely gazed at Zhang Tie with his eyes needle-like. He wanted to continue...

But Zhang Tie smiled.

"Outcome? There's no outcome. You're just a small major, a small figure in the eyes of big figures. Perhaps I truly have some secrets, but who are you? You're not qualified to trade with me. Do you feel that it's your turn to be unrivaled across the Northern Border Army of the Norman Empire? Do you think that secret police could easily frame an officer of the Norman Empire who had won the Iron-Blood Medal by only talking?"

"Do you think to negotiate with me?" Major Franca asked, gazing at Zhang Tie as he revealed a scornful smile on his blue face, which also had a wisp of alertness mixed in it.

"There's no choice but I have another way to go!"

"Which way?"

"The bloody way!"

Zhang Tie pulled out his sword.

Chapter 250: The Bloody Way

Everyone's life was usually composed of accidents. Take the accident of Bilis setting him up for an instance, Zhang Tie had not imagined that he would encounter something like this today. After delicately arranging this trap, Major Franca had not imagined that Zhang Tie would dare and have the strength to fight back.

Previously, Franca had made a survey on Zhang Tie. He had made a lot of preparations to respond to Zhang Tie's ability that made fifteen people lose their strength to resist. However, what Major Franca had not imagined was that Zhang Tie had completely recovered.

Zhang Tie was attacking him not by poison, mysterious knowledge, but pure fighting skills.

The moment Zhang Tie started his attack, Major Franca's face slightly turned pale. Although with a pair of sharp eyes like that of a wolf, this major of secret police started to feel that what happened today was jumping away from his expectations and becoming uncontrollable.

According to his plan, Zhang Tie only had two choices: first, being compromised; second, being stubborn and getting caught. After arresting Zhang Tie, he would take him away from Blapei at the fastest speed to fix the fact that he had committed the crime. As long as Zhang Tie was in his hands, of course Franca had his way to make Zhang Tie obedient.

After all, Zhang Tie was just a 15-year old juvenile, a juvenile who was akin to a cripple. If not, why would those mice and scumbags of the Sun Dynasty target him?

Major Franca knew that Zhang Tie was setting free earthworms these days. He also knew his excuse for it. Although he found it weird, the excuse itself was reasonable. However, he had not imagined that Zhang Tie had completely recovered his combat effectiveness.

Besides, Zhang Tie even had been promoted to the preliminary recovery body as well as eaten two Iron-Body Fruits and one Leakless Fruit. At this moment, Zhang Tie not only had completely recovered his combat effectiveness, but his performance would have definitely surpass that of when he was in the Iron-Blood Camp.

Major Franca was more than two meters away from Zhang Tie, a billiard table between the two of them. The moment Zhang Tie popped out his red-snake sword, the sharp sword qi and the sword's tip had already went past the over two meter space like a long spear and rushed towards Major Franca's throat.

Now that he had launched the attack, Zhang Tie would never keep him alive. He would never care about his status, even being part of the secret police. Like on a battlefield, he would definitely be cold-blooded and waste no time...

'If I'm alive, I will kill you...'

However, as a major of the secret police, Franca was definitely not average. Having long been alert, he also responded instantly. Almost the moment he saw the sword qi, he had already moved back by tilting his body backwards.

Of course the red-snake sword moved faster than him. When Major Franca felt a sharp qi attacking his throat, he had no other choice but to incline his head to one side.

A wisp of silver hair fell off at once.

Major Franca's face immediately turned pale. If he had moved slower just now, he would have been struck through his throat just now.

Zhang Tie's combat effectiveness was really terrifying.

However, in that split second, Major Franca had already taken out his weapon, a pair of steel claws.

Major Franca caught the thin sword blade of the red-snake sword with his steel claw. However, the moment he caught it, he felt like having caught a twisting and smooth neck of a snake.

It bounced towards him and Major Franca then caught it with another steel claw. At the same time, the super long sword's body twisted towards him too. With no more hands, Major Franca could only let go and move back once again. This time the sword blade touched his face when he felt a cold breeze pass his face.

When he moved about five meters away from Zhang Tie, Major Franca felt wetness on his face. He touched it and found a finger-long wound cut on his face. In a split second, his sharp eyes became bloody.

The red gloves then rushed in like a tide once again.

"Kill him!"

Major Franca pointed at Zhang Tie as he delivered his order without any hesitation. By then, he clearly knew that if he could not kill Zhang Tie here and now, he would rush out. And if that happened, the whole thing would be totally out of his control.

From the moment Zhang Tie started to attack, Major Franca had a bad feeling. Zhang Tie's last words were very right. Whether it was in the Northern Border Army or in the Norman Empire, although sometimes he might have advantages, it was never his turn to be number one. Zhang Tie was a military officer while he was part of the secret police. If the secret police wanted to frame a military officer who had won the Iron-Blood Medal as traitor, unless he was caught in the scene...

Seeing Major Franca only suffering from a small wound facing his two fatal moves, Zhang Tie felt a bit pitiful as those moves were what he had comprehended after practicing the red-snake sword these days. The first fatal move was a sword thrust while the second one was a three-section attack. They were both indefensible fatal moves.

In a split second, Zhang Tie understood that Major Franca's real strength was definitely above his own. As his best moves could only cause small wounds on him, it wouldn't be that easy to wound him again.

Seeing the two of them starting to fight, the other red gloves rushed in once again with the front ones holding a pitch-black cylinder. After hearing Major Franca's order, one of the red gloves standing at the front immediately put the cylinder facing Zhang Tie.

After a loud "boom", there was a huge net blown out towards Zhang Tie.

'Dammit!'

It was Zhang Tie's turn to show surprise. With a roll, he moved beneath a billiard table. Almost at the same time, the huge net covered the place where Zhang Tie had been standing before while some steel nails on the net's sides fixed to the ground at once...

Before the other people could shoot out their nets, the red gloves's eyes popped out as a 300-400 kg billiard table was lifted from the ground and flying towards them like Mountain Tai. Hurriedly they avoided it.

Soon after that Zhang Tie jumped out from behind the billiard table. With a sound of "chiliu", the sword qi of red-snake sword radiated from his hand and immediately flew through the narrow

space like a spiritual snake...

Almost at the same time, some red gloves' heads flew away, fresh blood spurting out one meter high. In the meantime, Zhang Tie rushed towards the door.

"Stop him..." Major Franca shouted loudly while rushing towards him.

Hearing the order, some more red gloves surged towards Zhang Tie. However, before their weapons touched his shadow, the three meter long red-snake sword's blade slid through their bodies and hands. Almost at the same time, the red gloves released miserable screams; two more hands were now lying on the ground and several red gloves whose wounds were now longer than one meter in total were rolling on the floor.

When Zhang Tie was about to rush out through the door, another batch of red gloves rushed in. In a blink of an eye, the "s-shaped" snake-like sword qi swam across the narrow passageway, and it immediately became a bloody lane.

At this time, Major Franca rushed close to Zhang Tie.

After withdrawing the sword qi, the red-snake sword turned into a short sword at once. The moment Zhang Tie clashed his short sword with Major Franca's weird steel claw, he felt a weird yet familiar strength being passed from his red-snake sword into his arm. In a split second, Zhang Tie's hand was wounded.

It seemed like Iron-Blood hidden strength, yet it contained greater strength than Iron-Blood hidden strength as it had a feminine sense and was more aggressive.

'Iron-Blood invincible strength', a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

Seeing Zhang Tie's shocked expression, Major Franca sneered. "Did you think that only those guys of the Iron-Blood Camp can use Iron-Blood Fist Skill?"

Saying this, Major Franca didn't stop attacking and the two people experienced two rounds of fighting in a split second. Finally, Major Franca's steel claws broke through Zhang Tie's defense and he was punched by Major Franca and flew back in the air. Spurting out a mouth of fresh blood on his way, Zhang Tie was wounded once again.

'Dammit, this guy has also practiced the Iron-Blood Fist Skill. He even has formed Iron-Blood invincible strength. Perhaps this guy failed to form the Iron-Blood Battle Qi and turned to practice other battle qi. Still, he is still a powerful opponent. What's worse is that this guy is already LV 8, which makes him overwhelming...'

Zhang Tie knew that although the other red gloves might not defeat him, he could not defeat major Franca at this moment at least, especially in this narrow space where he could not use the full power of his strong points.

The moment Zhang Tie fell to the ground, he grabbed a billiard

table from his side and threw it towards major Franca. Nevertheless, before the billiard table made of granite and covered with a faded green cloth reached Major Franca, it was punched to pieces.

Still, Zhang Tie had already won the precious time to escape.

He quickly moved back and forcefully slashed an "X-shaped" mark deep in the wall behind him using his red-snake sword. After that, Zhang Tie used his full strength to fiercely hit the wall, like how he practiced the "Bear Back Iron Body Skill".

As Major Franca's howled and his expression shifted to fury, Zhang Tie broke through the wall.

The rest of the secret police who were surrounding this beer hotel seemed to not have imagined that someone might break outside through the wall.

When Zhang Tie broke out, the nearest red glove was two meters away from him. By the time he turned his head, Zhang Tie had already rushed forward like a mad tiger. Before he even arrived in front of him and the rest of the secret police outside, the sword qi of his red-snake sword had reached more than ten people. In a blink of an eye, over ten heads were sent flying in the air. As a result, the red gloves were greatly weakened.

The highest combat effectiveness of these common secret police was merely equal to the common soldiers of the Brilliant Feathers. How could they hold back Zhang Tie who had been driven mad? In

a split second, he had already broken the first encirclement.

Although the secret police standing at higher points shot a round of bolts towards him from their crossbows, Zhang Tie caught a man nearby and used him as a shield. Then before the second round of bolts could be shot and Major Franca rushed out of the beer hotel, Zhang tie was more than twenty meters away.

When he left, Zhang Tie saw Bilis's corpse lying on the ground outside the beer hotel and swore inside, 'You idiot, did you think you could survive when you've got yourself involved in framing a military officer of the Norman Empire?'

"Catch up with him!"

All the secret police ran after Zhang Tie together with Major Franca, who was gritting his teeth.

Not until then did Major Franca realize that he had forgotten one of the most important factors about Zhang Tie - his running speed. Although Major Franca obviously ran faster than most of the secret police, Zhang Tie's running speed was amazing. Even though he had been wounded, the distance between Major Franca and him was still becoming greater.

However, this was not what Major Franca was most concerned about, what worried him most happened when Zhang Tie ran several hundreds of meters and came to the area of downtown.

He didn't run towards the less populated place; instead, he ran towards the most populated place.

There were many people in the area who were celebrating the beer carnival. At this time, most folk had already ignited their torches. Because the Beer Queen of this year had been selected, when the dusk arrived, the grand carnival would start. Many people were waiting for the passing of the Beer Queen's festooned vehicle.

"Secret police Major Franca is a traitor; he killed the two missing soldiers of No.21 Division and framed a military officer of the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army..."

...

"Secret police Major Franca is a traitor; he killed the two missing soldiers of No. 21 Division and framed a military officer of the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army..."

...

"Secret police Major Franca is a traitor; he killed the two missing soldiers of No. 21 Division and framed a military officer of the logistics department of the Iron-Horn Army..."

Zhang Tie kept running as he shouted loudly like a super great trumpet which could be heard by everybody on the avenue. Major Franca who was closely chasing after him was so infuriated that he

almost spurted a mouthful of blood. This method was definitely more lethal than the slash on his face. At this moment, even though he could kill Zhang Tie at once, after those words had been shouted out, it would be impossible for the Iron-Horn Army not to make any response to this event.

When the people in the avenue heard Zhang Tie's appalling words, they all became stunned. But before they could make any response, a great amount of secret police with weapons in hand followed Major Franca out and the whole avenue became in chaos.

...

Watching Zhang Tie disappearing in the flurried crowd, Major Franca immediately stopped, his face turning extremely pale and ugly-looking. This had been absolutely out of his expectations.

At this moment, not only Major Franca, even the other secret police following him had twisted expressions. They knew what the outcome was. What they did was now known by the public.

Nobody noticed that Major Franca's fingers couldn't help but tremble slightly.

A person behind him forcefully swallowed his saliva as he lowered his voice to ask., "Major Franca..."

Major Franca gritted his teeth. "Contact the headquarters right away. When we carried out the mission in Blapei, we found First

Lieutenant Zhang Tie of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army to be a traitor. After being revealed, he refused to be arrested by our forces. He even killed officers of the secret police and incited the Iron-Horn Army in Blapei to hate the secret police of the Norman Empire by spreading rumors.

"Now, Zhang Tie is escaping. I'll request the headquarters to deliver the class A order for arresting Zhang Tie. As Blapei is in extreme danger, in case of unnecessary conflict with the local soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army, we have to leave here right now!"

...

One hour later, in the minister's office of the headquarters of the Logistics Department of the Iron-Horn Army in Blapei, General Goethe smacked the desk, causing a loud sound in the office.

"Where are those bastards? Where's Major Franca? Where are they?"

The news made General Goethe so infuriated that his face turned red and his mustache rose.

"When Colonel Bach of No. 21 Division received the news and took soldiers to the airship base to stop the secret police from leaving, Major Franca had already flown away from Blapei along with the other secret police, giving a feeling as if they were escaping. Now, the soldiers of No. 21 Division are very furious..."

"Where's that first lieutenant?"

"We've not found First Lieutenant Zhang Tie. Based on the witnesses, he might have been wounded. At that moment, he was being chased by the secret police. It was said that he was a traitor."

"Nonsense! Could an officer who has been granted an Iron-Blood Medal be a traitor? Go fetch First Lieutenant Zhang Tie right now. Ask him to explain it. Meanwhile, contact the headquarters to warn the airship troop of the Iron-Horn Army to intercept those bastards in the air. I want them all under arrest and interrogated one by one. If those bastards truly dared to do this in Blapei, I will peel off their skin this time!"

"Yes sir!"

...

This night, it was not peaceful in Blapei. Through the whole night, Zhang Tie was not found, but Major Franca's airship was found 190 km away from Blapei in a valley in the northeast. It had been heavily destroyed with all the secret police having died except for Major Franca. According to the investigation, before the airship crashed, all the victims had been poisoned...

On the same day, in Nordinburg, the capital of Norman Empire's northern border, two orders for arrest were delivered at the same time: one was from the Northern Border Army of the Norman Empire; the other was from the Northern Border Order Review Committee of the Norman Empire.

The image of Major Franca appeared on the first order for arrest while the image of First Lieutenant Zhang Tie appeared on the second order for arrest. They were wanted at the same time.

Coincidentally, the crimes on the two orders for arrest were also the same - murder! One murdered the two missing soldiers of the Norman Empire and escaped while the other murdered the secret police of the Norman Empire and escaped. However, the charge of traitor didn't appear on either order for arrest.

Although big figures quarreled in Nordinburg, they made compromises too...

On the same day, a fish-like silver airship arrived at Blapei and hovered in the air for two days before silently leaving.

Chapter 251: Junkmen In The War Zone

It was winter. Forgue town was covered by dense fog before the sunrise for quite a long time due to being close to a river.

Zhang Tie woke up after another long sleep in the morning to find that all the wounds caused by Major Franca when he escaped Blapei had completely recovered. Because of the double recovery effect of his preliminary recovery body, although he felt a bit uncomfortable when he went to bed last night, this morning, he felt that his body was as spry as usual.

For the first time, Zhang Tie realized that his preliminary recovery body was extremely great.

It was the fourth day since Zhang Tie left Blapei. Each morning, this small town called Forgue would be covered by a dense fog. It was located over 120 km to the south of Blapei and was part of the Kalur war zone where the Iron-Horn Army fought the Brilliant Feathers Army.

One fourth of the buildings in the small town had been destroyed in the war. Many places revealed marks of being charred by white phosphorous gel bombs. Although the remaining three fourths of the buildings were well preserved, all the town's residents had long escaped, leaving nobody at all. It was as desolate as a ghost town now.

It then became a proper place for Zhang Tie to recover.

Today, a great amount of soldiers of the Iron-Horn Army were looking for Zhang Tie all across Blapei, but nobody could imagine that at that night, Zhang Tie had kept running for three hours and had hidden himself in the barren mountains and hills of Kalur war zone.

On the second day, having slightly recovered, Zhang Tie found the small empty town on the riverside. He then found a house there and settled down before taking a good rest to recover like a wild wolf.

In four days, only four days, the wounds caused by Major Franca had completely disappeared.

During these days, Zhang Tie didn't have any contact with the outside, so of course he didn't know what had happened. He could never imagine that the day after he left Blapei, the airship from Huaiyuan Palace of Zhang clan had arrived at Blapei. Nor could he guess that on the same day, Major Franca, who had set him up became a wanted man by the military party of the Norman Empire and became a criminal like Zhang Tie.

From the moment he pulled out his sword in the beer hotel, Zhang Tie had prepared for this situation. Back then, he could choose only one thing between being slaughtered and slaughtering others. Unfortunately, the people after him were neither average guys nor soldiers of the Sun Dynasty whose death could help him gain an Iron-Blood Medal. They were from the most powerful agency in the Norman Empire and worked as law enforcers.

Although there were always numerous law enforcers in

humanity's history, even though law enforcers themselves were heinous criminals and scumbags, when something like this happened to him, Zhang Tie finally started to understand why those heroes were forced to be bandits on Liangshan Mountain[1].

Additionally, even if he was an officer of the Norman Empire, he was still not able to explain himself to others. This event originated from the greed of someone who had discovered a bit of his secret. Unless he revealed the secret of the Castle of Black Iron to the public, he could not explain it at all.

So he could only escape as a murderer. The only other thing he could do before escaping was to muddle the waters.

If the Iron-Horn Army was not that easily bullied, they would ensure the safety of his family members in Blackhot City before the secret police caught him and confirmed that he was a traitor. If he was safe, his family members would be safe. If his secret was not revealed to the public, his family members would be safe. That was why Zhang Tie decided to fight the secret police to the end in the beer hotel. He knew that besides himself, anyone who learned of or got his Castle of Black Iron might immediately kill his family members in case of potential dangers.

These couple of days, as he didn't know what happened outside, Zhang Tie was very concerned about the safety of his family members in Blackhot City.

Although being in recovery these days, Zhang Tie was always worried about his family members. The only thing that comforted him was that he gained a new Fruit of Brilliance these days.

Although not all of the dozens of secret police killed by him were bad guys as they were just following orders, there were truly some big scumbags among them who undoubtedly were the best nourishment for the Fruit of Brilliance.

After eating the new Fruit of Brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy increased by 4 points. Compared to before, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had reached about 62-63 now.

If such a speed was revealed to the public, it would definitely be amazed.

After another increase of his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie felt that his senses became even sharper than before as he could carry on four arithmetic operations on two abacuses in his mind at the same time in a faster and more flexible way.

...

Because he had completely recovered, Zhang Tie quickly took action after waking up. He was more alert this time. Before leaving that room he was in, he first accessed the Castle of Black Iron and changed his look and clothes inside.

Several minutes later, an average-looking 20-odd Chinese youth who had killed Samira stealthily flashed out of a deserted room in Forge town.

For Zhang Tie, the most urgent thing was to ask for news. After

that, he would find an opportunity to go back to Blackhot City and transfer his family members away in advance. They could not stay in the Norman Empire any more. He had to move his family members to a country predominated by Chinese in the southeast of Blackson Human Clan Corridor. He would have to transfer his family members to the Eastern Continent before the third holy war between humans and demons anyway.

Zhang Tie was carefully walking through the small town which was covered by a dense fog. It smelt refreshing, cold and clean. With each mouthful of breath, Zhang Tie would feel that his lungs and chest had been washed.

These days, according to his observations, besides two teams of scouts from both parties, no troop of above 100 people had been here. However, as this place was in the war zone, Zhang Tie had to be careful. Having experience in fighting here, he knew well that the safer the place you were in felt, the more dangerous it probably was because a great number of people might be hiding in a dark place, aiming at you with their crossbows. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't want to fight anyone for no reason any more.

But before he could walk out of the small town, a series of footsteps drifted over from up ahead. From the sounds, Zhang Tie judged that there were at least ten people. At the sight of an open door on the side, he flashed inside the room while pulling out his dagger at the same time.

Zhang Tie came to the kitchen of this deserted house and stood close to the window while listening and observing what was happening outside. The disordered footsteps sounded as if they

belonged to a group of escaping soldiers who were moving closer to him.

Because there was a small door in the kitchen connected to the courtyard of this house, Zhang Tie chose to hide here. In an emergency, he could avoid being surrounded and escape through that small door.

The kitchen was covered with dust while some millets and utensils like colanders were scattered on the ground.

The strangers soon arrived in front of this house in the dense fog. What amazed Zhang Tie was that they were not escaping soldiers but a group of figures with all sorts of luggage and sundries. They were not beggars, refugees, or roving bandits.

"Austa, Beane, you take someone to search this house. Gaer, Gerry, you take someone to search that house. Keep your eyes opened, don't miss good items. Many houses here belonged to rich lords from downtown who came to the mountains to hunt in the autumn. When they returned home, they would always leave some items that they felt not valuable, especially those in the kitchen and cellar. If someone finds food, we might get full this morning..."

After this order, a number of people poured into the houses on two sides of the road. Around seven to eight people rushed inside the house that Zhang Tie was hiding in. The moment they entered, they started to turn all the items over. After a short moment, the empty house looked if it had suffered from a plague of locusts, having been cleaned by those people.

"Ha, look what I've got? A silver-gilt candlestick..." someone started to happily shout in the parlor outside the kitchen.

"I bet the former owner of this house was a miser. Only those guys who were niggards yet pretended to be rich would buy this cheap fake item..."

"This item is worth at least 10 copper coins in Kalur, someone would like it..." The former voice still sounded happy. "At least we can change it for a loaf of brown bread!"

"You two, go check in the kitchen..." another voice said.

Hearing the gradually getting closer footsteps, Zhang Tie's heart raced and he put his dagger back, making two coughs on purpose in the kitchen...

The moment he coughed, the whole house became quiet.

Zhang Tie walked out of the kitchen and caught sight of seven people in the parlor who were glancing at the kitchen. When they saw Zhang Tie, they all let out a breath.

"Ha... You've got here earlier than we did, you're really brave, what did boss say..."

"The early birds get the worms!" A guy who was holding the

candlestick wove it in front of Zhang Tie with a pleased expression, "Sorry about this, although you came here first, I found it first, so it's mine!"

When this person talked, all the others guys clenched their fists, making the sounds of "gazhi, gazhi", At the same time, they cast fierce looks at Zhang Tie, seemingly indicating that if he dared to have any questions about who the candlestick covered with dust belonged to, they would never mind punching him and telling him what was 'strength in numbers'.

Chapter 252: Return To Kalur

In the afternoon, Zhang Tie followed the team of junkmen and entered Kalur City's control area.

It was a bit ironical that when Zhang Tie arrived at the Kalur war zone last time as a military officer of the Norman Empire, he hadn't even had a chance to enjoy the city's view before having to leave. This time, only after a short period, he came here again as a criminal.

What Zhang Tie saw along the road from the deserted Forge town to the actual control area of Kalur brought him a more concrete sense of the war between the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire.

The closer he got to Kalur City, the more serious the confrontations between the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire were. Judging from the bases, fortresses, and fortifications the two forces had built around Kalur, it was clear that this war which involved hundreds of thousands of soldiers was doomed to be a long lasting competition. Zhang Tie understood this current situation of the Kalur region based on the news he'd received from the junkmen and what he had seen and heard in the military,

Besides the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire, there was another party in the Kalur region that had a say about this war—Kalur, the city of machine, the manufacturing center of Andaman Alliance and the fat which brought about the war between the fierce tiger and the hungry wolf.

The reason that it could become a fat in the eyes of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire was that it was qualified and had the benefits to be a piece of fat. Compared to Blackhot City, an emerging city which only had a history of dozens of years, Kalur had over 200 years' history which meant a rich accumulation of resources in all aspects. Population, prosperity, manufacturing force, army establishment, actual power and control area of this city all ranked number one in the Andaman Alliance.

Even now Kalur still had a regular army of almost 80,000 soldiers plus the tall city wall and the terrifying city-defense weapons that the city had carefully managed the past 200 years. Such a force was capable of determining the result of this war.

The moment Zhang Tie came to the actual control area of Kalur City, he was shocked by the prosperity here. He even failed to see the city wall within 10-odd km. His eyes were blocked by the huge chimneys that were as dense as woods.

Those chimneys originated from the plants in the controlled area which had already formed a wide industrial zone. Many plants were even connected by pathways hanging up in the air and various tunnels of different sizes. Under the winter sunlight, the black smoke erupting from the chimneys almost dyed the whole sky dark gray. The plants were still producing various items, revealing no sign of depression at all.

Compared to the plants here, the ones in Blackhot City, besides them being on scale, they were as simple and crude as rustic workshops of country moneybags.

What Zhang Tie was seeing right now was just a corner of the actual control area as he was standing in the north.

A single smoking chimney reminded people of pollution while hundreds of tall, smoking chimneys made people feel trivial.

Here, Zhang Tie felt the power of industrial development.

Although people inside those plants were still busy working, outside the plants, hundreds of thousands of refugees poured in from the surrounding areas because of war, causing the whole area to become a bit chaotic.

Walking through the streets, Zhang Tie could see shabby and exhausted refugees queuing up outside plant recruitment points while more men and women were raising boards on the roadside on which were written: 'I'm a tailor; I want to work for food.'

In relatively vacant places on the roadside, refugees had built their tents. Kids' cries drifted over from the insides of many tents.

On the relatively better and cleaner wall next to the roadside were plastered various paper tapes and photos seeking for relatives.

Since this was Zhang Tie's first time being here, he didn't want to attract attention to himself and so insisted in seeing more and speaking less. He kept his head lowered and carried his items while following the other junkmen. Not until the team arrived at the

control area of Kalur City did head Fred let out a breath and put back his blue-green flag.

On the way here, Zhang Tie heard many legends. In the past months, many junkmen had not come back after entering the war zone.

There were junkmen who truly made a fortune by discovering some items that had not been taken away by others in some deserted towns or villages. Some even picked up some valuable booty such as excellent weapons or gold coins from corpses in the fields of battle where the two armies had clashed. And some unlucky guys also lost their lives.

It might be very exciting to search for forgotten treasures in the deserted villages and towns surrounding Kalur City, but this was at the risk of one's life. This profession born from war was really akin to licking blood from the blade of a saber for commoners.

...

"Have you seen my daughter? My daughter is Selena. Here's her photo. She said that she was going to school in the morning, but she still hasn't come back yet..."

...

"Have you seen my daughter? My daughter is Selena. Here's her photo. She said that she was going to school in the morning, but

she still hasn't come back yet..."

On the roadside, a 50-odd woman was holding a photo of a girl and pulled at every passer-by to ask the same question. Although she was asking, her eyes were as hollow as if she'd already lost her soul.

Zhang Tie followed the other junkmen and silently passed her.

"This woman is done for. She comes from the south. It's better in the north. It's said that in some southern places, those beasts of the Sun Dynasty would rape every woman they see, aging from small girls to grandmas. Any men who dare to resist would lose their heads. Many of them would even be caught to do labor works, repair roads, and carry items..."

Walking beside Zhang Tie, Gerry let out a sigh. "The tide of refugees coming to Kalur started from the south, but hearing what was happening in the south, the northern people also escaped. They all wanted to escape to Kalur for protection. However, they did not know that with the increasing number of refugees pouring in here, nobody would live well..."

Zhang Tie became silent as he was shocked inside. This was the true, cruel side of war. War would cause the greatest harm to commoners. The war between two countries where hundreds of thousands of soldiers fought had caused such a great disaster, how miserable would it be if the third holy war between humans and demons broke out?

...

After walking through the control area of Kalur for less than 20 minutes, Zhang Tie arrived at the junkmen's base. It was inside a large landfill behind the plant district. It was covered with deserted black coal gangue, so Zhang Tie could not tolerate the environment here.

More than one hundred years' wastes like coal gangue were piled up here, so one could imagine the scene here.

In this landfill of coal gangue, there were thousands of tents. At least 10,000-20,000 people lived here. When Zhang Tie followed the team here, he still saw many steam-based trucks that carried coal gangue and poured it inside this place.

The moment the trucks arrived, a great number of kids started running after them. They didn't care about the possible dangers at all. When the coal gangue with low combustion efficiency was poured out, the kids then rushed forward with small kegs and pack baskets and started to dig for the little coal in this coal gangue that could still be used.

The whole refugee camp was covered with dust due to the vehicles and running kids. All of the refugees were huddling together, men, women, old, and young, like ingredients in a pot of porridge.

Soon after they entered the tent area, a 60-odd man came toward them. "Fred, what did you bring this time..."

"So... We went to Forgue and brought back some tableware and something to live through the winter. Quote us a proper price..."

"Something to live through the winter? Many people don't even know how to live through this!" After appraising the items on their backs, the 60-odd man nodded. "Follow me..."

Zhang Tie also followed the others and arrived in front of the old man's tent. He was only carrying several dirty quilts that he had fetched in Forgue town. Besides, he was wearing a half new wool-like coat which didn't seem to match his image well, making him look like a refugee. Seeing him walking with the team, that old man only cast a glance at him before moved his eyes away.

The tent was very large, filled with many items while strong hatchet men were patrolling around. This seemed like a hub of this tent area.

Many people were standing in front of a notice board on the roadside next to this tent. When Zhang Tie passed by that notice board, he saw images of him and Major Franca. They were two orders for arrest under which there were some other orders for arrest. However, because the bonus of the two were the highest-3000 gold coins, they were put on the top.

With just one glance, Zhang Tie memorized the contents on the orders for arrest in his mind.

His heart raced. It was not too shocking to see orders for arrest in

the refugee camp as it was close to the Norman Empire; this was just a slum that had not been destroyed by war. What made Zhang Tie really confused though was that Major Franca was wanted by the Northern Border Army while he was wanted by the Orders Review Committee.

This was good news for Zhang Tie. At the sight of this, he recovered his composure and no longer worried about his family members any more. His family members would be protected by the Northern Border Army and would never have to suffer from any danger from the secret police. If not, the Northern Border Army and the Iron-Horn Army would be smacked on their faces.

As Zhang Tie's current age and looks were both far different from that image on the arrest order, nobody guessed that one of the junkmen was the guy on the poster worth 3000 gold coins.

...

Zhang Tie sold the items that he brought from Forge town for 4 silver coins and 37 copper coins.

Each one in the team had to pay a tribute. According to the rule, every person should submit 30% of their income as the protection fee. After submitting 30% of his income, Zhang Tie won a more genial look from Fred.

"How about that? You are brave enough. How about joining us. We can work together!" Fred invited him with in an enthusiastic voice that promised 'great undertakings together'...

...

Of course Zhang Tie didn't accept this "promising profession". With the excuse that he wanted to find stable work in the plant, he refused Fred's "invitation". After that, he touched the silver and copper coins in his pocket and left the refugee camp.

Although the secret police's power had not reached Kalur City yet, it didn't mean that he was safe now. Many people would risk their lives here for 3000 gold coins. Generous rewards birthed heroism. If he was caught here, the people could definitely transfer him out of Kalur's war zone. Even the huge airship of the Sun Dynasty could arrive here, let alone a person getting transferred only over 100 km away.

When he was walking through the streets, he kept thinking about that. Even if he was not wanted by the army of the Norman Empire, he could not go back to the troop either. He could not explain the conflict between him and the secret police. Such a great event could never be covered by saying he was struck by a lightning bolt. Then how could he go back to Blackhot City and contact his family members?

Zhang Tie kept walking as he thought.

He did not know for how long he walked. When a building appeared in his vision, he was suddenly shocked.

On the front door of that building was a relief of a mighty four-

winged golden roc...

Yes, Golden Roc Bank!

Recalling the services that the Golden Roc Bank in Blackhot City provided, Zhang Tie's eyes brightened up...

Chapter 253: Shocking News

Identical to what he had seen in the Golden Roc Bank in Blackhot City, when Zhang Tie went inside this one, he also saw many people waiting in the rest zone. The bank guaranteed all the guests' privacy by providing services for each guest in a private room.

The number of people waiting in the rest zone was at least 5-6 times higher than in Blackhot City.

When he passed by the rest zone, Zhang Tie heard a male and a female whispering in the rest zone.

"Darling, will we leave Kalur this time?"

"We will, don't worry, all of our properties and businesses in Angoula have been disposed of, we will move to a more peaceful place this time. We will go to a Chinese country first before moving to the Eastern Continent!"

"Do we have to leave? Our kids are only four years old, I'm afraid that they won't be able to adapt to the outside environment! This long-distance migration would take us a long time..."

"Although I don't know the reason, I know that after this war, the top clans in Angoula who are richer and smarter than us and can see through the situation more clearly are preparing to move their families and businesses. Their family members have been learning Chinese for a while now.

"Everybody sees the Eastern Continent as the ultimate target of this movement. Why would we stay in Angoula? Small fish like us have to follow big fish to avoid dangerous torrents. Additionally, sometimes, if we know the direction, we can even swim faster than them! This is our advantage. We have to take good advantage of it!"

"No wonder you wanted our kids to learn Chinese..."

"To prepare for the movement in the future, you should learn it too..."

Due to them being close by, what the couple from Angoula said was all heard by Zhang Tie, shocking him greatly. Angoula was also a city of the Andaman Alliance and was added to the map of the Norman Empire. If some of the top clans in Angoula were preparing to transfer their family members and wealth, they must have felt something. Based on their deep background and social relationships, they might have smelt the upcoming holy war between humans and demons.

It was definitely possible. After all, there were many smart men in the world. If Donder and the big figures who had launched this war knew it, then others might also know or could speculate it. Before the catastrophe, able men would always try their best to stay in the safest place just like how people used to hide in fortresses and cities with tall walls before wars broke out.

Since the Eastern Continent was very safe, it became everyone's first choice. Donder had also urged Zhang Tie to move to the

Eastern Continent as soon as possible. Perhaps even clans like Gregory clan from Blackhot City were also preparing to move. If this holy war would last another 100 years, nobody could know whether the Blackson Human Clan Corridor could survive or not.

Under the jealous eyes of a great amount of people, Zhang Tie, who was dressed as shabby as other refugees, enjoyed the privilege of the Chinese clan once again. He walked directly to the entrance of a golden room, which was set exclusively for Chinese clan, where he was respectfully invited into the room by a 30-odd man in glasses.

The room was similar to the one he'd seen in Blackhot City. It was simple yet delicately designed. After closing the door, the 30-odd man came to the sofa in the room and sat before Zhang Tie.

"Sir, what can I do for you?"

Before opening his mouth, Zhang Tie took a deep breath. Although it would arise the suspicion of the bank staff about his status, Zhang Tie didn't think that the bank which had enjoyed a great reputation among Chinese and had almost 1000 years' history would betray him for only 3000 gold coins. Even Donder the scumbag had praised the Golden Roc Bank for its reliability.

"I need to contact my family members that are far away and gain some information. I remember that you can provide this information for me!"

The 30-odd man then took a deep look at Zhang Tie. "Our bank

truly provides such services. If the city where your family members are in have a branch of the Golden Roc Bank, we can start remote communications to help you get in contact with your family members. If there's no branch of the Golden Roc Bank over there, as long as you can provide us the address, we can also transfer your message to them. Additionally, we also provide various information. Based on the situation, the prices for the two services also change, it might be a bit more expensive than other channels outside. Are you sure you require these services?"

"I'm sure!"

In this age, the remote communications was akin to the wireless telegraph before the catastrophe. However, compared to the wireless telegraph, remote communications were carried out by a pair of twin mirror crystals. Its service fee was calculated by words. It was said that it could be used to transfer codes in terms of long and short signals. After deciphering the codes, people would get the message.

It was almost the same as the wireless telegraph before the catastrophe and could not be popularized at all due to its limits, so people who used this communication means were not average. They were all groups with special powers and background. Only division-level troops in the Iron-Horn Army were qualified to contact their superiors by this crystal remote equipment.

"Well then, please show me the certificate of your payment capacity. The basic amount is 1000 gold coins. After ensuring that you have the capacity to pay, we will provide you with the services!"

Because Zhang Tie had only taken some gold coins when he escaped that day, he didn't have much money or gold checks now. Without any hesitation, he right away took off the Ring of Energy from his finger and put it into the 30-odd man's hand.

"This item should be qualified as the certificate for my payment capacity!"

The man didn't cast any contemptuous look when seeing the average looking ring; instead, he carefully put the ring into a tray covered with flannelette.

"Wait a moment, please, we need to authenticate it!"

Zhang Tie nodded. That man then carried the tray and left the service room through another door.

Zhang Tie patiently waited on the sofa. It would be funny if that rune equipment which even Colonel Reinhardt didn't have was not worth 1000 gold coins. Zhang Tie estimated that this item should not be worth less than 5000 gold coins that Gregory clan had compensated him with.

Several minutes later, another door of the service room was pushed open. This time, it was not that 30-odd man, but a 60-odd man who had a pair of extremely bright eyes. The old man was carrying the tray on which peacefully lay Zhang Tie's ring of energy.

"Young man, can you tell me where you got this ring?"

"Is there any problem with it?"

Zhang Tie slightly frowned.

"There's no problem with this secret-silver ring. It's clean. I'm just curious. It doesn't matter if you don't want to tell me as it won't influence the Golden Roc Bank's services for you!"

The old man smiled as he spoke genially.

'Secret-silver?' Zhang Tie's heart pounded. Not until then did he know that the material of this ring which was heavier than gold was called secret-silver. He had never heard about this material before.

"It's a trophy that I collected from a military officer of the Sun Dynasty on a battlefield!" Zhang Tie honestly replied.

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the old man nodded. After that, he put the tray in front of Zhang Tie and let him check whether the ring was complete as he sat down opposite.

"You want to contact your family members and want to inquire about something here?"

"Yes!"

"What's the address of your family members and the name of contact?"

Zhang Tie then told him the his home's address and his dad's name. After saying this, he saw that the old man sitting opposite him instantly looked weird. The old man then glanced over Zhang Tie with a weird expression. Finally, he looked like he was ascertained something in his mind.

"You are... Zhang Tie?"

'F*ck!'

The moment the old man opened his mouth, Zhang Tie was so amazed that he directly sprung up from the sofa. How could this man know his name when he told him his home address and his dad's name?

Although Zhang Tie was prepared to expose his status before entering, he had not imagined that his status would be identified before he had even contacted his family members.

'How could that be? Is the old man a humanoid difference machine that manages population data? How could he be that sharp...'

"Don't be that amazed, I could guess your status not only due

from the address of your home and your father's name or that you're famous now but also because your home is well known across Blackhot City. As the information manager of the bank, of course I know a lot about the recent big events in Blackhot City and Blapei. Even many average people would know it, so how could I not know!"

The old man smiled as he tried to soothe Zhang Tie's tension.

Chapter 254: Shocking News II

"Big events?" Zhang Tie's face turned pale. "Has something big happened at my home?"

"Yea, your home truly had a big event which shocked the whole Blackhot City!"

"Could it be the secret police..."

Zhang Tie was drenched in sweat when he thought of this possibility.

"No, it has nothing to do with the secret police. What surprised people was that your family members are descendants of the Huaiyuan Palace. Several days ago, someone from Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace came to Blackhot City by an airship and carried away your family members!"

Zhang Tie felt as if he was struck by a lightning bolt, leaving him dumbfounded. What he had not imagined was that his family members were descendants of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

His dad and mom had never mentioned it before. How could they suddenly have so many relatives? It sounded so great. The clan which could directly fly to Blackhot City from Jinyun Country by airship was definitely not average.

But what was weird was that his dad and mom had not

mentioned it to him since he was born. Zhang Tie wondered what was the real reason for it.

After learning that his family members had been safely carried away by Zhang clan, Zhang Tie was really surprised. The greatest concern that was held in his heart these days finally fell down. He felt relaxed and comfortable all over as if he had ignited another burning point.

Zhang Tie, he would not complain no matter how hard and how numerous hardships he had to experience as long as his family members were safe and sound. Being a member of Zhang clan, of course it was 1000 times better than staying in Blackhot City. Previously, Zhang Tie had been racking his mind how to transfer his family members away. Now, all the problems were solved.

The old man kept observing Zhang Tie's face. Once he heard the news, Zhang Tie's expression shifted and changed, just like a big dye vat. When his face finally recovered its composure, the old man told him the other message.

"On the second day of the beer festival, the airship of Huaiyuan Palace was seen in Blapei. They planned to pick you up too, but you were a wanted criminal at the time and nobody knew where you were hiding. Your family members and the people of Huaiyuan Palace stayed for two days but found no clues whatsoever. Finally, they had to leave. Based on the speed of the airship, they might reach Jinyun Country in one week!"

'It turns out that my family members looked for me! They must be very worried after learning that I'm wanted.'

Zhang Tie became a bit worried again.

"Can the Golden Roc Bank contact my family members now?"

"No! At least not now" The old man shook his head. "There are branches of Golden Roc Bank in the territory of Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace. If you want to contact your family members, we can first send the news to Jinyun Country and tell them to pay attention to the news of your family members. When your family members land there, we can then send your message to them!"

"Fine, that's great!" Zhang Tie immediately made a decision. "Please tell my family members that I'm fine; I will soon go to them. They shouldn't worry about me!"

The old man smiled as he drew out a standard form from a drawer on a side of the desk. "For long-distance remote communications, you should pay by words, including the punctuation. Write down what you want to say. We will pass all the content that you write to your family members!"

Seeing the standard form, Zhang Tie revealed a bashful smile. He then picked up a pen and wrote down the names of his dad, his mom, and his elder brother in the top three columns of contact people. After a thinking for a while, he scribbled down the following lines:

—Dad, mom, elder brother, and elder sister-in-law, I'm fine; don't worry about me. I know that you've been taken away by

Huaiyuan Palace's airship. Especially mom, don't worry about me. Your son is safe and sound, haven't even lost a hair. I can eat and jump as usual. Elder brother, remember to look after our parents well. If there's any need, what I've told to Donder could be your final reliance. They should know its value. Elder sister-in-law is going to deliver a baby, watch for her body. No need to concern yourself about me, I will come back as soon as possible!

After writing those words, Zhang Tie took another careful look at it to ensure that the message contained all that he wanted to express. He then gave the paper to the old man.

"Hmm, I will have a look. Since you want to send this message to your family members and let our staff pay attention to their whereabouts, it will cost you 36 gold coins!"

"No problem!"

This amount was equal to his dad's three years' salary in the past. If it were before, Zhang Tie would definitely be scared by this figure. But now, although being high, it was still within his capacity. As long as he could relieve his parents' concern, everything he did was worth it.

Such long-distance remote communications tool was really not affordable to average people. Zhang Tie remembered the advanced level of human communications before the catastrophe when human beings had network technologies that he had read of in books in the private library. He then started to sigh inside. If it were sent before the catastrophe, such a message might be worth less than 1/10 of the price of a steamed bun. But times had changed.

"What other problems do you have?" the old man asked Zhang Tie.

"I want to know why Major Franca is wanted."

The old man then told him how the Iron-Horn Army intercepted the airship of Major Franca on the day of the beer festival and discovered that he was missing." The Northern Border Army of the Norman Empire firmly believe that Major Franca and his subordinates are related to the two missing soldiers of the No. 21 Division, so they delivered the order for arrest!"

'Vicious, really vicious!' This was Zhang Tie's comment inside on Major Franca when he heard that the secret police who had followed him were poisoned to death. 'That guy must've known that if he was intercepted by the Norman-Horn Army's airship, what awaited him would definitely be death. His subordinates were part of what he had done in Blapei, and under the harsh interrogation of the troop even an iron man would tell the truth, let alone those secret police!'

Additionally, the big conflict that he had set off in Blapei by his selfishness directly pushed the secret police in opposition of the Iron-Horn Army. This was definitely not what the big figures of Blapei wanted to see. Even if Franca returned, the higher ups of the secret police would also make a detailed investigation on this event. What waited for him there was also a severe punishment.

'He's too vicious! Perhaps when he was framing me, he had

already sought for an opportunity to kill all of his subordinates for the sake of his safety.'

For an unknown secret that could make him unrivaled, for that possible outcome, that man had dared to be that decisive and vicious. Was it worth it?

The viciousness of that man chilled Zhang Tie. He knew that if he was in the position of Major Franca, he could definitely not be as vicious and decisive as the man had been..

That was the difference between people.

"I also want to know whether you can help me go to the Huaiyuan Palace in Jinyun Country. Do you provide this service?"

"Kalur is the most important traffic hub in this region. There's an airship moving from here to Jinyun Country every two months. At the moment, because of the war, many people are choosing to leave this region, so there's always no vacancy. The latest airship left Kalur yesterday. If you want a seat in an airship heading for Jinyun Country two months later, we can book it for you. You can first go to Jinyun Country by airship before transferring to the territory of Zhang clan by other airships."

"It takes two months to order a ticket?"

Zhang Tie was speechless. He didn't want to stay here for two more months. Perhaps before he left, he could stealthily go back to

Blackhot City. He had some people he was worried about there. However, it would never take him two months to deal with his concerns in there. Even if he went there by train, it would only take him one week at most.

"Do you have any faster traffic means?"

"Yes, we have. You can rent an airship to Jinyun Country. But at the moment we cannot provide you such a service!"

"Why?" Zhang Tie asked, stunned.

"Because all the airships that were available in Kalur have been rented out by others. Although Golden Roc Bank could dispatch one airship here from another place, we only provide this service for our VIPs. As you are not our VIP, we cannot provide you with such a service!"

"What's the minimum standard to be your bank's VIP?"

"The minimum standard of yellow-level VIP is that you have to deposit over 500,000 gold coins in Golden Roc Bank!" the old man genially answered.

'500,000 gold coins? The minimum standard?'

Zhang Tie let out a sigh. This amount of money was equal to a hundred of his lives based on the compensation from Gregory clan on his value even at a premium. For most average people, one had

to work for at least 40,000 years to make 500,000 golden coins.

'F*ck, this is the minimum standard for yellow-level VIP of Golden Roc Bank that only the nouveau riche like Gregory clan in Blackhot City might be able to reach.'

Zhang Tie then instantly stopped his illusion of renting out an airship. Perhaps he could afford an airship flying from here to the Jinyun Country, but at this critical moment when the traffic resources were in urgent need, he was not qualified to request the Golden Roc Bank to dispatch an airship here just for him. The highest service the bank could provide for him was to order a ticket in an airship heading for Jinyun Country two months later.

Zhang Tie was considering whether to order such a ticket.

"Young man, would you like a suggestion from me?"

The information manager of the Golden Roc Bank stared at Zhang Tie with a pair of wise eyes.

"Go ahead please!"

"I feel that you don't need to be in such a hurry to go back at this moment!"

"Why?"

"Hehe, while you're trying to go back, your relatives of Zhang clan in Jinyun Country might be trying to get you back. Although you look isolated now, actually, the situation is not as bad as you think. You've forgotten the most important point."

"What have I forgotten?"

"You forgot that although you are wanted, your back is an unrivaled clan. The Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace is not only a noble clan in Jinyun Country, but also a noble clan among all humans. For all generations, the heads of Huaiyuan Palace have inherited the noble peerage of humanity. The name of Count Changfeng is known across the Waii Sub-continent."

"If you are really a descendant of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, then the Zhang clan will never allow you to be wanted in a foreign country. If you were really caught, Huaiyuan Palace would lose its face!"

Zhang Tie's eyes popped out as he had not imagined that Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace was so great. The head of Huaiyuan Palace was Count Changfeng, who enjoyed a high reputation among other humans. Thinking of this, Zhang Tie immediately understood that all of his concerns were actually based on his former status and social standing. If he was a member of Huaiyuan Palace now...

"You mean..."

"The head of the secret police is Baron Pompeii, who's also a hereditary noble of the Norman Empire. There are contradictions

between Baron Pompeii of Secret Police and Lin Changjiang, the general of the Northern Border Army. Do you think that a baron would fight a count who's also a noble in order to arrest a small figure? If you haven't killed dozens of secret police in Blapei, you would not be wanted at all.

"The secret police did this to save their face. Otherwise, even the imperial households of the Norman Empire would not offend a count for a trivial affair, let alone a viscount of the Norman Empire. I dare to bet with you, as long as you don't run before the headquarters of the secret police to shout loudly that you are Zhang Tie, no secret police in the Norman Empire will dare to find you trouble!

Additionally, as you've left the Iron-Horn Army, perhaps the Iron-Horn Army will deal with your affair in a low-key manner. As long as you don't exclaim your wish to return to the Iron-Horn Army, there would be no problem."

Hearing the old man's words, Zhang Tie suddenly thought it through. It turned out that what he had been most concerned about was just a laughing matter as it was just what the big figures had arranged to the public for their own faces.

If he didn't have the sudden background of Huaiyuan Palace, that order for arrest would be true. With this background plus the conflict between him and the secret police being just a plot designed by Major Franca, it was more a polite eviction order to prevent him from staying in the Norman Empire than an order for arrest.

The Iron-Horn Army had acquiesced that this was the best compromise for the three parties after the order for arrest was released. At this moment, Zhang Tie was actually a transparent person in the Norman Empire that nobody dared to offend even if he was seen by others.

A person would usually experience many unexpected affairs in his life, but the worst case scenario that many people were most concerned with in their lives actually happened at a very low frequency. Zhang Tie's encounter verified this sentence once again. What he had never imagined happened, yet what he was most concerned about was just a dark joke.

Poor Major Franca!

Although Zhang Tie's order for arrest was fake, the one for Major Franca might be very true. Not only the military party of the Norman Empire, even the secret police system was silently searching for him. The trouble he had made in Blapei was really big this time.

'It was really a wise choice to enter the Golden Roc Bank this time,' Zhang Tie mumbled inside.

"I think as long as your parents receive your message, the people in Huaiyuan Palace will know that you are in Kalur; they will definitely contact you and ascertain the details of your pick with you!"

"How will they contact me?"

"Now that you can contact your family members through the Golden Roc Bank, you only need to stay in Kalur for a few more days. They can contact you through the Golden Roc Bank too!"

Zhang Tie suddenly felt bright inside and let out a long breath. He watched the old man sincerely and seriously said, "Thank you!"

"You're welcome, young man. According to the regulations of the bank, you need to pay for talking with me!" the old man said with a wink.

Zhang Tie burst out laughing loudly, "No problem, it's worth!"

"Then, how about 100 gold coins including the 36 gold coins for the message and my inquiry fee?"

"That's fine!"

"What else can I help you with?"

Zhang Tie scratched his head as he glanced at the ring of energy once again. "As I don't have that much money now, can I just mortgage my ring of energy here?"

"No problem!" The old man glanced at Zhang Tie. "If you want to mortgage this ring in our bank, we can present you with credit of 8000 gold coins. This time, the 100 gold coins would be included in

your line of credit while its interest in our bank would be calculated by day until you redeem it.

"If you need money, there's a large-scale auction in the Sauls Auction House in Kalur City two days later. You can entrust us to give your ring to the Sauls Auction House for the upcoming auction. If it was sold by auction, the starting price would be above 10000 gold coins. It would be sold at a high price. To mortgage it or sell it by auction, it depends on you!"

"Auction?"

Zhang Tie's heart raced.

"Yes, auction. The annual winter auction held by Sauls Auction House in Kalur is very famous across the Andaman Alliance!"

...

Ten minutes later, Zhang Tie left Golden Roc Bank. Unlike when he entered, when he left Golden Roc Bank, the bank arranged a vehicle to send him to Kalur City as Zhang Tie had decided to sell the ring of energy in an auction.

Although that rune equipment made of secret silver was rarely seen, for Zhang Tie, it was not as effective as simple and heavy gold coins. At this moment, seeing the numerous refugees in Kalur, he realized that it was hard to even move without money.

As long as he had money in his pocket, even if the people in Huaiyuan Palace could not pick him up from here, he still had great resources and freedom of movement. He could go to Jinyun Country by himself. Additionally, Zhang Tie even prepared to slide back to Blackhot City after attending the auction in Kalur.

What was more, besides some eccentric items, there were some items that Zhang Tie was especially interested in, for instance, the large number of golden uangs which were prepared for alchemists...

Chapter 255: Spiritual Being

Sitting in the vehicle, Zhang Tie carefully watched the weird city wall of Kalur.

Unlike Blackhot City which had tall city wall, Kalur had no smooth city wall like what people usually saw. If the city wall of Blackhot City was regarded as the city's skin, Kalur had a protective coating of steel and iron which was composed of various pipes and bending components like the muscles and fiber tissues under the skin.

Kalur's city wall was composed of overlapping, bending, steaming pipes. All the city-defense equipment of Kalur were also built on these exposed steaming pipes. People standing outside the city wall could easily see the various exposed city-defense equipment linked by steaming pipes—gears, operating arms, various transmission tools, pressure valves, and steaming batteries.

They were weapons of destruction.

The core of Kalur region was Kalur City, which was a huge city built on an extinct volcano. The endless geothermal energy underground brought the city endless power, which was transmitted to the necessary places to support the prosperity of Kalur.

The whole Kalur City was a huge, round and orderly spider web. Circling the volcano, it spread layer by layer, occupying the best

area that covered several hundreds of kilometers of the entire Kalur region.

Each place, each road, and each building in the spider web was very orderly arranged. All the farmlands, plants, and residential districts were well divided by roads. Compared to this, Blackhot City was too disordered. The dense and tall chimneys as well as the plants with blue roofs impressed Zhang Tie a lot.

This city felt like a huge machine, each part of which was closely linked by different gears.

Given the prosperity of manufacturing industry, Kalur City was ten times greater than Blackhot City. It was not only the manufacturing hub of the former Andaman Alliance, but also one of the two most important air traffic hubs in Andaman Alliance. When Donder left, his first station was also Kalur where he took an airship and left.

Now, Kalur City felt overpopulated since refugees were pouring in from all directions. Although there was no big trouble, there were always small troubles. From the Golden Roc Bank to all the way to the city control zone and the core zone of Kalur City, job seekers stood with raised boards. Refugee relief points set by Kalur's managers could also be seen everywhere. In airships bases, there were airships constantly landing and setting off, carrying people in and out.

Nowadays, although it was the most chaotic period in Kalur's past dozens of years, the airship companies had the highest trading volume. There were many spies, intelligence agents, and people

who had special missions from the Norman Empire and the Sun Dynasty, let alone the refugees.

Recently, Kalur had become another battlefield for someone; dagger, crossbow, and poison their weapons. Each day, unknown corpses would be found in shadowy corners of the city. Besides police, city-guard also joined in the security management of this spider-web-like city, even the militia of Kalur had been mobilized.

This was a civilized and barbarous city full of order and chaos.

As a guest of the Sauls winter auction, Zhang Tie entered the Kalur City. He lived directly in the Sauls Hotel where the auction was going to be held in. Because of the numerous refugees, the accommodation cost in Kalur City was very expensive. The price of a common room in Sauls Hotel had already soared to one gold coin a day. This price was almost five times that of the normal one.

Sauls Business Group was a partner of Golden Roc Bank in Kalur. It managed many businesses, including arsenals, hotels, auction houses, and airship companies. The hotel Zhang Tie lived in was also part of Sauls Business Group.

Zhang Tie lived on the 17th floor. Additionally, this hotel was built on a mountain, so Zhang Tie was able to see the whole Kalur. There was a telescope in the hotel's balcony through which Zhang Tie could see far away.

The original intention of a desktop telescope in the balcony of the hotel would have been for the guests' convenience, to enjoy the

beautiful view in Kalur. However, now it made Zhang Tie clearly see the cruelty of war.

On the first day in the hotel, he saw an air battle between the airships of the Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty at dusk dozens of kilometers away through the telescope. During this air battle, the four airships turned into fire balls, dropped from the sky and crashed in the mountainous area surrounding Kalur.

Recently, the fight for Kalur between the two large countries was becoming more and more fierce. Although Zhang Tie could clearly see the air battle, he didn't know how many soldiers were wounded and killed in the mountains everyday. The columns of smoke constantly rising from distant places and the flaring flames that brightened up the skyline at night every day were a warning to Zhang Tie of what was happening outside.

He let out a deep sigh inside.

Because he didn't want to stir up any trouble and wasn't in the mood to wander outside, Zhang Tie stayed in his room for two days. He even ate in the room. During that time, he kept calmly cultivating, polishing his burning points, strengthening his spiritual energy, and constantly killing wild animals in the Trouble-Reappearance Situations in his room. He immersed himself in his own world and very soon two days passed.

On the evening before the auction, when Zhang Tie finished practicing his spiritual energy and the two visualized abacus' dissipated, he felt his spiritual energy increase a bit. At this moment, a rolling message abruptly appeared in his mind.

——The system detected that Castle Lord's spiritual energy has reached the lowest standard required to form a space spiritual being in the Castle of Black Iron.

——Space spiritual beings can assist Castle Lord in managing the Castle of Black Iron, complete orders left by Castle Lord, and answer any of Castle Lord's questions about the Castle of Black Iron and Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree.

——The following resources are to be consumed to form a space spiritual being:

Basic energy storage: 300

Aura value: 9000

Merit value: 60000

——Do you wish to form it?

——Yes or No.

Such an abrupt message stunned Zhang Tie. Soon after that he became excited.

'It seems that the Castle of Black Iron is going to form a spiritual manager for me. But this time, it might require a bit more resources, especially the merit value points. After setting free so many earthworms, I've only accumulated over 62000 merit value points. If I want to form the spiritual being, almost all of the merit value points would be used up along with half of the basic energy storage. Is it worthwhile?'

After thinking it for awhile, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes on the last half of the sentence introducing the function of the space spiritual being, "...answer any of Castle Lord's questions about the Castle of

Black Iron and Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree. "

'Any questions about the small tree and the space?'

Thinking back of when he had found no information on the yeast in the private library last time, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth and clicked "Yes" in his mind. Even if just for solving his questions about the small tree and the space, he felt it would be very worthwhile. After all, these days he'd had a lot of questions about the small tree's fruits.

——Ascertaining the forming of the space spiritual being!

——Please choose the species of the space spiritual being.

——Human or another?

——Human.

——Please choose the gender of the space spiritual being.

——Male or female.

——Male.

——Please choose the major personality trait of the space spiritual being.

——1. Perfectionist. 2. Affectionate. 3. Ambitious. 4. Artistic.
5. Smart. 6. Honest. 7. Active. 8. Leader. 9. Peaceful.

(Introductions on the nine personalities followed after)

Zhang Tie carefully read the introductions.

'Perfectionist, I'm not a picky man. I don't want this kind of personality. Pass...

'Affectionate. Uhm, it seems a bit nagging. It's enough to have one mom. Pass...

'Ambitious. This one seems nice. I will take a look later...

'Artistic. Uhm, this one seems a bit sentimental, not that smart...

'Smart. Uhm, this one seems good, I will take a look later...

'Honest. This one seems a bit boring. I don't want a stiff guy in such a vacant space. It's not good, pass...

'Active. No need to be that active in the Castle of Black Iron. Pass...

'Leadership. I don't have a hobby of being mistreated. Pass...

'Peaceful. It seems a bit self-constrained. Pass...'

After gazing at Ambitious and Smart for a while, Zhang Tie finally chose Ambitious as the personality of the space spiritual being.

——The features of the Ambition-based space spiritual being:

——He's eager to prove himself at any time. He's very confident. He needs your agreement and praise. He's afraid of being not accepted by Castle Lord. His basic mentality is—if I

have no achievements, my life is worthless. He has a strong ambition and likes comparisons. He also likes authority. Additionally, he's also a workaholic who's not good at expressing his inner feelings, also he's very narcissistic and arrogant.

This achievement-based space spiritual being is over energetic. He seeks to prevail over others! He likes to accept your challenges and connect his values and achievements with yours. He will sincerely help you pursue the targets. He firmly believes that he can do everything in this world.

——Do you wish to form it? Yes or No?

——Yes!

——The space spiritual being is going to form!

——It will take twelve hours to form the space spiritual being. During the forming, Castle Lord will not be able to access the Castle of Black Iron.

A night soon passed.

Chapter 256: A Familiar Person

Early the next morning, soon after Zhang Tie got up and ate the breakfast, he heard knocking on the door.

Opening it, he saw a 20-odd blond girl standing outside.

"Nice to see you, sir; I'm from Sauls Auction House. Here is your costume and mask for attending the auction. It will start at 8:00 am. It's best if you can enter 5-10 minutes in advance. After 8:00 am, the underground gate accessing the auction will be closed!"

Watching Zhang Tie, the blond revealed a coquettish smile. "You have 40 minutes before the auction starts. In this period of time, if you have any requirements, I can accompany you. You can call me if you have any problems!"

"No, thanks!"

Zhang Tie took the items from her tray and closed the door. The moment he closed the door, the girl outside looked a bit frustrated.

The old man in the Golden Roc Bank had told Zhang Tie that as long as he lived there, Sauls Auction House would send a person to invite him in. What Zhang Tie had not imagined was that this auction would start so early.

People who were qualified to attend Sauls winter auction were all rich and noble both in the former Andaman Alliance and now.

Zhang Tie himself entered the auction due to the rune ring. Many girls working in the auctions and hotels were like Mary. They were not bad, but only liked rich and powerful men. They dreamed everyday to become a phoenix. After experiencing the "Mary" event in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie felt nothing weird about these women any more.

The clothes consisted of a black burnoose and a delicate brass mask which could cover one's whole face. The eye part of the mask had two pieces of yellow glass, so people could not even identify the mask-wearer's color of the eye. Zhang Tie tried the mask on and found that the two pieces of yellow glass didn't influence his vision.

There was a number in German Script which was used to identify the status of the mask-wearer on the forehead of the mask. Zhang Tie's number was "E26". In this auction, all the activities that Zhang Tie carried out would be recorded by the number. After the auction, the Sauls Auction House would clear his properties and transfer them back to the Golden Roc Bank. It was a one-stop service.

Sauls winter auction was very secretive which meant that none of the people attending this auction should expose their status. They had to cover themselves tightly before entering the auction. This made the atmosphere very mysterious and excited Zhang Tie. After all, it was his first time attending an auction.

Besides the cloak and mask brought by the girl, Zhang Tie prepared a high-end costume for himself in the shopping mall of

the hotel under the suggestion of the Golden Roc Bank. He didn't wear his refugee clothes that he had used to cover his status.

The clothes he wore now were the most expensive ones that Zhang Tie had worn since he was born. The seven-eight pieces including leather shoes and socks cost him over six gold coins in total. Their materials and workmanship were all very good. Although they were not the best, at least they made Zhang Tie look like a rich man.

Actually, Zhang Tie still owed more than 100 gold coins' service fee to the Golden Roc Bank. Along with the interest, they would finally be deducted from the final price of the rune ring today. The auction commission of the Sauls Auction House was 2% of the final auction price. As to whether the Golden Roc Bank would share a bit more profit from the auction commission of this ring, Zhang Tie didn't know.

After putting on the mask and the cloak which could even cover his hair, Zhang Tie looked in the mirror and couldn't recognize the person in the mirror at all.

The space spiritual being would form into being after 11 am, which was still over three hours away from now.

On the 17th floor of the hotel, besides Zhang Tie, there were other people who would attend the auction. Soon after he walked out to the corridor, under the leadership of the staff of the auction house, Zhang Tie took an exclusive elevator and descended one floor by another.

When he arrived at the 12th floor, the elevator stopped and two more people like Zhang Tie entered. They were also going to attend the auction. Besides a beautiful girl who was operating the elevator, the other three just exchanged glances with each other. They didn't even greet one another, causing the atmosphere to be a bit weird.

"Ding!"

The elevator stopped and its doors opened. There was a deep, luxurious underground tunnel in front of Zhang Tie. The ground was covered with a red carpet and on both sides of the tunnel bright lamp lights were lit. Two rows of ceremonial usherettes were standing at the entrance of the elevator.

"Welcome to the underground facility of Sauls Auction House, the auction will start in the underground house here. Wish you great achievements!"

When the three of them walked out of the elevator, three ceremonial usherettes walked towards them and guided them to the entrance of the auction house one by one. The entrance was like the lobby of the hotel. It was magnificent with several steam-driven ventilating fans leisurely running at the top of the auction house, refreshing the air inside.

Two teams of warriors in gorgeous armors stood guard, making it look very mighty. Zhang Tie carefully sensed it and found that all the warriors were above LV 6. This made his heart pound and he

gave a high evaluation for Sauls Business Group's power. He thought inside, as the partner of Golden Roc Bank, this business group was really special.

"Sir, do you need a voice-changing pill?" the ceremonial usherette asked Zhang Tie after guiding him in. "If you use the voice-changing pill, your voice will be unable to be identified by others for twelve hours!"

"Fine, give me one, please!"

Voice-changing pills were put at the entrance of the auction house. The other two people who had descended together with Zhang Tie also received one.

After opening the wax sealed package by pinching it, Zhang Tie saw a white bean-sized pill. Since the other two people directly ate it, considering that pill was provided for all the attendees for free, Zhang Tie ate it too.

The pill instantly dissolved in his mouth with a bitter taste. After swallowing the liquid of the pill with his saliva, Zhang Tie felt that his throat was a bit cold. He then coughed and found that his voice had become much lower.

There was a main auction hall and some mini auction halls in the auction house. This auction would be held in the main auction hall. When he arrived, Zhang Tie received a brochure on the items that were going to be sold in this auction.

There were already some people in the main auction hall who were sitting in their seats according to their numbers. Zhang Tie glanced over the main auction hall and found it was like a mini opera stage as all the seats were surrounding the stage in a fan-like pattern. There were over 300 seats in total, above which were more advanced and hidden rooms which allowed more special figures to attend the auction.

Coming to the seat marked E26, Zhang Tie sat down and took a careful look at the brochure with the items to be sold. There were many classifications on the brochure. Zhang Tie soon found his target from the item "animals/pets".

- Number MC 1368
- Name: Golden uangs.
- Quantity: 20 groups, 2000 in a group.
- The starting price of each group is 300 gold coins.
- Point of Delivery: Kalur City.

Zhang Tie's ring of energy was part of special equipment.

- Number B136.
- Name: Ring of Energy.
- Introduction of the equipment: made of secret-silver. As a rune equipment, it can increase the recovery of the wearer's physical strength by 4%.
- Quantity: 1.
- Starting price: 12000 gold coins.
- Point of delivery: Sauls Auction House.

'I've not imagined that such a small rune ring could be that valuable.'

Zhang Tie was stunned inside.

While Zhang Tie was broadening his vision by studying the brochure, the auction's starting time drew closer and more and more guests entered and took their seats. Then, the entire house became boisterous. All the guests were wearing masks. Besides their partners, nobody else knew who others were.

When there were only five minutes left till the start of the auction, a noise drifted over. Zhang Tie turned his head in the direction the noise had come from and looked at the entrance of the auction hall. He then became slightly shocked.

A 50-odd man with a gloomy face walked inside. He was holding a golden mace and wore a red pastor-like robe of the Sun Dynasty. There was a pattern of three moons on his red robe, reminding everyone of his status—he was a three-moon muling of the Sun Dynasty.

He didn't wear a mask or a cloak, and neither did the two powerful military officers of the Sun Dynasty behind him. Entering the auction house, the three of them glanced at the noisy population with a cold expression before turning towards a rented room.

The guests were shocked by the first VIP; however, two minutes later, when a general of the Norman Empire who was wearing a

mustache entered with two military officers , nobody was shocked any more.

Except for Zhang Tie.

He saw Reinhardt following that general. In a mask, Zhang Tie opened his mouth, but he uttered no word.

A general of the Norman Empire, Reinhardt, and the other military officer went to a rented room upstairs too.

The auction then started...

Chapter 257: The Prelude Of The Climax

Entering the auction house in such a high-key and straight forward manner, the representatives of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire immediately made the atmosphere of the house a bit tense. Although the guests on the seats below the chartered rooms didn't whisper to each other, under their brass masks, many people exchanged glances with each other and had special thoughts inside.

Wondering whether the representatives of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire were here to display their existence or for the items on the brochure or just a small episode of fighting for Kalur, many people had made the decision inside that as long as the items were wanted by the figures in the two chartered rooms upstairs, they would give them up.

Among them, perhaps what Zhang Tie was thinking would scare everybody else. It was out of expectation to see Reinhardt here, but what Zhang Tie was thinking about at this moment was that red-robe muling who was holding a gold mace.

For others, this red-robe muling might symbolize authority, power, terror or make some feel like flattering him. The old man was totally a walking treasure trove.

F*ck him...f*ck him...f*ck him...

A voice kept shouting inside him. The moment Zhang Tie thought of the benefits of killing the red-robe muling, his heart

would beat heavily. What were the benefits to killing this old guy? At least tens of thousands of merit points; a Fruit of Brilliance that could make his spiritual energy surge or a Fruit of Judgment.

The introduction of the Fruit of Judgment reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind immediately, leaving him deep in thought.

"——The people who profaned celestial beings in the name of other celestial beings and those who did evil acts in the name of celestial beings are doomed to be judged. Their existence does the greatest harm to everything beautiful and kind, they were the greatest profanity to gods. Their dirty lives and deeds shall be ended by sabers and swords. This is the condition for bearing a Fruit of Judgment, and the biggest award from gods to a dauntless man who dares to wave his saber towards the forces of darkness. Ah! The brave man who spread the glorious light of the gods' over his mother land. Please take this reward and use the strength gifted by it to judge those who profane the gods so as to relieve the people's fear of celestial beings. Gods don't need their fear as fear is the food of ghosts. According to the law of creation, the more judgments you make, the more power you will have to judge with."

'F*ck him!' Zhang Tie made the decision at once. He decided to find a chance to kill that old man after the auction. He would have a higher possibility to kill a red-robe muling in Kalur City than on the battle field. It was difficult to kill him while accompanied by two powerhouses of the Sun Dynasty. Zhang Tie might even encounter many unpredictable dangers. But how could he succeed if he didn't even try? How could he have raised big achievements without being willing to risking his life?

The binding skill brought by the Fruit of Judgment saved Zhang Tie's life at the critical moment and helped him reverse the situation. Zhang Tie would never feel that it was too much to have such powerful items.

Having formed the killing intent inside, Zhang Tie couldn't stand to look back at the red-robe muling of the Sun Dynasty. He then slowly took a deep breath...

...

"Thank you all for attending this Sauls Auction House's annual winter auction." When it was 8 am, the auctioneer, in a set of black ceremonial robe immediately appeared. Perhaps he also knew that these figures didn't have the patience to listen to his crap, after greeting them, he directly started the auction's procedures.

"The first lot today is a crystal pyramid..." Soon after his voice faded, the image of this crystal pyramid had been displayed on the screen in the back by the projector on the auction block, "This crystal pyramid is a nature-born treasure that forms in class-5 water. After opening and polishing the class-5 crystal, you will get the most essential core of this class-5 crystal pyramid. The direct coverage range of its crystal energy field is 1.8 m. I'll not mention its function on polishing burning points as you all know. The starting price of this item is 500 gold coins. The lowest increase of each bid is 10 gold coins. Now, start!"

Soon the price of the crystal pyramid broke through 1000 gold coins and was finally fixed at 1250 gold coins.

Zhang Tie took a deep breath. It was his first time seeing money spent like flowing water. Additionally, it was also his first time to see such an advanced crystal pyramid. Previously, the most advanced crystal that he had seen was "class-4 electric generator crystal." He saw it in the office of manager Hance of the Iron-Thorn Fighting Club. A class-5 crystal was at least 10 times more valuable than that of a class-4 crystal and rarely seen.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded. Even though he had not sold his ring at this moment, he could still make bids at the auction. His largest bidding limit was the starting price of his ring——12000 gold coins.

From the brochure, he knew that there were a total of 11 class-5 crystal pyramids. Therefore, he was not hurry. He just waited there to see the final prices of the other class-5 crystal pyramids.

Based on final price of the first class-5 crystal pyramid, the final prices of the other class-5 crystal pyramids all varied from 1000-1300 gold coins according to their sizes and qualities. They were auctioned in a fast and efficient manner. When it came to the 8th one, Zhang Tie also quoted and finally got one weighing 5.7 kgs at the price of 1280 gold coins.

As it was his first time to spend over 1000 gold coins for one item, Zhang Tie's hand even sweated when he raised the board. Meanwhile, his adrenaline heavily secreted. When his final price was fixed, Zhang Tie felt relaxed inside and a bit exhausted.

This time, I spend dad's total salary after 100 years Zhang Tie

mocked himself while feeling extremely excited.

In this age, among all the auctions, crystals and stones would always cost the most. This group of class-5 crystal pyramids was just used to warm up the auction. Later, the other crystals and stones would be constantly auctioned.

Even though by scanning through the brochure and listening to the auctioneer's brief introduction on those items, Zhang Tie had already learned a lot and widely broadened his vision.

Previously, the guests downstairs were worrying that the representatives of Sun Dynasty and Norman Empire would butt in; unexpectedly, after 2 hours, when a great amount of items had been auctioned, neither of the two people in the chartered rooms upstairs had opened their mouths. They just silently watched. Therefore, the guests downstairs became reassured and started to frequently quote price, making the whole auction house more and more boisterous.

Now, Zhang Tie realized that he was totally an outsider of the auction house as the prices of those crystals and stones would always be worth thousands even tens of thousands gold coins. The crystal pyramid that he had got was just the cheapest one.

The first small climax broke out on the first alchemical object. The moment it was displayed, most of the bidders kept their wits about them.

"This is a sun-stone necklace created by a master alchemist. Its

marvelous effect had been completely activated by the master alchemist. This necklace had two attributes: first, courage, which could make the wearer immune to the negativity and despair caused by some spiritual control skills and cure and alleviate the symptoms of melancholia patients second, crits, which could recover in 7 days. Every 7 days, this necklace could bring a 120% of battle qi crits for wears below LV 10. The starting price of this necklace was 21000 gold coins. At least 100 gold coins for each bid. Bidding starts now."

The moment the auctioneer stopped talking, the first person shouted a price of 25000 gold coins. Closely followed by other offers. The final price was fixed at 58000 gold coins, breaking the record of the highest value item in this auction.

During the process, while masked, Zhang Tie's mouth was agape in shock while staring at those auctioneers who treated gold coins like nothing as that golden, shiny sun-stone necklace on the auction block went to its new owner. Zhang Tie seemed to become petrified.

Sun stones were not expensive as it was just a semi-gemstone. Judging from the price, it could not even match the pure rubies and sapphires that he had gifted to Beverly, Alice and Pandora. Many jewelry stores in Blackhot City sold various ornaments made of sun stones. By comparison, those ornaments were very cheap. Even being made of the best sun stones and pure gold, most of their prices were only several or several dozens of gold coins. The sun-stone hairpins, necklaces and rings worn by the girls in the rose association were even cheaper, which only cost them several even 10-odd silver coins.

However, the starting price of this sun-stone necklace was 25000 gold coins!

Its final price was 58000 gold coins!

Even if they were both sun-stone ornaments. Why were the price differences so sharp. The only reason was that the sun-stone necklace came from a master alchemist. The mysterious attributes and energy of that sun stone had been activated, making it so amazing. Therefore, although they were all made of sun stones, one was average while the other was top tier.

This was really magic. Even calling it the Midas touch which turns all to gold couldn't describe an alchemist's ability.

It was Zhang Tie's first time being shocked by an alchemist's achievement. A huge wave raised in the youth's heart. Faintly, Zhang Tie heard a voice from the depths of his inner heart, an aspiration that he had never experienced before...

This sun-stone necklace only pulled open the prelude of the hidden climax in this auction.

Chapter 258: Dreaming To Be An Alchemist

None of the guests sitting downstairs had noticed that since the first product of a master alchemist was displayed, the red-robe muling of them Sun Dynasty and the general of the Norman Empire expressions had become increasingly grim. It seemed that they were becoming a bit nervous and paying more attention to the following items being auctioned today, especially to that product from a master alchemist.

Not only the people in the chartered rooms, even many guests downstairs were startled. For some reason, the number of products from master alchemists seemed to be a bit more than usual today. They knew that the products of master alchemists were rarely seen in the auction house in the past years. What happened this year? Who was that generous?

Zhang Tie skimmed through the brochure and found that introductions on the products of a master alchemist were the simplest.

——There were several more products of master alchemists to be auctioned today. At the request of the client, we have to keep these items a secret before the official procedures start. Therefore we won't tell you the details here. Thank you for your attention.

After the sun-stone necklace, there were some more products of a master alchemist to be auctioned.

The second product of a master alchemist was a Pato-stone ring

which was used to make people calm and more quick-witted. As the favorite of all the field commanders and other professions concerning intelligence, this ring was fixed at the final price of 49,000 gold coins.

The third product of a master alchemist was a pair of earrings made of nickel-iron meteorite, which were used to increase focus and rapidly enter a meditative state. This product could reduce one's chance to be affected by a devil when in meditation by 50%. Therefore, it was also a treasure of cultivators and was finally taken away at the price of 52,600 gold coins.

The fourth product of a master alchemist was a forehead ornament made of lazurite. Its effect was to nourish and mobilize one's spiritual energy as well as increase one's perception. Therefore, it broke a new record——62,800 gold coins.

When the lazurite forehead ornament was displayed, the atmosphere in the house became heated as nobody would have imagined that four pieces of a master alchemist would appear in this annual Sauls winter auction. In the past, there were only one or two pieces. What happened today? What was even stranger was that all the patterns of these items were for women. They seemed to be one set of ornaments for a woman.

'That's impossible! Even the queen of the Norman Empire would not be that exaggerating by having such set of priceless ornaments made by a master alchemist' Many attendees mumbled inside.

Even if Zhang Tie had felt something wrong with this auction as a hidden flow and restlessness was silently in an upsurge. As a

result, when they heard that there was another product from a master alchemist, many people were shocked as they sprung up from their seats. At the same time, the sound of someone taking a deep breath had drifted throughout the auction house.

"The following item also comes from a master alchemist. It's a pair of bracelets made of garnet with its special properties completely activated. It is definitely the favorite of all the women as it could maintain one's beauty and keep one's youth. Additionally, it could improve one's skin, increase one's vitality of qi and blood as well as the health of the organs that are concerned with the female reproductive system..."

Zhang Tie's eyes then fixed on the projection wall behind the auction block with the auctioneer's gesture. The photo of that pair of garnet bracelets had been enlarged by many times, allowing people to see its details.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, it was not a pair of average garnet bracelets. It looked purple among the garnet red, making it completely like the average ones. However, what was weird was that on the surface of the garnet were some mysterious fine grains that penetrated from the inside. Zhang Tie had not seen the same grains on other average garnets. If this pair of bracelets were not large enough, those mysterious, fine grains could almost not be noticed by Zhang Tie from his position.

Could it be the mark left by the master alchemist after tapping and activating the abilities of the stones? This seemed to be the only difference between them and those average garnet bracelets which could be bought at the price of 10-odd silver coins besides

that this pair of garnet bracelets looked more brilliant than average ones.

He was right.

"As you can see, these three stone flowers have been activated by the master alchemist on the pair of garnet bracelets, which represents that the three special properties and abilities of the garnet stones had been activated. As the first lot that has three attributes in this auction, it could not help you fight or cultivate; but it could make a woman more beautiful and healthier. Therefore, the starting price of this pair of bracelets was 38000 gold coins. Each mark-up should not be lower than..."

Before the auctioneer finished talking, a person on the 2nd row in front of Zhang Tie couldn't wait to open his mouth, "50,000 gold coins!"

"You'd like to take away this pair of bracelets with only 50,000 gold coins!"

"56,000 gold coins!"

"58,000 gold coins..."

"60,000 gold coins..."

In a short while, the price of that pair of garnet bracelets had surged over 70,000 gold coins, which price had scared off many

people who had offered at the beginning. But there were still some rich and powerful guests were bidding for that.

As a classical Chinese allusion went——touch a stone and turn it into gold. Only immortal beings in the the Chinese myths and legends could make that. However, at this moment, seeing the average-looking garnet stone turning into an item which was tens of thousands more expensive than the gold of the same weight, Zhang Tie felt it was never too exaggerating to describe it using the above classical Chinese allusion.

Sitting on his own seat, Zhang Tie kept trembling at each mark-up. It was not because of fright, but because of his own excitement.

"100,000 gold coins!" A person sitting on the first row of the auction house abruptly stoop up. After this offer, that person moved away her cloak and hood. Meanwhile, she took off the brass mask on her face. When she turned back, everybody saw a 40-odd woman's face who looked still enchanting. She had rosy cheeks, bending and long eyes. Beside this, she also looked sharp and had a killing intent. She glared at all the guests behind her and aggressively said with a smile, "This mother will have this pair of bracelets. Who dares to grab it from me?"

"Black widow!" Some guests behind him took a breath of air while someone mumbled.

The auction soon restored quiet.

Although Zhang Tie didn't know her true status, judging from

her look, it seemed that many people knew her status. Additionally, this woman seemed also terrifying. At least nobody wished to offer more than 100,000 gold coins to buy a pair of bracelets at the cost of offending this woman.

Seeing nobody else uttering any voice, the woman turned back and fixed her eyes on the auctioneer without saying anything more. Taking the small hammer, the auctioneer forcefully swallowed her saliva, "Someone offers 100,000 gold coins. Is there any higher offer? No? 3, 2, 1, sold!"

As the small hammer smashed down, that woman called black widow took a seat again. By then, the auctioneer's forehead had been covered in drops of sweat.

"The next item is the last product of a master alchemist in this auction..."

Hearing the auctioneer's words, all the guests became startled, causing an uproar.

"What? One more product from a master alchemist? Is this Sauls winter auction the exclusive one for master alchemists?"

"That's impossible. It's been the 6th one. Even in greater auctions, people could also hardly see so many products from master alchemists in one auction!"

"If we were notified earlier that so many products from master

alchemists would be auctioned this time, we would have been more prepared. The Sauls auction house should notify us at least 1 month in advance so that we could have prepared an appropriate amount of funds. What's your purpose of not notifying us before the auction?" Many people started to complain about the Sauls auction house.

"If I was notified one month in advance, I would never have given up that pair of Pato-stone rings!"

"The Sauls auction house has to give a proper accounting!"

"We need justice!"

Zhang Tie looked around the auction house in an interested way. Even the two people beside him became so excited as they stood up and loudly complained. These people were blaming the Sauls Auction House for not having fulfilled its obligation to provide them with accurate details. As each of the product from the master alchemist would cost tens of thousands gold coins, even 100, 000 gold coins. It was not a small amount of money for anyone at present. For some people at the present, if they didn't have it prepared well in advance, it would be hard for them to even afford one product.

The auctioneer in the stage became pretty embarrassed as she could not respond to so many complaints at the same time. When the crowd became increasingly more furious, causing the auction to be unable to continue, a 60-odd man abruptly appeared in the stage.

When the old man appeared, the auctioneer hurriedly retreated to the backstage. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie also noticed that even though the auction became a bit disorder, from the beginning, the representatives of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire sitting in the chartered rooms upstairs hadn't make any expressions at all.

"May I have your attention please..." The old man looked around the house. Hearing his words, the furious and complaining crowd instantly became quiet. Many people seemed knowing the status of this old man, "As the director of Sauls Business Group, I'm very regretful about your troubles in this auction. But I have to honestly tell you that as the sponsor of this auction, we were only made aware that a batch of alchemical products would be auctioned here one day ago. Therefore, we didn't have time to share that information with all of you. Additionally, until 10 minutes before the start of this auction when this batch of alchemical products were escorted to this auction house did we didn't know what they were. We're also shocked by them. However, we cannot refuse the owner's request for keeping these alchemical products a secret.

"Who?" A low voice drifted from a brass mask, "Who's the commissioned auctioneer of this batch of alchemical products? Such a request and attitude was rude for Sauls auction house. We want to know whose request is it that the Sauls Business Group could not refuse!"

Standing in the stage, the old man took a deep breath, "It's the Selindor Clan which entrusted the Sauls auction house to auction the former alchemical products, including the final pair of alchemical products!"

Hearing his reply, the whole house became quiet. The Selindor Clan was also the famous Iron-Gate Clan, the ruling clan of Kalur City. The development of the entire Kalur region greatly benefited from the painstaking effort of the whole Iron-Gate Clan for many generations. Zhang Tie remembered that when they attended the survival training, the "Iron-Gate T21" crossbow carried by Fatty Barley was produced by the Selindor Clan. Magnificently situated in Kalur City, this clan was also the most powerful military supplier and machines manufacturer in the former Andaman Alliance. Compared to this clan, the Gregory Clan in Blackhot City was just a rural nouveau riche.

For some reason, Zhang Tie faintly felt that something big would happen in this auction today.

"If you have no more questions, we'll come to the last alchemical product today. Because this alchemical product is very special and has not been auctioned in the history of Sauls auction house, perhaps you have not really seen such an alchemical product from such a short distance, therefore, when it is displayed after a while, please keep calm and not attempt to move closer to watch or touch it in case of unnecessary troubles and dangers. For this, we will take steps, sorry for that!" After saying this, the old man clapped. Instantly, a team of full-armored soldiers walked out from the backstage as they surrounded the stage and basically isolating the auction block from the guests.

After this team of soldiers formed a perimeter, two people in white gloves lifting one silver metal suitcase respectively walked onto the stage from backstage. After that, they carefully put the suitcases onto the display case of the auction block. They then

opened the suitcases and adjusted the items in the suitcases from a horizontal position to a vertical position for convenience so that everyone could see them clearly. Meanwhile, the projector on the auction block had magnified the two items' images in a clearer way.

Given from the look, the two items were like two huge "ostrich eggs" made of special material. Their hulls were covered with black and white spiral grains. Nobody knew what they were. At least Zhang Tie became completely muddle-headed when he saw the two "ostrich eggs". He wondered what precious items they were that could arise the auction house's attention so much.

Among them, only the two military officers of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire in the chartered rooms upstairs changed their faces at the sight of the two "ostrich eggs". They then lowered heads to talk with their own general or red-robe muling.

"You should have heard about the two items. Especially in recent days, the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire respectively threw 1 or 2 of these items into the opposite cities!" The old man obscurely explained. After a short quiet, the house suddenly became noisy.

"What? You mean they were alchemical bombs—the only thermal weapon in the Black Iron Age?"

A high-pitched voice sounded while everyone else was shocked. Even Zhang Tie eyes popped out of their sockets.

"Right, the two items are alchemical bombs——the only thermal weapon in the Black Iron Age, also the last alchemical items today. By now, the explosive equivalent of the most powerful alchemical bombs made by alchemists in the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire were respectively 350 kgs 500 kgs of TNT. However, the explosive equivalent of each of the two alchemical bombs you can see here are 1 ton of TNT."

Saying this, the director of Sauls Business Group in the stage forced a bitter smile as he stretched out his hand, "Don't ask me what does it mean by explosive equivalent and TNT as I don't know them either. These words were technical terms used by alchemists to measure the power of alchemical bombs. They came from the age before the catastrophe which were strictly regulated. I'm just echoing what the books say. I asked a professional about the power of a 1 ton TNT explosive equivalent before I was here. I was told that such a bomb could destroy the whole auction house, the Sauls hotel above it and all the people inside!"

Hearing such an explanation, everybody including Zhang Tie were shocked.

After looking around, the director of Sauls Business Group continued, "The starting price of each bomb is 1 gold coin. Two persons' bidding are available at the same time . Bidding starts now..."

1 gold coin for 1 alchemical bomb with terrifying power?

Are you kidding me? You might not be able to buy such terrifying weapons at the price of 100,000 gold coins. Because all bombs are

strategical weapons in the hands of the country and big powers. Nobody would actually sell them at all, let alone buying one at the price of 1 gold coin. Alchemists were both terrifying and awesome because in this age only they could produce this kind of terrifying killing weapons that almost didn't belong to this age.

None of those at the present were idiots, almost in a split second, they understood why they could see the representatives of the Norman Empire and the Sun Dynasty here and why two alchemical bombs to be auctioned at once?

"1 gold coin!"

"1 gold coin!"

When the whole house became so quiet that even a needle dropped onto the ground could be heard, two voices drifted from the two chartered rooms upstairs. Besides, nobody else dared to bid. Even those people who had complained loudly that they had not prepared enough money and missed the possibility to buy an alchemical product also became as quiet as a stone. They seemed not having seen the "great bargain" at all.

"1 gold coin, 1 gold coin, two people had bidden. Is there any higher offer? No? Well, that's the deal!"

The hammer hit down, making a sound that was more crispy than any time before like a lonely applause after a performer finished a lonely performance on the stage of the theater.

At this time, the people inside the chartered room upstairs had already walked downstairs, "We need to check the item" The red-robe muling who was holding his gold mace in a distant expression just now looked as black as charcoal. Observant people could even see that red-robe muling was holding his gold mace so forcefully that his finger even looked white.

"Sure!" The director of Sauls Business Group nodded while the soldiers left a path for him.

Seeing one military officer of the Sun Dynasty walking over there, the general of the Norman Empire also nodded to that military officer beside him. Therefore, the military officer of Norman Empire also arrived there in a short moment.

Under the gaze of the crowd, the two military officers started to check the items in the silver suitcases. In less than half a minute, the two military officers in solemn expressions nodded to the red-robe muling of the Sun Dynasty and the general of the Norman Empire respectively. After leaving 1 gold coin respectively, they arranged well the bombs and left the auction block with suitcases.

After that, the representatives of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire left.

At this time, all the guests cast their eyes onto the director of Sauls Business Group. Even Zhang Tie understood that this auction was just a tool that the Selindor Clan used to send a message and demonstrate its strength.

It was not a simple auction, but a big event that could influence the situation of the Kalur region and the process of the war between the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire. There were two key information points on this big event: first, the Selindor Clan had gained the support of a master alchemist, whose ability was far greater than that of the top alchemists in Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty.

Everybody was watching that person on the auction block and waiting for him to say something. Even as a silent prop and a witness, they all had the right to know something.

As was expected, under their expecting eyes, the director of the Sauls Business Group finally revealed a message.

"The Iron-Gate Clan will announce today that their next clan head is —— Alexia Selindor. Alexia Selindor had married a master alchemist when she was learning in the Oriental Continent. Everything of Iron-Gate Clan including Kalur City would be under the protection of that master alchemist. Those alchemical products auctioned today were small gifts sent from that master alchemist to the Iron-Gate Clan"

The whole auction house became silent once again.

After a long while, someone among the guests sighed, "Then, the war between the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire on Kalur would almost come to an end!

...

At this moment, that voice and that aspiration in Zhang Tie's mind became clearer than ever.

This was a dream that Zhang Tie had been striving for since he was born for the first time, a dream that made Zhang Tie's blood boil.

In the dream, Zhang Tie was greater than having the Midas touch which could turn stone to gold.

He could save the whole city...

He could change a war...

He could be the largest reliance and honor of everybody beside him...

...

The auction continued. Finally, Zhang Tie's ring of energy was sold at the fixed price of 21600 gold coins, making Zhang Tie's purse bulging once again.

Soon after Zhang Tie's ring was sold, a line appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

——The space spiritual being of Castle of Black Iron has

formed into being. The management panel of Castle of Black Iron has completed the first intelligence upgradation. Spiritual connection and interaction between Castle Lord and the Castle of Black Iron through the space door has been established...

Soon after this line disappeared, Zhang Tie had felt that his spiritual energy in his mind was shocked as a great amount of spiritual energy started to pour into that strange arch door in his mind. At this moment, that arch door was completely like sponge, it constantly absorbed his spiritual energy inside. In less than 1 minute, there was only a wisp of spiritual energy left in Zhang Tie's mind.

When Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was almost completely dried, that marvelous arch door slightly trembled as its color suddenly became verdant and full of vitality.

It was not comfortable as his spiritual energy was drained in a fast way. In the past short minute, Zhang Tie had a splitting headache. He even felt frustrated. However, after that marvelous arc door changed its color, Zhang Tie felt that he had established a deeper and closer contact with the Castle of Black Iron.

Previously, he felt that he and the Castle of Black Iron were in two different worlds separated by the arch door. Only after he pushed open the door could he feel the inside of the Castle of Black Iron. However, now, that arch door seemed having disappeared as the entire Castle of Black Iron had integrated with him on the perceptions.

Chapter 259: Heller And His Subordinates

The primary auction in Sauls auction house lasted 4 hours in the morning. According to the arrangement, the subordinate auctions would start at 2:00 pm, each of which would last half an hour. There was a 15 minutes' break between each of the two subordinate auctions so that all the guests could easily choose their own subordinate auctions to attend at their will.

The subordinate auction for animals and pets would start at 2:45 pm. Therefore, Zhang Tie had almost 3 hours before it started.

Until he left the auction house at 12 pm, Zhang Tie was still thinking about what had happened in the auction house previously.

This time, the Iron Gate Clan really had silently reversed the situation of Kalur. By then, the fat calf that was Kalur had become a ripe for the taking. Although the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire both had the strength to engulf it, in this age, even the greatest lunatic would not choose to blatantly plunder a master alchemist's family property as spoils of war.

Because the revenge of a master alchemist who could produce alchemical bombs that was equal to 1 ton of TNT explosive equivalents would definitely be 10 times more severe than that suffered from the average people in Kalur City if they engulfed the whole Kalur City. No idiot would do that. In this age, each alchemist was a hornet's nest, especially this guy who could casually make a pile of alchemical items and seemed to have countless reserves money and a great amount of followers.

Sometimes, this kind of person was even more destructive and terrifying than an army.

Perhaps the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire would still investigate whether the Selindor clan had really found a master alchemist as to be its backer through other intelligence channels. Even only for face, the war between the Iron-Horn Army and the Brilliant Feathers on Kalur would not instantly come to an end. They had to find a proper reason. Whereas, this primary auction brought a wisp of hope for peace to Kalur which had been clouded due to the war. From today onwards, the two powers' skirmishes in Kalur region would sharply reduce before this war finally came to an end.

Zhang Tie felt this was a good matter. Because most of the people that died on the battle field were commoners from two countries, while the party that suffered the most in this war was the hundreds of thousands of refugees in Kalur. The earlier this war came to an end, the fewer people would die. Perhaps some big figures would feel not happy, but in this world, when rich ones encountered something, the ones suffered a loss would always be the poor; when big figures fought, the small figures would always be beaten up.

Zhang Tie thought about it for quite a while and found it was a bit interesting. From finding the army of the Norman Empire attacking the Blackhot City on the New Crescent Prairie to attending the fight between the Iron-Blood Camp and the army of the Sun Dynasty and witnessing the Iron-Gate Clan reversed the situation of Kalur, Zhang Tie found that he had witnessed and experienced each important stage of this war since he attended the survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley. During this process, he

matured.

...

After returning to the room, the moment Zhang Tie took off his clothes and mask, the serviceman of the hotel had pushed in the dining car.

"Sir, please enjoy yourself. Is there anything else I can do for you?"

After sending in Zhang Tie's lunch, that serviceman stood well in the room.

"What's your monthly payment here?" Zhang Tie asked the serviceman.

"Plus tips, almost 1 gold coin!" The 20-odd year old serviceman honestly answered.

Zhang Tie then took out his last gold coin, after weighing it in hand, he flicked it to that serviceman, who instantly grabbed it with an ecstatic expression, "Thanks, sir, you're too generous!"

"I want to ask about something from you"

The serviceman instantly changed his face while he hurriedly put the gold coin onto the dining car like having touched something

hot, "Sir, we have regulations. We can't reveal the information on the guests in the hotel. Once discovered I might lose my life!"

"Not for information on the guests in the hotel, but any information on the representatives of the Norman Empire and the Sun Dynasty who had just left the auction house. You help me ask about whether they were still in Kalur City now. I think it's not too difficult of a task"

The serviceman the looked relaxed as he hurriedly grabbed that gold coin from the dining car again and put it into his own pocket, "It will take me some time!"

"It doesn't matter, you have 1 hour, when you come back to tidy up the tableware, I think you've already dealt with it!"

The serviceman then left...

In the primary auction, Zhang Tie had thought twice before making the final decision to kill the representatives of the Sun Dynasty by rushing into danger. However, he had not imagined that the auction would be full of climaxes. After getting one alchemical bomb, the representatives of the Sun Dynasty had left, reminding Zhang Tie that his first hunting plan might have failed. Although he knew that the red-robe muling had a low possibility of staying in Kalur City now, Zhang still wanted to verify it and see whether the gods would give him this chance to kill them.

After finishing lunch in less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie closed the door and pulled down the windows before going to the

bathroom. According to Zhang Tie's observations, the bathroom would be the last place under the surveillance. Even though there were hidden surveillance channels, they were arranged in the parlors and bedrooms; In a contrast, with such a narrow space, a bathroom where everything inside was easily seen was safer and more secret. Having been very careful, Zhang Tie had been accessing the Castle of Black Iron in the bathroom these days. Since experiencing that event with Major Franca, Zhang Tie had become more cautious.

...

"What does the space spirit being look like?"

Before entering the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie became curious.

...

"Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the Castle of Black Iron. I'm the spirit being of Castle of Black Iron. My name is Heller!"

This time, Zhang Tie entered the Castle of Black Iron in a much easier way. Almost the moment he focused his attention he entered. When he entered the Castle of Black, Zhang Tie saw a 40-odd year old man in a set of delicate black ceremonial dress and bow like a steward standing in front of him.

This man respectfully bowed to Zhang Tie.

At the sight of this man, Zhang Tie didn't feel genial but jealous.

Zhang Tie swore that he had not imagined a man could be that handsome and beautiful. He deserved all the descriptive words possible to describe a handsome man. Each line and detail on his face and body seemed having been delicately carved by the creator. This man had the face and temperament like that of Apollo. At the sight of this man, the first word in Zhang Tie's mind was not handsome but challenging. This guy was simply challenging everyones imagination to their limits on perfect and handsome men. From his appearance and temperament, this man was definitely perfect. If this man was moved outside, Zhang Tie confirmed that wherever he went, he would be surrounded by a great amount of women and their screams. If any woman passed out at the sight of this man, Zhang Tie wouldn't feel it strange at all.

This guy was absolutely the enemy of all the men!

'F*ck, how could a man be that handsome?' As it was his first time to feeling bashful since he was born, Zhang Tie started faintly complaining about that to himself.

"You say you are...Heller?"

"Yes, my lord!"

"Uhm...are you a man?" Zhang Tie asked such an abnormal question.

"I'm the life created in this space. I'm the manifestation of the space functions. To be strict, my full name should be smart spiritual being control unit of the Castle of Black Iron. My DNA was 99.97% similar to that of human beings. You can treat me as humanoid life. My task is to assist Castle Lord and to manage the Castle of Black Iron as well as solve all of your questions about the Castle of Black Iron!" Heller respectfully answered.

"Then, can I bring you into the real world?"

"No, because the laws of space and creation that grant me with life are different from that of your world. My entire life and all the basic energy particles that form my body are part of this space's laws and are closely related to this space; therefore, I cannot leave this space independently!"

Good! Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie let out a sigh unconsciously. If this handsome guy wandered everywhere in the world, other men would not have women any more.

During the process of chatting with Heller, Zhang casually looked around, what amazed him were the 3 people digging the earth beside the vegetable field.

"Erm... what about those 3 people?" Zhang Tie became surprised as he pointed at the 3 persons doing farming work.

"They are the spirit servants being created in this space together with me. They are my subordinates and completely follow my orders!" Heller explained.

"Your subordinates?"

"Of course, there are so many things to do in the Castle of Black Iron. Do you think I alone could finish all the things, my lord?" Heller asked.

"Haha, buy 1 get 3 for free!" Zhang Tie felt pretty good all of a sudden.

Having not met them previously, Heller called the 3 people over. They immediately stopped what they were doing and rapidly ran over here. When they came in front of Zhang Tie, they directly knelt down in front of Zhang Tie and started to his shoes in the most humble way, which startled Zhang Tie.

"Lord, I'm your loyal slave servant A'gan!"

"Lord, I'm your loyal slave servant Edward!"

"Lord, I'm your loyal slave servant Aziz!"

Chapter 260: Clearing Up Doubts

Zhang Tie carefully watched A'gan, Edward and Aziz who were kneeling down in front of him. The three people all appeared to be between the ages of 20 and 30 years old. Among human beings, with the exception of the Chinese, men of other races would look older when they became mature. In the words of Donder, they would age faster than those of the Chinese race. Therefore, A'gan, Edward and Aziz looked older than their actual ages.

A'gan was black with thick lips. Even his hair was black. Edward was white with stout limbs, giving him a strong build and appearance. Azia was a bit delicate with curled hair, who looked a bit younger than the other two people. They all wore common linen undershirts and looked like farming servants in manors.

Compared to Heller whose look made others bashful, the three people looked a bit more like commoners. Therefore, Zhang Tie slightly released a sigh of relief.

"What were you doing just now?" Zhang Tie asked.

"We were hoeing. Steward Heller instructed us to reclaim a good field of [60 mu](#) in the Castle of Black Iron." The three replied in unison showing that they have been well trained.

1 mu is equal to 666.66 square meters. 60 mu is equal to 40000 square meters.

"Can you till the land?"

"Of course!" The three answered in unison once again.

"With the exception of this, what else can you do?"

"We've have many skills that can be used!" The three answered in unison for the third time.

"I'm also a carpenter and manson. I'm good at building houses!" A'gan answered firstly.

"I'm also blacksmith and cook. I can make delicious food and create items!" Edward answered.

"I can look after flowers, grasses and livestock. I can also brew various alcohols!" Aziz answered.

Well, I'm a land lord now. Hearing the three spirit servants' answers, Zhang Tie felt that the Castle of Black Iron was becoming more like a manor. He was the lord; Heller was the steward. He also had his spirit servants. But this was also great, at least he didn't have to till land any more.

He waved his hand towards A'gan, Edward and Aziz. They then obediently went back to till the land.

"Can I take three of them into my world?" Another question suddenly flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

"No, like me, all the lives formed in this space can't leave here as we are a part of the Castle of Black Iron!" Heller shook his head.

"Erm...do you need to eat?"

"We also need to consume food and have proper rest. Our living and energy receiving patterns are no different from those of people in your world. Therefore, I hope Castle Lord could allow us to use the houses that you have built and all the materials inside. I've got a plan. If you agree to my plan, I will greatly change the Castle of Black Iron. It's really too simple and crude." Heller said with great ambition while his eyes radiating shrew lights, dreaming of a beautiful future in the Castle of Black Iron.

"No problem. You can allocate all the items here at your will!" Zhang Tie waved his hand.

"I will definitely not let Castle Lord down!" Because of Zhang Tie's trust, Heller showed a smile for the first time.

"Will my fruits on the small tree be safe?" Glancing at the small tree beside him, Zhang Tie thought of an important problem. If the ripe fruits on the small tree were picked and eaten by the 3 guys in advance, that would be a great loss.

"Don't worry. For all the lives in this space, the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree is a top existence in this space, which enjoyed the strongest protection from the space rules. Except for Castle Lord, nobody else could pick the fruits. Any living beings that are hostile to the small tree will be excluded by the laws of this space and

turned into ashes!"

Speaking of the small tree, Zhang Tie thought back to the trip into the Castle of Black Iron before Heller was formed. He was told that Heller might be able to answer some questions about the small tree. In a split second, Zhang Tie's questions about the small tree reappeared.

"Can you answer my questions about that small tree?"

"It's my honor and the meaning of my existence!"

"Well, my first question is that why can I not get the Fruit of Brilliance until I kill those heinous people. Why can't I receive such a fruit by killing others, even on the battlefield?"

"According to one of the universal laws, gathering the lives of sentient species cannot make an individual grow stronger by promoting self-destruction and fighting against each other. If any one killed by you could lead to a Fruit of Brilliance or other fruits, the foundation and universal law to balance the survival of this race would be broken. Therefore, you could only get a Fruit of Brilliance by eliminating the ones whose souls have been corrupted and would influence the survivability of your race. This reflects the universal law."

"What about the Fruit of Judgment?"

"Those people's souls have been corrupted. Additionally, they

were still profaning the gods in the name of celestials and doing evil things in the name of gods. Such actions are seen as horrendously evil. Therefore, you can get both the Fruit of Brilliance and the Fruit of Judgment by eliminating those people! They are also the only two fruits that you can get from killing human beings"

Zhang Tie's eyes suddenly brightened up as he thought about a possibility, "Do you mean that the I can get more fruits from those species which pose a greater threat to human beings?"

"Not quite. It's not that you could get more fruits from them, but you could get more from them. You could get the halo of their souls, namely their spiritual energy from those people who have corrupted souls; you could also get the seven strengths from wild wolves while the Seven-Strength Fruit formed by the seven strengths also include the spiritual energy of those wild wolves!"

Zhang Tie suddenly became enlightened.

"Speaking of the Seven-Strength Fruit, I've got one more question. What are the conditions to form Seven-Strength Fruit? I can get this kind of fruit from other animals except for wolves?"

"The animals that could bring you Seven-Strength Fruit have to meet the following conditions: first, this animal must be mammal. Only a mammal's seven strength could integrate with yours. Secondly, this animal must be hostile to human beings. Third, it has to be free both physically and spiritually when it's killed. Only when the above three conditions are satisfied could you get the Seven-Strength Fruit!"

"What do you mean by 'this animal is hostile to human beings'? How could I judge whether an animal is hostile to human beings?"

"That's very simple. There will be many records on this species killing and eating people!"

Heller's explanation immediately solved Zhang Tie's many questions on the wild wolf Seven-Strength Fruit. Previously, he thought that he could get Seven-Strength Fruit from killing many kinds of animals. There were even a lot of weird thoughts in his mind, such as buy a great number of livestock and kill them to get Seven-Strength Fruit accordingly. Now, he knew that the Seven-Strength Fruit could only be formed by killing animals which met the above three conditions. Only a few animals could meet these conditions. It was really a matter of luck to gain Seven-Strength Fruit.

Zhang Tie had already been thinking about heading for the New Crescent Prairie again. If he could get some huge wolf Seven-Strength Fruits, it would definitely improve his real strength a lot. However, based on the current situation, he might not have such a chance in a short period.

"I will participate in the subordinate auction for selling golden uangs in the afternoon. Can you tell me how many golden uangs I need to set free before I gain a Fruit of Redemption?"

"2584!" Heller answered.

Hearing Heller's reply, Zhang Tie's heart raced as 2584 was just the number on the 18th place of the Fibonacci Numerical Array. "Is there any relationship between the forming of Fruit of Redemption and the Fibonacci Numerical Array?" Thinking of this, Zhang Tie spoke it out.

"Of course, the number of lives to be saved to form Fruit of Redemption accordingly changes with the species. It's related to many factors!"

"What about people? If I save people, will I also get the Fruit of Redemption accordingly?"

"Yes, you will!"

"What kind of Fruit of Redemption would I get if I save people?"

"I cannot answer this question, because it belongs to the most mysterious domain. With the exception of you, nobody could give you the answer!" Heller watched Zhang Tie in an interested way.

"I remember that I've saved a person when I attended the survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley. Why is there no Fruit of Redemption on the small tree? Even if it's not ripe, it should have formed at least!"

"Because all the fruits have to meet the lowest conditions to manifest. The more advanced the fruit is, the stricter conditions it will require. As the conditions to manifest the Fruit of Redemption

have not been reached at all, therefore, you've not seen it."

"Can you tell me how many people should I save to manifest a Fruit of Redemption accordingly?"

"1346269!"

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded. A fruit that could not be manifested before saving more than 1,300,000 people. What the hell! Additionally, it's just the standard to manifest it. How many more people should he save to make it ripe?

'All right, just forget this question!'

With his current ability, if he continued to ask, it was nothing different than seeking for insult and reducing his own enthusiasm. A guy who was still wanted had to be careful at all times so he should better forget this great undertaking by saving millions of people. Would this be considered by the emperor of the Norman Empire as a reason to pardon him?

"Fine, the last question. Are there really gods?"

"I can not answer this question!"

"Why?"

"Because I don't know either!"

Zhang Tie became speechless...

Chapter 261: A New Ability

After only staying with this spiritual being for half an hour, Zhang Tie had understood this person's general character and temperament and what was behind his ambitious personality.

Although Zhang Tie felt that he had done well, Heller was still not satisfied with the current situation in the Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, the ambitious steward had formulated a plan. The first step was to create a self-sufficient supply of food in the Castle of Black Iron and reclaim 60 mu of farmable field.

The second was to develop the all-round forestry in the Castle of Black Iron. He wanted the Castle of Black Iron to produce at least 5000 points of aura value a day, several times more than before.

The third step was to form a fresh water lake of more than 100 mu and a wetland of above 100 mu, aiming to build a three-dimensional ecosystem that was more suitable to the survival of species inside.

The fourth step was to build a real castle inside which matched Zhang Tie's status—the Castle Lord as Heller found the current log cabins were too embarrassing.

The above four steps were just Heller's short-term objective to make the Castle of Black Iron more like a manor and more inhabitable.

Hearing Heller's plan, Zhang Tie felt his shin cramping; especially when he heard the third step—a fresh water lake of 100 m and a wetland of the same size, Zhang Tie almost frothed at the mouth. God knew how much basic energy storage it would take to accomplish such a topographic creation. He was wondering whether he could collect enough basic energy storage to complete the topographic creation even by carrying mining ores for another six months.

However, as the Castle Lord, Zhang Tie didn't feel like disappointing Heller. To tell the truth, Zhang Tie found Heller was very useful. Therefore, he could only ask the question in an obscure way.

"Erm...your plan is very good. But have you considered as to whether the basic energy storage inside the Castle of Black Iron could support your plan!"

Heller watched Zhang Tie with an amazed look. "Won't Castle Lord solve the the problem of basic energy storage for the development of the Castle of Black Iron? Besides aura value points that could be produced by the plants inside the Castle of Black Iron, won't other basic energy storage and merit points come from Castle Lord's achievement from the outside?"

Heller's amazed eyes made Zhang Tie bashful once again. With the exception of his looks and personality, Heller was also very enterprising, which, in contrast, made Zhang Tie feel that he was just a rich second generation.

"I mean that although I could acquire some basic energy storage

from outside, that could only be done on the premise that the Castle of Black Iron was not exposed. Actually, each time I carried those materials into the Castle of Black Iron to throw them into the pool of chaos, I was taking a risk. With my current ability, I cannot ensure that anyone wouldn't hurt me and my loved ones once they know my secret. Am I clear?" Zhang Tie put it in a straightforward manner.

"This is truly a problem!" Heller thought it for a while before revealed another fascinating smile, "But I don't know whether Castle Lord has noticed that with trips after the Castle of Black Iron had completed it's upgrade—the interactive mode between the Castle Lord and the Castle of Black Iron through the space door has been established! At this moment, has the color of that space door in your mind has become verdant?"

"Yes, it has!" Zhang Tie recalled that information in his mind when he was in the auction before nodding, "You reminded me, I still don't know it means by 'Spiritual connection and interaction between Castle Lord and the Castle of Black Iron through the space door has been established' even now.

"It means that from now on, Castle Lord can directly send the items from outside to the inside of Castle of Black Iron or take the items inside out of the Castle of Black Iron. You don't have to access the arc door any more. You only need to hold an item and interact with space door of the Castle of Black Iron using your spirit. That item would then be automatically absorbed in or spat out. Items that are absorbed into the Castle of Black Iron would fall into your designated place or directly into the pool of chaos while the items that are spat out of the Castle of Black Iron through the space door would appear in your hand!"

Zhang Tie eyes seemed to have popped from their sockets.

"Castle Lord, don't be that amazed. It's just the most basic, portable storage function of the Castle of Black Iron. Previously, when you integrated with the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree, this function had already been started. However, at that time, the creator of this space hadn't expected that your spiritual energy would be that low. Therefore, this function was always unavailable until your spiritual energy reached the minimum requirements for activating this function!"

Zhang Tie finally understood, but he still couldn't fully accept it. Previously, he was wondering why he had to add basic energy storage into such an advanced space equipment by doing labor work like accessing the Castle of Black Iron in such a time-consuming and labor-intensive way. It turned out that that was because his low spiritual energy could not start these basic functions of the Castle of Black Iron at all just like how a weak kid could not even rotate the wheel and engage the gear of a car. This was really the most aspiring news today, "You mean I don't have to access the Castle of Black Iron to move in the items in and out?"

"Right, that's the basic space storage function of Castle of Black Iron. Based on your current spiritual energy, any item that you could move could be freely moved in and out of the Castle of Black Iron. Although this process would also consume your spiritual energy, compared to the former situation that you took items in and out by yourself, in this way, you could reduce the consumption of spiritual energy by 50%!"

...

Several minutes later, after Zhang Tie left the Castle of Black Iron, Heller officially took over the management on the mutation and evolution of the three living beings in the Castle of Black Iron—bees, earthworms and the basic aura yeast that has experienced mutation and evolution once.

Of course, the first round of mutation and evolution of the bees had failed. For the second round, Heller suggested to increase the input of aura value points in the queen bee. For earthworms, if they could succeed in one round of mutation and evolution, in Heller's words, the task of fertilizing the fields in the Castle of Black Iron would be their job. To realize this, Heller also changed the evolutionary pattern on earthworms from that of a collective pattern to an individual pattern. He would choose three earthworms and input 3 merit value points and 300 aura value points into each of them several times. The possibility of success would be higher in this way. Once it succeeded, the earthworms would gain greater reproductive abilities and reproduce a large amount of earthworms in the Castle of Black Iron.

For the evolution of the basic aura yeast, Zhang Tie didn't pay too much attention to it. After the yeast successfully evolved, it would be 100 times more difficult for them to complete the second evolution. Therefore, in a short period, Zhang Tie could almost ignore them.

As a space spirit being, Heller had great freedom to manage the Castle of Black Iron. But all the usage on the basic energy storage, merit value points and aura value points of Castle of Black Iron had

to be approved by Zhang Tie in advance. Therefore, the Castle of Black Iron was still under the control of Zhang Tie.

The moment he thought there would be some people working for him in the Castle of Black Iron from today on, Zhang Tie really felt like being a landlord. The best part, Heller and his three subordinates didn't need compensation...ha...ha...ha

...

Zhang Tie then reappeared in the bathroom in the hotel.

Standing there, he looked around the bath covered with beautiful Mosaic tiles. After rolling his eyes, he took up soap from the sink of the bathroom before connecting his spiritual energy with the space door. At this time, the space door felt like a mirror. After casting his spiritual energy onto the space door, it would "project" a weird and unstable wave onto Zhang Tie's hand. After adjusting it several times, that weird wave became stable and fully "locked" onto the soap in Zhang Tie's hand. Zhang Tie felt like he had put his hand into a storage compartment. Once he loosened his grip, the soap in his hand would drop off.

Several seconds later, the soap in Zhang Tie's hand suddenly disappeared like performing conjuring tricks and appeared on the table of the lab in the Castle of Black Iron. Several seconds later, the soap reappeared. After that, it disappeared and reappeared once again. Zhang Tie was so excited that he tried this for many times like a kid. He found that the spiritual energy that he would consume to carry a small soap in or out of the Castle of Black Iron was so low that it could even be directly ignored. Finally when that

soap disappeared from Zhang Tie's hand, it directly fell into the pool of chaos in the Castle of Black Iron and served as a bit of basic energy storage for the Castle of Black Iron.

Seeing a mouth-rinsing glass in the bathroom, Zhang Tie took up the glass as he started to focus his spiritual energy onto that spring in the Castle of Black Iron through the marvelous arc door. Gradually, something amazing happened as a lot of water directly poured in the glass from the air which even flowed out, causing Zhang Tie's hand and sleeve to become wet.

The water then stopped pouring in, leaving the water level at the mouth of the glass waving back and forth. "Bottoms up!", Zhang Tie burst out laughing loudly.

This basic storage function of Castle of Black Iron was marvelous. Truly marvelous!

Leaving the bathroom, Zhang Tie whistled and returned to the parlor. He glanced at the clock hanging on the wall of the parlor and found it was almost 1:00 pm. Therefore, Zhang Tie pulled down one end of the service rope of the parlor, the other end of which was connected to the information desk on the same floor by a fine copper pipe.

2 minutes later, that serviceman who had received Zhang Tie's "tip" pushed open Zhang Tie's door with a dining car and entered.

"How about the news?"

"The representatives of the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire had hurriedly left Kalur City in cars after they left the auction house, one to the north gate of Kalur, the other to the south gate of Kalur."

"Well, it's okay. You can take away the tableware on the table and leave" Zhang Tie waved his hand.

After gaining 1 gold coins so easily, the serviceman happily cleaned up the dining table and left politely.

"It seems that the plan to hunt the red-muling of the Sun Dynasty would fail. But, I've achieved too much today. I'd better be not get too greedy."

"Before returning to Jinyun Country, I'd better not make any trouble."

Thinking of it in this way, Zhang Tie instantly felt relieved.

As there was a subordinate auction in the afternoon, after looking at the time, Zhang Tie took a seat in the room quietly and started to recover his spiritual energy by practicing mental arithmetic by abacus.

After what happened today, Zhang Tie realized that his spiritual energy was far more important than he had imagined as spiritual energy was required to polish burning points, activate the Trouble-Reappearance Situation, form the binding chain, and even to use

the basic space storage function of Castle of Black Iron. Perhaps, there were many more functions of spiritual energy to be used for...

Chapter 262: News

The man who travels far knows more——this was what Donder always said before. After attending the auction in the morning, Zhang Tie truly understood the meaning of those words. Therefore, he was determined to attend that subordinate auction in the afternoon even if they didn't auction anything else except for golden uangs.

For Zhang Tie, an average juvenile who had grown up in Blackhot City since he was born, this auction was definitely a good opportunity to broaden his horizons. If not for selling that rune ring, it might take Zhang Tie many years to attend such an auction.

The first subordinate auction at 2:00 pm was exclusively for medicament and medical pills. In this auction, Zhang Tie caught sight of the low-level and medium recovery medicament. The low-level recovery medicament was auctioned in terms of batches. Each batch of low-level recovery medicament contained 50 vials. The bottom price for each batch of low-level recovery medicament was 1200 gold coins. The selling price for most low-level recovery medicament was about 1800 gold coins. In this subordinate auction, there were 86 batches of low-level recovery medicament that would be sold. After the bidding for the first group, the following offers and auctions went by very quickly. Most of the first offers in the following rounds would be close to the transaction price. Therefore, the 86 groups of low-level recovery medicament were soon sold.

Low-level recovery medicament could cure most bruises. As Zhang Tie had the preliminary recovery body, he didn't need these

low-level recovery medicament. However, he was concerned about his friends in Blackhot City, therefore, Zhang Tie bought one batch of low-level recovery medicament in the price of 1860 gold coins.

Medium recovery medicament was also sold in terms of batches with ten vials in each. The starting price was 1400 gold coins for each batch. The final transaction price was about 2100 gold coins.

What made Zhang Tie curious was that he had not seen advanced recovery medicament in the auction.

"Grandpa, why is there there no advanced recovery medicament at this auction?" A person in a brass mask sitting in front of him turned his head and asked a person dressed in the same way sitting beside him. Obviously, Zhang Tie was not the only one who was in doubt.

"Perhaps, this grandpa and grandson also here to broaden their horizons." Zhang Tie thought inside.

"Only a few alchemists can produce advanced recovery medicament. which would have long been ordered by those big powers the moment they went to the market. These items could rapidly cure one's wounds and save people's lives. Last year, a few advanced recovery medicament were still auctioned here, yet no more this year. At the same time, the price of low-level recovery medicament and medium recovery medicament also rose by 30% and 50% respectively in the last year and fewer flew into the market, alas..." The old man finally let out a sigh.

"How could that be?"

"Because winter is coming." The old man said in a low voice.

When the old man said this, the others beside also heard it. However, they all kept silent.

After the golden uangs, Zhang Tie saw some more marvelous medicament, among which, he caught sight of a set of concealment agents. A set of concealment medicament was composed of pupil-dying medicament, skin-changing medicament, hair-dying medicament and bleaching medicament. After dropping the pupil-dying medicament into eyes, the color of one's pupil would change. After drinking a skin-changing medicament, one's skin color would change. Hair-dying medicament was more convenient. You only needed to comb it onto your hair. Compared to that face-changing mask left by Donder, this seemed to be another way of disguising oneself. Especially the pupil-dying agent and hair-dying medicament, which looked more like woman's cosmetics. Only the skin-changing agent was the true drinkable medicament. The effect of this set of concealment medicament could last 2 months. If you wanted to recover your original look before the concealment medicament lost its effect, you only needed to drink the bleaching medicament. This made it very convenient.

Compared to the former expensive items, this set of concealment medicament was not expensive as its starting price was only a bit more than 100 gold coins. Few people would like to bid for it as they felt it was useless. Therefore, Zhang Tie successfully bought 3 sets of cross-dressing medicament at the cost of less than 400 gold coins in total.

In the next auction, Zhang Tie successfully bought 4 batches of golden uangs. It seemed that many alchemists attended this auction. Therefore, according to the rules of the Sauls auction house, each attendee could only bid for 4 batches of the same items. This made Zhang Tie's plan to buy over 10 batches of golden uangs to raise his real strength all at once in a short period fail.

Additionally, Zhang Tie found that when he raised his board to bid for the third batch of golden uangs, everybody focused their eyes on him. Almost nobody would compete with him as they all turned their heads to watch him, seemingly wanting to see through his brass mask. This made Zhang Tie's heart race as he didn't know that he had stood out so much. When Zhang Tie raised his board for the 4th batch of golden uangs, even wearing two masks, Zhang Tie still felt his face was itchy as the others' gazes made his face feel hot. In addition, even the auctioneer became more respectful to him. Like before, the 4th batch of golden uangs were also bought by Zhang Tie without any competitor.

It wasn't until this auction ended did Zhang Tie know why he became so eye-catching.

...

"Master!" When Zhang Tie wanted to leave, some people in the same house walked towards Zhang Tie and held him back. After that, Zhang Tie was surrounded by a great amount of people.

"Master? When did I become a master?" Zhang Tie felt strange as

he asked, "What do you hold me back for?"

Because Zhang Tie had eaten a voice-changing pill, nobody could judge his age from his low voice. Additionally, Zhang Tie was not tall. All this made people mistake Zhang Tie as an old man. In this case, they would always feel that Zhang Tie was a master in their heart——old age, aloof, arrogant and lonely.

"We are all alchemists who have attended the auction. We all come from the cities of the former Andaman Alliance. As there's a party of alchemists in the mansion at the top of the hotel, whether we have the honor to invite you there..."

"I'm not a master!" Although Zhang Tie didn't know why they mistook him for a master, but Zhang Tie still told them the truth. Although Zhang Tie was curious about the alchemists' party, he also knew that if he directly went there, he would definitely be revealed by others to the public. He didn't want to have so many enemies who were alchemists and felt they were being made fun of. Looking around the brass masks, Zhang Tie's heart pounded as a thought popped into his head——the master Abyan of Blackhot City might be among them. As he had killed Samira, he must have offended master Abyan. In this case, Zhang Tie didn't dare to attend that party at all.

Zhang Tie was right as Abyan was really among the alchemists, not only that, he was among the crowd before him.

Under the brass mask, master Abyan shone with a weird brilliance. With eyes fixed on Zhang Tie who was also wearing the mask, Abyan was planning something.

"As this master could buy 4 groups of golden uangs in the auction at once, they must be used to make strength-enhancing medicament. If you only wanted to study them, you don't have to buy so many golden uangs at once. Although some red-robe alchemists among us have mastered some secret about some strength-enhancing medicament using golden uangs, only real yellow-robe alchemists could master the full secret to absorb true strength from golden uangs. It would be our great honor if we could receive even a bit of your guidance!" Saying this, that person bowed towards Zhang Tie once again, while all the other alchemists bowed towards Zhang Tie.

In the world of alchemists, the powerful ones would always be respected. As a red-robe alchemist, Abyan could be called master in Blackhot City, then, as a yellow-robe alchemist who could stand on the brilliant stage of the 7th level of alchemists in the world was qualified to be called master in more places. Additionally, even among the entire circle of alchemists, a yellow-robe alchemist could still garner respect.

Zhang Tie silently swallowed his saliva as he considered how to solve this problem. He couldn't have imagined that only by bidding for some batches of golden uangs would he be brought so much trouble. "How should I deal with this? I shouldn't attend the party." He knew he could not offend so many alchemists at the moment as it could bring him many troubles. If he wasn't bidding for the 4 batches of golden uangs for making strength-enhancing medicament, what did he bid on so many for? If there's truly someone who was able ask him thoroughly on this affair, he would cause quite a stir.

As he could not think out other methods, Zhang Tie could only start the "Cave Barbarian Survival Mode" once again.

"I will not attend your party, I like to stay alone!" Zhang Tie answered without any mood.

"If so, where do you live, master? Whether do we have a chance to visit your mansion to learn from you!"

"I've told you. I don't like to be bothered!"

At this moment, many people had looked disappointed and unsatisfied. In their eyes, they've already been too polite; however, this weird yellow-robe alchemist was really rude.

Having worked in Donder's grocery store for so long, Zhang Tie sensed the dissatisfaction in the air.

"However, as I have met all of you here today, I will not let you down. I've got some experiences which might help you save a bit time on your way ahead!" Zhang Tie said in a solemn way.

"Please!" The other people bowed towards Zhang Tie for a third time.

Thinking of the paragraphs on the Fruit of Redemption that he saw for the first time, Zhang Tie slowly pulled out a sentence, "The secret of the strength-enhancing medicament is not in the genes of the golden uangs but in the extraction of the spiritual fire from

golden uangs!"

The moment Zhang Tie said this, the red-robe alchemists including master Abyan were shocked as they bowed towards Zhang Tie for the 4th time in a way 10 times more respectful than last time.

Most of the alchemists in the surroundings were familiar with each other. At the sight of these red-robe alchemists' attitude, they would definitely understand the value of Zhang Tie's tip. Therefore, they also hurriedly bowed towards Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, they firmly bore Zhang Tie's words in mind. "May I have your name, master?" In a brass mask, Abyan moved one step forward as he asked respectfully.

"I won't stay in Kalur City for too long. Therefore, my name is not that important!" Zhang Tie waved his hand like a real powerhouse and didn't ignore these people any more. He then directly walked towards the gate. As a result, all the other alchemists gave a way to him and saw him off in the most respectful attitude.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the words that he extracted from the the paragraph on the Fruit of Redemption could really frighten these people. Therefore, Zhang Tie silently let out a sigh.

"Never be that eye-catching any more." Zhang Tie seriously warned himself.

...

Soon after he returned to his room, he had received what he had bid for in the auctions——1 crystal pyramid, 1 group of low-level recovery medicament and 3 sets of concealment medicament. The staff of the Sauls auction house who had sent those items here told Zhang Tie that after deducting the price of the three items from the final price of that rune ring, all the rest money money had been transferred to the Golden Roc Bank. Zhang Tie could withdraw the cash over there.

"Where are the four batches of golden uangs?" Zhang Tie asked him, which was also what he was concerned about the most.

"All the golden uangs in this auction come from the exclusive farm of an elder of the Alchemists Association in Carlow Federal. According to the conventions, after the auction ended, the Alchemists Association would carry those golden uangs into Kalur City by airship. It would take 5 days. Therefore, the delivery time of the golden uangs is 5 days later!" The staff answered.

"5 days? That's alright." The seller was that generous, even though it seemed to be a convention. Zhang Tie then agreed. Additionally, he would also wait for the news about his family members in Kalur City during this period.

Zhang Tie then continued to live in the hotel. He only did three things a day——Eat, sleep and cultivate.

On the second day, when Zhang Tie watched the view from afar using a telescope on the balcony of the hotel, he really didn't see

the airships of the Norman Empire and the Sun Dynasty fight any more while the columns of smoke in the distance also reduced a lot.

On the third day, no column of smoke could be seen in the mountainous area. At the same time, he heard the news that the Sun Dynasty and the Norman Empire would cease the war.

During this short period, through practice everyday, Zhang Tie had adapted to the storage function of the Castle of Black Iron. Now, Zhang Tie could fill a glass with water from the spring in the Castle of Black Iron in a very smooth manner. He wouldn't let even a drop of water flow out of the glass.

After being completely familiar with this new function, Zhang Tie found that function was limited to a certain degree. For instance, Zhang Tie could not bring living beings into the Castle of Black Iron. Similarly, he could not bring out living beings out of Castle of Black Iron, even a mosquito.

Thankfully, he could teleport plants into Castle of Black Iron through this function and order A'gan, Aziz and Edward to sow them in the field. But he could not move even a grass out of Castle of Black Iron though this function, unless that grass had been pulled out of the soil.

Heller told Zhang Tie that this was the biggest feature of the space storage function. Because the space door in Zhang Tie's mind could only open due to the soul waves of Zhang Tie as a carbon-based life form, Zhang Tie was the only spiritual life form who could access Castle of Black Iron for free. Other spiritual lives

could not be brought in until that space door was opened for Zhang Tie.

On the 4th day, Zhang Tie finally received the news from his family members and the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

Chapter 263: Home Affair

Even if sending messages was expensive, Zhang Tie's family members still kept him up to date on all happenings within the family through remote communications.

Thirty years ago, Zhang Tie's father, Zhang Ping, was just an average member of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace in Jinhai City. Zhang Ping was simply an unknown youth amongst the young talents of the Zhang clan in Jinhai City, let alone across Huaiyuan Palace. He was a commoners in all aspects.

Zhang Ping's father, also Zhang Tie's grandfather, managed a large-scale shipyard in Jinhai City. Therefore, his family was rich and pretty reputable in Jinhai City. Zhang Ping's mother, also Zhang Tie's grandmother, was just the 4th wife. Zhang Tie's father wasn't even the eldest son, but the 3rd son of the 4th wife. Additionally, Zhang Tie's grandmother passed away early on. Zhang Tie's father became less influential. Although Zhang Ping didn't have to worry about living, in a big family with fierce competition, if you lost the concern of an important elder, sometimes you might have to face dangers one would never face before.

Zhang Ping's father was born with a mild temperament. Although his family conditions were not bad, he was average and he possessed no special talents. If he was born in an average household, he might able to live as he wished. However, he was born in a major power like the Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, it became Zhang Ping's illusion to live as he wished.

For people like Zhang Tie's father, even though he was average, he was still a descendant of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, which meant that he was doomed to be involved in various matters.

That year, Zhang Ping was forced to get married. He was selected by the Clansman Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace. Together with the other 7 male descendants of Zhang clan, he would marry into and live with the bride's family, another big clan in Jinyun Country.

In this day and age, amongst big clans, especially big Chinese clans in countries like Jinyun Country which was under the control of some big Chinese clans, connections through marriage became extremely common yet very important.

It was common because in this age, besides connecting with big Chinese clans through marrying daughters, marrying sons was also commonly seen. For Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, each year, many male and female youths with other family names would marry in. Meanwhile, many female and male youths with the family name of Zhang would marry into other big clans.

These connections through marriage were very important because it was closely related to how many people among the descendants of Zhang family would awaken their ancestral bloodlines—a great, unique talent of Chinese people. Generally speaking, the descendants of people who had awakened their ancestral bloodlines would also have a very high probability of awakening their ancestral bloodlines. Even other ancestral bloodlines that their forefathers hadn't awoken the possibility of being awakened. The more descendants of a Chinese clan that

could awaken an ancestral bloodline, the greater the clan would become.

Count Changfeng Zhang Huaiyuan, the founder of Huiyuan Palace of the Zhang clan had awakened a very powerful ancestral bloodline. Therefore, even though the direct line of descendants of Zhang clan were average, they still had the blood of Count Huaiyuan. If they could carry on the family line, they would be very useful.

Any big clan could not be sustained without fresh blood. Therefore, connections between big clans of the equal social position by marriage had also become the important occurrences in order to maintain the vitality of clans and absorb the the bloodline capabilities of other clans.

It was more like bloodline exchange between big clans.

Those who could connect with Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace through marriage were also powerful clans in Jinyun Country.

During this process, those male youths being married in other clans basically met the following requirements: first, they had not awakened the ancestral bloodline as the direct descendant of the clan and had no special talent nor position in the clan; second, they were healthy; third, they looked good and were well-behaved.

Each year, men coming of age among clans who could meet the above three conditions would marry into other clans through drawing lots. This had almost become the tradition of each clan,

not being exclusive to Zhang clan.

Unfortunately, Zhang Tie's father met the above conditions when he came of age and was selected through the drawing of lots. Therefore, he was going to marry in another clan on behalf of Zhang clan in a glorious way.

However, Zhang Ping didn't wish to allow this to come to pass as he had already fallen in love with a Chinese girl in Jinhai City. Although the girl was born into an average family, she was diligent, kind and good at making rice brew. The first time they saw each other, they fell in love and pledged to marry each other with parental permission. At that time, the two of them had already agreed to get married in one year. However, hearing the result of drawing lots, Zhang Ping immediately fell into abyss.

Almost no man would like marrying into another clan. Therefore, the process of drawing lots was totally open and fair; the result also became the authoritative order of the clan that nobody could resist. In the early years, even the grandson of an elder of the Huaiyuan Palace could not avoid being selected through drawing lots. He could only leave Huaiyuan Palace with tears in his eyes. let alone Zhang Ping.

As Huaiyuan Palace had very strict family regulations, in front of such a fact, Zhang Tie's father had no chance to struggle or resist.

Having been average for so long, Zhang Ping struggled in front of the decision of Zhang clan and made the bravest decision in his life——eloping with Zhang Tie's mother. Before elopement, in order to escape from Huaiyuan Palace's arrest, Zhang Ping even faked his

own death.

Zhang Ping succeeded. Nobody could have imagined that Zhang Ping who was always average before could do this.

Zhang Ping then eloped with Zhang Tie's mother and settled in Blackhot City, which was over 10,000 km away from Huaiyuan Palace. Although they suffered a hard life, they were still happy.

They could have lived on like this except for the accident in which Zhang Tie had awakened his ancestral blood tie during the period that he attended survival training. What Zhang Tie awakened was "precise throw". One the day he ignited his rear end burning point and activated his Strength of Qi and Strength of Blood, Zhang Tie's situation had been sensed by the blood-soul crystal of Zhang clan. Zhang clan searched for him for a long time yet didn't find him on the pedigree of Zhang clan, the Family Elders Association of Zhang clan were infuriated and delivered the order to figure it out. Finally, with the help of the huge family machine of Huaiyuan Palace, the fact of Zhang Ping's false death was figured out. Through some secret channels and clan relationships, Huaiyuan Palace found Zhang Tie's household in Blackhot City.

This time, Zhang Ping really committed a felony.

He refused Zhang clan's order and failed to fulfill his responsibility as a descendant of the Zhang clan. Then, he eloped with a girl by making a false death scene to cheat the Clansman Pavilion of Zhang clan. Although he would not be punished with death, he would suffer an extremely heavy punishment.

After being directly taken away by the elders of Clansman Pavilion from the Blackhot City, the moment Zhang Ping arrived at the territory of Zhang clan, he was immediately taken away by the law-enforcement team of Zhang clan and beaten in the prison of Zhang clan. Thankfully, Zhang Tie's mother, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law were safe and sound.

Right then, Golden Roc Bank brought Zhang Tie's message to Zhang Tie's family members.

After receiving Zhang Tie's news, Zhang Yang hurriedly went to see the elders of the Clansman Pavilion of Zhang clan and would like to exonerate Zhang Tie's father in the secret of "mental arithmetic by abacus" that Zhang Tie had discovered. When Zhang Yang sent a message to Zhang Tie in Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Ping was still in the prison as the elders of Zhang clan were still arguing about Zhang Yang's position.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's family were really experiencing hardships in Huaiyuan Palace.

——Dad is in a great trouble now. Huaiyuan Palace had strict, unwavering family regulations. Two uncles have helped us to settle down in Jinhai City and looked after us a lot. Because we haven't gotten your news and father was taken away by others, your mother has been sick and bed ridden. She even called your name in her sleep.

Wishing you a fast return!

By the end of the letter, Zhang Tie burst out tears. He couldn't wait to fly to Huaiyuan Palace to stay with his family and save his father from prison.

Zhang Tie thought that nobody was wrong on the elopement between his mother and father. It was just a matter of stance. Zhang Tie unconditionally supported and cared about his own parents. But he also knew that big clans always had strict family regulations. What his dad had done truly had violated the family regulations. It would not be possible for the Huaiyuan Palace to just ignore it. Such actions would risk the stability of the clan and prevent its continued longevity. What was the most important for Zhang Tie now was to leave here at once and stay with his family. If he stayed with his family, nothing could not be overcome.

Huaiyuan Palace had also sent a message to Zhang Tie——An airship of the Changfeng Business Group under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace would arrive at Kalur in 9 days. After it arrived at Kalur, Zhang Tie could return to the Huaiyuan Palace on it.

Before the airship arrived at Kalur, Zhang Tie estimated that he had enough time to go back to Blackhot City to bid farewell to his friends. This time, Zhang Tie didn't know when he would have a chance to come back to Blackhot City in the future.

The third holy war between humans and demons would soon start, which was gradually beginning to show on many different fronts. Zhang Tie didn't know what would happen in a few years or even tomorrow.

Zhang Tie's premonition was right. When the chaotic world arrived, nobody could tell him what would happen tomorrow. The golden uangs that he had bought in the auction should have arrived at Kalur City on the next morning; yet, they didn't. On the same day, many people heard a more shocking news than that the Norman Empire and the Sun Dynasty waging war towards the former Andaman Alliance several months ago.

——The whole clan of an elder of the Alchemists Association in Carol Commonwealth of the Blackson Human Clan Corridor which was consisted of 1876 people was culled over night. All the clan members had been killed.

The clan of this elder of Alchemists Association was the only one which mastered the skills necessary to breed golden uangs and other mutated animals which could be used to produce important medicament. Its disappearance was a disaster to all the alchemists. Without the key raw materials, alchemists across the Blackson Human Clan Corridor would not able to produce some marvelous medicament, including low-level recovery medicament, medium recovery medicament and advanced recovery medicament and some other medicament that could be used to increase personal strength.

It required an extremely amazing strength to exterminate such a clan with so many powerhouses over night. Even the an entire division of an army could not do this over night. However, what was strange was that the killers didn't leave any mark, it was like they simply evaporated into nothing. The elder's clan along with its breeding farms in Carol Commonwealth were directly burned into ashes. The killer's methods was really terrifying.

Since the second holy war between human beings and demons, there had been no elder of Alchemists Association being killed for over 200 years. What was more, this elder's entire clan was eradicated. This was like throwing a bomb into water that already had ripples. Its effect was evident. Even Zhang Tie who was far away in Kalur City also became the victim of this event. As a result, Zhang Tie's Fruit of Redemption based on golden uangs became history.

Hearing this news, all the alchemists in Kalur City became dumbfounded.

The Kalor Commonwealth and the Alchemists Association were infuriated. Two orders for arrest with the highest reward amount of 500,000 gold coins respectively spread over the entire Blackson Human Clan Corridor in one day.

"Is this the prelude of a chaotic world?" Zhang Tie was truly shocked.

On the same day, with the help of the Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie stepped onto the train heading for Blackhot City from Kalur City.

7 days later, Zhang Tie returned to Kalur safely. Before he came back from Blackhot City, he even went to Blapei. After leaving Blapei, Zhang Tie went to the base of the Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division. When he left the Iron-Blood Camp, Colonel Reinhardt and Major Guderian even drove Zhang Tie to the Kalur City where they bade each other farewell.

"Hopefully, we will have a chance to see each other again!" Major Guderian tightly hugged Zhang Tie.

"Hopefully, we'll be alive to see you next time!" Zhang Tie took out a caddy from his pocket and gave it to Guderian, "If there's a chance, give this to the Freo's family for me!"

Guderian opened the caddy. It was Zhang Tie's Iron-Blood Medal. Major Guderian nodded as he solemnly took it.

Zhang Tie then tightly hugged with Reinhardt.

"Come on, boy, I feel you might able to form Iron-Blood battle qi!"

"It's not a possibility, it'll happen!" Zhang Tie smiled, "I can tell you for sure that when we meet each other next time, you will not defeat me!"

Reinhardt then burst out laughing loudly...

...

On the 2nd day since Zhang Tie returned to Kalur City, the airship of Changfeng Business Group had arrived. It carried many expensive commodities, tea leaves and silk from the Eastern Continent to trade with some business groups in Kalur City.

On a morning with chilly wind, Zhang Tie boarded the airship for the first time. Then, the airship rose into the air and flew away along the wind...

Zhang Tie, who was going back to Huaiyuan Palace was almost a LV 5 warrior.

Chapter 264: On The Way Back

After his interest in the airship faded during the first two days of flight, the following days gradually became boring. Even above Blackson Human Clan Corridor, Zhang Tie still could not easily see human cities through the porthole.

When he looked down through the porthole of the airship he saw many of the same scenes. Continuous hills, rippling ranges, grasslands and endless forests. Everywhere he experienced was deserted and sparsely populated. He could not even see big towns or villages, let alone cities. After all, compared to the area of the whole Blackson Human Clan Corridor, the population here was too small. Due to people gathering in the cities in order to be protected by city walls, the chance to see a large-scaled human settlement outside of city walls would be very low.

Boarding the airship, Zhang Tie was placed in a berth cabin. After being bored with the tedious scenery outside the porthole, with the exception of eating and sleeping, Zhang Tie would always stay in his own berth cabin and quietly carried out his cultivation that could never be imagined by commoners.

He took out of the Class-5 crystal pyramid and put it under his bed. When he cultivated, he would sit on the top of the pyramid with a thin bed plate in between. The top of the pyramid was rightly facing towards the surge point on his rear end. Compared to the crystals that he used before, this Class-5 crystal pyramid's effect was much more powerful. With this Class-5 crystal pyramid, he could obviously polish his surge points faster using his spiritual energy.

Even when he didn't cultivate, the special effect of the crystal pyramid still made his cabin full of a comfortable energy and allowed him a clear mind.

The airship that Zhang Tie took was a large-scale hard-type airship which was longer than 200 m and almost as high as 70 m. The normal navigation speed of this airship was 110 km/h, which was a medium speed. Besides Zhang Tie whose status was special, there were 50 more passengers who left Kalur for Jinyun Country, including old, young, male and female. Many of them seemed like a family. At least from their clothing and personalities, Zhang Tie knew that they were the upper class who had received good education.

Zhang Tie was able to guess as to the reason why these people would leave Kalur. These people were all figures with sensitive judgment in the former Andaman Alliance. They had already noticed the potential dangers from this sudden war and many other signals. Therefore, they had started to leave the cities in the former Andaman Alliance and headed for the safer and more ideal places in their minds.

Jinyun Country would probably be the better place in their minds.

On the 4th day after the airship left Kalur, it landed to replenish coal, water and some other materials in a strange city. After rearranging for several hours on the ground, it continued its journey.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought it would be safe by airship. However, the fact was that, in this age, any trip outside the city walls would not be very safe.

On the 6th day, the airship encountered its first attack in the air.

At that time, Zhang Tie was in meditation. The urgent and short steam whistles woke him up. Zhang Tie then heard someone shouting loudly outside the berth cabin, "We are encountering attacks from dangerous creatures. We are encountering attacks from dangerous creatures. Everybody in place. Everybody in place. Passengers are to stay in their cabins!"

After that, Zhang Tie heard urgent footsteps outside the cabin.

If it was before, Zhang Tie would definitely stay in the berth cabin just like other passengers. However, the experience in Iron-Blood Camp had changed him. Zhang Tie hurriedly jumped off his bed and opened the door of his cabin before he ran out with the other people.

As the capsule was 20 m in width, the passageway outside the cabin was not narrow. When Zhang Tie ran out, much of the crew who were in uniform were busy. Some of them rushed to the deck, some rushed to the engine room and the weapon module. At the same time, those passengers who were enjoying the scenery below and taking breath of the fresh air on the opening deck hurried back inside. People who rushed outside like Zhang Tie were only the crew in uniforms.

"What are you here for?" When Zhang Tie reached the entrance to the deck, a 30-odd year old man immediately widely opened his eyes and stared at Zhang Tie. He was the first mate. When he boarded on the airship, he met him. Therefore, they just knew the opposite one's surname was Zhang.

"I was a soldier!" Zhang Tie answered in a low voice, "Perhaps I can help you!"

The first mate then took a careful look at Zhang Tie. Since this airship set off from Jinyun Country, Huaiyuan Palace sent a message to them to pick a person called Zhang Tie back from Kalur City. The first mate and the captain were the only ones on the whole airship that knew Zhang Tie might be a descendant of Zhang clan living on the outside, who was even wanted by the secret police of the Norman Empire.

A person who could be wanted by the secret police of Norman Empire was definitely not an incompetent man. Hearing that Zhang Tie was a soldier, the first mate then nodded only after one second, "Okay, the descendants of Huaiyuan Palace truly should not hide from danger!"

Zhang Tie then rushed onto the deck of the airship together with the first mate. At this time, the covers of the cross bows on the deck had been exposed. Rushing onto the deck, the crew rapidly sat back in their own launching positions to prepare to fire bolts.

Because this airship was mainly used for cargo instead of military purposes, all the cross bows on the deck were manual. The steam-driven power equipment was only used to provide a driving force

for the propellers of the airship.

Each launch position was matched with three crewman. The one sitting on the launch position put his feet onto an actuator like the pedal of a bike. Then, he started to rapidly move his feet by stepping downward one after another. Driven by the chains and mechanic gears, he completed the first round of actions including winding up and launching preparations. The whole process took him less than 20 seconds.

"A1 in place..."

"A2 in place..."

"A3 in place..."

"A4 in place..."

After being prepped for firing, all the launchers started to number off loudly. Zhang Tie looked at them from aside. He found this crew had very high military accomplishments. They could even match the regular army airships of the Norman Empire.

After the crew prepared well, the two rows of crewmen on both sides of the deck were on their marks, cross bows and bolts in hand.

"Take it, put it on and buckle up!" The first mate then threw a set of special equipment to Zhang Tie along with a cross bow.

It was a set of leather equipment, which was akin to an armor. After putting it on, he could fasten the safety buckle onto the two metal sliders fixed on the shipboard. Zhang Tie noticed that all the crewmen on the deck were wearing this equipment including the first mate. They all had fastened their safety buckles onto the metal sliders. Zhang Tie then imitated them. After rapidly putting on his clothes, he also fastened his safety buckle onto it.

The moment Zhang Tie fastened it well, the airship which was flying ahead immediately accelerated and turned right by greatly inclining rightward, causing the level of the deck incline almost 30 degrees towards right. Zhang Tie felt a strong wind. At the same time, his feet slid as he hurriedly held a metal handle on the deck to stand stably.

The whole airship drew a huge half arc and adjusted in a direction towards the right. After that, all the crew on the deck saw the dangerous creatures that were attacking the airship.

They were a flock of huge birds dashing downwards from the cloud in the distance. Zhang Tie focused his eyes and found a flock of black birds were flying towards the airship. They were so huge that each of them would be close to 3 m in width when they extended their wings. There were at least 40-50 huge birds.

When they drew closer, Zhang Tie could even see the long beaks of those huge birds.

Standing aside Zhang Tie, the first mate looked solemn as he

started to say loudly, "They are Iron-beak Ibis, a LV 4 mutated magical beast. Watch out!"

The airship avoided their attacks consecutive two times. But these huge birds were closely following the airship.

Looking at their beaks that were as sharp as swords, then to the gasbags on the top of the airship, Zhang Tie understood that these Iron-beak Ibis might cause huge damages to this airship.

Although there was a layer of special light-metal protective armor over the gasbags, nobody knew how long that layer of protective armor would stay safe under the continuous attack of those huge birds.

When these Iron-beak Ibis moved about 200 m away from the airship, the cross bows on the deck and inside the airship fired at the same time.

After hearing a light "weng" sound, Zhang Tie saw 6 of the dozens of Iron-beak Ibis spurting blood with feathers flying everywhere. Meanwhile, they dropped out of the sky. The other Iron-beak Ibis then fanned their huge wings and accelerated towards the airship.

In a split second, bolts rained down from the deck. The huge birds were very agile in the air. Though the bolts continued firing, only three Iron-beak Ibis were shot down.

When those Iron-beak Ibis rushed forward, Zhang Tie didn't pull

the trigger at once. Instead, he just fixed his eyes on one of them. When it had just avoided from a bolt and was close to 80 m away from the airship, Zhang Tie pulled the trigger.

"Gua!" Among the bird cries, that Iron-beak Ibis was penetrated by Zhang Tie's bolt and dropped out of the sky.

Almost the moment the Iron-beak Ibis fell, Zhang Tie heard a weird chatter. He then turned his head and found the first mate was holding a crossbow and shot down another Iron-beak Ibis by making use of the cover given by the spurting blood.

The first mate seemed not having noticed Zhang Tie's gaze. He then drew the bow and pulled trigger three consecutive times. One second for one bolt. After three bolts, three sprays of spurts of blood appeared in the sky again.

The remaining Iron-beak Ibis didn't rush towards the deck, instead, towards the gasbags. All of a sudden, the jarring sound of rubbing metal drifted above Zhang Tie's head.

The airship was under attack!

Chapter 265: Fight In The Air

Zhang Tie didn't understand that each time the airship passed by the depopulated zone, it would encounter an attack from some dangerous creatures. However, this attack had obviously brought big trouble to the airship.

The Iron-beak Ibis had very clear target—the gasbag covered with a thin layer of light metal armor. This made Zhang Tie fairly apprehensive. These Iron-beak Ibises were like clear-minded killers, who knew where to attack to make the crew the most terrified.

The crew on the deck and all the weapons inside were encountering a problem due to the maximum elevation. Once the Iron-beak Ibises reached above the gasbags of the airship, all the weapons would lose their effects. Therefore, the airship was always doing sophisticated maneuvers in the air and exposed those Iron-beak Ibises which were attacking the airship within the shooting angles of the weapons in the cockpits and on the deck.

The Iron-beak Ibises moved very fast with very clear targets. The airship was like a fierce horse who was harassed and attacked by a flock of gadflies and was dashing and jumping in all directions.

By then, Zhang Tie finally experienced the function of the deck fighting costume which was connected to the airship through safety buckle and fine steel wires. When the airship was finishing those rapid turns in the sky at the speed of above 100 km/h, if, without this safety equipment, everybody could only tightly hold something, let alone fight against those Iron-beak Ibises with

weapons.

However, all the fighting became harder less than five minutes later.

Besides the nice combat gains of the first wave of attack, in the later mutual attacks, most of the time, they could not get the proper shooting angles. Most of the crew had poor combat gains. The total combat gains of the four ballista on the deck could not match that of the first mate who used a cross bow. However, the first mate could only hit down less than 8 Iron-beak Ibises.

Besides the first mate, the most eye-catching one on the deck was Zhang Tie. He had hit down 2 Iron-beak Ibises less than the first mate with his cross bow.

Each time when the airship created shooting opportunities for the bolt shooting points on both sides of the airship by maneuvering at the maximum efficiency, Zhang Tie would calmly stand on one side of the shipboard. He would use one hand to firmly hold the hydraulic booster slider weighing over 40 kgs to put it on his belt while the other hand would hold the metal handrail beside him to fix himself. He just kept still like a rock and triggered the bow the moment the Iron-beak Ibises flashed across the board of the airship.

Each time the airship maneuvered towards, left, right, up and down, it could only provide one shooting opportunity for the crew on the deck. The first mate was very proficient when using a cross bow. Therefore, he could send two bolts in one second when the airship turned directions and hit down two more Iron-beak Ibises

than Zhang Tie.

Both the airship and the Iron-beak Ibises were moving very fast. Additionally, those Iron-beak Ibises were very smart. Once the airship changed the direction, all the Iron-beak Ibises then kept close to the gasbag of the airship in the fastest speed, leaving only one second for all the crew to shoot each time.

For others, seizing the one-second interval and shoot down the Iron-beak Ibises which were flashing by them at the speed of over 200 km/h, was really too difficult. For most of the people, soon after they caught sight of the Iron-beak Ibises would they lose their opportunities to shoot it.

However, right then, Zhang Tie found that he had adapted to the situation as he could always shoot down an Iron-beak Ibis which was flashing by him each time the airship changed its route. Almost at the same time, when the airship became transiently stable, he then loosed another hand and instantly held the hydraulic booster slider. With a sound of "Kacha", he would have put the next bolt in its place, making the cross bow ready for shooting for the second time.

On the entire deck, Zhang Tie might not be the one with the most battle gains, he was definitely the most relaxed. Much of the crew couldn't stand to glance at this juvenile who was only 15-16 years old.

Zhang Tie was not pretending to be relaxed. He was truly relaxed. With the upsurging spiritual energy, Zhang Tie felt that the speed of the Iron-beak Ibises flying by him was not that fast. In

the same period, Zhang Tie even felt like time was slowing down around him. Due to this slowing effect, Zhang Tie could clearly see the flight path of the Iron-beak Ibises. When the others were in a hurry, Zhang Tie triggered his bolt and would always hit the birds down.

Zhang Tie kept shooting down the Iron-beak Ibises one by one just like how he shot rabbits. Besides Zhang Tie, the first mate who was guiding the others on the deck was dripping in sweat.

In the soaring wind, a silver light metal armor with the size of 1 square meters slid off one of the gasbags from the airship. With a sound of "Hu", it flew by the crew on the deck at a very fast speed. When it passed by one arm of a crew on the left of the deck, the edge of that thin metal armor cut it, spraying a spurt of blood.

The crew being wounded kept silent as he still firmly held the cross bow. This time, not only the first mate, everybody else on the deck changed their faces.

Once the protective armor on the gas bags was torn off by the Iron-beak Ibises, the worst situation would arrive. Although the compartment-patterned gas bags were used, when the first piece of protective armor was torn off, the second protective armor would appear. The moment the protective armor was torn off, some gasbag would definitely leak gas. Although they didn't feel the impact of leaking gas, if it continued to leak gas like that, after a short while, the speed and maneuverability of the airship would definitely decline, which would be the true start of the disaster for everyone.

Once the airship lost its floating ability and was forced to land in the wild where was over 1000 km away from the nearest city. The cost that the Huaiyuan palace from 10,000 km away would spend for completing the relief of this damaged airship would even be able to build a new airship like this, let alone whether they could return to cities alive.

"Zhang Zhitian, Liu Yu, Qian Xitong, you three go upward with your men..." The first mate immediately sent the order.

Soon after he sent the order, ten more people rushed outside when the airship was going to be stable. They were all carrying their cross bows and started to climb up by pulling the rope ladder that was hanging down from the gasbags in three teams.

The moment they climbed up, the airship changed its direction once again. Due to its centrifugal force, the teams on the rope ladders started swinging. As they were several thousand meters high, if they fell off, they would break into pieces. At the sight of this, even Zhang Tie's heart raced.

The moment the rope ladder was thrown out, the crew on the rope ladders tightly held the ropes. When the rope ladders returned, they then started to climb up once again.

Zhang Tie recalled the tales of how sailors would fight in the sea as was told by Donder. He had not imagined that the crew on the airship were almost like those sailors. Sometimes, they were in more dangerous situations.

The sailors fought the sea while the crew of airship fought the sky.

"Cover them!" The first mate loudly shouted.

The Iron-beak Ibises swirling around the airship seemed to have discovered some people climbing upward towards the gas bags from the outside of the deck.

Zhang Tie had not seen Iron-beak Ibises before. However, at this moment, he felt those Iron-beak Ibises were really smart and strange.

The first mate then shot out two more bolts while Zhang Tie also shot out one bolt. At the same time, all the ballista and cross bowmen shoot bolts towards those Iron-beak Ibises which were attacking the teams of crew climbing on the rope ladders.

Five more Iron-beak Ibises were killed.

Under the cover of the others, the crew soon climbed onto the top of the airship through the rope ladders and disappeared within people's vision. After a short while, when the crew on the deck didn't shoot anymore, some Iron-beak Ibises started to fall off from the top of the airship. They had already started the counterattack on the top of the airship.

The Iron-beak Ibises on the top of the airship kept uttering "GUA GUA GUA" while the jarring sound of rubbing metal became less.

After another a few Iron-beak Ibises were shot off, fewer Iron-beak Ibises could be killed. Zhang Tie heard those people were growling when they fought Iron-beak Ibises on the top of the airship. At the same time, he heard people and Iron-beak Ibises wailing due to wounds.

The second piece of metal protective armor fell off. Even Zhang Tie could feel that the airship couldn't move as fast as before.

The first mate face grew increasingly gloomy. When he wanted to send the second team of people up, Zhang Tie calmly stood out.

"Let me try!"

"You?" The first mate fixed his eyes onto Zhang Tie's calm face while the others' eyes also fell onto Zhang Tie, "You might lose your life!"

"I once served the Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire before!" Zhang Tie calmly said.

Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire? The first mate's eyebrows jumped a bit and made the decision in a split second, "What do you need?"

Zhang Tie pulled out of a huge steel triangular-headed bolt which was over 1 m in length and 5-6 kg in weight and was specially designed for ballista. It completely mirrored a javelin.

"Give me two boxes of this kind of bolts!" Each box would contain 25 bolts which weighed over 100 kgs...

Chapter 266: Fight In The Air II

Only after serious consideration did the first mate decide to let Zhang Tie have a try because what Zhang Tie had just done represented his true strength.

The two boxes of bolts were soon taken out. At the head and the end of the Jasper box containing huge bolts, there were movable metal buckles that people could hold.

Four crewmen of the airship carried the two boxes of bolts onto the deck at their fastest speed.

"Do you need me to accompany you there?" The first mate asked Zhang Tie.

"No need, but thanks!" Zhang Tie replied as he fastened the movable metal buckles on the top of the two boxes with a part of the iron chain on the deck so that he could lift them up. Under everyone's amazing eyes, Zhang Tie lifted the two boxes weighing above 200 kgs by his left hand as he slightly nodded.

The airship then made another rapid upward rush. After another wave of shooting, two more Iron-beak Ibises were shot down. Before the airship stabilized, Zhang Tie had already started rushing onto one rope ladder from the deck with two boxes in hand and climbed upward.

When he was on the deck, he didn't feel it was cold. However, when he climbed several meters upward, Zhang Tie felt that it was

very chilly at the 2000-odd m altitude. His face even felt like it was being stung by the chilly wind. When he lowered his head, he found that everything on the land became much smaller. At this moment, what was under his feet was endless marsh and grassland.

As it was his first time being at such a high altitude, Zhang Tie felt a bit dizzy.

The animals in the marshland and the grassland seemed to not have noticed the fighting above them at all. Zhang Tie peered at the marshland and found an unknown creature which was much taller and bigger than an elephant was drinking at the waterside. In a split second, it was engulfed by a huge mouth from within the water. After that, the terrifying head which was even bigger than two trains sunk in the water once again, leaving the suddenly flying birds and the ripples on the water.

If the two animals were not large enough, Zhang Tie could never have noticed them from such a high altitude. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie directly oozed a cold sweat as he started to understand just how horrifying it was in such a depopulated zone so far away from a city.

Zhang Tie didn't know what the hell the animal beneath the water was or its level. Even though that creature had already lurked under the water, Zhang Tie could still feel the two huge icy eyes of that animal were gazing at him. It was watching the airship in the air like watching a prey, making Zhang Tie feel cold inside.

Compared to those unknown living beings in the marshland,

undoubtedly the Iron-beak Ibises who were crazily attacking the airship became charming in comparison.

Even though two boxes of bolts hanging on his arm weighed over 200 kgs, Zhang Tie could still easily climb the rope ladder. In the eyes of those crew and the first mate, the two boxes being tied with an iron chain were absolutely like two empty cardboard boxes. Only the tightening rope ladder that was bearing Zhang Tie's weight told everybody else that the weight on the rope ladder had already been over 300 kgs. Each step Zhang Tie made would make an extremely forceful deformation on the rope ladder.

"Cover!" With a loud exclamation from the first mate, the airship turned around again and threw Zhang Tie outward like a swing. At the same time, a wave of bolts flew off the deck and shot towards the Iron-beak Ibises which were rushing towards Zhang Tie. The first mate seized the opportunity and shot twice, shooting down the two Iron-beak Ibises who entered the shooting angles on the deck and wanted to attack Zhang Tie.

"Sh*t!" Zhang Tie swore inside, feeling that these Iron-beak Ibises were too cunning. After seeing the first three teams of crew climbing upward by the rope ladder, they had already known how to hold Zhang Tie back this time.

Was each navigation mission of the airship this dangerous? Zhang Tie wondered. This was also Zhang Tie's first time venturing so far away from a populated area. Previously, both the survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley and the war in Kalur where the Iron-blood Camp fought the Sun Dynasty were not far away from cities. Zhang Tie didn't have an intuitive feeling about

dangers in the wild. However, this time, Zhang Tie truly felt why people in this age would like to stay in the cities with high walls.

"Watch out!" Someone below shouted loudly.

This time, there were a total of six Iron-beak Ibises attacking Zhang Tie. Even though three were shot down, there were still another three rushing towards Zhang Tie from different directions. The Iron-beak Ibises' long bills were thrusting towards Zhang Tie like spears. Besides the bills, if he was scratched by the sharp claws of Iron-beak Ibises, it would be more dangerous than being scratched by the sharp claws of tigers and black bears. After all, they were LV 5 creatures.

Zhang Tie then swung back again and stayed close to the metal armor over the gas bag. With two boxes hanging over his left arm, his left hand tightly held the rope on the rope ladder. Seeing the two Iron-beak Ibises drawing close to him in a split second and intending to attack him, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes.

When the hearts of the crew on the deck raced, a silver light like a swimming snake suddenly appeared in the air.

When this silver light like a swimming snake appeared, the distance between the sharp bill of the Iron-beak Ibis which was closest to Zhang Tie and the latter was only 50 cm while the distance between the other two Iron-beak Ibises and Zhang Tie was respectively 2 m away and 3 m away.

Zhang Tie was like a live target hanging in the air.

"It's over! If this brat didn't show off and just stayed on the deck, he might be able to shoot off several more Iron-beak Ibises..." Many crewmen who were gazing at Zhang Tie suddenly thought up this.

However, after that, the silver light like a swimming snake appeared.

In a split second, it was raining blood while three Iron-beak Ibises turned into 6 pieces of corpses and dropped off the air. Due to wind direction, that blood rain even sprayed and dyed the faces of the row of the crew who were holding cross bows and were close to the shipboard on Zhang Tie's side.

With the exception of the first mate, nobody else had seen clearly how had Zhang Tie launched the attack.

After this round of attack, Zhang Tie accelerated his climbing speed. Moving faster with his feet and hands, Zhang Tie arrived at the top of the airship which was dozens of meters higher than the deck in a short while.

The first batch of the crew which had landed on the top of the airship were all suffering from wounds. About more than 10 Iron-beak Ibises were surrounding these crew and attacking them. Among the wounded crew, two of them had already laid on the metal armors. Buckling up their protective clothing onto the rope ladder, the crew were divided into two groups and were protecting the two lying wounded soldiers from being attacked further by

Iron-beak Ibises.

The present fighting scene was very fierce while the fresh blood from both men and birds were spraying everywhere.

As this location was so close to the port side of the airship at the top, Zhang Tie found one protective armor of a gas bag had slid off. Even in the heavy wind, he could still hear the sound of "si...si..." from that place, where the gas was constantly leaking outside of the gas bag. However, being not far from this damaged gasbag, other metal armors that were being attacked by Iron-beak Ibises were also tottering.

"Go to hell!" The moment he climbed onto the top of the airship, Zhang Tie had witnessed a crew member whose face was covered with fresh blood jumping up from the airship. When the sharp bill penetrated the location between his shoulder and his chest, he fiercely twisted the Iron-beak Ibis's neck before thrusting his dagger into the neck of the Iron-beak Ibis like killing a pig, slicing off its neck by thrusting several times.

The Iron-beak Ibis uttered a wail while flapping his wings crazily and being pulled down from the air. As a result, one person and one bird rolled over and dropped off the airship while spurting blood.

"Zhitian!", the other crewmen screamed loudly, eyes almost popped out of their eye sockets due to grief. His body would definitely break into pieces by dropping off from such a high altitude.

That person and that bird then rolled over towards Zhang Tie, who seized that person using his right hand. That Iron-beak Ibis then dropped off weakly and was blown away by the heavy wind.

After that, Zhang Tie seized the person with his right hand while the 200-odd kgs' bolts boxes were hanging over his left wrist. He then kept climbing upside with his left hand and two feet. When he reached the top of the airship where the slope had gradually become mild, Zhang Tie put that person onto a protective armor before rapidly buckling up the crewman's clothing onto the rope ladder.

At this moment, the other crew at the top of the airship were struck dumb with astonishment by Zhang Tie's sudden appearance and the person and the two bolts boxes in Zhang Tie's hands.

The airship then changed direction once again. A huge inertia almost threw everybody out from the top of the airship.

During this process, Zhang Tie rapidly laid down. He then calmly buckled up his protective clothing onto the rope ladder before twisting his two feet to move over the knots and firmly stepped on them like what the other crew members did.

After fixing his body, Zhang Tie opened the first box hanging on his left arm and held the first javelin-like bolt before throwing it out...

For Zhang Tie, during this bloody fight between him and the

Iron-beak Ibises, the most dangerous and challenging period was the dozens of meters from the deck to the top of the airship along the rope ladder. If those Iron-beak Ibises didn't stop him during this distance, after he climbed onto the top of the airship with enough huge bolts, fixed himself and gained a good viewpoint, everything would have been fixed.

One minute after Zhang Tie climbed onto the top of the deck, the first Iron-beak Ibis was penetrated by a spear and dropped off.

"Ah, it's been shot down by the bolt. That kid made it to the top!" Someone shouted loudly while everyone else was shocked.

"I wonder how many Iron-beak Ibises this young man can kill this time?" Thinking of this question, the first mate had already ordered the second team of crew to prepare for climbing onto the top.

Then, everyone looked up in astonishment...

Soon after the first Iron-beak Ibis dropped off, the other Iron-beak Ibises constantly dropped down like dumplings being put in the pot with boiling water.

The airship changed its direction once again.

This enabled people on the deck to have a chance to see what happened to the last two Iron-beak Ibises, which had been scared of being killed and wanted to escape far away. However, before

they flew 100 m away, two huge bolts from the top of the airship caught up with them at once.

With two final wails, the world became tranquil.

The whole process since he climbed onto the top of the airship to the end of the fight was less than 3 minutes...

Chapter 267: Loulan City

Three days later, the airship of Huaiyuan Palace landed in the airship base of a strange city in the desert to finish the second replenishment and the first maintenance for the airship after being attacked by the Iron-beak Ibises.

Although the Iron-beak Ibises' attack only paralyzed one gas bag, in order to maintain balance and stability during flight, the helium in the other gas bag being opposite to the paralyzed one was deflated. Additionally, the other gas bag's pressure was adjusted, causing the airship's flying speed sharply reduce by $\frac{1}{3}$ from above 100 km/h to 70-80 km/h.

Driving the airship required exemplary skill and technique. Zhang Tie knew how to adjust the airship to maintain stable flight after being attacked by Iron-beak Ibises.

During the past three days, Zhang Tie's status in the airship experienced a subtle change due to that fight with the Iron-beak Ibises. Although he was still a special guest living in the passenger module, most of the crew on the airship had been familiar with him.

When the airship prepared to land in the airship base of this city, Zhang Tie also walked out of his bedroom like the other travelers and arrived on the broad deck of the airship before enjoying the exotic city below.

What was most impressive to Zhang Tie was the 40-50 m high

terrifying cacti surrounding the city, which formed the city wall. Looking down from the air, the contour of this city was like that of a green clover. The middle of this clover was filled with strange domed architectures. In the middle of the city, there was a lake of medium size.

The airship base that could allow this airship to land was located beside that lake.

When he left Kalur City, it was winter when the chilly wind blew his face. However, when he arrived here, it was already spring as he saw a warm sun hanging in the sky. Standing on the deck, the passengers had already taken off their clumsy winter clothing.

"We are in Loulan City, the city of the desert. The total population in this city and its surrounding cities was 4,100,000!" When Zhang Tie was glancing over this city below, Zhang Zhitian had already appeared beside him and started to introduce this city for Zhang Tie.

After being saved by Zhang Tie on that day, Zhang Zhitian, who was two years older than Zhang Tie, had already befriended him.

"How are your wounds?" Zhang Tie looked at this young crew member whose skin had become tan due to being exposed to the sun for a long time. Zhang Zhitian had narrow and long eyes. Perhaps because he and Zhang Tie shared the same bloodline, Zhang Zhitian was a bit similar to Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder brother. This guy looked gentle but had unimaginably straightforward personality.

The moment he remembered how this guy fought that Iron-beak Ibis at the risk of his life on the gas bag, Zhang Tie silently shook his head. A book truly couldn't be judged by its cover.

Hearing Zhang Tie's inquiry, Zhang Zhitian showed a smile as he slightly raised his arm, "After using one low-level recovery medicament and daubing some wound gelatin, I'm much better now!"

"Ah, have you been met with this situation many times before?" Zhang Tie casually asked.

"How could that be? If each flight was that dangerous, the freight airship would be the target of those advanced mutated creatures."

"You mean this situation is rarely seen?" Zhang Tie became slightly dumbfounded.

"Not rarely seen, but extremely rarely seen. I've been in this airship for 3 years. However, I've never been in that situation before. Although I have encountered attacks of some mutated creatures and magical beasts before, I've never experienced such a scenario at all..." Zhang Tie explained to Zhang Tie patiently, "Although in your eyes, this airship could freely fly in the air, actually, the routes of the large-scale freight airships like this one are always fixed. On this route, the airships would not encounter the attack of advanced mutated creatures that could directly threaten the safety of the airship. This was an important consideration when we choose the route. If there were many

mutated creatures or magical beasts on one route, the airship would always choose to detour to this route. It's similar to navigation on the sea. Although the sea is vast, you can't go wherever you want."

Zhang Tie suddenly understood, "I also feel strange as those Iron-beak Ibises were so smart. They seemed to know how to avoid being shot from the deck. They especially choose the weakest places on the airship where our weapons could not reach!"

Zhang Zhitian looked at both sides and found that nobody was listening to them. He then lowered his voice and told Zhang Tie, "I heard the discussion between the captain and the first mate. They also felt this attack was weird. In the past years' navigation, we've never seen a trace of Iron-beak Ibises at all. However, we encountered so many of them at once, it was a bit weird."

"You mean someone was manipulating the Iron-beak Ibises?" Zhang Tie also felt a bit amazed.

At this time, after receiving the confirmation signal from the ground, this airship had already lowered its height above the landing platform in the base. When it was several hundred meters above the ground, the airship had already thrown down some huge ropes. After getting the ropes, the vehicles and personnel on the ground became busy. The airship, which was swaying back and forth due to the wind, instantly became stable and started to accelerate its descent.

Soon after looking down, Zhang Zhitian had moved his eyes away, "The Iron-beak Ibis have a sharp and long bill, therefore,

their threat to airships could rank top 3 among all the mutated creatures below LV6. As they suddenly appeared in the previously safe route in large numbers all the officers on the airship judged that someone was behind this event. If we had used a soft-type airship instead of the hard-type airship with an advanced gasbag-compartment design, all of us might not have been able to come back this time."

Zhang Tie took a deep breath. Although he had his suspicions about the event, when his doubt was verified, Zhang Tie still felt shocked inside, "Someone is targeting Huaiyuan Palace?"

"I don't know!" Zhang Zhitian shook his head, "But we will know soon enough. Loulan City, the city of the desert is the most important air hub within 2000 km. After landing in Loulan City, as long as they asked from other airships whether they had encountered something similar, the officers might be able to make a final conclusion."

"If there's really someone targeting the Huaiyuan Palace?"

Zhang Zhitian showed a proud smile, "As long as we return to the territory of Huaiyuan Palace, someone would definitely deal with those offenders! No one could escape crossing Huaiyuan Palace without paying the price!"

Zhang Zhitian's pride that didn't match his age also affected Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then also showed a smile. This was the confidence when one had a powerful clan on its back. With this confidence, even a young man on an airship of the business group under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace was as proud as Reinhardt

when he faced enemy. When he thought of Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace and the current situation facing his dad and his own family, Zhang Tie slightly sighed inside.

"Speaking of Huaiyuan Palace, I still don't know it well, could you tell me about it?"

"Sure, I think we will get at least rest 1 day after this replenishment and maintenance. As I'm recuperating, I can talk about Huaiyuan Palace with you!" Hearing Zhang Tie asked him about Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Zhitian showed a wisp of a smile on his tan face.

"Jinyun Country is a human country mainly composed of Chinese. We, Huaiyuan Palace, have been one of the six major clans in Jinyun Country for many generations. It has 8 cities, covering 500 miles and occupies one prefecture of Jinyun Country. The name of our prefecture is Huaiyuan Prefecture. Each master of Huaiyuan Palace who inherits the title of count Changfeng would be respected by all the members of Zhang clan. The master of Huaiyuan Palace is recommended by the elders of Zhang clan. However, in the past over 200 years, the masters of Zhang clan have been chosen from Donghai City..."

Zhang Zhitian carefully explained it as Zhang Tie started to clearly know about Huaiyuan Palace.

...

After the airship landed at the base, many people on the airship

moved about busily. Because the Loulan City was lacking mining resources, they sold the advanced alloys and weapons that they brought from Kalur City, bringing rich profits to the Changfeng Business Group.

After selling those commodities they brought from Kalur, Zhang Tie saw them purchasing a lot of items here. With the introduction of Zhang Zhitian, Zhang Tie knew that there were mainly three kinds of items they would purchase here: ruby; something in a mutated lizard which was used to make crossbows and bolts; and secretion from a special cactus which was used to close wounds.

When various commodities were entering the freight houses below the airship, all the items needed by the airship like water, coal, and food were also replenished.

After landing on the base, the maintenance of the gas bag's compartments were also underway.

After staying in the airship for many days, the moment the airship landed on the base, Zhang Tie could not even walk stably. Under the leadership of a group of familiar crew members, Zhang Tie wandered around the Loulan City as the scorpions and mutated cacti which protected the city deeply impressed Zhang Tie.

In the evening, the temperature suddenly dropped, causing it even colder than in Kalur. The passengers on the airship immediately felt the alternation between ice and fire.

On the same night, the captain, the first mate, and some major

figures frowned and sat in the control room of the airship.

"Have you asked about the news?' The captain asked a man sitting beside the desk.

"Yeah, except for us, five airships among the ones that came to Loulan City for replenishment and maintenance in the past three days have encountered the same situation. They were all hard-type airships being fitted with protective armors. After paying great prices, they reluctantly landed in Loulan City. Additionally, some other airships which had appointed by some business groups in Loulan City for delivery didn't arrive on time. All these missing airships were relatively old single-gasbag soft-type airships!"

Sucking his tobacco pipe, the captain narrowed his eyes and asked after a while, "Have you got the latest news about the clan of the elder of Carol Federal Alchemists Association being exterminated?"

"Not yet, although Carol Federal Alchemists Association's arrest warrant has been spread across the whole Waii Sub-Continent, those murderers seemed to have vanished into thin air." Saying this, the man glanced at the captain, "Is there any relation between the two events?"

"I don't know whether there's any relation between the two events but I do know that the world and the routes of airships have become dangerous once again!" The captain relaxed his eyes and spoke in a calm and solemn way, "Repair our airship as fast as possible; contact with those financial groups that have suffered from the attacks from those dangerous creatures and are headed to

the same station as us, we will form a group to leave Loulan City!"

"Yes, sir!"

Chapter 268: Promotion And Arrival

The heavy winds were still turbulent at a thousand meters in the air which caused Zhang Tie's clothes to make rustling noises. At this moment, Zhang Tie was running back and forth at the top of the gas bags as if running on the ground without any protective gear.

At this time, the red-snake sword in Zhang Tie's hand seemed like it had truly become a red snake. Each time Zhang Tie slashed out, there was a twisting snake shadow along with a silver light in the air.

Each time the snake shadow in Zhang Tie's hand twisted, there would be a spray of fresh blood in the air, which drove the remaining Iron-beak Ibises into a frenzy.

Being different from the last time when those Iron-beak Ibises would attack the airship, this time, Zhang Tie became the sole target of all the Iron-beak Ibises. Each Iron-beak Ibis in the air seemed to have great hatred towards Zhang Tie as they surged towards him one after the other.

The airship penetrated through the clouds at a speed of above 120 km/h...

The fight between Zhang Tie and Iron-beak Ibises was still underway...

"Is this the feeling of being a level 5 warrior? Is this how Invisible

Iron-blood strength feels?

One hour ago, Zhang Tie had eaten the latest Leakless Fruit, which directly helped him to ignite the 5th surge point on his vertebrae, sending him into the realm of level 5 warriors.

When he was promoted to a level 5 warrior, Zhang Tie felt his bones itch all over like numerous ants were crawling inside. However, he could not reach them by scratching. It was itchy to the extreme and after all his bones cracked, a wholly new sensation appeared.

Zhang Tie felt great strength flowing through each bone, promoting Zhang Tie's Hidden Iron-blood Strength to an entirely new level.

Invisible Iron-blood Strength! The new-born strengths were Strength of Bone and Strength of Marrow.

The number of people who could be promoted from Hidden Iron-Blood Strength to Invisible Iron-Blood Strength counted for less than one tenth in number, even in the entire Iron-Blood Camp of Noman Empire. However, Zhang Tie felt it was as easy as drinking water during the process like he had been well prepared and expectant of it. Even Zhang Tie was confused as to how that could be.

The red-snake sword driven by Invisible Iron-blood Strength started to present an utterly different strength than before. With the exception of a great force, each time Zhang Tie launched an

attack, there would be an agile, virtual snake shadow mixed with the sword qi.

Zhang Tie hadn't experienced this feeling of "one with the sword, one with the world" for a long time.

At a thousand meters in the sky, Zhang Tie jumped up almost 3 m from the top of a gasbag while the Red-snake Sword in his hand suddenly opened its bloody mouth like a dragon and engulfed the 5 Iron-beak Ibises in the air at once.

Only one Iron-beak Ibis was left...

The moment Zhang's feet left the ground, the last Iron-beak Ibis had already thrust his javelin-like bill in front of Zhang Tie's chests, aiming to fight Zhang Tie to the death.

During the past days in flight, Zhang Tie had grown very experienced in fighting Iron-beak Ibises. At the sight of the Iron-beak Ibis, he smirked inside as he just slightly tilted his body. In the meantime, the long bill of the Iron-beak Ibis was pinched under Zhang Tie's armpit.

When it stretched its sharp claws towards Zhang Tie, the latter also stretched his five fingers towards the Iron-beak Ibis's sharp claws.

When the bird's claws clashed with the man's hands, the claws immediately broke off, making a 'kacha kacha' sound.

With its bill being pinched, the Iron-beak Ibis couldn't wail but instead quivered all over.

"Heh heh, sorry, as you are the last one today, stay a while!" Saying this, Zhang Tie rapidly clipped the other foot and the remaining wings of the Iron-beak Ibis, causing them to completely break apart.

Being too weak to struggle, the Iron-beak Ibis stared at Zhang Tie with extreme grief and fury. Zhang Tie didn't show any mercy at all. After doing this, he rudely grabbed its bill. Pulling the half-dead Iron-beak Ibis, Zhang Tie ran two steps towards one side of the airship as he seized one rope and jumped off the gas bag of the airship, seemingly ignoring his own life.

Within several seconds, Zhang Tie had already fallen dozens of meters. When that rope automatically returned to the middle part of the gas bag, Zhang Tie lightly landed on the airship for a second as he swung outside once again. After that, the rope returned once again, this time, Zhang Tie loosened his grip while he was thrown onto the deck of the airship and steadily stood on it. The whole process was as graceful as an acrobat in high altitude without any protective measures. Additionally, during the process, the airship was rapidly moving.

What was even more amazing was that Zhang Tie was holding a crippled yet heavy Iron-beak Ibis.

There was nobody on the deck. Zhang Tie directly held the

anguished Iron-beak Ibis and entered the cabin. After that, he casually opened a door. Without even taking a look inside, he had already thrown the completely crippled Iron-beak Ibis inside.

No one was on the airship.

Haha, free time!

Zhang Tie trotted onto the third floor from the second floor. The third floor was mainly where the bridge was located. Zhang Tie then entered the bridge.

The bridge of the airship was at the highest position at the head of the airship below the gas bags. The bridge characteristically allowed for a broad vision with the nearly 1m-high and 270-degree circular, translucent and high-intensity glass windows, the driver would almost have no dead angles of vision.

Outside of the bridge were floating white clouds. As nobody was inside the bridge, the airship was moving forward in a straight line.

The door of the bridge was locked from inside. Because of the large-piece of translucent glass on the door of the bridge, Zhang Tie could clearly see the inside. Thinking of how he entered violently every time, Zhang Tie forced a smile.

'Bang', Zhang Tie directly kicked through the wooden door and made a big hole on it. After that, he put his hand inside the hole

and opened the door from inside.

Since he entered the bridge, this airship had become Zhang Tie's personal toy.

In the middle of the bridge was a good-quality rudder that could be held with two hands. On both sides of the rudder were a great number of operating levers of different heights and lengths. Below the rudder were two pedals that could be controlled by feet.

These days, after causing this airship to crash over 10 times, Zhang Tie finally understood the functions of these operating levers. Additionally, he learned how to pilot an airship. During these accidents, the most miserable one was when Zhang Tie pulled down the operating lever with a red handle at the very of the rudder, the airship fell down at a free fall speed, causing Zhang Tie's face to turn blue.

After this accident, Zhang Tie knew that the red operating lever was the emergency landing lever. As long as the lever was pulled down, the 12 gas bags of the airship would start to deflate at the same time. As a result, the airship would lose its buoyancy in the shortest time. When Zhang Tie pulled down this lever, he even hurriedly stepped down the steam-driven output pedal, pushing the propeller of the airship to rotate at a greater speed, causing the airship to rush towards the ground at a higher speed. As a result, Zhang Tie lost his life miserably.

This accident left a deep impression on Zhang Tie.

The fact was that as long as a person didn't fear death and had more lives, he could learn anything very quickly.

Zhang Tie drove the airship for over 2 hours and enjoyed it very much. After feeling that time was almost up, Zhang Tie left the bridge. Inside an equipment room beside the bridge, Zhang Tie skillfully carried a parachute bag before rushing onto the deck on the second floor. With a strange yell, he jumped off the deck...

"I'm here, hooah...hooah...ah...ah..."

After several seconds, a small white flower blossomed in the air...

After several seconds, the white flower landed on the ground smoothly...

After another few minutes, the whole world broke into motes of light.

...

Within a bedroom in the airship, Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he lay on the bed comfortably, revealing a wisp of a smile.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether what he had done was a petty trick, but he had some more feelings regarding the use of Trouble-reappearance Fruit.

The latest Trouble-reappearance Fruit was from Iron-beak Ibises. The first scene was on the airship. After fighting Iron-beak Ibises many times in the Trouble-reappearance world, Zhang Tie found that if he didn't want to stop in the effective time of the Trouble-reappearance world, he had to make sure the last Iron-beak Ibis didn't die. Under those conditions, the Trouble-reappearance world would not break into motes of light. With the exception of spiritual beings, nothing else was different than that in the real world.

As this Trouble-reappearance world was situated in the air, which was a opportunity rarely seen, of course, Zhang Tie wouldn't want to give up such an opportunity. After dying many times, Zhang Tie learned how to use parachutes and drive the airship. Additionally, he became more experienced in fighting with Iron-beak Ibises in the air.

Since they left the Loulan City, on the way, they didn't encounter any other dangers. The airship kept moving southward smoothly. Due to always being in a state of cultivation, Zhang Tie didn't know where the airship was currently located.

Today, the moment Zhang Tie exited the Trouble-reappearance world, he heard someone knocking on his door.

Zhang Tie opened the door and found that Zhang Zhitian was outside.

"What's up?"

"We've arrived!"

"What! We've arrived?"

"Huaiyuan Prefecture, we've arrived!"

Zhang Tie was inwardly shocked as he went to the deck together with Zhang Zhitian. On the ground below the airship was a great river that Zhang Tie had not seen before, the width of which might be over 20 km. The whole river twisted for as far as the eye could see and seemed to flow like a huge dragon below the airship. There were many steamers on the river, forming a very boisterous scene. Black smoke columns rose up from the chimneys of the steamers. On the sides of the river, Zhang Tie saw vast golden wheat fields dotted with several lofty castles erected on the plains on one side of the great river.

This initial image of the Huaiyuan Prefecture Zhang Tie imprinted within him the magnificence and richness of Huaiyuan Palace.

"This is Yuanjiang River, which belongs to Huaiyuan Palace. Tonight, our airship will arrive at the Yiyang City, where the headquarters of Changfeng Business Group is located, namely where the Clan Shrine of Huaiyuan Palace and the Head Palace of Huaiyuan Palace are!

"Huaiyuan Palace, I've finally arrived!"

Thinking that he could rapidly unite with his family members in this strange place, Zhang Tie took a deep breath, "No matter what, as I'm here, I will rescue my father from prison!"

Chapter 269: Zhang Clan

In the evening, after two weeks of flight, the airship that set off from Kalur finally arrived at Yiyang City, Huaiyuan Prefecture of Jinyun Country. Huaiyuan Palace of the Zhang clan shared the same name with the Huaiyuan Prefecture as the whole prefecture was the Zhang clan's territory.

For the first time, Zhang Tie felt the power of the Zhang clan. Through Zhang Zhitian's introduction, Zhang Tie knew that over 200,000 members of the Zhang clan were of direct blood relation to Lord Huaiyuan. Strictly speaking, among the crew of the airship, captain, first mate, technicians in the engine room, Zhang Zhitian, and Zhang Tie were definitely related to each other. Because they were all of the same bloodlines as Lord Huaiyuan, although from different branches of Huaiyuan Palace.

Lord Huaiyuan had eight wives and over 40 sons and daughters. Each of his wife's relatives had a city. The first wife's relatives had Yiyang City, the second had Xince City, the third had Guanxing City, the fourth had Qihai City, the fifth had Fubo City, the sixth had Yunzhou City, the seventh had Jinhai City while the eighth had Taian City. After several hundred years, the eight cities developed to today's scale.

Among the eight cities, Yiyang City was not only the capital city of Huaiyuan Prefecture but also the political, economic and cultural center of the Zhang clan in the entire Huaiyuan Palace.

Yiyang City was a coastal city, the prosperity and scale of which was 10 times that of the Blackhot City. Twenty-one million people

were living in this city and its surroundings. Yiyang City was not only the largest port in Jinyun Country, even if it was in the entire Waii Sub-continent, the annual trading throughout Yiyang City could also rank within the top three.

Zhang Tie only learned about the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace through the introductions of others before; however, when the airship drew close to Yiyang City, the power and accumulation of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace instantly impressed Zhang Tie, making him feel trivial in front of his clan.

The dense steamers in the port far away and on the sea and those various airships coming and going in the air were like scenes in the drawings for Zhang Tie.

At the sight of this, the passengers who came together with Zhang Tie from Kalur City were also excited as many of them loudly shouted in poor Chinese, "Yiyang...Yiyang..."

"Do you plan to settle down here in Yiyang City?" Zhang Zhitian asked Zhang Tie.

"I might go back to Jinhai City firstly. I'm not sure whether or not I will stay in Jinhai City later." After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie told Zhang Zhitian.

"This time, I've built up enough accumulate points as I've been on the airship for three years. Therefore, I plan to apply to join the airship troop of the Zhang clan. I want to be a real soldier and a captain in the future!" Zhang Zhitian replied, full of ambition.

"I hope that you're successful in your endeavors." Zhang Tie smiled.

During this period, Zhang Tie had learned about something on the airship. Many young men below 18 years old on the airship were interns. They had to follow the talent training system of Zhang clan. For most juveniles of Huaiyuan Palace, between the ages of 15-18 were the most treacherous period for members of the Zhang clan as the greater part of them didn't finish school but instead entered various industries to as interns. During this period, they would enter society in order to accumulate experiences and qualifications so as to confirm their later developmental orientation. After undergoing the coming of age ceremony at 18, they would become adults when they could enjoy numerous social rights and officially join the clan army as well as being entrusted with official titles and jobs.

Compared to the assembly-line talent education system in Blackhot City, the Chinese educational system in this age was much stricter. Juveniles like Zhang Tie who would be 16 in the new year were unable to join the clan army officially, let alone to be a military officer.

"I heard from the first mate that the talent that you used to shoot down those Iron-beak Ibises with bolts was an awakening of an ancestral bloodline, some sort of throwing skill?" Zhang Zhitian stared at Zhang Tie with sparkling and admiring eyes.

Zhang Tie forced a smile as he realized the difference in cultural backgrounds. This problem had long been puzzling him. However,

in Huaiyuan Palace, it seemed that many people knew the reason. Only after performing it once, his talent had already been identified, "It might be that. At the beginning, I didn't know what was going on, as my throwing ability became very precise immediately. I didn't know this was the awakening of Chinese ancestral bloodline before I came back to Huaiyuan Palace. Do any of your friends have the same talent as me?"

"Yes. He's was a classmate at school. When he attended the sports meeting, he suddenly awakened his ancestral bloodline. Although being average in archery, he won the archery competition that year!"

"The ancestral bloodline that he awakened was in archery?"

"Yes!" Zhang Zhitian glanced at Zhang Tie with a weird expression, "Don't you know that one of the two main ancestral bloodlines in the Zhang clan is in archery?"

Zhang Tie felt embarrassed as he revealed a smile, "I really didn't know about that..."

...

The airship finally landed in a base of Changfeng Business Group.

After bidding farewell to some friends that he had made on the airship, Zhang Tie took his luggage and got off the airship with the other passengers who came to Yiyang City for the first time. When

Zhang Tie was considering whether he would first buy a ticket to Jinhai City, he had already caught sight of his elder brother Zhang Yang, who was accompanied by two men in black uniforms. Behind them was a sedan.

"Elder brother!" Zhang Tie was thrilled as he hurriedly walked forward. The two brothers then forcefully hugged each other. Zhang Yang was also excited as the last time they met was several months ago. They felt like they had departed with each other during a life or death situation. Whether it was Zhang Tie or his family members, they had experienced too many troubles during this period.

"How's father? Has mother recovered?" The moment the two stopped hugging each other, Zhang Tie had asked two questions.

Zhang Yang firstly looked over Zhang Tie before revealed a smile, "Dad has been back home. Knowing that you're going to come back safe and sound, mom has also recovered!"

Zhang Tie became so happy as his greatest concern had been solved during this period. This was the greatest happiness, "Has dad come back?"

"Hmm, we will talk about the details when we get back home!" Zhang Yang looked at Zhang Tie as he started to introduce the two uniformed men to Zhang Tie, "They are personnel of the Clansmen Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace!"

The two men nodded towards Zhang Tie in a kind way.

Through Zhang Zhitian's introduction on the airship, Zhang Tie had already known the role of Clansmen Pavilion. This time, he would first declare himself innocent and mend things through the Zhang clan. Otherwise, he would definitely still be a murderer wanted by the secret police of Norman Empire in Jinyun Country.

After introductions, the four people got on the car. Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang sat in the back while the two personnel of Clansmen Pavilion sat in the front. After that, the sedan drove out of the airship base.

Sitting in the sedan, Zhang Tie told his elder brother about what had happened in the Kalur battle zone after he left Blackhot City as he widened his eyes to watch the scenery outside the sedan and exclaimed about the prosperity of this city.

There were so many vehicles on the road while passersby were walking on the sidewalks and the high-rises were erected right next to each other. The two sides of the road were filled with Chinese ad boards. Additionally, the passersby had various skin colors, although above 95% of them were Chinese with black hair and eyes. The frolic voices of Chinese kids drifted from the passersby. Seeing such a scene, Zhang Tie who had grown up in Blackhot City became relaxed as he suddenly felt a sense of belonging which originated from his bloodline.

Of course, the alleged Clansmen Pavilion was not that simple. It was the clan management headquarters of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Actually, it was a square plaza of more than 20 floors. The entrance of the plaza was safeguarded by guards. The

reason that the two personnel of Clansmen Palace brought Zhang Tie here was to finish the final confirmation about his status. The process was so simple that Zhang Tie couldn't have imagined it going so smoothly in his wildest dreams.

He was taken into a room in the plaza. On the table in the middle of the room was a weird black crystal, which was embedded on a silver base with strange runes. After that, under the supervision of the others of the Clansmen Pavilion, one personnel who had taken him here poked Zhang Tie's finger using a needle, causing Zhang Tie's blood to drop onto the crystal. Soon after that, the black crystal started to glow which symbolized the end of the authentication.

After finishing this process, Zhang Tie took a photo and filled in out two forms. Sitting in the lounge with his elder brother for less than 10 minutes, one personnel who had taken Zhang Tie in gave him a rectangular plate which was carved with sophisticated grains.

The greater part of this plate was made of metal, in the middle of its positive side was inlaid with a piece of translucent crystal, beneath which was the photo that Zhang Tie had taken just now. Below the crystal image was Zhang Tie's name which looked very delicate and special. On the back of the plate were the characters——Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

"This item is your ID certificate. You have it preserve it well. If you lost it, the results would be very serious!"

"How?"

"You will be fined 100 gold coins and be punished to do labor work for half a year. Besides, 20 clan donation points would be deducted!"

Zhang Tie let out a sigh. 100 gold coins meant 2500 grams of gold. The 20 clan donation points seemed also to be hardly gained.

"Do you mean this item is more valuable than gold?" Zhang Tie asked.

That personnel who had given the plate to Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Your status plate contains 7 rare alloys, among which, Hailan iron and peacock copper are 10 times more valuable than gold. This status plate also contained several secret craftsmanships which could not be made anywhere except for within the Zhang clan. You can hardly destroy it. If you destroy it, you would hardly restore it. At least in Waii Sub-continent, nobody could imitate it. The secret grains on the status plate contain the metal identification bar code formed by the steam analyzer in the Clansmen Pavilion, which is the symbol of your unique status and access. Do you think it's important or not?"

Hearing these words, Zhang Tie was so scared that he even became dumbfounded, "What are clan donation points?"

Chapter 270: Hidden Dragon Palace

"Clan contribution points are used to measure the family members' contribution to the Zhang clan's undertakings. To put it simply, you can regard clan contribution points as a special currency that could be circulated among the Zhang clan's subsidiaries and the Zhang families of Huaiyuan Palace.

When you make a contribution to a clan undertaking, you will gain clan contribution points. You can exchange these points for corresponding clan resources, which are only open to clan members. Generally, you can't even buy them with gold coins on the outside!" The personnel of the Clansmen Pavilion briefly answered Zhang Tie's questions.

"Can I exchange contribution points for secret fighting skills" This was what Zhang Tie was most interested in.

"Of course, this is just a single usage of clan contribution points. As you have arrived at Huaiyuan Palace for the first time, you might not know the importance of clan contribution points. You will know soon enough."

"How can I gain points then?"

"I can't explain it to you in one word. There are strict rules and regulations on achieving contribution points. For example, I am serving the clan as a member of the Clansmen Pavilion. Besides a daily salary, I can also gain three contribution points monthly! Those women who could give birth to kids after marrying Zhang

clan could gain an eight gold coins' subsidiary and 15 clan contribution points for each kid!"

Women can gain clan contribution points and a gold coins' subsidiary by having children? Zhang Tie finally understood how the clan developed over 200,000 direct bloodline descendants in only hundreds of years.

"I wonder if there is anything else?" Thinking of his parents that were still in Jinhai City, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to go back.

"There's another thing that I have to inform you of. Since you have not come in contact with the clan's orthodox education before and always stayed out of the clan system; the clan has not provided any help for you in your earlier life, even if you've come back to Zhang clan, you still have great freedom!"

"What do you mean?"

"It means that the Zhang clan and you are on equal footing with rights and obligations. Across Huaiyuan Prefecture, most of the members of the Zhang clan at your age were practicing everywhere after graduation. When serving the clan, they are also learning to improve their own talents and abilities. Those young men who have awakened ancestral bloodlines have all gathered in the Hidden Dragon Palace of the Zhang clan due to the regulations. However, you are free to choose whether you enter or not!"

Huaiyuan Palace was the official name of the Zhang clan to the public while Hidden Dragon Palace was an agency of the Zhang

clan, which was like the Clansmen Pavilion. Given the name, people would know the property of the agency, Hidden Dragon Palace.

"Do people entering the Hidden Dragon Palace need to strictly follow the clan's orders and lose many personal freedoms?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, those gathering in the Hidden Dragon Palace are all elites of the Zhang clan. Hidden Dragon Palace is almost like a military agency, in which, you will lose many personal freedoms and will have to carry out many dangerous assignments that average people at your age could not accomplish. The casualty rate of clan members who enter the Hidden Dragon Palace to cultivate themselves is 20%, namely, only 8 out of 10 people entering this place come out alive."

When the Clansmen Pavilion personnel said this, Zhang Tie's elder brother looked at Zhang Tie twice with concern, being afraid that Zhang Tie would promise to enter Hidden Dragon Palace.

"What benefits are there in Hidden Dragon Palace?" Zhang Tie casually asked.

The Clansmen Pavillion personnel smiled as he nodded. He seemed to be very satisfied with Zhang Tie's response after hearing his words——He didn't shake his head, instead, he calmly answered the question, "In Hidden Dragon Palace, you will get the most opportunities to gain clan contribution points, where, you could enjoy numerous quality resources of the clan and learn various secret clan knowledge and fighting skills. In the Hidden

Dragon Palace, you can also broaden your horizons. Those who could come out of Hidden Dragon Palace alive would basically become talents and elites of the Zhang clan who would assume great responsibilities alone!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "I choose to join the Hidden Dragon Palace of the Zhang clan."

Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Zhang Yang instantly stood up from his chair to object as he wanted to say something. However, after looking at that personnel of Clansmen Pavilion, he suppressed his desire.

"The headquarters of Hidden Dragon Palace is located on Hidden Dragon Island. If you want to go there, you can go to register next Monday, namely December 5th. If you don't arrive there on time, it will be assumed that you've given up."

"What certification do I need to take"

"None needed, you only need to take this plate over there."

...

When Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang left the building of Clansmen Pavilion, Zhang Yang who had always remained silent couldn't stand it as he started to ask Zhang Tie, "Do you know how much mom and dad worried about you when you were in Iron-Blood Camp? They were really afraid of you being in danger. This time,

you could've obviously chosen to not join the Hidden Dragon Palace, why did you choose to join?"

Zhang Tie watched Zhang Yang seriously, "Elder brother, if the holy war between humans and demons break out in the future, in which way do you think it'll be easier for us to survive? Would it be by the power of our family or by the power of Huaiyuan Palace? For our family, you and I could neither get rid of Huaiyuan Palace's clan system nor collapse in at the same time. If I join the Hidden Dragon Palace, it would be for the best as we could respond to any situation!" Zhang Tie patted his elder brother's shoulder, "Don't worry elder brother, since I was alright in Iron-blood Camp, I'll also be alright in Hidden Dragon Palace!"

After considering it for a while, Zhang Yang finally nodded, "If so, you'd better not mention this at home in case of our parents' concerns. You can tell them about this before you leave home two days later."

"Fine." Zhang Tie nodded as he looked at the two sides of the road, "How do we go back home, by train?"

"There's something more convenient than the train!" Zhang Yang waved his hands towards one side of the road. Soon after that, Zhang Tie saw a green car driving from afar and parked in front of them. Zhang Yang told Zhang Tie to get in the car which really startled Zhang Tie as he had not imagined that the car would directly park after being greeted like the carriages in Blapei and Blackhot City.

"Where are you going? The driver in uniform asked the two

people in the back seats of the car.

"Jinhai City!"

"Jinhai City is 240 km away from Yiyang City. It will take you 3 hours to get there and 3 more hours for me to come back to Yiyang City, you need to pay 12 silver coins!"

"No problem!" Zhang Yang directly gave the money to the driver.

After receiving the silver coins, the driver immediately drove away.

"What kind of car it is?" Sitting inside, Zhang Tie asked Zhang Yang out of curiosity.

"A rental car, it's convenient, right?"

Zhang Tie nodded as he thought that this was really a prosperous land. Even cars could be rented...

"Knowing that you're going back tonight, mom even made your favorite food for you!"

Zhang Tie felt like crying, "Fine, let's go back then!"

...

Less than 10 minutes after Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang left the Clansmen Pavilion, all the elders who were sitting in the Shrine of Huaiyuan Palace—the forbidden land of Zhang clan had known of Zhang Tie's choice.

"I wouldn't have imagined that this kid's mentality was not bad. As he chose to enter the Hidden Dragon Palace, he has the potential to be an elite!" One of the elders opened his mouth as he slightly nodded.

"According to the intelligence of clan, this brat was also a powerhouse in the Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire. He has even been awarded the Iron-Blood Medal in the Iron-Blood Camp. He must have killed numerous people on the battlefield!" Another elder said, "Although the opponents were all common soldiers of Sun Dynasty, he's still not an average person. He has the potential to be an elite!"

"But he's too lecherous. This brat slept with over 80 girls of the Rose Association within one week. That's too cock-and-bull. Thankfully, he didn't make them pregnant, otherwise, it would bring a great trouble to the Clansmen Pavilion!"

"That's trivial. No one can say they weren't romantic in their youth." Another elder smiled, "Hoho, if he's energetic and has awakened an ancestral bloodline, in the worst case scenario, we can gift him some more concubines, letting him make some contributions to extend the clan's bloodline."

"Great!" The other elders touched their snow-white beards as they seriously nodded.

If Zhang Tie knew that he would be a breeding machine in the eyes of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace in the worst case scenario, he wouldn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"It seems that his father, Zhang Ping, is suffering some light punishment this time. If he was set free, someone might imitate him in the future!" Some elder seemed to still be worrying about his father's affair.

"Zhang Ping pretended to be dead as he escaped with a girl. Although this violates the clan regulations, it's not as severe as being harmful to the other people or being unforgivable. Its impact is trivial. Even if we put him into the prison for 100 years, will it benefit the clan? There were also exceptions of which punishments were reduced by performing meritorious deeds. We deal with this affair not especially for the sake of him. As we've deeply learned about the secrets of Mental Arithmetic by Abacus in these days, we all know that this method is very effective in increasing the cultivation of spiritual energy and is of great benefit to the development of the clan. If someone imitated Zhang Ping by pretending to be dead and escaping with a girl from a destined marriage, as long as he could present the item of the same value as Mental Arithmetic by Abacus, it's reasonable to even exempt from his crime. If there are some more people like Zhang Ping, our Huaiyuan Palace will definitely be more prosperous!" The one who said this was the sixth uncle of Zhang Ping who had brought Zhang Tie's family back from Blackhot City. Sixth uncle was the head of Clansmen Pavilion, which was also one branch of Jinhai City of Huaiyuan Palace.

"As all the elders have made the decision. Let's call it an end. Don't mention it from now on!" another elder looked at the two elders who had spoken just now and genially relieved the atmosphere, "Two elders' intentions are all for the sake of the long-term development of Zhang clan. At this critical moment, we should make the sustainability and growth of the clan our largest priority!"

Hearing this elder's words, the two previous elders looked at each other and nodded.

"Recently, there was a number of abnormal turmoil in the Waii Sub-continent. Therefore, we should prepare for the incoming war as soon as possible..."

"Before each holy war, the demons' puppets amongst humans would raise turmoil so as to eliminate the people's overall strength to the largest extent by increasing their mutual suspicion and breaking their unity. This time, many more people would be the sacrifice of demons before the holy war arrives, alas..." Another elder sighed.

Chapter 271: It Sounds Great

In previous years, it always snowed in Blackhot City in December. However, 5000 miles away in Jinhai City, it had rained. Due to the rain, the air in the early morning seemed very nice.

This was the third day since Zhang Tie came to Jinhai City to reunite with his family members.

Although his father had suffered in prison for over 10 days, thankfully, the decision-makers of the Zhang clan still set Zhang Ping free due to the Mental Arithmetic by Abacus. Zhang Tie was told by Zhang Yang that it was mainly because of the sixth uncle of their father.

Because of sixth uncle's help, this tragedy, which might have caused their father to suffer in prison the rest of his life was finally cleared off.

Based on the generations, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang should refer to their father's sixth uncle as sixth great-uncle as he was an elder of the Zhang clan who was three generations higher than them. It was said that he was a cousin of Zhang Tie's grandfather. Their sixth great-uncle was very famous in Jinhai City as he ruled the Clansmen Pavilion and was the only member of Jinhai City's bloodline in the Zhang clan's elders association. He was evidently the Jinhai City's representative in the Zhang clan's elders association.

Hearing this news, Zhang Tie bore it in mind and must repay this

sixth great-uncle whom he had never met.

The Jinhai City bloodline of Zhang clan originated from the seventh wife of Lord Huaiyuan. Today, there was a total of 20,000-30,000 members of the Zhang clan in Jinhai City of Huaiyuan Palace. Although this number ranked near the last amongst the 8 cities of Huaiyuan Palace, the Zhang clan was really the number one clan and the most powerful ruler of Jinhai City.

As Zhang Tie's family had lived alone in Blackhot City for dozens of years, it really seemed like a dream to Zhang Tie's that he could be a member of such a great clan.

This morning, Zhang Tie's mom boiled a pot [eight-treasures porridge](#). She had started to prepare it since last night. In the early morning, Zhang Tie devoured the sweet eight-treasures porridge. He saw his mom's genial smile with fine wrinkles at the corners of her eyes, which reminded Zhang Tie of the time when his mom would watch him eat breakfast before going to school each morning when they were in Blackhot City.

Eight-treasures porridge includes eight ingredients like rice, carrot, vegetable, peanut, lotus seed, ginkgo, soya bean curd and taro. It is a traditional Chinese food usually being provided on December 8th of lunar calendar.

All the risks that Zhang Tie had experienced, the fights and struggles in the outside during the past several months had all disappeared in front of his mom's eight-treasures porridge. Instead, Zhang Tie only felt a warm sense of home flowing inside.

"Eat as much as you'd like, we've got more in the pot!" Seeing Zhang Tie's spoon moving slower, Zhang Tie's mom added another big spoon of porridge into Zhang Tie's bowl.

"Save a spoon for elder-sister in law, she needs the nutrition more than me!" Eating it, Zhang Tie mumbled.

"You know that your mom knows what do to!" Zhang Tie's father flicked at his forehead.

Although he had stayed in prison for more than 10 days, Zhang Ping seemed to not be suffering from any mental or physical troubles. At the sight of his father at this time, Zhang Tie felt his father had become more relaxed and revealed more smiles.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that the Mental Arithmetic by Abacus that he had bought at the cost of several silver coins from a roadside booth was so influential. The moment he thought of the benefits that the book had brought him, Zhang Tie felt that he hadn't fully learned its secrets.

In the past two days, Zhang Tie found that he could calculate the four operations on two 13-column abacuses at the same time more fluently. He felt his mindset was becoming more and more flexible after each visualization of the abacuses. He seemed to be gradually able to focus on two totally different things at the same time which was a marvelous sensation.

"Mom, last night, I went to that building on Xinhe Street that you told me about. My grandparents and eldest uncle's family don't live

there anymore. I inquired about it from others and was told that they had moved away ten years ago. It seems that they moved to Xince City. Since you had already fallen asleep when I came back, I didn't bother you." Zhang Yang reported to his parents about the news while he was eating the eight-treasures porridge.

Hearing this news, Zhang Tie's mom let out a sigh.

"Mom, don't worry, if you want to find them as soon as possible, we can release wanted posters in the newspaper. As they are still living in the Huaiyuan Prefecture, we will definitely find them!" Seeing his mother a bit sad, Zhang Tie hurriedly comforted her.

"Release it in the newspaper?" Zhang Tie's mom blinked, seemingly interested in this idea.

"Since we know they've been to Xince City, I will go to there with your mom when we're free. It's only several hours from here. We can hire people to find them too. If neither of these methods works, we will release it in the newspaper. As we are new here, it's better for us to be low key" Zhang Tie's father explained in a calm way.

Since they came back to Huaiyuan Prefecture, Zhang Tie also found that his dad became calmer in lieu of recent events.

Hearing dad's words, all the others nodded after thinking awhile.

After eating breakfast, the whole family was busy as they all

started to clean up after themselves and put on the new clothes that they had recently purchased. Especially his father as it was Zhang Tie's first time seeing him put on a double-breasted suit with a tie.

After putting on this suit, Zhang Tie's dad looked completely different from before.

"Dad, you really look like a dandy in that costume!" Zhang Tie kidded.

"Alas, I've not worn it for dozens of years. I don't even know how to prepare my tie anymore." Zhang Tie's dad sighed.

Thinking back to the period when Zhang Tie's dad usually wore a set of somewhat white working uniform and struggled for the whole family's livelihood by getting up early and going back home late in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie would feel like crying. Thinking of this, he increased his resolve to join Hidden Dragon Palace. As he had grown up, it was the right time for him to assume the responsibility for his family.

When it was almost half past nine in the morning, Zhang Ping's brother, Zhang Tie's eldest uncle, came to pick them up.

Zhang Tie's eldest uncle was over 50 years old, who looked 60% similar to Zhang Tie's father. Besides, he looked a bit gentle in a pair of glasses. Nevertheless, he was a bit fatter than Zhang Tie's father and looked like he had been used to a noble's lifestyle.

Because Zhang Tie's eldest uncle usually came here during this period, they had been familiar with each other. Therefore, they got straight to the point.

Zhang Tie's family then got into a black three-row sedan and left their current residence.

Jinhai City was also a coastal city. It was not as prosperous as Yiyang City but was still a large city. Jinhai City contained 3.4 million people. As the manufacturing center of Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, its manufacturing accomplishments were even above that of Kalur. Half of Jinyun Country's steamers and one-fifth of its airships came from the manufacturing factories in Jinhai City.

When the car drove onto the coastal avenue of Jinhai City, Zhang Tie saw numerous docks of different sizes on the sea and the harbors in the far.

"Let's go to visit our shipyard first, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang have not seen it yet." Sitting in the front row, the eldest uncle turned back and spoke to Zhang Ping.

Zhang Ping nodded, "Fine, let's go to have a look then. I've not been there for a long time. I'm also wondering how it looks now."

"Dad has merged two more shipyards in past years. Now, the Milkyway Shipyard could rank top three in shipbuilding in terms of scale and strength in Jinhai City and top five in Jinyun Country. Now, our shipyard mainly builds off-shore fishing boats weighing

from 500 tons to 2000 tons, Yuanjiang-class passenger liners and rapid destroyers that we've bid for from the navy of Jinyun Country. Dad is full of ambition that he prepares to start the program of 10,000-ton pelagic fishing ships next year and officially push the Milkyway Shipyard into the ranks of 10,000-ton ships manufacturers!"

"Our former shipyard didn't have the ability to produce 10,000-ton pelagic fishing ships. Is the new shipyard under construction?"

"It will be completed in two months. As our former shipyard started from building fishing ships, we've got many assets in the past years, we could also be able to build 10,000-ton pelagic fishing ships!"

"As pelagic shipping is an industry of high risk and high return, ships that are adapted to pelagic shipping are produced in accordance with orders, which pose very strict requirements on various aspects. Our new shipyard has not been completed, how have we received orders?" Zhang Tie's dad became slightly startled.

"The orders come from our Zhang clan. I also feel strange about that. Last year, the Changfeng Business Group, the Pelagic Fishing Company and the Pelagic Steamers Company under the affiliation of the Zhang clan almost tossed some development plans at the same time, which increased the demands for 10,000-ton pelagic fishing ships, pelagic passenger liners and pelagic freighters by several times. It looks very rash and a bit absurd. I don't know how could they be that confident. What is more absurd is that their plans had been approved by the council of the Zhang clan of

Huaiyuan Palace. the first set of capital to renovate the Milkyway Shipyard is interest-free loan provided by Huaiyuan Bank. As for the orders sent by the Pelagic Fishing Company, as long as the first 10,000-ton pelagic fishing ship is paved with its keel, the Huaiyuan Bank will prepay 40% of the shipbuilding cost for Pelagic Shipping Company. It's great preferential treatment. In Jinhai City, besides our shipyard, all the other shipyards have received similar orders."

Hearing the discussion between dad and eldest uncle, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang sitting in the back of the car exchanged glances with each other with astonishment. Neither of them had ever imagined that their dad was born into such a great clan, who's shipyard ranked top three in Jinhai City and top five in Jinyun Country. It sounded great.

Chapter 272: Relatives

Milkyway Shipyard was located in the cove of Jinhai City. It occupied 1.16 million square meters of land area and 1.28 million square meters of the sea. The dock's shoreline lasted 1400 m. Including the soon to be completed 10,000-ton dock, there were six docks and berths of different sizes. Recently, the Milkyway Shipyard could produce various fishing boats, passenger liners, and freighters as well as medium and small-sized naval vessels. It employed over 4000 workers. With assets of about 7.5 million gold coins, the Milkyway Shipyard could rank top three in Jinhai City in terms of scale and manufacturing strength.

Such a great undertaking had been accumulated by five generations after over 100 years of development. Since the beginning of Zhang Tie's great-grandfather's grandfather to Zhang Tie's grandpa, the Milkyway Shipyard of Jinhai City completely changed its status from a tiny rough berth which was opened to repair small fishing boats to a large-scale shipyard which enjoyed a high rank in Jinhai City, even in Jinyun Country.

Zhang Tie's grandfather played an extremely influential role. Since Zhang Ping's father took over the family business, its assets were less than 100,000 gold coins. Through his dozens of years of management, the scale of the shipyard increased ten times over.

Hearing his eldest uncle's introduction, Zhang Tie started to admire the elder whom he had never met.

After paying a visit to the Zhang clan's shipyard, in addition to Zhang Tie's newfound understanding about the circumstances of

his father's family, Zhang Tie was able to develop a picture of the overall situation.

Zhang family's old home was a beautiful estate which occupied over 20 mu, namely about 13340 square meters. From the outside, although it didn't appear very magnificent, it was every bit that of rich and powerful family's home. In the old house, Zhang Tie finally experienced this family's background.

Zhang Tie's grandfather had four wives. Including Zhang Tie's father, Zhang Tie's grandfather had 11 children, five of which were daughters, with the remaining six being sons. Among the five daughters, two were married away from Huaiyuan Prefecture and didn't come back today, the other three daughters were in the Huaiyuan Prefecture and had all comeback today. Among the 11 children, Zhang Tie's father ranked eighth. Therefore, besides two younger uncles and one younger aunt, Zhang Tie had four elder aunts and three elder uncles. After the introduction, Zhang Tie could still remember his uncles and aunts' faces and names. However, when his uncles and aunts' spouses had gathered here, making Zhang Tie feel dazzled.

Zhang Tie finally understood why Huaiyuan Palace would create a Clansmen Pavilion. Since there were so many relatives, if such a professional agency wasn't created to manage personnel affairs, nobody would know the relationships between clan members anymore.

When Zhang Tie came back to the old family home, he had 20-30 more elders. Additionally, Zhang Tie had over 20 cousins, some of which didn't join the family party due to various reasons.

Additionally, many of Zhang Tie's cousins had children. Therefore, Zhang Tie also had 10 nieces and nephews.

Among Zhang Tie's nieces and nephews, the eldest had been 12 years old, only 3-4 years younger than Zhang Tie. As they were still too naughty, they didn't even feel like calling Zhang Tie uncle.

Amongst all the relatives and elders, only the members of Zhang Tie's father's blood brothers' families felt more genial. Others, although being also very passionate, looked slightly curious but mostly indifferent towards Zhang Tie's family.

Zhang Tie didn't mind this either. After all, they hadn't been in contact for dozens of years, it was impossible to have no estrangement among the brothers and sisters with the same father and different mothers. Let alone, there were many underhanded plots like struggling for family properties in such rich family. Zhang Tie's father might be viewed as a competitor who would share the properties of the family in the future in someone's eyes.

...

"Zhang Ping, where does your family live?" At supper, when Zhang Haitian, Zhang Ping's father, asked him in a calm way, all the other people at the 5 tables in the dining hall instantly became quiet. Even the servants who were serving dishes in the dining hall stood aside and didn't move anymore.

"Papa, Zhang Ping's family came back too abruptly, I arranged for them an average apartment on Xinhai Road." One of Zhang Tie's

elder uncles spoke out.

The Zhang Haitan slightly nodded.

"Papa, I fail to consider it properly, when eighth younger brother and sister-in-law came back. I've didn't prepared well, causing them to suffer discomfort." At the sight of their father being silent, another elder uncle of Zhang Tie's sitting at the main table hurriedly opened his mouth. He was the eldest son of the first wife and was called Zhang Lin. He was also the designated successor of the of Zhang Haitan and the future head of the family.

Of course, Zhang Lin should be meticulous at this moment.

"As we came back too suddenly and didn't want to bring trouble to the home, I didn't notify eldest brother. I beg for eldest brother's forgiveness. We feel right at home in the apartment. With three bedrooms, one parlor and one dining room, it's enough for us." Zhang Tie's father hurriedly explained.

All the elders of Zhang clan knew the details surrounding Zhang Tie's return. However, nobody mentioned the affair about Zhang Ping escaping marriage by faking death. They all knew what was happening yet didn't reveal it, making it seem as though Zhang Tie's dad had wandered in the outside for a personal undertaking for dozens of years.

Looking at Zhang Ping's face which seemed older than that of the other brothers, the Zhang Haitan went quiet. No one knew what he was thinking. "Previously, we didn't treat you well, causing you

suffer a lot of bitterness outside for all these years. This time, as you've come back, you can share 5% of the shipyard of the family. With this share, you could only participate in sharing profits of the shipyard instead of daily management."

Hearing Zhang Haitan's words, Zhang Tie's father directly stood up from his chair. Looking him in the eyes, he firmly told his father, "Papa, the scale of Zhang's shipyard is due to the efforts of you and my elder brothers. As I was not at home all these years and had not made any contribution to this home, I've always felt shameful about what I've done. Therefore, I will not accept this share. If you insist on that, you are forcing me and my family to leave Jinhai City!"

Zhang Tie had not realized that his dad was so strong-willed. Seeing his father looking back at him and his elder brother, Zhang Tie didn't speak but revealed a brilliant smile as he silently raised his thumb towards his father below the table. Zhang Tie's elder brother also nodded towards Zhang Ping with a smile. Looking at the two sons' expressions, Zhang Ping felt warm inside and released tears.

Zhang Tie saw that his mother was also smiling as she grasped Zhang Ping's hands under the table. At the same time, Zhang Tie's elder brother silently patted on his wife's thigh twice.

After looking over Zhang Ping for half a minute, Zhang Haitan felt uncomfortable as he also let out a sigh of disappointment.

"Dear, even though Zhang Ping doesn't want a share off the shipyard, why not directly give him the manor in Changman,

letting them settle down in Jinhai City. As Zhang Ping's two children have grown up, it's time for them to get married and have their own undertakings. If you're concerned about them, it's not too late for you to take care of your grandsons." Sitting beside Zhang Haitan, his first wife slowly said.

The elderly person moved his eyebrows as he glanced at Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang and slowly nodded.

"Eighth younger brother, if you aren't even prepared to accept one manor, you'll really make us uncomfortable then." Zhang Lin opened his mouth once again.

"Thank you, dad, I will accept the manor. We will move there tomorrow!" After thinking for awhile, Zhang Tie's father made the decision as he sat at the table once again. Seeing this, Zhang Ping's elder brothers sitting on the same table nodded too.

Not knowing whether it was an illusion, Zhang Tie felt that when his dad accepted the manor, many people present let out a breath as the atmosphere became lively once again.

"Zhang Yang, it's said you've just retired. What's your plan?" Zhang Haitan turned to Zhang Yang and asked him seriously out of concern.

On hearing this question, Zhang Yang was relived as he had discussed it with Zhang Tie in the morning. Zhang Yang had long made the decision, "As Huaiyuan Prefecture has a well-developed trading industry and gathers numerous commodities from both

east and west continents, I'm preparing to start a trading firm!"

"Is there any problem with capital?" Zhang Haitan went straight to the point.

"No, I will start small. I plan to buy a storefront in Jinhai City. After slowly developing the skills, I believe that I can succeed!" Zhang Yang proudly answered.

Zhang Haitan nodded. No one present derided Zhang Yang's low threshold. This was due to Zhang Haitan usually repeating on phrase.—As long as a person could steadfastly push forward, sooner or later, he would succeed.

"What about you Zhang Tie, what's your plan?" The Zhang Haitan now focused on Zhang Tie.

"I will report in Hidden Dragon Palace next Monday!"

When Zhang Tie uttered this, the whole room became quiet once again as everyone cast their eyes onto Zhang Tie with mixed expressions of amazement, surprise, admiration and shock. Everyone present knew what Hidden Dragon Palace was. From its name it's meaning could be derived. It was the gathering of the elites of the Zhang clan. Everyone who joins Hiding Dragon Palace and survives would be the elites of the Zhang clan. Almost all the members of the Zhang clan's elders association and those big figures who ruled the crucial agencies of Huaiyuan Palace had undergone training at Hidden Dragon Palace.

Because Zhang Tie had told his parents about his plan yesterday, his family members were not stunned about this. Previously, Zhang Tie thought that his parents would disagree with his plan. Zhang Tie had not imagined that both of them would support his decision.

"Fine, fine, fine..." The Zhang Haitan started to laugh loudly, "I wouldn't have imagined that two of my progeny would awaken ancestral bloodlines and enter Hidden Dragon Palace, hahaha..."

"Your cousin is also in Hidden Dragon Palace. He's not back today. When you arrive there, you can contact him..." Zhang Lin also smiled as he said this. However, Zhang Tie saw something else in the eyes of his eldest uncle...

Chapter 273: A Trip At Sea

The steam-driven engine of the small passenger liner had been in operation for almost five hours. Sharply contrasting to the jarring and monotonous sounds were the tweets of the seagulls that flew over the sky and the sounds of the sea waves surrounded the liner.

The passenger liner broke through the winds and the waves, creating snow white water droplets which flew high into the air and sparkled under the sunlight like silver beads, causing Zhang Tie to slightly narrow his eyes as he was standing on the deck of the second floor and gazing at the sea in the front.

Today was Monday, December 5th, the day when Zhang Tie was going to register at Hidden Dragon Palace.

It was a good day today. Thinking of when he was attending the beer festival in Blapei last month and was heading for his new life on the sea at this moment, Zhang Tie couldn't help but sigh the miracle of fate.

Thinking of those affairs, a girl with black eyes reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind——Pandora! Before he left Kalur, this was the very name that Zhang Tie concerned the most.

Pandora's family had suddenly left Blackhot City. Nobody knew where she had gone. It seemed as though she was never there in the first place. She was like a drop of water jumping and falling back into the sea without warning. She disappeared, leaving no signal at all. Even her neighbors didn't know when they had

moved away.

Alice's family also left Blackhot City. When they left there, Alice left a letter and told Barley to hand it to Zhang Tie——Alice's father took her and her mother to Nordinburg, the capital city on the North Border of the Norman Empire.

Beverly worked as a nurse at a hospital in Blackhot City. The girls of Rose Association also lived their own lives like before. That absurd affair seemed having been a distant memory.

The former City Guard Army of Blackhot City had completely disbanded. The No. 39 Division that defended Blackhot City had started the official expansion of its establishment. Most of his partners and friends at school had joined the army. Only a few of them didn't pass the physical examination for joining the army.

Fatty Barley didn't pass the physical examination due to his asthma. Sharwin didn't pass because he was too weak to reach the minimum standard to be a new recruit of the Norman Empire. The other one left was Potter——the juvenile who was cheated into being a fire holder in the mining cave because of his flatfoot.

Compared to that of the former Andaman Alliance, the conditions for joining the army of the Norman Empire became much stricter.

Zhang Tie had always been sorry for Potter. Only Potter was digging in the mines when the others of the Gods Bliss Association had joined the army when Zhang Tie left the Blackhot City. He was

still trying to improve the "Big Bliss Skill" through mining. Besides expecting for Potter to give it up by himself and letting Barley take care of him when necessary, Zhang Tie had no other ideas to aid him. Facing the weak Potter's eyes which were as firm as fire, Zhang Tie couldn't even stand to tell him that as a joke.

"Argh, look, dolphins..."

Hearing the surprise, Zhang Tie was instantly drawn back into the reality. Zhang Tie then shook his head and drove everything about Blackhot City out of his mind. What counted most now was to improve his own strength. If he had strength, it would be no problem for him to bring everybody that he knew in Blackhot City along with his family member to the East Continent when the holy war between human and demons started. However, for the time being, he was just a tiny shrimp in the torrents of destiny, who could only jump at the bottom of the water and could not even see the direction ahead.

On the sea in the distance, some dolphins were jumping out of the sea and played alongside the steamer. Zhang Tie looked back and five more people were standing beside him on the deck.

Three of them were male, while two were female. They were all older than Zhang Tie and carried weapons. The three males all had tiger-like shoulders and bear-like waists. The moment Zhang Tie caught sight of them, he knew that they were warriors. One of the two females was over 30 years old while the other one was 17-18 years old. The older women had a slim waist and thrusting breasts while still looking valiant and heroic. Although looking a bit experienced, she was still very enchanting and as mature as a ripe

honey peach. The younger lady had almond-like eyes, peachy cheeks and a pair of long legs. She also looked very beautiful. Although being younger, she was taller than that 30-odd-year-old woman.

The exclamation just now was from this young lady. She was looking at the dolphins in the distance and clapped her hands out of excitement.

"Even now sister Fu likes dolphins so much, why not let junior brother Yu catch two for you after you've advanced to level 6 and form battle qi. I think once you make a request, junior brother Yu will never refuse no matter what trouble he will encounter. Right, younger brother Yu?" The 30-odd-year-old woman casually joked.

"Senior sister Fang, don't tease me!" The 17-18 old girl stomped her feet as she sneered at the man who was most handsome among the three male.

The male looked even more bashful than the woman as his face had already blushed the moment he heard the joke. He then stuttered, "If...if junior sister...Fu likes it, we can go see the dol...dolphins!"

Junior sister Fu...junior brother...senior sister...Hearing those official appellations with Chinese features, Zhang Tie could almost guess their status. They must belong to a certain Chinese sect as was usually mentioned by Donder.

A Chinese sect was a fresh concept for Zhang Tie. In his mind, a

sect was an organization that was a melting pot that had clans, business groups, academies, churches, guilds, and even an army. It was a group that was tied together through similar interests and personal attachments.

A sect was rarely seen in other places except for Chinese countries. Zhang Tie had not heard about any sects in the Andaman Alliance. Although he had seen many churches, academies, fighting clubs and various secret teams even the relations between teachers and apprentices, he knew they were all scattered traditional inheritance systems.

In Hebrew-spoken areas, sects were most close to schools. Compared to schools, the greatest difference between sects and schools was that all the sects were involved with beliefs and idolatry, yet beliefs or idolatry might or might not exist in schools. Schools were more flexible on management. Sects focused on belief yet schools focused on secret knowledge. They all had their own features.

Because it was his first time to contact the people in a certain sect, Zhang Tie kept enjoying the scene as he paid attention to their chat. Seeing Zhang Tie was just a 15-16-year-old juvenile, they didn't care about him either as they started to chat for free.

Their topics soon shifted to their target on this trip from "junior sister Fu" and "junior brother Yu".

"It's too expensive. It takes each of us 15 silver coins for only several hours of travel on the sea. This is no different than robbery. In other places, it might not take 5 silver coins for even

one day's trip on the sea!" A person complained.

"Junior brother Feng, no more complaints about that. As it's the first time for you and Junior brother Yu to come out to form battle qi, there are things you don't know. If you were in other places in Jinyun Country, you might not be able to enter the underground world even if you spent 10 times the amount. Recently, five entrances towards the underground world have been discovered in Jinyun Country. Besides this one on Hidden Dragon Island where you could enter for free, three of the others have been occupied by the big clans of Jinyun Country and you're not allowed in unless you pay 5 gold coins each time. The last entrance is in the Yangui Mountain Range. That entrance was over 1000 km away from Yangui City. You can also access them at your will; however, besides a few great fighters, nobody could arrive there."

"Senior brother An, you mean Huaiyuan Palace has done a good thing?" Junior brother Feng questioned.

"Heh heh, the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace is so rich that it occupies 8 cities and enjoys the benefit by being adjacent to the sea. Even if the gold coins gained from trades between east continent and west continent were many times more than the benefits gained through this entrance to the underground world. This Hidden Dragon Island is far away from the coast. It's wiser to open it to us than building a new city and dispatching soldiers here for a good reputation. Additionally, people will gain various useful items by hunting magical beasts in the underground world which will be inconvenient to take away. Therefore, most of them will choose to trade the items directly on Hidden Dragon Island, which will definitely bring great benefit to the Changfeng Business Group under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace!" Senior brother An

explained.

"That's really shrewd!" Junior brother Yu sighed.

"It doesn't only rely on fortune for Huaiyuan Palace to reach such a scale. Based on their means, of course, they will carry out their plan very well so that they could gain others' praise and benefit others." senior sister Fang answered.

"Senior sister Fang, I heard the magical beasts in the underground world are very large and fierce. Even the black spider of the lowest level is as big as an ox."

"Don't worry, junior sister Fu. Although those black spiders are very fierce, your senior brother An and I have encountered them before. This time, it won't be difficult for us to deal with those black spiders at all. Your senior brother An and I will definitely help you three form wind-breaking battle qi safe and sound. We will not start advancing to level 7 until you three reach level 6. By then, you can just stand aside and observe what it's like to assail to level 7 from us.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie turned back and prepared to leave the deck. At the same time, a glimpse of a land could be seen from afar. Looking at the passenger liner driving towards that big island. Zhang Tie knew that must be Hidden Dragon island.

The moment he left the deck, Zhang Tie had heard the sound of splashing from under the liner. Zhang Tie felt the sound of the water was a bit strange. Before he turned back had he heard an

exclamation behind him and the powerful clashes between weapons accompanied by some furious growls and muffles.

Zhang Tie turned back and saw one more person on the deck.

A person in watertight clothing with scattered hair was standing in the middle of the deck, his hair dripping water. That man's eyes were incredibly alert as he continued to scan the deck. However, his weird fingers were tightly grasping the throat of "junior sister Fu", who looked to be in quite the amount of pain and had completely lost her ability to fight back. The people who had been together with "junior sister Fu" had been thrown away and lying far away on the deck. Junior brother Yu and junior brother Feng were struggling to climb up from the deck while senior brother An and senior sister Fang were standing several steps away with an ugly look in their eyes. Senior sister Fang's hands were quivering. She looked pale. The corners of senior brother An's mouth revealed a wisp of blood. The moment they fought the mysterious man, they had been wounded.

Behind the man was a rolling fighting qi, presenting the image of a serpent.

After another splash, one more young man, less than 20 years old, suddenly appeared on the deck, who had a naked upper body and was barefoot. He was casually wearing a pair of underpants and was rotating a water-breaking dagger[1] in hand. He looked at that man in a distant way, "Let her go, as you've been reduced to such, why do you have to involve in an innocent girl to make you more guilty?"

"Bull****!" Holding her throat, that man loudly shouted. As he looked at this young man, he drew the girl closer to his side and carefully hid behind her, "You jump off the boat and let the boat turn back to send me back to the mainland!" That man had been raving loudly.

"You've violated the laws of Huaiyuan Prefecture on Hidden Dragon Island, do you think that you can still escape?" Even if you can get to shore, do you think that you can escape from Huaiyuan Prefecture? Don't be that naive." Playing with his water-breaking dagger, the youth became more cordial, "As I've chased you for three days, we've gotten familiar with each other. Save me some face. I will give you a quick death so that you can go to hell as soon as possible and I can go onto submit my mission as soon as possible. From then on, we will not interfere with each other, how about that?"

"F****" Before the man loudly swore just before a shiny long sword had penetrated his throat. His eyes popped out of their sockets as he tried to look back who had stabbed him but failed.

His battle qi totem and shortly after, his life, were both now gone.

The man fell down as junior sister Fu who was under his abduction also hurriedly ran away from the man with a terrified look.

At this time, a handsome male youth in white clothes was holding a long sword and standing behind that man. Nobody on the deck had noticed from when had this youth appeared behind

that man, including Zhang Tie.

Seeing the man lying on the deck, the youth in white clothes shook his head, "I really wonder how could you reach level 8; after being chased for three days, you didn't even know how many people were chasing after you. With such a poor aptitude, you dare to do business at any cost? Your intelligence is really..." The youth flicked the long sword in a cool way so as to clean off the blood dripping from it. After that, he raised his head and looked into the sky, "What a tragedy."

The moment he finished the word "tragedy", the youth in white clothes had already jumped up from the deck and spun twice in the air while putting his sword back into the sheath before he threw himself into the sea like a dolphin. He directly disappeared into the sea without making any splash.

"Why do you always act cool ahead of me and then leave me deal with the remains?" The other youth with the bare torso who was playing the water-breaking dagger muttered as he walked towards the corpse and searched it thoroughly. He then got a bag from the corpse and opened it in front of everyone. He then took out of a round red bead from the bag. After looking at it for a while, he nodded before put it back into the bag and took it away.

"When the ship arrives at the port, someone will come to deal with this corpse." After saying this, the youth playing the water-breaking dagger instantly jumped into the sea from the deck.

At this moment, the deck had been surrounded by a lot of passengers. Most of the people who came to the Hidden Dragon

Island would be fighters who had been used to battles. Therefore, after noticing what happened on the deck, many people didn't feel afraid at all, instead, they all ran out of their rooms to watch.

It was really a splendid fight.

"This dead guy looks familiar!" One onlooker said.

"He's Deng Tong, the Monster of the Sea. He's the head of the pirates wanted by the Qilan Country. I didn't imagine that he could be killed today!" As there were hundreds of passengers on the deck coming from all walks of life, the moment someone felt the one lying on the deck was familiar, someone else had already recognized his status.

"I heard Deng Tong excelled at swimming in the sea and had some secret techniques. He's known for not drowning to death after staying in the sea for seven days. He's escaped pursuit many times in Qilan Country due to this excellent talent. He even reversed the situation in the sea and killed pursuers twice while at sea. I didn't think that he could be killed near Hidden Dragon Island. He was chased after by others and jumped onto the ship. Alas, his luck finally ran out."

"If he had behaved well and hadn't stolen items while killing people over on Hidden Dragon Island, why would he have been killed. It's said that Deng Tong was just level 7. I think he was here to promote himself. However, he had never imagined that he could lose his life right after promoting to level 8!"

"Who are the two youths chasing after and killing Deng Tong just now?"

"They must come from the Hidden Dragon Palace of the Zhang clan. Hidden Dragon Palace is the place where the elites of Zhang clan cultivate themselves. It's said that people who cultivate here have all awakened their ancestral bloodlines."

After letting out a few sighs, the onlookers left. However, after looking at the corpse on the deck, many people warned themselves that they should never perform any questionable activities on Hidden Dragon Island based on their own strength.

...

"Junior sister Fu, are you okay?" Junior brother Yu looked at his junior sister Fu nervously. His junior sister Fu didn't recover her composure until he repeated this question many times.

"Argh...I'm okay!"

"Thankfully, you're okay, I was really worried about you!" Junior brother Yu let out a sigh and smiled. However, he had not noticed that his junior sister Fu was absent-minded at this moment.

Only senior sister Fang sighed inside after looking at younger sister Fu's face, The two young men are too handsome and talented, especially that youth in white who had saved junior sister Fu. After seeing that person, junior sister Fu's eyes didn't even

move away from him. What's that person's last sentence? Sigh! Junior brother Yu, what a tragedy!

...

"Hidden Dragon Palace..." Zhang Tie muttered this name twice inside as his eyes began to shine. After glancing at the three males and two females on the deck as well that Monster of the Sea's corpse, he returned to the cabin together with the rest people.

...

Twenty minutes later, the shadow of Hidden Dragon Island grew increasingly larger on the horizon.

Hidden Dragon Island was a big island under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Prefecture. It was 190 km away from the continent and covered 340 sq km. It was densely covered with woods and surrounded by mountains.

Being on the same island together with Hidden Dragon palace was the "Dragon Hole on the Island" which was known as 1 of the 5 entrances to the underground world...

Chapter 274: Newbie

Hidden Dragon Island was surrounded by mountains. Its coast was covered with dense rapids. Under the surging waves were strange and jagged rocks. The only wharf on the island was to the north, which was located between two steep leeward ranges which extended into the sea. The terrain was pretty precipitous.

The waterway entering the wharf was a winding path. The mountains on both sides of the waterway were covered with karst caves of different sizes which were formed due to weathering, water erosion or special geological composition. Half of the karst caves were immersed in seawater. As a response to the crashing of the waves, weird and chilling noises drifted from the inside of the karst caves like the growls of monsters.

Not until the passenger liner moved forward in the narrow and twisting waterway for about 500-600m did Zhang Tie see a large space and caught sight of the 100m long small wharf and some buildings on Hidden Dragon Island.

After anchoring the liner, everyone started to go ashore. Zhang was left alone on the deck. When almost everybody left the deck, two 16-17 years old youths in black uniforms came onto the deck with the other three men in multicolored outfits.

"That's him..." The moment they arrived onto the deck, one of the three people in the multicolored outfits pointed at the corpse on the deck and loudly shouted, "That's the one who killed my elder brother and my eldest uncle as well as robbed two centipede's cores from them...", saying this, that person couldn't wait to burst

into tears. Finally, he couldn't stand still before proceeding to take out his long saber and fiercely hacked into the corpse, "Elder brother, eldest uncle, you died so miserably, I will use this evil person's head as a sacrifice for your death!"

"I've given you the centipedes' cores, here's his corpse. You are free to deal with it even by grinding his bones into ashes and throwing them away or directly peeling his skin."

"On behalf of the 659 people in Ma Village of Qingshan Prefecture, I thank the Zhang clan for your righteous deed!" Another old man among them forcefully withstood his lament and bowed towards the two youths by a holding fist salute.

"As they are already dead, please restrain your grief."

Being grieved, the other men in multicolored clothing extended their thanks to the two youths before directly carrying the corpse away from the liner.

While standing on the deck, Zhang Tie saw this scene and had been able to guess the status of the two youths. They were at least members of Zhang clan on the island, if not, from Hidden Dragon Palace.

"Wait a moment, please!" When the two youths walked onto the wharf, Zhang Tie stopped them.

"What's up?" The two youths turned back and stared at Zhang

Tie who suddenly came out.

"Do you know how to get to Hidden Dragon Palace?"

"Hidden Dragon Palace?" One of the two youths started to seriously glance over Zhang Tie when he heard that Zhang Tie was going to the Hidden Dragon Palace.

"Yes, I want to go to the Hidden Dragon Palace." Zhang Tie said with a smile.

"What are you going to do in Hidden Dragon Palace?"

"To apply to join!"

"Show me your clan plate!"

Zhang Tie then took out his clan plate and gave it to the two youths. After a serious look, the two youths exchanged glances with each other and nodded together.

"You're Zhang Tie?" One of the youths returned the clan plate to Zhang Tie.

"Yes!"

"I'm Xu Lang; he's Zhang Houyu. We are all from Hidden Dragon

Palace!" Saying this, Xu Lang instantly became enthusiastic. After saying this, Xu Lang looked at Zhang Houyu and asked, "Who will send him to Hidden Dragon Palace, you or me?"

"Hoho, after all, we're both surnamed Zhang, I will send him over there! You continue to patrol around the island, I will first send him to Hidden Dragon Palace. Then we will meet in Blackdragon Town." The youth called Zhang Houyu replied.

"Fine."

"Follow me!" Zhang Houyu greeted Zhang Tie and turned back to leave. Of course, Zhang Tie followed him away from the wharf.

There was a narrow street on the side of the wharf, on both sides of which were some buildings. Zhang Tie took a look and found a warehouse, a hotel, a fish market and two stores that posses items he wasn't aware of. There was one restaurant too. Most of the passengers got off from the liner poured into the restaurant. After taking a trip on the liner for 4-5 hours, they had eaten nothing at all. Therefore, the moment the saw the restaurant, they all went in at once.

Zhang Tie's stomach was still growling. Nevertheless, as someone was guiding him, he felt it improper to let him wait for him to finish a meal before continuing to walk.

"Do you want to eat something?" Although Zhang Tie didn't speak, Zhang Houyu was sentimental as he asked, "If you're hungry, you'd better eat a bit, as this place is more than 20 km

away from Hidden Dragon Palace. If you're too hungry, I'm afraid that you won't be able to keep up with me."

"It doesn't matter, it's okay to eat at Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Fine, follow me then. We can run over there. It will be faster." Saying this, Zhang Houyu started to run as Zhang Tie hurriedly followed behind him.

Thinking of Xu Lang that he had met just now, Zhang Tie suddenly thought of a question as he asked Zhang Houyu, "Hidden Dragon Palace also takes in apprentices with different surnames?"

"Besides Zhang clan's direct line of descendants, if anyone among the relatives of Zhang clan across Huaiyuan Prefecture have awakened the ancestral bloodline, they can also enter Hidden Dragon Palace. As you're new to Hidden Dragon Palace, you should bear in mind the primary rule that you should not casually ask for others' ancestral bloodlines or how many times they have awakened. You should not casually reveal to others about what ancestral bloodline have you awakened. Although you feel this information are not important, they are very important clan secrets. When you awaken your ancestral bloodline for the first time, someone might know about that. Once you have awakened your ancestral bloodline for the second time, no matter what great ability do you have, you'd better reveal it to others as little as possible. This is a card in your hand, it might save your life a critical moment!" Zhang Houyu explained as he found Zhang Tie could keep up with him. Therefore, he increased his pace.

"Ancestral bloodlines can be awakened a second time?" As it was

Zhang Tie's first time hearing this, he was a bit amazed as he thought he could only awaken his throwing skill once.

"Of course! There's no limit to the amount times one can awaken their ancestral bloodline. Different ancestral bloodlines could grant you different talents and gifts. As for how many times can you awaken, it will depend on your ability and luck. Many people who have awakened their ancestral bloodlines for the first time could awaken them twice, then thrice, even more. It takes time to improve and intensify the same ancestral bloodline that they've awakened!"

Zhang Tie slightly sighed inside, "Hidden Dragon Palace is really great. Although I've just arrived, I have received two surprises, one on the passenger liner, the other here. I wonder how it would feel if I awaken my throwing skill for the second time. Only after thinking about this question did Zhang Tie's heart begin to race and long for the future.

After leaving the wharf, the two people started up the mountainous path. At the beginning, Zhang Houyu wanted to take care of Zhang Tie by slowing down his speed on purpose. Gradually, he realized that Zhang Tie could still easily chat with him when running, Zhang Houyu started to speed up. However, no matter how he accelerated his speed, Zhang Tie could still closely follow him up in an easy manner. Zhang Houyu became really amazed about that as he grew increasingly aggressive and started to use his full strength.

Zhang Tie didn't feel tired at all while the guide's forehead had been oozing sweat. For Zhang Tie who had eaten nine Wild Wolf

Seven-Strength Fruits, Zhang Tie only felt very relaxed by trotting at this speed which was even a bit slower than his "cruising speed". If he liked, he could even keep running at this speed for the whole day long.

After running 5 km over one mountain, Zhang Tie found another large-scale town on Hidden Dragon Island. The town was in a small basin on the Island, which was surrounded by forest. Its prosperity was not worse than those on the mainland. They then ran across the town from the hillside in the east of the town.

"Argh, I didn't imagine that there could be such great towns on Hidden Dragon Island!" Zhang Tie sighed.

Hearing Zhang Tie's sigh, Zhang Houyu who kept running by lowering his head almost gasped as he could not even speak fluently at this moment. He had never imagined that Zhang Tie could still speak without even panting.

"This is...White Dragon Town...there are... a total of five towns...on...Hidden Dragon Island...Besides White Dragon Town...there are Cyan Dragon Town...Yellow Dragon Town...Black Dragon Town...and Blue Dragon Town." Gritting his teeth, Zhang Houyu kept muttering intermittently. The oncoming wind filled into his mouth, almost causing him to cough.

At this moment, Zhang Houyu had inwardly confirmed that the ancestral bloodline that Zhang Tie had awakened must be related to running. If not, he could never have such amazing stamina and running ability as a youth who looked 1-2 years younger than him.

After following Zhang Houyu running for less than less than half an hour, they finally arrived at Hidden Dragon Palace. It was a combination of three castles built on a steep location with beautiful scenery, which extended to the top of the mountain. The castles were connected with each other by various types of villas and pavilions that hid in the woods. It looked pretty magnificent. With only a glance at these buildings, Zhang Tie could tell that Huaiyuan Palace was truly rich.

A 20m high memorial archway marked with "Hidden Dragon Palace" was erected in front of Zhang Tie. Under the memorial archway were two huge and magnificent stone lions.

"This...this is Hidden Dragon Palace. When you enter there...you will see someone greeting you inside!"

After saying this, Zhang Houyu had already left before Zhang Tie said thanks.

Zhang Tie scratched his head as he felt Zhang Houyu's attitude was a bit weird. He didn't know that this "elder" who brought him to the Hidden Dragon Palace had been so embarrassed on the way due to Zhang Tie's great endurance. Therefore, the moment he arrived at the destination, he hurriedly escaped.

...

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie touched his clan plate as he entered the memorial archway. He walked towards the first castle

at the foot of the mountain. The guardians outside the castle were all young. At the sight of Zhang Tie, a young man less than 20 years old moved forward on his own. After seeing Zhang Tie's clan plate and understanding Zhang Tie's intention, the young man took Zhang Tie inside the castle.

...

Several minutes later...

"Zhang Tie, 15, level 5 warrior. Having awakened a bloodline for the first time. It's your first time entering Hidden Dragon Palace. Here's the key to your room, No. 73 of Xingzhi Department. Here's the map of Hidden Dragon Island. You can go to register in Xingzhi Department today. Before you leave, you can reconfirm whether you've already handed in all your money. We've recorded your money, 8 gold coins and 13 silver coins in total. Before you leave Hidden Dragon Palace, we will return it back to you. If you are found to have hidden money privately, even one copper coin, the result would be very severe!" A 60-year old man with an obscene look and a goatee stood behind a high counter like an owner of a pawnshop. He pushed a key, a map and something else in front of Zhang Tie as he raised his head to warn Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the first step was to hand in all of his money when he entered the Hidden Dragon Palace. Besides this money, he had 5000 gold coins and 5000 gold coin notes in the Castle of Black Iron, which was his reserve funds. There were the remains of the returns by auctioning the ring of energy after Zhang Tie went to the Blackhot City and gave a part of them to his elder brother.

"Excuse me. Don't I have to pay for buying items on Hidden Dragon Island and in Hidden Dragon Palace? Why should I have to hand in my private money?"

"Of course, it requires money on Hidden Dragon Island and in Hidden Dragon Palace. It even requires a lot of money. Money is required everywhere. But for we apprentices of Hidden Dragon Palace, we have to make each copper coin on the Island, instead of from home!" This voice came from Zhang Tie's back. Zhang Tie looked back and found four youths at this age walked towards him, each carrying a wire sack.

The four youths only wore a simple coarse-cloth velvet. They were oozing sweat. It seemed that the items on their back were very heavy. The taller youth in the front was better while the skin of the faces and arms of other three youths behind him were as dry as bark and were cracking in places. Zhang Tie could imagine their former tender look.

Because their forehead corners sweated too heavily, fine white salt granules could be seen over there. Their cracking skins were dipping in their sweat, causing their eye corners twitch out of control.

The moment they drew close to him, Zhang Tie could smell the sea odor on them. Zhang Tie took a look at the fine wounds on their arms and hands. If they were not here, they would definitely be taken as being mistreated in other places.

"Newbie?" That youth in the front asked Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie nodded.

"Follow us then, we're also from the Zhixing Department!" The front youth replied.

"Hahahaha, welcome to Hidden Dragon Palace!" Another youth whose face was like the crust of cooked rice seemed as though he wanted to laugh as he saw Zhang Tie's dumbfounded look. However, the moment he forced a smile, he controlled it...

This Hidden Dragon Palace seems to be different than what it was in my imagination.

Chapter 275: The First Hurdle Of The Secular World

Walking behind the juveniles and observing them teetering and gritting teeth with wire sacks on their back, Zhang Tie started to feel a bit weird about Hidden Dragon Palace.

Before coming to Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie also imagined the scene when he entered it for the first time. In his imagination, an immortal old man with wholly white hair and a beard was holding a pile of secret books to teach students; a perverted one-eyed coach was strictly training plenty of juveniles under the hot sun; great piles of various marvelous weapons and fighting skills books were put in front of him which made it hard to even choose. Zhang Tie had fantasized all kinds of scenes with the exception of that where some mistreated slave laborers were teasing him——welcome to Hidden Dragon Palace

Among the four juveniles in front of Zhang Tie, the weakest one was in the back with a wire sack on his back. He was also the shortest one. The moment he walked out of the castle and stepped onto the steps of the mountain pass, this juvenile suddenly felt soft on his feet as he continued forward. Thankfully, Zhang Tie, who was behind him, had a pair of sharp eyes and caught the wire sack on his back to keep his balance.

"Can I help you?" Zhang Tie smiled as he directly took over the sack from the juvenile's back. The weight of the wire sack was less than 150 kgs, which was trivial for Zhang Tie. After taking over the sack, Zhang Tie found the skin on his shoulder had been broken, exposing a bloody skin.

"Argh, no need, I will be alright soon..." With tears rolling in the juvenile's eye sockets, the juvenile kept it from dropping off.

"Yunfei, are you okay?" The stronger juvenile in the front stopped as he turned back to ask.

"It's okay, I lost my footing just now and almost fell down."

"Hold on a little longer, we'll soon arrive at the Items Center."

"That's fine!" The juvenile called Yunfei responded as he looked at Zhang Tie, "Thank you, but I have to carry the sack over there by myself. If you help me carry them there, they will not pay me. This is the rule of Hidden Dragon Palace——no other's assistance is allowed when one performs labor."

Seeing the juvenile called Yunfei being so persistent and learning the rules here, Zhang Tie then returned the sack back to this juvenile as he became increasingly curious about the rules of Hidden Dragon Palace.

They then kept walking upward. Thankfully, less than 100 m away on the stone steps, Zhang Tie had heard a bell ringing.

Walking through the bamboo woods and the shallow stream, Zhang Tie saw the smoking chimney and the blast furnace outside the tall wall while a house with a courtyard marked with "Items Center" appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie and some juveniles then entered the courtyard. On the left of the first door was a warehouse. Zhang Tie followed the juveniles into the warehouse and pulled the items out of the sacks. After that, they weighed them on the scale. Zhang Tie found all the items inside their sacks were ores that radiated a pale blue metallic luster.

The housekeeper was also a 15-16 juvenile. As he weighed them, he told them the weight. After that, he would take money out of the drawer beside him and gave it to the juveniles one by one, making them very happy.

"The total price of 241 kg of navy-blue iron ore is 24 silver coins..."

...

"The total price of 203 kg of navy-blue iron ore is 20 silver coins..."

...

"The total price of 195 kg of navy-blue iron ore is 19 silver coins..."

...

"The total price of 148 kg of navy-blue iron ore is 14 silver

coins..."

"Argh, it's too pitiful. With 2kg more, Yunfei would get 15 silver coins!" Another guy sighed. Hearing their words, Zhang Tie found that juvenile called Yunfei was slightly clenching his fists. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie understood the terms of payment——10 kg of navy-blue iron ore for 1 silver coin. Those less than 10 kg would not be included inside.

"You will also come here later on." That stronger juvenile put his money in his pocket as he told Zhang Tie.

"Does everyone entering Hidden Dragon Palace have to do these things?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, everyone entering the Hidden Dragon Palace should at least submit 30000 kg of navy-blue iron ore at first so as to gain 30 gold coins as your personal property on the island. It's mandatory." The juvenile turned back as he recalled something, "Oh, I'm Zhang Keliang, what's your name?"

"I'm Zhang Tie!"

"I'm Wei Wei!" That juvenile who told Zhang Tie "Welcome to Hidden Dragon Palace" also introduced himself.

"I'm Zhang Hongsheng!"

"I'm Zhang Yunfei!"

After introductions, they all felt more familiar with each other.

"Come on, let's go back to take a good rest. In order to bring these ores back, we've been staying outside for almost 2 days. We will take a rest today to recover before going back there tomorrow." Zhang Keliang waved his hand and said while the others nodded.

After that, Zhang Tie and the others left the Items Center.

The Zhixing Department was not far from the Items Center. Walking out of the gate of the Items Center, they walked 200 m towards the east of the hillside along the stone path in the bamboo woods before arriving there. On the way there, through their introductions, Zhang Tie gradually understood many things.

People had to face the most important first hurdle of the secular world——making money!

In regards to money, you can despise it by treating it as dung, but you could need it at any time. Therefore, you have to accept its importance.

All the juveniles entering the Hidden Dragon Palace should first learn how to survive on their own on the island instead of mastering great fighting skills, secret knowledge, poems and ancient Chinese classics or the laws on ruling the country.

Each new arrival lived in the Zhixing Department. They were

given 3 days to adapt to the living environment here, during which period, you can eat and live for free. After 3 days, you had to think about how to survive on the island as by then the Zhixing Department would not provide you food or accommodation for free.

One had to pay 5 silver coins for the lodging and 2 silver coins for food, namely 7 silver coins each day in the Zhixing Department. Credit was allowed, but an interest of 5% a day was also required. It would be calculated as compound interest. When your credit was as high as 1 gold coin, if you couldn't pay it off, sorry, you had to roll out of the Hidden Dragon Palace and stay wherever you had to stay.

"Do you mean one can leave the Hidden Dragon Island then?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Leave Hidden Dragon Island?" Wei Wu gritted his mouth and mocked, "No more than dream of it, those driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace are not allowed to leave the island at all. Instead, they have to make money to pay off their credit on the island. If one owed 1 gold coin to Hidden Dragon Palace when he was driven out of it, he had to pay off 2 gold coins in 2 weeks at the compound interest of 5% a day. After 1 month, one had to pay off 4 gold coins. The longer one lasted, the more one would owe. Those people being driven out of the Hidden Dragon Palace might not be able to pay off in the rest of their lives if they could not pay off the debt in half a year and have to stay on the island for the rest of their lives..."

"Stay on the island for the rest of their lives?" Zhang Tie felt very chilly inside, "Is there anyone like that?"

"There is!" Zhang Keliang replied, "Those people who could not pay off 1 gold coin and could not even survive alone on the island could only be regarded as trash by their clans. It's better to keep them on Hidden Dragon Island safe and sound than letting them out to be killed or stir up troubles."

"There are rules on Hidden Dragon Palace in the Zhixing Department. If you go there, you would know that you need money in many places..." Zhang Yunfei added.

As they chatted, they had arrived at the Xingzhi Department.

The Xingzhi Department as a whole was like a huge triple-layer quadrangle. There were all sorts of pavilions, terraces and fish ponds and a martial-arts arena that covered 1334-2001 square meters. On the martial-arts arena, there are all kinds of drill weapons. When they arrived, Zhang Tie saw nobody else except for an old man in green clothes sitting under a persimmon tree outside the gate of the Zhixing Department who was staring blankly at a stone desk under the tree. He could only hear chirps of birds and insects in the courtyard, which made it very tranquil.

"Have you seen that old man? He has been staying on the island for more than 50 years as he could not make enough money to pay off his debts when he was young. Because he's old now and is a member of Zhang clan, he was brought back by Hidden Dragon Palace and is responsible for watching the gate for Zhixing Department!" Zhang Hongsheng murmured to Zhang Tie.

"Argh!" Zhang Tie became really startled.

"What are you shouting loudly over there for? I've just thought up a marvelous play step, yet was driven away by your noise. Look at your disheveled hair and dirty face, where are your elders? I will definitely let them teach you well!" It seemed that their words had disturbed the old man as he raised his head to blame Zhang Tie and the others. After that, he took out of a black player from the side of the desk and lowered his head again with frowning eyebrows to consider the next step on the desk like before.

Zhang Tie and the others exchanged glances at each other and stuck out their tongues as they hurriedly walked inside.

"Room No. 73 is over there. The rules and instructions of Hidden Dragon Place are on the stele in the pavilion beside the pond." Zhang Keliang pointed at the two places in the Xingzhi Department, "We will eat supper at 6 pm in that canteen over there. We need to go back to our rooms to take a rest first!"

"Fine." Zhang Tie nodded as he departed from the others.

Zhang Tie held his key and came in front of No. 73 room. When he opened the door, Zhang Tie stared blankly at the empty room for quite a while.

Nothing was inside the room except for a bald wooden board bed.

"F*ck!"

...

10 minutes later, after recognizing the reality of his situation, Zhang Tie went to the pavilion which held the rules and instructions of Hidden Dragon Palace and read them carefully. He then gradually understood the situation of the Hidden Dragon Palace.

Those who came to the Xingzhi Department were all new arrivals of Hidden Dragon Palace. All the newbies had to meet two minimum standards before left Xingzhi Department: first, reach level 6 to become a fighter and form battle qi; second, submit 30000 kg of navy-blue iron ores.

After leaving the Xingzhi Department and entering Lingtian Department which was 1 level higher, one would start his or her life within Hidden Dragon Palace. Entering the Lingtian Department, one could enjoy more of the resources belonging to Hidden Dragon Palace. Accordingly, one should pay more there. Although one needed to pay at least 7 silver coins for lodging and food each day in the Zhixing Department, the fee would become at least 30 gold coins per month, almost 1 gold coin a day.

The 30 gold coins that one gained by submitting 30000 kg of navy-blue iron ores in the Xingzhi Department could only afford one's first month's living in Lingtian Department.

Reading this, Zhang Tie almost swore out loud, "1 gold a day, for a presidential suite?"

However, another paragraph on the stele made Zhang Tie calm down at once.

——Money was an influential power. It was one's basis for freedom. If one could not make enough money, freedom would be an illusion.

Zhang Tie gradually understood the real meaning of those rules in the Hidden Dragon Palace——to force each one here to strive for "freedom with money". The best attitude to money was to step on it ferociously instead of spitting towards it and being stepped on by it. The former attitude belonged to the powerful ones while the latter one belonged to the weak ones...

Those who could survive on their own on Hidden Dragon Island which was covered with powerful creatures and dangerous environment, could definitely make money to survive when they were back on the mainland. What the Hidden Dragon Palace would like to train were not those "powerhouses" who could not even survive by themselves by doing hard labor and finally had to be restricted by others.

After knowing that, Zhang Tie instantly accepted the rules on money inside Hidden Dragon Palace, instead of being disgusted by them like before.

'It's just making money, I don't think that I will lose out to anyone else on this aspect. If others can do it, I can do it too, even by imitating them!' Zhang Tie mumbled.

When he read the rest of the rules and instructions of Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie finally found a benefit to entering Hidden Dragon Palace.

All the people who had awakened their ancestral bloodlines could gain 100 clan donation points automatically, which, for those people who had no foundations in martial arts, could be exchanged for some simple and fundamental secret techniques or fighting skills to help them form battle qi, breakthrough level 6 and finish the initial task of submitting 30000 kg of navy-blue iron ores.

Those navy-blue iron ores were not on the land, instead, in the sea. Before one carried those navy-blue iron ores from under sea level, one needed to master a secret technique that allowed them to stay underwater and move freely.

Preliminary Fish-like Diving Skill——

Exchange price: 50 clan contribution points.

Exchange site: Secret Technique Pavilion of Hidden Dragon Palace.

When he read this news, Zhang suddenly came up with an idea, "I wonder what kind of fruit can I gain by setting free fishes..."

Chapter 276: The Secret Of Battle Qi

Early on the second morning, before the sun rose, Zhang Tie had already fumbled around and arrived at the Secret Technique Pavilion of Hidden Dragon Palace.

The Secret Technique Pavilion of Hidden Dragon Palace was a 7-floor octagon. It was a traditional Chinese building like a pagoda. He had already caught sight of it when he was at the foot of the mountain.

The Secret Technique Pavilion of Hidden Dragon Palace opened 3 days a week, from 7 am to 3 pm. Zhang Tie had planned to arrive here at 8 am.

The moment he entered the gate of the Secret Knowledge Pavilion, Zhang Tie saw a 60-odd-year-old man sitting before a large tea table in the middle of the lobby on the first floor. He was leisurely tasting tea over there. The moment Zhang Tie entered the gate, he smelt the dense fragrance of tea.

Noticing Zhang Tie enter, the old man cast a glance at Zhang Tie as he put down the teacup and politely asked, "Young man, what do you want to learn, the preliminary fish-like diving skill or a battle qi technique?"

Zhang Tie estimated that the old man must have known that he was new here. That was why the old man directly asked upon seeing him.

Zhang Tie wanted to learn the preliminary fish-like diving skill; however, when he heard the old man mentioning the battle qi, Zhang Tie's heart had raced, "Can you tell me about battle qi?"

The old man cast another look at Zhang Tie, "You can exchange for one of the five battle qi techniques with 50 clan contribution points here; they are Fury-Wave Battle Qi, Robust-Ox Battle Qi, Raging-Flame Battle Qi, New-Crescent Battle Qi and Iron-Blood Battle Qi!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could also learn Iron-Blood Battle Qi at the Secret Technique Pavilion. He was a bit amazed about that. However, after thinking for a second, he had already thought it through. For the battle qi and secret fighting skill that was widely spread in the Waii Subcontinent, even the entire Blackson Human Clan Corridor, how could it not exist in Hidden Dragon Palace?

"Can you explain the features of the different battle qi?" As he had no teacher, Zhang Tie had not been familiar with much fundamental knowledge till now.

"Fury-Wave Battle Qi is powerful when one fights in the water; Robust-Ox Battle Qi could greatly improve one's strength; Raging-Flame Battle Qi could scorch enemy's skin; New-Crescent Battle Qi could improve the cultivator's fighting strength in the darkness and at night; Iron-Blood Battle Qi is extremely overbearing and unrivaled which could overcome many other battle qis. It was a secret technique of the imperial household of Norman Empire. Iron-Blood Battle Qi was a high-end battle qi, which would not be easily provided for you; however, it had been widely spread and

could be hardly formed as less than 1 out of 10000 people could form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. Therefore, we put it here together with other basic battle qi. If you have just started your cultivation, I suggest you to choose one of the previous battle qis to cultivate to avoid wasting time." The old man patiently explained.

Zhang Tie became a bit pleased inside as he had not imagined that the Iron-Blood Battle Qi that he was cultivating could win such a high praise in Hidden Dragon Palace.

"If I choose a battle qi now, do I have to give it up when I meet other better battle qis in the future? Will it waste my time?"

Zhang Tie thought about it as he asked. Zhang Tie believed that there must be many collections of high-end battle qi techniques and fighting skills if so many battle qis are provided for newbies. If those people cultivating these basic battle qis at the beginning met any high-end battle qi techniques due to chance, will they give up cultivating them?

After asking this question, Zhang Tie found the old man becoming a bit stunned as he stared at him for quite a while like looking something strange. Zhang Tie remembered that it was like how some residents of Blackhot City saw those people who had been living in the wild.

"Hasn't anyone taught you about the properties and relevant theories on basic battle qi?"

Zhang Tie smirked as he scratched his head.

Seeing Zhang Tie's behaviors, the old man understood instantly, "No one is born with battle qi. Upon final analysis, battle qi is just a tool, which could be produced due to each one's potential and hard work. Because of different manufacturing methods, the tools also became different in terms of looks and effects. The functions of these tools would also be different for the same people. You can understand the alleged high-end battle qi as a tool being made of more sophisticated materials in more complex patterns with more powerful functions. Although these tools have more functions than that of the low-level tools, there was no essential difference between them. These surplus functions could be regarded as an upgrade of the previous tools. Am I clear?"

Zhang Tie nodded. He seemed to understand a bit, but he was still confused.

"Battle qi is a tool; however, the greatest difference between it and those tools that we usually see is that battle qi is born to be shaped. Its shape is not fixed when it is produced just like other tools in our daily life. The flexibility of battle qi is like plasticine. As long as you constantly add materials to it, you will gradually make a breakthrough and add new abilities to its original foundation. You can also directly use more plasticine with more functions to completely cover the smaller one. It will not be wasteful."

"You mean, if I practice Raging-Wave Battle Qi, I could also practice high-end battle qi in the future. In that way, my high-end battle qi not only has a higher starting point than others but also might have the feature of Raging-Wave Battle Qi—being powerful in water?"

"That's true. Different battle qis could be integrated with each other like how different tools could be combined. After the combination, the power of the battle qi would be much greater!"

Hearing such words, Zhang Tie instantly became thrilled, "According to you, the more battle qis a person practices, the greater he will be?"

The old man revealed a smile, "Young man, if you weld a pair of pliers with a screwdriver, you can truly turn them into a new tool with more functions. However, if you weld a pair of pliers that weighs 1 kg with the head of a steamer that weighs 2000 tons, what will you get? Can the pair of pliers still play its role? If you want to exert the functions of each battle qi after combining them, you have to follow the Equivalence Principle. If the two battle qi are greatly different in content, the functions of the battle qi with less content might not be exerted."

"What's the Equivalence Principle?"

"The Equivalence Principle is the most important principle in cultivating battle qi. You will know about it in the later. As you have not yet formed battle qi, you don't know the situation and feeling after level 6. Each one's battle qi could be measured by quantity and quality. The world of battle qi is very mysterious which can't be thoroughly explained in a short while. You should keep in mind that you reap where you sow. Especially on the road of cultivation, you have to practice hard. A person who's absent-minded in practicing Raging-Wave Battle Qi for 3 years and a higher-end battle qi for 4 years might not be able to defeat a person

who had tried his full efforts to practice Raging-Wave Battle Qi for 10 years. Neither might he defeat a person who has practiced hard a high-end battle qi for 6 years!"

Zhang Tie was suddenly enlightened...

"Of course, there are also powerhouses who could combine different kinds of battle qi very well. Those who could do that have always been exceptions. However, among the three roads of upgrading and expanding battle qi, the combination of battle qi is more difficult. It can't be easily achieved. Comparatively, if someone has the chance and ability to form high-end battle qi, it would be better to use high-end battle qi to swallow low-end battle qi. In that way, although the attributes and functions of high-end battle qi could not be extended, one could increase the accumulation of high-end battle qi on absolute quantity at once. For the third road...", the old man shook his head as he picked up the teacup and slightly blew over it...

"What about the third road?"

"Fewer people can succeed on the third road. After forming battle qi, one might have a very small chance to promote his or her battle qi to another level and gain some more attributes and abilities. It's accidental and hardly duplicated. It's as rare as winning the lottery. After explaining so much to you, have you made your decision?"

"I've decided!"

"Which battle qi will you choose?" The old man solemnly asked as he picked up his teacup.

Zhang Tie seriously said, "I've decided to choose the preliminary fish-like diving skill..."

"Pfft..." The old man instantly spit out his tea. Seemingly choking, he coughed for quite awhile before recovering his composure.

The old man glared at Zhang Tie while the latter spread his arms in an innocent way, "We have to learn it."

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the old man almost coughed again...

...

1 hour later, Zhang Tie touched his head which was in pain due to the old man's flick and left the Secret Technique Pavilion. He kept walking as he was recalling the preliminary fish-like diving skill that he had learned for the first time. The alleged great truths were the simplest; however, Zhang Tie had not imagined that the preliminary fish-like diving skill could be that simple. He just needed to constantly practice in order to master it.

According to the old man, as long as one mastered the preliminary fish-like diving skill, after practice, one could be able to dive longer than 15 minutes in water. Additionally, this secret

technique is related to a person's spirit energy. The higher a person's spirit energy is, the longer they could stay in the water.

When he returned to the Xingzhi Department, Zhang Tie saw that Zhang Kejie and the other guys had already prepared everything well and were waiting for him to head over in order to carry more navy-blue iron ores.

"Have you learned it?" Zhang Yunfei asked Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie nodded.

"Let's go make money then!" Wei Wu made a weird noise as the others burst out loud laughing and left...

Chapter 277: A Good Practice In The Sea

There was a beach covered with dense reefs to the west of Hidden Dragon Island. Only one tortuous path was accessible from the beach to the 100-m high steep cliff. The reefs on this beach were different from those in other places as these reefs slightly radiated a blue metallic luster. The beach was called Iron Ore Beach, where people on Hidden Dragon Island got the navy-blue iron ores from.

It was noon when the hot sun was like fire in the sky. Over the sea, near the Iron Ore Beach, more than 20 juveniles were working hard to get navy-blue iron ores out of the sea.

The exposed reefs in the sea stopped ships from drawing close but became the best bases for those juveniles who were getting navy-blue iron ores out of the sea.

With the rippling of the water, Zhang Tie exposed his head beside a reef as large as a house. He heavily breathed in the fresh air over the sea and spat out all the dirty air out from his body as he slightly rose and fell along with the waves.

"Zhang Tie...will you take a rest? As it's already noon, come here to eat something..." Zhang Hongsheng, who had been tired and was lying on the reef greeted Zhang Tie with a faint smile.

Beside Zhang Hongsheng was Wei Wuying, lying in the shape of the Chinese character "大" like a salty fish, who was too tired to utter a sound

With another ripple of the waves, Zhang Yunfei whose face turned a bit white revealed his head out of the water beside the reef and forcefully swam and climbed onto the reef before faintly laying down.

"I have a bit strength left. I can dive again." After talking loudly to Zhang Hongsheng, Zhang Tie made another dive by kicking the water by his feet.

"How...how long has Zhang Tie dived for this time?" Zhang Yunfei gasped as he asked Zhang Hongsheng.

"It's been almost 20 minutes. Damn, what a freak!" Wei Wu sat on the reef as he gritted his teeth and said, "This guy only knew how to swim like a dog yesterday and didn't even know how to dive. He couldn't even hold himself underwater. In order to learn how to dive, he had to foolishly hug a huge stone and jump into the sea, causing the other guys laugh loudly. I'd never have imagined that he could really learn how to dive in such a stupid way. Only after practicing for one day, this guy has already been impatient to make money here..."

"Alas, don't mention it anymore. If you keep talking about him, I'll lose face. Having been here for over a month, I could only stay underwater for 15 minutes. However, this guy has already been able to stay underwater longer than me on his second day. Comparisons are just..." Zhang Hongsheng sighed, "The ancestral bloodline that this guy has awakened might be related to water. I've heard about this bloodline in the Palace before."

The juveniles chatted on the reef while they heard movement in

the water. It was Zhang Keliang who popped his head out beside the reef. After gasping for quite awhile, Zhang Keliang looked over the reef and asked, "Where's Zhang Tie? Has he come up?"

"Yes, he's already come up, but he dived in again..." Zhang Yunfei replied.

"This guy is really..." Zhang Keliang forced a bitter smile as he took two breaths and dived in again.

...

There were beautiful coral reefs beside him. Cute little fish were swimming across the coral reefs. The sea water near Iron Ore Beach was as translucent as a mirror. The sunlight cast on the sea caused large patches of fish-scale-like light shadows. It was an enchanting sight.

It was a brilliant world under the sea, which could never be matched on land.

Zhang Tie was like a clumsy yet curious little fish. With his eyes widely opened, Zhang Tie enjoyed the unprecedented fantastic submarine world as he tried his best to swim towards the nearest oceanic trench.

The topography in the sea was very weird as there were all sorts of deep trenches whose width varied from 10 plus meters to dozens of meters. The deep trenches became wider and deeper. The drop

between the two trenches would be over 10 m. Those navy-blue iron ores were buried in the sands in the deep trenches.

These deep trenches were really like they had been carved due to the movements of glaciers several million years ago. Zhang Tie didn't know why these special navy-blue iron ores were buried here. However, now that there were exposed iron ores on the land, it was not weird to see such things in the sea.

Of course, all the navy-blue iron ores near Hidden Dragon Island belonged to Huaiyuan Palace.

As Zhang Tie had just learned how to dive, he was not adept at diving. Although he could hold his breath for a long while, he could only look for navy-blue iron ores in the oceanic trenches at the depth of over 30 m.

However, those juveniles in Zhixing Department who were better at diving could reach 50 m or deeper into the sea to look for navy-blue iron ores. The deeper they could dive, the more navy-blue iron ores could they find.

There were green marine plants that looked like water weeds in the oceanic trenches. Under these plants were a layer of soft silver-like fine sands. The navy-blue iron ores were buried under these fine sands. A part of some bigger ones could be seen above the sands, radiating a faint blue luster. There was a sharp comparison between these ores and the surrounding environment in color.

The moment Zhang Tie found two fist-sized navy-blue iron ores

from the sands of a sea trench and was preparing to put them into the wire sack no far away, Zhang Keliang had already swum towards him and made some hand gestures to Zhang Tie, telling him to pay attention to his surroundings.

Zhang Tie then nodded in the water. It was not absolutely safe in these waters. It was said that there were guardians of Lingtian Department in the distant waters who were arranged to kill those dangerous and mutated marine creatures near the Iron Ore Beach, such as mutated magical sharks.

However, there were also many dangerous creatures below the water within 1 square kilometer of Iron Ore Beach such as poisonous sea serpents, which once bit, their poison would kill a person in five minutes if one didn't take the antidote.

The price of the antidote per vial against sea serpents was 20 silver coins, which would be taken by everyone here besides dried rations, except for Zhang Tie who had not yet made even one silver coin.

This time, Zhang Tie stayed under water for less than 20 minutes. After collecting ten more kg of navy-blue iron ores, Zhang Tie gradually felt it hard to breathe. He then insisted on another 1-2 minutes. When he felt that he had stayed a bit longer than last time, Zhang Tie returned once again and revealed his head above the water. After gasping twice, he swam back to the reef and climbed onto it.

The Preliminary fish-like diving skill was also a skill that required increasing amounts of practice before one was adept in its

use.

However, Zhang Tie had already reached this in two days, which already surprised many people. Nevertheless, Zhang Tie still didn't feel pleased about it. Zhang Tie felt that he was still not adept at holding his breath while moving flexibly in the water and had not fully exerted the essence of the Preliminary fish-like diving skill.

"I should make it better!" Zhang Tie mumbled. However, when he looked at Zhang Yunfei and the other pals when they watched him, Zhang Tie knew that he should not be too anxious about that and could only slowly improve it like how he practiced the Iron-Blood Fist Skill.

Although he could still dive many times due to his strong body, Zhang Tie didn't want to stand out too much. Therefore, he also climbed onto the reef to eat his dried rations and took a rest under the sun.

Several minutes later, Zhang Keliang also swam onto the reef. Sitting on the reef, he took a rest while drinking water and eating dried rations.

From the early morning to now, the five people had worked for 4-5 hours underwater. With the exception of Zhang Tie, all the others felt very tired.

Looking at the vast sea and eating the dried meat and preserved fruits in his hand, Zhang Tie felt like returning to the New Crescent Prairie as the water waves were like the grass waves

across the prairie.

Thinking of the New Crescent Prairie and those wild wolves, Zhang Tie forcefully slapped his forehead as he swore inside, "Zhang Tie, how stupid you are?! How could you forget such a thing? It's just a Preliminary fish-like diving skill, would it be as sophisticated as the Iron-Blood Fist Skill? Have you forgotten how you practiced your Iron-Blood Fist Skill? Have you forgotten your Trouble-Reappearance Fruit?'

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie suddenly burst out laughing loudly, causing Wei Wu and Zhang Keliang glance at him.

"What's wrong with you?" Wei Wu asked.

"I was thinking of a funny thing..." Zhang Tie said mysterious manner.

"What's that?"

"I realized that I haven't seen sea serpents!"

"Argh? Lunatic..." Wei Wu twitched his mouth as the others showed the whites of their eyes to Zhang Tie.

"Where can we find sea serpents?" Zhang Tie asked Wei Wu.

"Are you seeking death or have you made enough money? A vial

of antidote for sea serpents would cost you 20 silver coins. That's one day's work!" Zhang Hongsheng urged.

"It doesn't matter. I want to see how sea serpents look so as to prepare for their attack in case I'm ever bitten. Even if I was bitten, I could borrow your antidote first and pay you back when I get enough money!" Zhang Tie explained innocently.

"Do you really want to see what sea serpents look like?" Zhang Keliang seriously looked at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie nodded.

"Over there..." Zhang Keliang pointed at the sea with some desk-sized reefs exposed out of the water 100 m away to the left, "They are over there. There is a wide area of red kelp forest in the water over there. I was bitten by sea serpents over there last month. These sea serpents like to hide in seaweed. There are black and white circular grains on them."

"I will take a look over there..." After saying this, Zhang Tie stood up from the reef and dived into the sea once again before rapidly swimming towards the sea serpents.

Chapter 278: A Good Practice In The Sea II

Within one day, Zhang Tie had upgraded his swimming from a doggy paddle to a freestyle.

The kelp forest was over 100 m away; however, it took Zhang Tie less than two minutes to reach the place where Zhang Kelian had pointed to by easily moving his arms in the water. He then took a deep breath before diving into the sea.

After diving deeper than 10 meters, Zhang Tie had already seen a great area of red seaweed at the bottom of the sea. They were as tall as a person and were slowly waving along with the surging seawater. The bottom of the forest was like a fire while a great shoal of finger-long silverfish was swimming around there like changing clouds, making it very beautiful.

Because there were sea serpents and not too many navy-blue iron ores here, few people would like to pick up navy-blue iron ores here. Only Zhang Tie who had a special purpose would be here.

When he drew close to the seaweeds, Zhang Tie had become very careful and started to look for his target.

Within three minutes, before Zhang Tie noticed one, a sea serpent had already found him. When Zhang Tie swam across the red seaweeds, a fierce sea serpent instantly launched out of the reefs, intending to bite Zhang Tie's shin.

Thankfully, the sea serpent didn't swim very fast in the sea. The

moment it drilled out, its black-and-white grains had already formed a sharp contrast with the surrounding colors and was noticed by Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie immediately pulled back his feet and rapidly turned around. He slightly moved his hands to remain balanced in the sea while directly facing the sea serpent.

It was a 2-m long sea serpent with a terrifying head. Its tail was flat, making it look like an eel.

Even though sea serpents were not good swimmers, it could definitely swim faster than Zhang Tie. It was impossible to outrun the sea serpent. Therefore, Zhang Tie just stayed to wait for its attack.

Although failing to hit Zhang Tie, the sea serpent didn't leave; instead, it swam around Zhang Tie once before launching another attack towards Zhang Tie's arm, as was expected by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't move until it almost bit his arm when he instantly stretched out another hand and seized the place where its heart was. All in a sudden, the sea serpent tightly wrapped Zhang Tie's arm. Feeling its great strength, Zhang Tie became a bit amazed. He was wondering whether this sea serpent was mutated or not as he felt it was very powerful. Ordinary people might not be able to deal with it when being wrapped by this 2-m long sea serpent, no matter where it was.

However, for Zhang Tie, the fight between him and the sea serpent had already ended the moment he touched its body. After calmly assessing its strength, Zhang Tie had already infused his iron-blood untouchable strength into its body. If he used iron-

blood hidden strength, the sea serpent must have become a bloody fog; however, with iron-blood untouchable strength, Zhang Tie could display his greater controlling force and destructive power.

In a split second, under the impact of iron-blood untouchable strength, each bone of this sea serpent became a fine powder. However, no wound was found on the sea serpent at all.

The sea serpent was like a lifeless soft rope which slid into the seaweeds from Zhang Tie's arm.

"Two more!" Zhang Tie told himself before he continued to search for them among the seaweeds more carefully.

After 20 minutes, Zhang Tie exposed his head out of the water and took two breaths before diving again.

After 10 more minutes, Zhang Tie swam back.

"Have you seen the sea serpents?" The others who were resting on the reef asked Zhang Tie.

"Yes, I've seen them."

"How do you feel about them?"

"They're cute." Zhang Tie smiled. They are truly cute. Without them, how could he form Trouble-Reappearance Fruit?

Zhang Tie made it!

After taking a rest at noon, everyone was busy as they entered the sea one by one to pick up navy-blue iron ores. After working for almost two hours, before the dusk arrived, the juveniles were already preparing to leave. As they had to walk over 10 km of a treacherous mountain path before arriving at the Palace, everybody could only carry a limited number of ores back.

Although it was Zhang Tie's first time to here, Zhang Tie also had some achievements as he almost lifted over 50 kg of navy-blue iron ores today. After practicing for several hours, Zhang Tie felt that he had greatly improved his diving abilities.

When they finished work, the juveniles dived into the sea again with wires in hand. They buckled one end of a wire onto a sack before returning back to the reef. They then pulled their sacks up and carried them back onto the bank using a canoe. It was a painstakingly tedious process.

After arriving at the bank, everybody started to climb the mountain while carrying the sacks full of navy-blue iron ores and walked over 10 km of a mountainous path before arriving at Hidden Dragon Palace.

Actually, Zhang Tie felt nothing by carrying over 50 kg of navy-blue iron ores as he didn't feel tired at all. However, Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei, Zhang Hongsheng and Wei Wu looked pretty exhausted as their foreheads were already sweating when

they arrived at the top of the mountain.

Actually, Zhang Tie really wanted to help them; however, as he had gradually realized the intention of Hidden Dragon Palace to force them to do this, he didn't do that; instead, he just watched them carrying the navy-blue iron ores up with their own strength.

Besides teaching the juveniles of Hidden Dragon Palace to learn to survive on their own, this mandatory task had other two functions: first, letting them adapt to diving as it was another survival skill. If the people on the island drowned, that would be the greatest joke and an insult to the Hidden Dragon Palace; second, during this period, the juveniles would become stronger, temper their will and develop hardworking mindsets.

No matter how weak the person was, after carrying 30000 kg of navy-blue iron ores to Hidden Dragon Palace from the sea, he would become strong. Take Zhang Yunfei as an example. He was living like a young master since he was young as his family had a steamer in Yiyang City. After he came to the Hidden Dragon Palace for one month, the young master had already learned to disregard his dignity using his weak shoulders. He started to survive on his own by working hard.

None of them had suffered this before. At this moment, everyone could only persist. No matter how well you lived before and what kind of great family you born into and what reason you had, everyone had to grit their teeth and tough it out. No one dared to show off their status and family background to seek special treatment——because——the one who held the record for weight of navy-blue iron ores when he entered the Hidden Dragon Palace

was Zhang Taixuan, the head of Zhang clan, who had carried 760000 kg.

Even the head of Zhang clan had worked so hard here without any complaints like a willing ox, nobody else dared to seek any special treatment with their great family background and status.

The record was carved on the 100-m high cliff near Iron Ore Beach in scarlet letters so that each juvenile who came to Iron Ore Beach to finish task could catch sight of it the first time they arrived here. No matter how displeased they were with the task, after reading the record, they would have to lower their heads and start working hard.

The first day Zhang came here, he was also shocked by the record and the status of the record holder.

It was an over 10 km mountainous path. It took them over one hour to go back to the Palace to submit their achievements. When they were on the way back, they kept encouraging each other although they moved slowly.

Compared to the weight two days before, they all got more ores. Zhang Yunfei carried back 152 kg' navy-blue iron ores and gained 15 silver coins. Holding the 15 silver coins, the juvenile who was a young master in the Yiyang City stared at them and cried.

"I can finally survive by myself. I can finally make above 7 silver coins a day, wu...wu...I can finally survive by myself..."

After crying, Zhang Yunfei started to laugh. From today on, his debt to Hidden Dragon Palace could be gradually paid off. Before today, Zhang Yunfei's debt to Hidden Dragon Palace had already reached 34 silver coins. As he could make 15 silver coins today, it meant that his debt would not keep growing if he kept carrying so many ores a day; instead, it would gradually decrease. For this 15-year old juvenile, it was his first time surviving on his own since he had arrived at the island for more than a half month.

Zhang Tie carried 56 kg' navy-blue iron ores today, which brought Zhang Tie 5 silver coins.

"It's really not easy. From tomorrow onward, I have to make at least 7 silver coins a day to survive on my own." After weighing the silver coins marked with a huge scale issued by Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie felt it was becoming more and more interesting here. For Zhang Tie, it was of course not difficult for him to make 7 silver coins a day.

After getting their payment, everyone became very happy and returned to the Xingzhi Department together. This time, Zhang Tie found that the girls living in the Xingzhi Department also came back. Compared to the male students' task, the female students' task became relatively simpler yet not easier. When male students picked up ores, the female students had to pick up pearls in the sea. Although not requiring great labor, this task also meant great exercise for them.

There were totally 43 people in Zhixing Department, among which 31 were male students and only 12 were female students. The ratio between male and female was close to 3:1. Among the 31 male

students, 23 of them were still finishing the first task at Iron Ore Beach while the other 8 male students and 2 female students had already reached level 6 and had accumulated enough money to go to Dragon Cave to form their battle qi.

Amongst peers, once there were girls, male students would always care about their own images. The other juveniles who had come back together with Zhang Tie all hurriedly returned to their own rooms to take a bath and put on new clothes so that they didn't look that awkward when eating supper together with the girls in the canteen.

Zhang Tie also returned to his room. After taking a bath, he put on his clean clothes and washed his dirty clothes before drying them in his room.

After doing all this, it was almost supper time. Therefore, Zhang Tie left his room for the canteen.

When it was supper time, almost everybody in the Zhixing Department had come back. Therefore, it looked very boisterous in the canteen. After picking up their own supper, the male and female students obviously sat on two sides of the canteen as they murmured to each other. Among them, there was a short boy whose voice was so loud. Zhang Tie glanced at those male students in that circle and realized that they were of his age had all reached level 6 and were preparing to form battle qi in the Dragon Cave.

They were talking about fighting level 6 magical beasts—the huge black spiders in Dragon Cave.

"As long as I could kill some more black spiders, I would be able to form the New Crescent Battle Qi and officially enter the Lingtian Department!" The juvenile said proudly.

"We will be there soon too. Wanjie and I killed 1 black spider. After practicing over 2 years in the Zhixing Department, it's time to show off our real strength!"

His voice gained the approval of the group.

Seeing them loudly talking about their strength while listening for the girls' responses on the other side, Zhang Tie shook his head inside, "You want to attract the girls' attention in this way? You are really innocent."

Zhang Tie had not realized that he had been utterly different from those juveniles of the same age with him after experiencing the dense "intoxication" of the girls of Rose Association.

...

"Who's Zhang Tie?"

When Zhang Tie took his supper and arrived at the table where Zhang Keliang and the other pals sat, a loud voice at the entrance of the canteen instantly arouse everybody's attention as everybody looked at that direction.

A tall, robust and handsome youth who was over 20 years old and wearing a set of black warrior clothes were standing at the entrance of the canteen and looked around the people in the canteen with his gleaming eyes.

This 20-year old youth had a pair of dense eyebrows which were as sharp as a sword and looked very powerful. His eyes presented an unknown sense of oppression, making nobody dare to look directly into his eyes.

Given that look which was a bit similar to his, Zhang Tie identified his status——his cousin!

Chapter 279: Gamble

It was very quiet in the canteen. Nobody knew why this person was asking for Zhang Tie. Therefore, nobody spoke but fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie.

Under many strange stares, Zhang Tie naturally stood up and walked towards the newly arrived juvenile. The moment he stood up, the juvenile had already fixed his sharp eyes on Zhang Tie's face. After seeing that Zhang Tie gazing straightly at him without any timidity, that person showed a faint smile.

Walking in front of the juvenile, Zhang Tie obediently greeted, "Cousin!"

"Good, very good! That juvenile nodded as he heavily put his hands onto Zhang Tie's shoulders, "Let's talk outside."

They then went out of the canteen.

"I didn't know that you were in Hidden Dragon Palace until I received a letter from home. How about that? Have you adapted to the living style here?"

"It's alright, I went to pick up navy-blue iron ores and made 5 silver coins today." Zhang Tie touched his nose.

"Don't ignore this task. Keep practicing your diving skills. When you enter the Lingtian Department, you will find that there are

many more ways to make money. For newbies, it's not that easy to make 1 gold coin a day. If you are to excel at diving, you will have more chances to make money after entering the Lingtian Department."

"What other tasks are there in the Lingtian Department?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"When you enter the Lingtian Department, you will not be forced to perform tasks to make money. But you will have to perform some fixed tasks to gain clan contribution points. By then, if you want to make money, it will depend on your ability as there are many chances for you to make money in the sea. However, they require great diving skills. Therefore, you have to practice your diving skills well!" Zhang Tie's cousin seriously admonished.

"Thanks, cousin, I got it!"

"You are my brother, don't be so polite." Zhang Tie's cousin smiled, "Oh, what battle qi do you practice? When you reach level 6, I can take you to Dragon Cave in order to form battle qi."

"I'm practicing Iron-Blood Battle Qi."

"What?!" Hearing Zhang Tie's words, his cousin became slightly shocked, "You're ambitious; even in the Palace, there are still very few people who have formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi during the past dozens of years. This battle qi is very hard to form. So, you'd better make a plan for yourself. If you cannot form it, you'd better change to another battle qi. If you have other chances in the future, you

can continue to practice advanced battle qi! Otherwise, it might take you a lot of time to reach level 6 which would be disadvantageous to you."

After feeling this cousin's good intentions, Zhang Tie modestly nodded and received his suggestion without mentioning that he almost had met no obstacle when he practiced the Iron-Blood Fist Skill, "Got it!"

Zhang Tie's cousin then continued, "There are sky-reaching stages and many opportunities that could change your fate in the Hidden Dragon Palace. However, these items are all for the truly powerful people of the Palace. You could only gain these opportunities by yourself. Nobody else can help you. It's rarely seen that two brothers of the same generation in a clan like you and me could enter Hidden Dragon Palace at the same time. It means that our clan's bloodline is very excellent and eye-catching. The relationship between you and me might be known to the public, therefore, you will catch a lot of attention here. I have two opponents in Lingtian Department, they are also cousins. I ferociously beat them down before. As you are now in the Xingzhi Department, you don't need to worry about them as they will not find trouble for you. However, when you enter Lingtian Department, they might come looking for you. You should be prepared for that."

Zhang Tie became dumbfounded, "Do you mean they will set me up?"

"Not that bad, but they could ferociously beat you up in the public according to some rules of Lingtian Department!"

"Argh..." Zhang Tie became stunned. He had never imagined that he could gain this cousin's troubles in such a way.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's expression, his cousin became bashful as he forced a smile, "At the beginning when the two brothers entered Hidden Dragon Palace, they were also very eye-catching and arrogant. I didn't like them. I had not imagined that someone else in Zhang clan could enter Hidden Dragon Palace, therefore, I thought they were from other clans and beat them up according to the rules of Lingtian Department.

Zhang Tie finally understood it. Because his cousin always beat up others, now, it was his turn to be beaten up.

When they talked, Zhang Tie saw two men entering the Zhixing Department, one was 18-19 years old while the other was as old as Zhang Tie's cousin. The two men looked similar. The moment the two entered the Zhixing Department, they had walked directly towards Zhang Tie and his cousin.

"Zhang Su, I heard you've got a brother entering the Zhixing Department. Is this the one?"

Walking over here, the two guys fixed their eyes onto Zhang Tie at once.

Zhang Tie's cousin then turned back and peered at the two men walking towards them, "This is my brother Zhang Tie. How about that? Do you want to see how you are beaten up by my brother?"

Zhang Tie realized that his cousin's mouth really drove him mad. Even if he was in such a disadvantageous position, his mouth was still unyielding.

Hearing Zhang Su's words, the two guys' smiles instantly became stiff. At the same time, their faces blushed.

"Trust me, when your brother Zhang Tie enters Lingtian Department, we will definitely 'guide' him!" That person of 18-19 years old gritted his teeth.

"I've forgotten to tell you that my brother is practicing Iron-Blood Battle Qi, you'd better not be afraid of that by then!" Zhang Tie's cousin still urged.

"Ha..." As if having heard a joke, that person who was as old as Zhang Su glanced at Zhang Tie in a contemptuous way, "Do you mean to stay in Zhixing Department longer this way? This trick is too low, don't you think so?"

"You can't form Iron-Blood Battle Qi, it doesn't mean that others can't. Additionally, how would you know without having a tried?" Zhang Tie's cousin said in a calm way.

"Hahahaha...it seems that you are very confident about your brother!" The one as old as Zhang Su ridiculed as he rolled his eyes, "Zhang Su, dare you bet with me?"

"What's the wager?"

"The wager is on whether your brother could form the Iron-Blood Battle Qi."

Zhang Su slightly hesitated...

"Are you afraid? Were you not just talking about your confidence in your brother? If not, I've guessed it, your brother just wants to stay longer in Zhixing Department for this reason?" That person further urged, "If your brother can form Iron-Blood Battle Qi, I will pay you 300 gold coins. How about that? Dare you wager 300 gold coins to bet that your brother will definitely form the Iron-Blood Battle Qi?"

"300 gold coins?" Zhang Su looked at the two people as he frowned his forehead. Although this figure was not too much outside the Hidden Dragon Island, it was already a lot for people in Hidden Dragon Palace. It's not that easy to make so much money on the Hidden Dragon Island. Even though they were in Lingtian Department, many people could not make that much money in half a year. Now, Zhang Su only had a bit more than 200 gold coins. He knew that it was a trick, sending him in the dilemma by using his own words.

"Argh, I almost forgot it. As Iron-Blood Battle Qi is very hard to form, how can I profit at your expense? I remember that you don't have that much money. If you are confident about your brother, I can give you a concession. Once you can pay 200...no, once you can pay 100 gold coins, we will reach the agreement. 1 for 3, how about that?" That person pretended to be serious.

"300 gold coins, that's a deal. I don't need others to make a concession for me. I will bet with you!" Saying this, Zhang Su raised his head. He could lose a fight, but he could not lose his personality. This was what Zhang Su firmly believed.

"Fine, how long will you give your brother to form his Iron-Blood Battle Qi?"

"2 years. Before we leave the Hidden Dragon Palace, if he still couldn't form his Iron-Blood Battle Qi, you win then!"

"That's settled then!"

"It's settled!"

Zhang Su then clapped that person to settle it.

After that, the two people peered at Zhang Tie and sneered in a contempt way before left.

"Wait a moment!" Zhang Tie who was always being silent suddenly opened his mouth.

The two people then turned back and glanced at Zhang Tie.

"I will also participate in this bet. I bet that I will form Iron-Blood Battle Qi by then!"

"You? Bet what?" One of the two glanced over Zhang Tie from his head to his feet.

"I will also bet with 300 gold coins." Zhang Tie calmly said.

"Hahahaha. You're just a newbie. You won't have that much money. You'd better not cry while asking for your parents to pay for you. According to the rules in Hidden Dragon Palace, each cent you spend here, even the wager should be made by yourself on the island. How much have you made now? By what dare you bet 300 gold coins with us? No debt is allowed by then!" That person continued to look at Zhang Tie in a contempt way, "Young man, it's easy to boast, but you should concern your real ability before you bet. Do you want to say that you prepare to pick up 300 tons of navy-blue iron ores for me if you lose it, ha...ha...ha..."

"That's what I'm thinking about! I bet that if I lose it, I will go pick up 300 tons of navy-blue iron ores for you. If I cannot fulfill this bet, I will never walk out of the Hidden Dragon Island in the rest of my life" Zhang Tie faintly said.

That person's laughs suddenly ceased. At this moment, the three people fixed all of their eyes onto Zhang Tie. Even Zhang Su, the cousin of Zhang Tie seriously watched Zhang Tie, seemingly having never recognized him.

"Do you dare to take my wager?" Zhang Tie gazed at that person.

"What a joke, of course I dare. But if you lose it, I will have no

time to wait for you to pick up navy-blue iron ores to exchange for 18 silver coins each day. By then, the money you exchanged for with the navy-blue iron ores might not even match the interest of the 300 gold coins. If you pick up navy-blue iron ores on the island for 20 years, do you want me to wait for your debt on the island that long? What if you cannot pay it off in the rest of your life? Who will pay it off for you? If we bet, of course, we will bet with real gold and silver coins. There's no reason for you to bet just by saying! Do you think it is that easy to make 300 gold coins on the Hidden Dragon Island?" That person sneered.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this guy was that shrewd, "What do you want then?"

"It's very simple. Now that you want to play, certainly, it has to count when you show us your wager. Before you reach level 6 and try to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi, I will regard all the money that you make through picking up navy-blue iron ores as your wager..."

"Fine, that's settled then."

"Zhang Tie..." Zhang Su wanted to stop him.

"Cousin, as you dared to bet 300 gold coins for me to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi, dare I not bet for myself? It's nothing serious even if I lose it. Additionally, I'm thinking about picking up more navy-blue iron ores so as to practice my swimming skills and built my body. As it's our first time to meet with each other today. We will bet with them. According to a traditional Chinese phrase, father and son will go to battle hand in hand while brothers will beat tiger shoulder to shoulder. I also want to be on your side when

betting."

"Fine!" Zhang Su's eyes gleamed as he loudly shouted. He had not imagined that his cousin was that manly. He felt very interesting to be a friend of Zhang Tie.

"Heh...heh, this time, we will make you brothers lose everything!" After that, he clapped with Zhang Tie's hands to show his consent to Zhang Tie's participation.

"Everybody knows that Iron-Blood Battle Qi could be hardly formed. The odds between you and my cousin is unfair. My cousin is forced to accept 1: 1 with you. For me, as I'm younger than you and don't like to suffer from a loss, how about 1: 3 between you and me? If I win, how about paying me 3 times the wager?" Zhang Tie smiled as he set a trap for that person at once.

That person had not imagined that Zhang Tie was that shrewd either who wouldn't suffer any loss at all. 'But, 3 times...' That person quickly racked his mind. "Even though the comprehensive ratio between him and Zhang Tie and Zhang Su is 1: 2, as the opponent is practicing Iron-Blood Battle Qi which was hard to accomplish even in Hidden Dragon Palace. Actually, this ratio is also quite reasonable for me. If it were others, they would never bet with me on this. But this brat looks too calm. It seems that something is wrong with him..."

"What, you don't dare to? With the exception of the imperial households of Norman Empire, across the Waii Sub-continent, the chance to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi is even less than 1 out of 10000. The rate should be at least 1:1000 to make it fair. Considering that

we are all in the Hidden Dragon Palace, I set the odds between you and me at 1: 3, I've already made a concession for you by over 300 times. Do you want me to take another step back for you? How about 400 times then. Even though I'm new here and have not reached level 6, even though I have no money, I should at least show my respect to seniors. Do you want more? How about 500 times?" Zhang Tie glanced at that person with contempt. He treated that person in the same way that he treated him. With the same tone, he instantly took advantage of them. Just like how he dealt with Samira, Zhang Tie would never be polite with them.

That person then gritted his teeth and said, "Fine, 1 for 3. I will see how many navy-blue iron ores can you pick up from the sea!"

After clapping with Zhang Tie to fix the bet, the two people then left. After walking a few steps away, that person turned back and sneered, "Iron-Blood Battle Qi is not that easy to form. I hope your boast today will not become a joke across the Palace!"

After the two people walked away, Zhang Su patted Zhang Tie's shoulders, "Well done! Be a man! Don't care about the bet. Even though we may lose the bet, we will not lose face! I can still afford the several hundred gold coins. You should treat this bet as a rare experience!"

Although what Zhang Su said was to encourage Zhang Tie, he was still not confident about whether Zhang Tie could form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. What faced Zhang Tie were two tasks: to pick up navy-blue iron ores; to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi if he wanted to win. Each one of the two tasks is very difficult to achieve. Zhang Tie had no other choice now.

"Cousin, trust me, we will win." Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "I'm worried about whether that guy can pay off the wager or not."

"That guy is called Zhang Haige, who's one of the figures who are very good at finding ways to make to make money in the Lingtian Department. He has about 2000 gold coins now. But he's also known as a mean guy. If he dares to repudiate the debt, I will peel off his skin!"

"That's fine."

"Additionally, based on my acknowledgment to him, he must have thought that he's set to win this time. So, he will definitely spread the news on the bet across Hidden Dragon Palace in case we repudiate when we lose it."

"Hoho, I will let them know how it feels when they lift one rock only to drop it on their own feet..."

After chatting with Zhang Tie for awhile, Zhang Tie's cousin left.

After Zhang Tie returned to the canteen, Wei Wu and the other pals started to be very curious about that person who came here for Zhang Tie just now.

"He's my cousin." Zhang Tie briefly introduced Zhang Su without even mentioning the bet at all.

As was expected, hearing that two of Zhang Tie's family entered Hidden Dragon Palace at the same time, the other guys sitting together with Zhang Tie all became very surprised as their eyes showed a sense of curiosity.

After eating supper, the girls in Zhixing Department set up a booth in the pavilion of the courtyard. They were beautiful pairs of seashells. In the seashells was oil extracted from seashells. This kind of oil, when being pasted on face and body, could be used to protect people from being scorched by sun. It could also help recover skin after being scorched.

The cost of seashell oil was 1 silver coin a box. A great amount of boys were surrounding their booths. God knew whether they were there to buy commodities or to get acquainted with girls. Even Zhang Keliang and Wei Wu were moving there along with the masses.

After glancing at the sky and touching his 5 silver coins in his pocket, Zhang Tie left Zhixing Department.

"Zhang Tie..." Zhang Yunfei caught sight of Zhang Tie's shadow as he hurriedly shouted, "The seashell oil is nice, will you want one?"

"No need, that item is useless to me. It's purely wasting money to buy them. I'm heading for the wharf!" Zhang Tie waved his hands as he left, "Are you kidding me? As I have preliminary recovery body, do I need any seashell oil at all? The tiny problem of being scorched in the daytime will be healed overnight. With such money, it's better for me to buy a great amount of seashells and set

them free in the sea and check what kind of fruits will I get.'

Zhang Tie left while some girls who were selling seashell oil started to glare at his shadow. "This bastard is really disgusting! His words are really jarring!"

Zhang Tie didn't know that because of his honest words, he had been drawn into the blacklist by the girls.

After leaving the Palace, thinking of that wharf where he first came, Zhang Tie started to increase his pace.

"As I've made the bet with them, of course, I will win. My expenditure on Hidden Dragon Island will depend on this bet."

In the breeze, Zhang Tie felt that he was a bit sinister...

"It's all because of that disgusting bastard!"

Chapter 280: To Be The Public Enemy Of Girls

Because Zhang Tie had been there before, he was familiar with the path. Therefore, after speeding up, he arrived at White Dragon Town in a short while. After running across White Dragon Town, it took Zhang Tie less than 10 minutes to arrive at the wharf on Hidden Dragon Island from where he had landed on Hidden Dragon Island several days ago.

Zhang Tie remembered that when he landed on the wharf last time, he saw some fishing vessels next to the wharf. Close to the hotel was a fish market. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly rushed towards that fish market.

As the only fish market on Hidden Dragon island, most of the booths had already sold out when Zhang Tie arrived, except one, the owner of which was also preparing to leave although he had some fish left.

Zhang Tie hurriedly ran in front of that booth. For the god's sake, there was still a barrel of fish which had not been sold out! All the fish inside the barrel were finger-long small fish with silver scales. The head of the fish had a fine needle-like spine. As there were so many kinds of fish in the sea, Zhang Tie could not identify its name.

"Will you sell them?"

Zhang Tie asked the booth owner, who was over 40 years old

with an experienced face. Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that man stopped and cast a glance at Zhang Tie.

"You want to buy these sand-scale fish?"

"These are sand-scale fish?" Zhang Tie realized at once, "Yea, I want to buy them all!"

"How many do you want? They are not sold in small quantities!"

Zhang Tie pinched the five silver coins in his pocket and further asked, "How much is one barrel of sand-scale fish?"

"A barrel weighs about 20 kg. As I'm going to leave, you only need to pay 1 silver coin for them."

"1 silver coin?" Zhang Tie instantly let out a sigh as he had not imagined that they were so cheap.

That man thought that Zhang Tie felt it was too expensive, so he gave a further explanation, "Sand-scale fish have less meat and more bones. Although they are not that valuable, they can be used for making fish sauce. If you like it, you can dry them before frying them with oil. Then you can eat them while drinking alcohol. They're tastier than peanuts. If you really want to buy them, you can pay me 90 copper coins for 1 barrel of them."

Zhang Tie directly pulled out of a silver coin and put it in the hand of the booth owner, "1 silver coin is okay. I will come here

every day in the future. You can leave all the sand-scale fish for me!"

Having not imagined that Zhang Tie was that generous, that man took over the silver coin and revealed a smile, "Fine, I will leave all these sand-scale fish for you from then on."

"Can I borrow your barrel? I will be back in 5 minutes."

Zhang Tie didn't bring any containers to load those sand-scale fish which were all put in the iron-sheet barrel in front of the booth.

The booth owner nodded at once. Therefore, Zhang Tie lifted the barrel of sand-scale fish before heading directly for the wharf.

The sand-scale fish might have realized what Zhang Tie was going to do as many of them started to jump happily when Zhang Tie lifted the barrel. Two of them even jumped out of the barrel and fell to the ground. Zhang Tie then hurriedly picked them up and put them back into the barrel.

"Little fish, little fish, I will send you back to the sea and set you free..." Zhang Tie mumbled to those little fish.

Zhang Tie came to the seaside very soon. He chose a place with crystal clear water and poured all the little sand-scale fish out of the barrel into the sea. Watching them return to the sea happily, Zhang Tie also felt a sincere pleasure.

Nobody would catch fish here, let alone these worthless little fish. Even if they wanted, they could not easily catch them. Therefore, after setting them free, Zhang Tie won't worry about them being caught by others.

The sun was setting, creating a golden hue over the horizon. Some little sand-scale fish jumped out of the sea, seemingly greeting Zhang Tie.

"Watch out next time, don't be caught again!"

When setting free earthworms, Zhang Tie had already understood a law——no life in this world was humble. Zhang Tie felt very happy about setting free a barrel of sand-scale fish with only 1 silver coin.

When he returned that barrel to the booth owner in the fish market, that 40-odd-year-old man gazed at Zhang Tie with a strange expression, "You put them back in the sea?"

What Zhang Tie was doing had all been observed by this man. He felt it difficult to understand that someone would buy fish to set them free. "Is there anything wrong with his mind?"

However, Zhang Tie had long prepared for that question.

"Erm, I met an old man before, who told me that by setting lives free, I could accumulate good karma from God. He urged me to set

free more animals if I was able to do that!"

"Setting free animals to accumulate karma?" Hearing this theory for the first time, the booth owner became stunned. Obviously, he could not accept this. However, Zhang Tie won't discuss that with him. After giving back the barrel and agreeing with him to buy sand-scale fish here at the same time tomorrow, Zhang Tie left the wharf.

After walking for a short while, Zhang Tie had already returned to the Zhixing Department of Hidden Dragon Department at night.

Sparkling light radiated from each building of Hidden Dragon Palace and extended from the memorial archways at the foot of the mountain all the way to the top of the mountain, making it pretty beautiful.

Outside the gate of the Zhixing Department, the old man who played the game of Go by himself under the tree all day long was still mediating at this moment. Because people were all very tired in the daytime, when the dusk arrived, many people had returned to their own room for a rest or practicing fighting skills. Therefore, Zhang Tie could barely see any people in the courtyard of Zhixing Department at this time.

...

"Sister Yuhan, I really want to go home, I miss mom, wu...wu..."

"Don't cry. Staying here isn't so bad. We have a lot of friends."

"But it's too difficult to make money here, wu...wh...I only picked three very common pearls for 6 silver coins and sold two boxes of seashell oil for 2 silver coins today. My hand was lacerated in the sea yesterday. If it touched the seawater, it would ache. I want to go home, wuwuwu..."

"You're just not used to it yet. When you are used to it and have better diving skills, you would reach deeper into the sea. If you are lucky, you could even pick up colorful pearls, each one of which would at least worth 1 gold coin. We girls could make money easier than the badass boys as they have to pick up iron ores in the sea. They are not afraid of that, what would we be afraid of? You will definitely make it, Shasha..."

The moment Zhang Tie drew close to the front corner of the corridor, he had heard two girls' voices. In order to avoid misunderstanding, when he drew close to them, Zhang Tie coughed twice and made his footsteps heavier on purpose. As was expected, the moment they heard about someone coming, the two girls became silent.

When Zhang Tie moved to the corner, he saw two girls who were also watching him. One of them was 15 or while the other seemed a bit older, about 17-18 years old. The younger girl had a good-looking round face whose eyes were like red peaches. Seeing Zhang Tie coming here, her face blushed as she hurriedly mopped off her tears. The other girl seemed to be comforting her.

Zhang Tie had formed a sharp instinct that the moment he saw a

girl, he would know her key sizes. He didn't mean to, but he would know naturally. After a glance over the two girls' faces, his eyes had already scanned across their breasts, waists, butts, and thighs which had outstanding curves.

"Erm, compared to Alice, Hanna and the other girls, Chinese girls truly have a smaller figure at this age."

"Humph!" The moment she saw Zhang Tie, the girl called Yuhan cast the whites of her eyes at Zhang Tie. Even the weeping girl was glaring at him and turned her head to the other direction.

Zhang Tie felt a bit strange about that...

When he walked a few steps away, he heard the two girls' voices through his acute auditory sense.

"Humph, he's that disgusting guy called Zhang Tie..." The girl called Yuhan said.

"His eyes were so terrifying. After being glanced by him, I felt uncomfortable all over!"

"I wouldn't have imagined that this person is so lecherous. His eyes were too lecherous. Shasha, you have to warn other sisters to be careful about this boring guy who kept looking at your body under the neck. He's not only boring but also dangerous to girls. Remember to not be tangled with this kind of person alone!"

Zhang Tie became depressed as he almost wanted to return to argue with them. "Damn, I've been here for only two days innocently, how could I have been hateful?"

...

Returning to his own room, Zhang Tie recovered his composure and constrained his impulse to enter the Castle of Black Iron to see what fruit did the sand-scale fish bring him. Instead, he took out the crystal pyramid which was put on the windowsill to refill its energy. After putting it under his bed, he calmly and patiently sat on the bed to start cultivating.

He started to polish the 6th surge point on his spine. Within 2 hours of cultivation, the 6th surge point started to radiate very bright orange lights. When it almost broke through to radiate yellow light, Zhang Tie stopped. He then started to practice mental arithmetic by two abacuses. He kept making sophisticated divisions and multiplications on the two abacuses respectively at the same time. After a while, he started to do multiplications and additions on the two abacuses at the same time.

After finishing mental arithmetic by two abacuses, Zhang Tie's mind felt highly spirited and flexible. He was in an unusually vigorous and pure condition.

At this moment, he could only hear insects chirps in the Zhixing Department. The two exotic moons were hanging high in the sky. Along with the sound of the wind blowing through the window was the sound of the waves in the distance. Zhang Tie stood still at the windowsill and looked outside at the bright moons. He felt

everything was so fantastic that it couldn't be described.

Standing still over there for quite awhile, when the fantastic sense in his mind gradually faded away, with a sound of "Zhi", Zhang Tie pulled off the curtain, leaving a great darkness in the room at once.

The darkness in his eyes soon disappeared; instead, a vigorous manor appeared in front of his eyes.

In a black swallowtail, Heller whose handsome face made Zhang Tie so envious that he even wanted to ruin Heller's face walked towards Zhang Tie.

"Handsome and magnificent Castle Lord, welcome to the Castle of Black Iron!" After bowing towards Zhang Tie, Heller looked at Zhang Tie, "Castle Lord, as the basic energy storage in Castle of Black Iron is going to be used up, I have to stop much work. You seemed having forgotten about our appointment."

Chapter 281: A Discovery

"Appointment? An appointment with Heller?" Zhang Tie racked his mind. After a short while, he patted his forehead and looked at Heller with a sorry expression, "I truly had forgotten about bringing basic energy into this space. But I didn't have a chance to bring things in. You know that once I'm found having such an ability, I might be abducted by others to be sliced up for tests. Therefore, I have to be careful about it."

"I know the environment you're in and your meticulous attitude. On increasing the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron, I have a suggestion."

"Just say it."

"I know that Castle Lord is here for the two new fruits on the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree.," Heller revealed a smile, "So we can talk about this after you've had the fruits!"

Zhang Tie hadn't imagined that Heller could be that "considerate". Hearing Heller's words and watching the small tree in front of him, Zhang Tie nodded, "Fine, we'll talk about it after I eat the fruits."

At this time, the Castle of Black Iron had already completely changed. Previously, Zhang Tie had no time to assemble the 2-story log cabin that covered 210 sq meters which he ordered from Blackhot City, but now, the house had already been erected in front of Zhang Tie. The assembled houses had been surrounded by

one-person high wooden boards. The small tree was in the courtyard surrounded by a barrier and the assembled houses.

The topography of the courtyard seemed to have been renovated by Heller. The location of the small tree was obviously 2 m higher than its surroundings. It was on a huge and tidy mortar-like mound. The small tree was even surrounded by white stone stages.

Zhang Tie admitted that after Heller's renovation, everything truly made him feel more comfortable and at ease.

"From now on, except Castle Lord, no other living beings are allowed to get close to the stages heading to the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree!" Walking together with Zhang Tie, Heller stopped in front of it and explained as he stood aside.

Zhang Tie delightfully nodded as he walked upwards.

The small tree was still growing. This time, Zhang Tie felt it was more verdant than last time. Each time he came here, the moment he saw those raw and ripe fruits on the small tree, Zhang Tie would be in a very good mood.

One leakless fruit had already been ripe and hanging over the tree while the second one would be ripe within three days. After knowing that the leakless fruit could work as alternative blood bags and save his life in an emergency, Zhang Tie kept all the leakless fruits on the tree these days.

Besides leakless fruits, there was an Iron-Body Fruit, a Trouble-Reappearance Fruit and a Fruit of Redemption.

Zhang Tie firstly cast his look on the pitch black hexagonal Trouble-Reappearance Fruit.

——Trouble-Reappearance Fruit has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly consume. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually fade.

After injecting his spiritual energy into the Trouble-Reappearance Fruit, Zhang Tie saw three sea serpents and the sea around Iron Ore Beach.

Zhang Tie then burst out loud laughing. After killing three sea serpents, he saw the scene using Trouble-Reappearance Fruit as expected. This time, Zhang Tie had a place to practice diving.

In the middle of the twigs was a Fruit of Redemption which contained the strength of golden uangs which was still raw. On the side of that fruit was another heart-shaped fruit.

——Fruit of Redemption——coming from the gratitude of the sand-scale fish. It has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly consume. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually fade.

——With this fruit, Castle Lord could increase resistance against cold environments by 1% and increase sensitivity to water flow by 1%.

Because fish breathe with gills while people breathe using their lungs, this Fruit of Redemption didn't bring Zhang Tie an abnormal underwater breathing ability. Due to physical constraints, Zhang Tie could not be a weird animal with gills. However, the two abilities provided by this fruit truly shocked Zhang Tie.

Many fish in the water had a powerful resistance to cold. Zhang Tie had read in a book that some fish, after being frozen for many days, once thawed, could still happily swim in the water. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the sand-scale fish was a type of the cold-resistant fish.

When in water, besides being unable to breathe, people were also largely limited on time by the low temperature, which made people rapidly lose body heat in the sea and become stiff while shivering. Finally, they would lose their consciousness and suffer from cardiopulmonary failure, etc.

1 silver coin for a 1% increase of cold-resistance and 1% increase of increase in water flow sensitivity. Zhang Tie had truly gained quite a bit.

Life was priceless! This ability brought by saving lives was priceless!

In a sophisticated manner, Zhang Tie picked off this Fruit of Redemption and engulfed it. The moment he bit into the fruit, its juice had already flown into his stomach and created a warm sensation which spread across Zhang Tie's skin and subcutaneous tissues. In only several minutes, Zhang Tie had absorbed it all.

After eating the Fruit of Redemption, Zhang Tie picked the Trouble-Reappearance Fruit and ate it. Closing his eyes, Zhang Tie then felt one more six-pointed star on the marvelous arch door in his mind. This six-pointed star was already activated, which indicated that Zhang Tie could enter the Trouble-Reappearance Situation at any time.

Because Heller was still waiting to talk with him, Zhang Tie didn't go inside the Trouble-Reappearance Situation. After all, he had a lot of free time in the future.

When Zhang Tie was going to leave the small tree, he saw the Iron-Body Fruit on the small tree. However, this time, Zhang Tie felt the color of the Iron-Body Fruit became different from that last time. Therefore, Zhang Tie stretched out his hand to check.

"Yi? That's so strange!" Zhang Tie remembered that when he came here last time, this Iron-Body Fruit was only one-third ripe, how could it be almost half ripe this time?

"Did I make a mistake? It shouldn't be that ripe." Since his spiritual energy surged, Zhang Tie's memory had grown increasingly better. He didn't think that he would make any mistake remembering things. "I haven't been practicing the Bear-Shoulder Iron-Body Skill these days, neither have I been beaten up

by others. How could this Iron-Body Fruit be developing further?"

"I will ask Heller."

...

Heller was still waiting for Zhang Tie outside the stone stage under the small tree.

"Heller, what's your suggestion for increasing basic energy storage of the Castle of Black Iron?" Zhang Tie asked bluntly.

"I suggest Castle Lord seize the opportunities right around you. You could have seized many chances to increase the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron, but I haven't seen you taking any action!"

"You mean those iron ores in the sea? I'm practicing my diving skills. After a couple of days, when I can dive deeper, I will take action." After thinking for awhile, Zhang Tie had understood Heller's meaning. It was truly a nice environmental condition in the sea just like that in the mine. If he chose a place with few people and act in a secret way, he could bring something into the Castle of Black Iron using the direct-transportation function that he had just mastered without being noticed by others.

"I'm happy that Castle Lord could consider moving the iron ores in the sea. But I didn't mean that..."

"What is it then?"

"Have you thought about it, Castle Lord?" Heller became quite thrilled as he continued, "When you swim in the sea, you are surrounded by seawater, once you use the direct-transportation function that you have mastered and steadily open the space channels on your two hands, won't the seawater constantly be absorbed into the Pool of Chaos in the Castle of Black Iron? Is there any other easier method that could be used to increase the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron?"

Zhang Tie became stunned as he felt an explosion go off in his mind. "That's it, how could I have not have thought about that. Once I dive in the sea, who could notice that the seawater is decreasing? Additionally, now that I could use the direct-transportation function of Castle of Black Iron to absorb seawater into the Castle of Black Iron, won't I be able to transport air from the Castle of Black Iron to the outside through the arch door in my mind?"

"Of course you can. Castle Lord has tried to move water from the Castle of Black Iron into the cup outside. Once you lock any space in the Castle of Black Iron, you can move the air in that space! If you are in the water, once you try several times, you will be able to freely breathe underwater."

Zhang Tie covered his mouth using one hand as he asked in a low voice, "You mean that as long as I do this in the water, I can directly move the air from the Castle of Black onto my hand and freely breathe through by hand?"

"It looks like you get it!" Heller nodded, "But this is one of the direct-transportation functions of Castle of Black Iron, there's a simpler method. If you want to take a breath in the water, you can try to directly send the air from the Castle of Black Iron into your mouth through the arch door in your mind!"

The moment he heard the words, Zhang Tie almost sprung up. "That direct-transportation function is simply marvelous. It's definitely a portable oxygen tank. However, compared to an oxygen tank, Castle of Black Iron is invisible. Additionally, the air in Castle of Black Iron is definitely much fresher than that in an oxygen tank.

Zhang Tie was so excited that he almost wanted to rush into the sea and have a try now. However, before he left, he had another question, "I've got another question. I remember that Iron-Body Fruit was only one-third ripe, how could it grow these days without being stimulated?"

"Castle Lord, when you are diving in the sea, the constantly changing water pressure would impose itself upon you. During this process, it was akin to be beaten or hit with something hard. The only difference between the two is that the force that you sustain in water is constant, which could be adjusted by the diving depth. As long as the force on you constantly changes, it will stimulate the Iron-Body Fruit to ripen. During this process, you could treat the sea as a still iron hammer, while you are..."

Before Heller finished, Zhang Tie had already disappeared...

Chapter 282: Test

On the second morning, on the way from the Hidden Dragon Palace to Iron Ore Beach...

"Zhang Tie, how did you manage to stir up all the girls in Zhixing Department? Why did I see all the girls show you the whites of their eyes at breakfast?" Wei Wu walked as he asked Zhang Tie who was walking in front of him.

Speaking of this, Zhang Tie was also a bit depressed, "Who knows, since I came to Hidden Dragon Palace, I've haven't talked with any girls. Damn, girls are really born to be narrow-minded and crazy!"

Zhang Keliang burst out laughing, "Brother, nobody in Hidden Dragon Palace dares to say that girls are born to be narrow-minded and crazy. According to your words, I don't think you'll have a girlfriend in the Palace anytime soon."

Zhang Keliang's laugh roused everybody's attention on Zhang Tie. Many people were surprised by Zhang Tie's boldness—"Born to be narrow-minded and crazy", "This guy is really a dead mouse that feels no cold. He's so careless that he dares to stir up all the girls in the Hidden Dragon Palace by saying this!"

Many people mumbled.

"When I was new here, I also heard from others that girls in Hidden Dragon Palace were tricky. Zhang Tie, you'd better watch

your words. If the girls heard your words, they might come to find trouble for you." Zhang Yunfei reminded Zhang Tie.

"So what? You think I'm a kind man? Those girls are born crazy. This father has not stirred up them at all. Why would they show me the whites of their eyes? I admit that I said that, I want to see whether they can bite off my butt or not!" Zhang Tie said in a casual way. Zhang Tie finally understood the proverb that one can be austere if he has no selfish desires. As he didn't expect to establish any relationship with those girls, he didn't care about whether they were happy or not.

"Brother, based on your distant attitude towards girls, you might be alone for the rest of your life. No girls would like you!" Zhang Hongsheng controlled his laugh as pretended to tell Zhang Tie in a serious way.

"I will be alone?" Zhang Tie pointed at his own nose as he seemed having heard the most interesting joke. "If the girls of the Rose Association and Pandora, Alice and Beverly heard this, they would definitely not agree. Even if I want to be alone, I don't think that they would agree to that... cough...cough...but I don't have to show off in front of these guys, Heh...heh..." Zhang Tie smiled as he lowered his head and kept walking without saying anything else.

"Zhang Tie, try to recall what did you stir up those girls. You'd better spare some time to apologize to them. Otherwise, you might not be able to live well on the island in the future." Zhang Yunfei seriously suggested.

Zhang Tie patted Zhang Yunfei's shoulders, "Trust me, never think that you will leave a good impression on those girls by pretending to be a considerate gentleman. All those girls are crazy. When they lose their mind, you should never try to explain logic to them. You should ignore them. If they dare to stir up you, you should treat them as spinning tops in front of your feet and ferociously whip them. The more ferociously you whip them, the more docile they would be. Although men have 12 zodiacs, girls only have 1——spinning top!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the boys aside were stunned. This guy really dared to say anything. Hearing Zhang Tie's unusual talk, all the juveniles cast weird eyes on him. None of them made any response.

When they arrived at the Iron Ore Beach, the sun had just risen up. Everyone then started to undress by the sea. After putting their clothes by the rocks on the bank, they started to walk into the sea with wire sacks while gritting their teeth.

"Argh, it's too cold..." Only after walking several steps into the sea, before the seawater reached his knee, Wei Wu's teeth had already started to clatter. For all the juveniles, the most painstaking moment was when they entered the sea each morning. The icy seawater's test to people could even match that of the scorching sun.

"Ocean, I'm here..." Zhang Tie made a weird utterance as he rushed into the sea, splattering icy seawater onto Wei Wu and Zhang Hongsheng on his side, causing them to utter strange cries.

"Bastard!" The boys uttered as they chased after Zhang Tie's shadow and directly dived into the sea to end the stimulation.

After swimming 50 m away from the shoal area, he took a deep breath as he lowered his head and instantly dived into the seawater. Although still being stimulated by the icy seawater, Zhang Tie felt it wasn't as cold as yesterday. Zhang Tie knew that it was because of the 1% cold-resistance granted by that Fruit of Redemption that he had eaten last night.

Compared to yesterday, Zhang Tie could swim better today. After all, Zhang Tie had practiced swimming for 4-5 hours in the Trouble-Reappearance Situation last night before went to bed. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized rapid progress due to his sharper sensitivity towards water flow and constant practice.

When practicing swimming in the Trouble-Reappearance Situation, the only weakness that made him pitiful was that he could not simulate the direct-transportation function of the Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, the moment he arrived here today, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to have a try.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether he would make a loud noise when he used the special functions of Castle of Black Iron for the first time. Therefore, after diving into the sea, he didn't swim towards those oceanic trenches; instead, he silently changed his direction and swam to a hidden place that contained more reefs and fewer navy-blue iron ores over 300 m away to the east of the Iron Ore Beach.

Few people would usually come here.

Zhang Tie found a place deeper than 30 m between two reefs where he could hide well before he started to test his direct transportation ability.

Like several times before, when Zhang Tie focused his spiritual energy onto the arch door, the arch door started to radiate a strange, unsteady wave onto Zhang Tie's right palm. In a split second, Zhang Tie felt a great suction from inside his palm. At the same time, Zhang Tie's right hand felt like they were fastened by a rope and a force in the opposite of the suction force instantly pulled Zhang Tie 2 m forward in the seawater.

Zhang Tie was really stunned by such a great change. As a result, he was choked by a mouthful of seawater. The moment the qi between his chest and his abdomen disappeared, Zhang Tie hurriedly swam upwards.

Behind a reef above the sea...

With a bustling sound, Zhang Tie showed his head above water, "Cough...cough...cough", he coughed out the seawater in his mouth. Zhang Tie was so surprised as his face slightly turned pale. He didn't know what was going just now. How could his body lose control the moment he opened the channel between his Castle of Black Iron and the seawater? How could he be pulled forward by a force which was opposite to the suction?

Zhang Tie carefully thought about that as he gradually understood it. Could it be the counter force of the suction?

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie dived to the same place and prepared to make a second attempt.

This time, Zhang Tie became more careful. He carefully controlled the size of the space transportation channel and fixed it as one-fifth of its original size before trying again.

As was expected, the moment he opened the channel, the counterforce reappeared, pulling Zhang Tie's body forward along the direction that his fingers pointed at. Zhang Tie immediately held a reef using his left hand to stop the movement.

As he had experienced this before, this time, Zhang Tie was not overly surprised; instead, he carefully felt the sense and the situation inside the Castle of Black Iron.

Above the Pool of Chaos in the Castle of Black Iron, a torrent shot down like a completely opened faucet. The moment it fell into the Pool of Chaos, it instantly disappeared like a drop of water falling into the sea.

When the torrent of seawater fell into the Pool of Chaos, Zhang Tie's hand was like a bottomless hole which was constantly sucking in seawater. The force that pulled his body forward was truly the counter force of the suction. After he opened the invisible door on his hand to suck in seawater, he was also pulled forward by the counter force.

Zhang Tie instantly understood what was going on.

At the bottom of the sea, Zhang Tie slowly observed his palm. After a short while, a small swirl with a diameter of 10 cm started to form. The swirl was like a funny twisting spirit in Zhang Tie's palm.

Zhang Then used his spiritual energy to adjust the size of the torrent in his space channel. When he enlarged the size of the space channel, more water would enter the Pool of Chaos and a greater counterforce would act on his body. Similarly, when he narrowed the size of the space channel, less water would enter the Pool of Chaos and a smaller force would act on his body.

After trying over 10 minutes underwater, Zhang Tie gradually discovered how things worked and became more adept at increasing his basic energy storage by transporting seawater into the Castle of Black Iron.

If he wanted to increase his basic energy storage in the Castle of Black Iron in a short period, Zhang Tie had to expand the "caliber" of the space channel; however, if he wanted to expand the "caliber" of the space channel, the counterforce acting on him would be very great. In such a case, it would be very difficult for him to maintain balance underwater. As he watched that small swirl on his palm, Zhang Tie started to rack his mind, "I have to find a way to maintain balance in the sea. If I kept doing like this, I'd have to hug a huge reef with my other hand the maintain balance."

When Zhang Tie was racking his mind, a colorful little fish flexibly swam across Zhang Tie 20 cm away from him. The moment he saw that flexible little fish, Zhang Tie was shocked as

he came across an unprecedented thought.

"Why do I have to fix my body and stay still in the sea? Why not move in the seawater using the counterforce? Couldn't the size and the direction of that counterforce be casually adjusted by myself? Doesn't it mean that I could increase my movement speed in the sea to a horrible level that nobody else could imagine..."

The swirl on Zhang Tie's right hand disappeared. Zhang Tie then raised his two hands in front of him. After looking at his hands seriously and recovering his composure, Zhang Tie started to swim in the sea. At the same time, he opened his space channel a bit on his hands. In a split second, his swimming speed increased by at least 30%...

Chapter 283: Being Eye-Catching

After one day of work, Zhang Tie had only gathered 150 kg of navy-blue iron ores, which seemed to be almost the same weight as that of Zhang Yunfei.

What made Zhang Tie so eye-catching was that there was a swollen bump on his forehead.

All the other guys were surprised about the bump on Zhang Tie's forehead. They had seen people being cramped, drowned, beaten by sea serpents, and being stung by sea urchins which caused their legs to be swollen to the size of their waists, but they had not seen a single person coming out of the sea with a bump on their forehead.

"What's up with that bump?" Wei Wu asked Zhang Tie out of curiosity when he saw Zhang Tie smirking from time to time although having a bump on his forehead.

"I swam too fast and hit a rock at the bottom of the sea." Zhang Tie answered honestly.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody else exchanged glances with each other and burst out laughing. Wei Wu laughed so heavily that his belly even cramped, "Aiyo[1], I wouldn't have imagined that you are that funny..."

How fast would a person have to swim to hit a rock in the sea? The reason was really awkward despite being very humorous.

Everybody thought that Zhang Tie didn't feel like telling the truth and therefore fabricated a reason. After laughing for a while, the other guys didn't ask him anymore.

Zhang Tie then also laughed as their responses were within his expectations.

After exchanging the navy-blue iron ores for 15 silver coins in the Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie immediately left the Palace without eating supper.

If he went to the fish market after supper, it would be too late for him to buy sand-scale fish as many booths would have been closed by then. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly went to the fish market.

Today, Zhang Tie came to the fish market in the wharf several hours earlier than that yesterday. The fish market was several dozens of times more boisterous than the day before.

All the booths were still in business in the fish market. Many people were trading near the places where the fishing boats were anchored on the wharf. There were so many passers-by over the wharf, making it very lively.

Dozens of sea products were sold in the fish market, such as marine fish, sea cucumbers, sea shrimps, sea crabs and sea snails. There were 7-8 kinds of shrimp in different shapes and sizes. Zhang Tie could only identify 5-6 kinds of sea products among them, even including sand-scale fish that he learned of yesterday.

For Zhang Tie who was born in Blackhot City and had been familiar with markets from a young age, of course, the boisterous atmosphere of the fish market brought him a sense of nostalgia.

Zhang Tie walked through the fish market in an agile manner as he glanced at the booths on both sides one after the other. After a rough circle around the fish market, he became thrilled as he found 10 more booths that sold sand-scale fish. Each booth would sell this kind of worthless fish more or less in barrel or basin.

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie didn't hesitate anymore as he rapidly walked to the booth where he bought the sand-scale fish yesterday.

"Boss Zhu, here are the stone-tiger fish today, I've prepared them all for your hotel...ha, as we're familiar with each other, I will just take 20 silver coins from you for 1.75 kg of them..."

The moment that booth owner fished a trade, he had found Zhang Tie standing in front of him.

"Argh, I've got fewer sand-scale fish today, you only need to pay me 85 copper coins for them!"

"No change, 1 silver coin is alright. If you can provide me more next time, I can pay you less." Zhang Tie smiled as he took out of 1 silver coin and passed it to him.

"Ha, little brother, you are so generous. Okay, If I get more, I 'll only ask for 1 silver coin from you next time!" The booth owner took the money as he replied happily.

"Okay, as usual, I will use your barrel for awhile!" Saying this, Zhang Tie had already taken the barrel which contained sand-scale fish.

"No problem, just take it and bring it back to me before I leave."

Zhang Tie nodded as he lifted the barrel with sand-scale fish and ran towards the seaside in the distance. A short while later, after setting free those sand-scale fish, he returned to the booth with an empty barrel. He then bought all the sand-scale fish on the other booths and put them all in the barrel before running towards the seaside and once again set free the sand-scale fish.

Sand-scale fish were really cheap. It took Zhang Tie only 12 silver coins to buy all the sand-scale fish in the booths.

Today, he had set free almost 10 times more sand-scale fish than yesterday. Zhang Tie was filled with pleasure inside. He had not imagined that he could practice in such way.

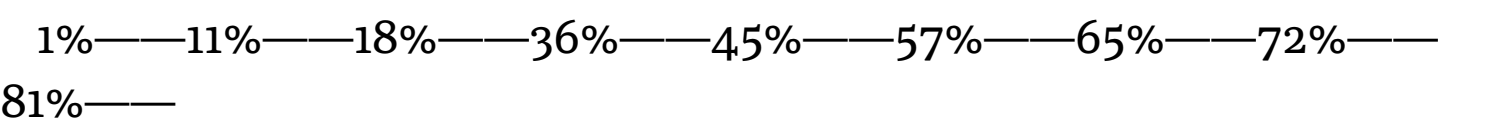
As so many people were in the fish market, almost nobody noticed a juvenile who lifted a barrel of sand-scale fish and ran here and there. Therefore, Zhang Tie finished his job in public.

After sweeping all the sand-scale fish in the fish market, Zhang

Tie sent the borrowed barrel back before heading back to Hidden Dragon Palace. It took him over 1 hour to finish the job. When he returned to the Hidden Dragon Palace, it was supper time in the Zhixing Department.

In the following days, Zhang Tie kept practicing the same way. In the daytime, he would go pick up navy-blue iron ores. After that, he would run to the fish market to buy sand-scale fish and set them free. Each day, he would improve. In the evening, he would practice the movements of Iron-Blood Fish Skill back in the Zhixing Department so as to prepare for forming Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

After setting free sand-scale fish, the Fruits of Redemption improved Zhang Tie's ability day by day as his cold-resistance and sensitivity towards water flow increased day by day...



When his physical abilities increased, Zhang Tie became more adept at using the direct transportation ability of the Castle of Black Iron in the sea. It was becoming increasingly simpler for Zhang Tie to take a breath in the sea. Additionally, he could better use the counterforce as a driving force to swiftly move in water. Especially the second skill, Zhang Tie had almost forgotten the original intention of this skill was to increase the basic energy storage of the Castle of Black Iron. He started to practice this skill purely by regarding it as one of his abilities.

When Zhang Tie swam through the deep sea every day, the Iron-

Body Fruit on the small tree in the Castle of Black Iron ripened rapidly. After eating this Iron-Body Fruit, Zhang Tie obviously felt the effect of the Iron-Body Fruit——before eating it, Zhang Tie could already dive to a depth of almost 100 m; after eating it, Zhang Tie could easily break through 120 m in the sea on the second day.

The deeper he dived, the greater the pressure from the seawater he would have to endure, which increased the tempering of Zhang Tie's body and a faster growth speed of the Iron-Body Fruit. As a result, the newly growing Iron-Body Fruit could allow Zhang Tie to challenge deep seas.

Zhang Tie's cultivation then started to enter a benign circulation.

Taking the sea as a hammer and taking himself as iron. Zhang Tie formed a generous mood in his mind. Each night when he practiced in a Trouble-Reappearance Situation in his room, Zhang Tie would set a target for himself to challenge the life limit in the ocean by losing his life once. After Zhang Tie experienced the endless coldness, darkness, pressure and finally lost his mind due to "death" in the sea each day, he would feel as though he was being reborn the next day he woke up. By then, he would gain a wholly new self, who would have less fear about the ocean.

During these days, the news on his bet with the others had spread in the Hidden Dragon Palace. They were all wondering who dare to bet with 300 gold coins that he could definitely form the Iron-Blood Battle Qi, which was the secret fighting skill of the imperial households of Norman Empire.

Everybody, after hearing this news, would feel that Zhang Tie

must be mad. But Zhang Tie was not mad; instead, he performed as normal as usual. Therefore, the eyes of the surrounding people became strange.

Along with the bet was Zhang Tie's two comments on girls in Hidden Dragon Palace. The first comment was—all the girls were born to be narrow-minded and crazy. The second comment was—boys had 12 zodiacs while girls only had 1, their zodiac is a spinning top. With the two comments and Zhang Tie's previous performance which was exaggerated among girls mouth by mouth, Zhang Tie had completely become the public enemy of the girls of the Hidden Dragon Palace in less than two weeks.

These days, when he ate in the canteen, Zhang Tie had already felt girls in the Zhixing Department were showing the whites of their eyes in a killing intent. When Zhang Tie poured out the two "famous comments", many boys who went to pick up navy-blue iron ores in the Iron Ores Beach had heard them. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't know which bastard had spread his comments into the girls' ears to make the situation worse.

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie could only swear inside.

This morning, when Zhang Tie cleaned his mouth and washed his face and headed for eating breakfast, he was blocked by a great number of girls by the entrance of the canteen.

They looked so furious. The moment he saw them holding him back on the way and glaring at him with eyes as sharp as knives and arrows, Zhang Tie's heart instantly pounded as he knew that they must come here to find him trouble.

"Zhang Tie, we have something to ask you about. Are you brave to answer us!" A level 6 elder sister who looked 1-2 years elder than Zhang Tie walked towards Zhang Tie and put it straightly in a cold manner.

Zhang Tie carefully glanced over that plump girl and estimated that the size of her breasts was 34D. He then forcefully swallowed his saliva and showed a righteous expression.

"I'm sorry, I've not accepted so many girls' proposal for very long time. I've not imagined that although being that low-key, I am still that eye-catching. As I'm paying all my attention to cultivation and learning, I have no time to care about love affairs. Please bury your words in your mind like burying a beautiful and fragrant seed. Don't say it out loud. Please take it as a beautiful memory of your youth, how about that?"

In a split second, the girls became really dumbfounded by Zhang Tie's words. Soon after that, their cherry faces turned pale...

Chapter 284: Being Outstanding

"Sorry, give way please; I haven't eaten breakfast yet. Can you allow me in..." Zhang Tie wanted to detour from those girls like he hadn't seen their faces at all.

"Bastard, stop!" Those girls who were still blocking Zhang Tie's path directly surrounded him.

"What are you talking about just now? Who wants to propose to you?"

"That's it! Are you dreaming? This sister could fall in love with you?"

"This guy is really lecherous, narrow-minded and presumptuous!"

"He's more like a lunatic!"

...

Zhang Tie was instantly drowning in the girls' curses.

"Listen, now that you don't want to propose to me, why are you surrounding me?" Zhang Tie looked around at the girls who were condemning him on purpose while crossing his hands in front of the chest like being afraid of being violated, "If you dare to attack

me in public, I will shout loudly to ask for help from others!"

The girls were so infuriated that they almost passed out.

The girl who initiated the interaction with Zhang Tie really wanted to smack his face which pretended to be in a panic. However, given her purpose here, she restrained her impulse.

"We are looking for you, not for any other reason than to bet with you!"

Bet? Zhang Tie suspiciously looked at those girls, "What will they bet with me?"

"I heard you have bet with a senior brother in Breaking-Heavens Department for 300 gold coins that you can form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. All the girls in Zhixing Department also want to bet with you for that. Dare you bet with us?"

"Ha, your zodiac is truly a spinning top. If I don't ferociously whip you, you might not be happy. Look, you're coming for me."

After thinking for awhile inside, Zhang Tie stopped to be cynic as he seriously looked at this girl, "I have nothing but boldness, go ahead, bet what?"

"Each of us girls will bet with you for 30 gold coins. We think you can't form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in 2 years. If you lose, you should pay each of us 30 gold coins, how about that?"

"These girls are here to rob me when I am in trouble. This must be the treatment as the public enemy of girls. Look at the 12 girls who were surrounding him, Zhang Tie smiled, "You are here to add 360 gold coins' debt to me. let's see it..."

"You are really good at scheming. The odds between others and I is always 1:3. I want 1080 gold coins if I win. Why do I have to make a concession to you by 3 times the odds? Are we familiar with each other?" Zhang Tie refused them at once.

"What do you want then?"

"It's very simple, the odds will be 1:3 as usual. Don't think that I will make a concession for you because you're female. I will not make a concession for you with even 1 copper coin!" Zhang Tie glared at them.

The girls gritted their teeth as they looked at Zhang Tie, "This bastard is really narrow-minded. Didn't his cousin bet with the other one for 1:1?"

After short whispers to each other, the girls instantly reached an agreement.

"Fine, we'll bet 1:3. Each of us will pay you 90 gold coins if you win. We don't think you can form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in 2 years!"

The girls then believed that Zhang Tie would definitely fail to

form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. If they don't fear that the total amount would scare Zhang Tie away, they might pay more.

"As we have no money now, how will we deal with the wager then?" Zhang Tie pretended to be serious.

The girls seemed having long prepared for this question.

"We can sign an agreement at first. When the result comes out, if one doesn't have the money to pay it off, one could use an IOU, but one has to pay off the interest first!"

"Do we need to sign an agreement. I think it's needless as my words always count." Zhang Tie pretended to be serious.

"Humph...we'd better sign an agreement. What if you repudiate the debt at a critical moment?" The girl who was talking with Zhang Tie seriously looked at him.

"Fine, I will sign it." Although acting like he was helpless, Zhang Tie had actually long been very happy.

...

As Zhang Tie was surrounded by the girls of Zhixing Department, it arose the attention of many boys. When they heard that these girls were going to bet with Zhang Tie, they all cast their sympathetic eyes on Zhang Tie. When the girls mentioned signing the agreement, the sympathy in the boys' eyes almost turned into

condolence.

Nobody felt that Zhang Tie could form Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

Ten minutes later, in the canteen of Zhixing Department, under the gaze of the onlookers, Zhang Tie signed an agreement with each of the 12 girls, each party had one copy, totaling 24 copies.

If the girls won, Zhang Tie had to pay 30 gold coins to each girl. If Zhang Tie couldn't afford that, he had to calculate the interest in terms of a compound interest of 10% monthly.

However, if Zhang Tie won, each girl would pay him 90 gold coins. If they weren't able to pay it off, they would also pay off the same compound interest.

At the end of each agreement was a paragraph——These wagers and the interests accrued from them could only be paid by the personal income gain on Hidden Dragon Island. If the losing party could not complete the payment, they could choose to reduce the debt by finishing tasks appointed by the creditor.

When he read the last paragraph of the agreement, Zhang Tie shook his head as he could almost imagine the group of girls' excited look when they were discussing the last item. In their opinions, he would definitely not win this bet and would finally be their slave. This was how those girls treated their public enemy. They really were narrow-minded!

After taking these signed agreements, those girls started to look at Zhang Tie pleasantly. They looked so high-spirited and seemed as though they had won a battle. It was like to they could see Zhang Tie's poor air when he lost the bet and begged for their forgiveness.

Zhang Tie also revealed a sinister smile as he carefully took the 12 copies of agreements, on which were the graceful names of the girls——Du Yuhan, Li Shasha, Zhang Shaoyun, Zhang Wanjun, Li Yurou, Zhang Caiwei, Zhang Ya, Guo Miaolu, Zhang Li, Zhao Shihua, Qu Liangying and Dong Yan.

Among those girls, there were only five coming from Zhang clan while the other seven came from other clans. That girl who looked like an elder sister called Guo Miaolu. It was also Zhang Tie's first time finding out the names of the girls who lived in the same department with him.

The first battle between Zhang Tie, the public enemy of all girls, and the other girls in Zhixing Department started to become the hot topic in Zhixing Department during breakfast.

...

"Zhang Tie, aren't we brothers?" While eating breakfast, Wei Wu righteously asked Zhang Tie.

"Of course!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Shouldn't brothers should help each other?"

"Yea!"

"Shouldn't brothers share profits with each other?"

"Certainly!" Zhang Tie watched Wei Wu as he didn't understand what Wei Wu wanted to say, "Just say what you want."

"Okay, I will then put it straight..." After taking a deep breath, Wei Wu's righteous face instantly turned into a big obsequious smile as he rubbed his hand, "I also want to bet with you. Just like what's written on the agreement between you and the girls, but I'm not as greedy as those girls. I only bet for 10 gold coins. If you lose it, you can pay it for me at any time. I will not ask for interest from you. How about that?"

Zhang Tie...

...

When he left Zhixing Department and headed for Iron Ore Beach, Zhang Tie encountered Zhang Haige and his younger brother Zhang Haixin outside the memorial archway of the Hidden Dragon Palace.

"Zhang Tie, I heard you could only carry 100-200 kg of navy-blue iron ores a day. At your speed, you couldn't even pick up 300 tons in 2 years, let alone 300 gold coins. Young man, you know it 's hard to make money in Hidden Dragon Island now. Remember that before you want to boast, you'd better acknowledge your own strength. You'd better not let me win too easily, otherwise, I will have no sense of achievement, hahaha..."

After teasing Zhang Tie for awhile, Zhang Haige burst out laughing loudly and walked away in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then shook his head. As he was always being familiar with diving skills and the special ability of the Castle of Black Iron, he didn't pay too much attention to picking up navy-blue iron ores; however, he hadn't imagined that he was despised by others because of this. Fortunately, he had been familiar with diving and could move more flexibly underwater. Additionally, he just took an Iron-Body Fruit yesterday and could dive deeper than 150 m now. It was the right time for him to become outstanding in Hidden Dragon Palace...

"Zhang Tie, don't be concerned about his words. As you've only been the Palace for 10 days, you've done pretty well." Zhang Keliang comforted Zhang Tie.

"It doesn't matter, I won't care about his words." Zhang Tie revealed a sunny smile...

...

One hour later, after staying in the water for less than 20 minutes near Iron Ore Beach, Zhang Tie had shown his head above the seawater. After taking another breath, he took the wire, one end of which was fastened onto the reef, and dived into the water once again. After Zhang Tie dived for two minutes, Zhang Yunfei showed his head above the seawater. The moment he prepared to dive once again, Zhang Yunfei caught sight of that wire which was fastened onto the reef, "Who's that fast? How could he be that fast? It's only been 20 minutes since we came here, yet he's fully loaded a sack with navy-blue iron ores."

In the sea...

At this moment, Zhang Tie was no different than a fish. Being upside down, he was twisting his body with a wire in hand. Like a javelin that was thrown into the sea, he kept diving deep into the sea.

He passed by the first layer of the oceanic trench...

He passed by the second layer of the oceanic trench...

He passed by the third layer of the oceanic trench...

Zhang Tie kept diving deep into the sea until the sixth layer of the oceanic trench. With the exception of Zhang Tie, no one else could reach such a deep place. In this oceanic trench, there were iron ores whose sizes changed from as big as head to as big as a millstone. They radiated faint blue light in the seawater and irradiated the undersea world, making it very mysterious.

Zhang Tie found the wire sack that he had filled with navy-blue iron ores and buckled up the wire onto the sack. He then lifted it up in water. At this moment, he was already able to move rapidly upward while carrying a sack. But, it would be too amazing if he did that. Therefore, Zhang Tie still chose the old method to lift the sack out of the water.

Zhang Tie directly surged upward from the oceanic trench at a speed twice that of what he dived in with.

With a bustling sound, Zhang Tie showed his head above the seawater near the reef.

On the reef, Zhang Keliang and the other guys had stopped their work as they were waiting for someone to come out of the water.

"How could you be that fast? We just started, yet you've already got enough navy-blue iron ores?" Zhang Hongsheng watched Zhang Tie with an amazed expression.

"Hoho, it's truly faster than usual!" Zhang Tie smiled as he started to climb onto the reef.

"That's really him!" After exchanging glances with each other, the other guys started to move and help Zhang Tie pull the wire. They were excited to see how many navy-blue iron ores did Zhang Tie get today. They all didn't believe that Zhang Tie could find a sack of navy-blue iron ores at such a fast speed.

"Wow, it's too heavy..."

"Almost half of 300-m long wire has been put in the water. Zhang Tie, did you really dive deeper than 100 m? My god! How many days have you been here? How could you have such a great diving skill!" Wei Wu signed.

Zhang Tie smiled and kept silent. He kept forcefully pulling the items out of the sea.

2-3 minutes later, that wire sack that was buckled with the wire was pulled out of the seawater. Soon after Zhang Tie put the sack onto the reef, Zhang Yunfei and the other guys had already surrounded up and directly opened the sack.

There were only 2 smooth navy-blue iron ores in the sack which were radiating faint blue light.

"Wow, what huge navy-blue iron ores! Each of them will weigh 200-300 kg. This sack will at least weight 500-600 kg..." Zhang Yunfei exclaimed, "Zhang Tie, where have you got such huge iron ores?"

"You can see such iron ores everywhere in the sixth layer of the oceanic trench!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he said this.

"Sixth layer?" Everybody watched Zhang Tie like watching ghost, "You mean you got these iron ores in the sixth layer of the oceanic

trench?"

"Of course. The deeper you reach, the easier it is to find larger navy-blue iron ores you will find. Don't you know about that?"

"Oh, my god, I'm going to go die now. Comparisons are just..." Wei Wu uttered a weird voice, "I could only reach the second layer of the oceanic trench to find some small navy-blue iron ores to survive myself. How could anybody reach the sixth layer?"

"People who could reach the sixth layer of oceanic trench have not been seen for many years!" Zhang Keliang slightly touched that huge navy-blue iron ore and let out a long sigh.

The sixth layer of the oceanic trench is deeper than 140 m, which was almost like an abyss for the other students of Zhixing Department. The most of the people in Zhixing Department could only reach the third layer of the oceanic trench. Only very few of them could reach the fourth layer of the oceanic trench. The fifth oceanic trench was already 100 m deep, which was like a natural chasm that could not be stridden over for the juveniles in Zhixing Department. However, this chasm was like a paper that could be easily broken through by Zhang Tie.

"You gain such abilities later on. I'm just lucky right now. Well, I have to carry them back. After that, I will come back to carry some more today..."

After carrying the navy-blue iron ores to the bank, Zhang Tie carried the entire 600 kg sack and started to head up on the

mountainous path, which stunned all the other guys once again.

On that very day, Zhang Tie submitted 3.2 tons of navy-blue iron ores, which shocked the entire Zhixing Department. They hadn't seen such a great figure for many years in Zhixing Department...

After 10 days since his arrival on Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie started to be outstanding on Hidden Dragon Island in such a manner that was unheard of at the age of 16...

Chapter 285: A New Year

After the catastrophe, the Chinese calendar became the universal calendar for human beings in the Black Iron Age. Each year, when the Faerie-Dragon Star rose up from the east, a new year would start which also symbolized the beginning of the spring festival.

Accordingly, the day before the Faerie-Dragon Star rose up, namely December 31st each year, it would be New Year's Eve, namely the Eve before Nian Pass Day.

"Nian" was a monster that could destroy human beings in the legends. It was said that on that very day, numerous brave Chinese forefathers pulled out of their swords with the exciting will to fight along drumbeats of war to face the "Nian" and finally killed it. Therefore, from that day on, beating a drum became a Chinese tradition.

Previously when he was in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie would always have a great fun in beating a drum on the Nian Pass Day. On that very day, the Zhang family would always set a beating drum in the house, allowing Zhang Tie great fun all day long.

Zhang Tie's father told him that people beat drums on that day was to remember the bravery and glory of the Chinese forefathers. Chinese people beat drums on the New Year's Eve in order to carry forward the bravery and glory of Chinese bloodline. In this way, the moment Chinese descendants heard the drumbeats, they would have the bravery to pull out of their swords to face any difficulty or enemy.

On the New Year's Eve, drumbeats could be heard across Hidden Dragon Island while the drumbeats of Hidden Dragon Palace drifted from the top of the mountain, which everybody in the Hidden Dragon Palace could hear.

"Bang bang bang bang", the drumbeats that drifted from the top of the mountain of Hidden Dragon Palace became as restful as a gentle breeze at one moment and as ferocious as lightning at another. All sorts of drumbeats on the island started to beat in accordance with the drumbeats that drifted from the top of the mountain of Hidden Dragon Palace. Under such rhythmized drumbeats, the entire Hidden Dragon island was like a distant ancient battlefield while a solemn and majestic momentum reverberated from the drumbeats.

When the drumbeats were restful, Zhang Tie didn't hear the drumbeats at all; instead, he heard the heavy and depressive footsteps of a giant. The giant's feet stomped on the land one step after another. It seemed that each step contained sadness, blood, and tears that had existed for a thousand years. When the drumbeats gradually sped up and became more and more exciting, Zhang Tie seemed to hear numerous ancient Chinese spirits' soars. The drumbeats resonated with the mountain, the sea, the sky and each heart on Hidden Dragon Island. It wasn't purely drumbeats anymore, but the roars of armored fighters and horses that spread everywhere.

Zhang Tie was really shocked, ever since he was born, he had not known that Chinese people celebrate their most important festival in this way. Comparatively, when in Blackhot City, the drumbeats from only from a few Chinese households were more like a program for kids; however, at this time, he understood that the

drumbeats were more like the spirits of each Chinese descendent. What they woke up was the glory and bravery that slept in the bloodline of the Chinese people.

Zhang Tie didn't know how he passed New Year's Eve. He didn't sleep overnight due to his habit in Blackhot City as he needed to stay up to see the new year. Instead, he just quietly sat on his bed and immersed in the drumbeats one after the other both mentally and physically.

Zhang Tie forgot time and everything else. His mentality and spirituality kept rising and falling along with the drumbeats. In the end, when the drumbeats stopped, Zhang Tie left his room and appeared in the courtyard of the Zhixing Department. He faced the east and watched the Faerie-Dragon Star, the brightest star in the sky. Before sunrise, it had been slowly rising up from the sky in the east.

Not only Zhang Tie, all the others in Zhixing Department had walked out and appeared in the courtyard. Nobody talked; instead, they all stood there silently and gazed at the Faerie-Dragon Star rising from the east. At this moment, all the other people in the Palace had walked out of their rooms and stood on empty land or at high locations and watched the Faerie-Dragon Star rising from east.

The year 890 of Black Iron Calendar silently arrived along with the rising Faerie-Dragon Star...

From now on, Zhang Tie was 16 years old...

Seeing the Faerie-Dragon Star rising from the east, Zhang Tie sighed a lot inside. He really had experienced too much in the past half year. Comparatively, his earlier 15 years were as blank as white paper.

Zhang Tie didn't know what would happen in the year 890 of Black Iron Calendar. He only knew that if Donder was right, the 3rd holy war between human and demons would be closer.

Of course, the so-called holy war would have no omen at all and occur in one day. Holy war was just a general concept. Historically, the symbolic events at the beginning of the first two holy wars between human and demons were that a certain country was completely destroyed by demons, billions of the living were killed and most of the human countries were involved in the holy war between human and demons. Actually, before each holy war, the chaos of human society and increasingly frequent skirmishes between human and demons had arisen in number one after the other.

Therefore, Zhang Tie knew that he really didn't have much time left. He should make the most out of each day when he was in Hidden Dragon Palace. When the Waii Sub-continent was in turmoil, the greater ability he had, the more protection could he provide to the people he cared about.

It wasn't until the dawn arrived when the first light of sun appeared in the east and the Faerie-Dragon Star in the sky gradually disappeared did the boys and girls standing in the courtyard return to their own rooms.

On the way back to his own room, Zhang Tie won numerous eye rolls from the girls and cold harrumphs once again. Two weeks ago, on the same day when Zhang Tie signed the agreement with those girls, he had already exploded with unusual power and ability, becoming the most eye-catching person in the Zhixing Department.

Before this, nobody in the Hidden Dragon Palace thought that Zhang Tie could form Iron-Blood Battle Qi; however, after that, Zhang Tie became increasingly eye-catching. He started to pick up more and more navy-blue iron ores from the oceanic trench day by day. The weight of navy-blue iron ores also gradually increased from over 3000 kg a day to over 5000 kg a day. Many people had changed their opinions on Zhang Tie and started to think that Zhang Tie might be able to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

Unusual people could do unusual things. There was no doubt about that.

In Hidden Dragon Palace, some senior brothers in Lingtian Department had also bet on whether Zhang Tie could form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. As a result, the odds had declined from 1:3 a week ago to 1:2.7 now. However, those stewards in the Hidden Dragon Palace seemed to not about this. By contrast, the face of the girls in Zhixing Department started to be increasingly gloomy when the odds of Zhang Tie's success were increased.

In those girls' eyes, Zhang Tie was not only narrow-minded, lecherous, and arrogant but also cunning and sinister. They thought that Zhang Tie being low-key before was to lure them into

a trap. Soon after they were in the trap, Zhang Tie immediately showed his real strength.

Zhang Tie didn't care about the girls' opinions and glares at all. In his opinion, it was not the right moment to deal with the girls, not until he formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi. For a newbie, 90 gold coins could not be easily paid off, let alone interest.

As he didn't sleep last night, after dawn, Zhang Tie became a bit sleepy. However, soon after he returned to his own room and prepared to sit on the bed with his eyes closed, Zhang Tie heard knocks from the door.

The knocks were very light, which only sounded, "duo...duo...".

Zhang Tie opened the door and saw a girl rubbing her skirt corner and standing outside the door. This girl was Lv Shasha, the same one who was crying in the corridor of Zhixing Department that Zhang Tie had seen before.

"What's up?" Zhang Tie calmly asked as he was confused about the girl's intention here.

Lv Shasha was almost as old as him. She was a bit shorter, slightly fat while having breasts and bottoms that were sensual and appealing. She had a round delicate face, despite having a bit of baby fat. Besides being womanly, she was also naive, making her similar to Fiona's taste and flavor. When he asked her, Zhang Tie started to glance at this girl. Her skin was even better than that of Fiona's as it was white as snow. Although her breasts were a bit

small, they also looked plump. The size must be a 'C' cup, which could already match that of some mature Chinese women. With the shoulder-length hair, she looked more energetic and more shameful.

Thinking of the little woman Fiona who was raising her snow-white butt in the air while on the bed and was f**ked so heavily by him that she even begged him to stop while wailing, Zhang Tie became slightly mind-absent.

"I...I have something to negotiate with you." Lv Shasha bit her lip.

"Negotiate what?" Zhang Tie's eyes fell onto her butt, which was as plump as Fiona's. "I wonder how it feels to f**k the butt." A thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

"Can we...call off the bet...? Feeling Zhang Tie's eyes unscrupulously glancing over her body, Lv Shasha's face blushed as she said, "I...I don't want to bet anymore!"

"Cancel? It's okay since we haven't seen the result."

"What...that's great!" The girl was so happy that she almost jumped up from the ground with gleaming eyes.

"The odds are now is 1:2.7. When we signed the agreement, the odds were 1:3. As your wager is 90 gold coins. If you want to call off the bet, you only need to pay me 9 gold coins."

"Argh..." The girl's smile suddenly froze while she looked at Zhang Tie with a pair of widening eyes, "How could that be? Why do I need to pay you?"

Zhang Tie smiled as he crossed his arms and acted like dealing with an official business, "How couldn't it be? Based on the odds 1: 2.7, if anyone wants to win 30 gold coins from me, one only need to pay 81 gold coins. While your wager is 90 golds coins as it is written on the agreement. If I sign the agreement with another instead of you, I have already made 9 gold coins due to changing odds. If you want to tear off the agreement, of course, you have to compensate for my loss!"

"Nine gold coins..." Lv Shasha mumbled. It was definitely a huge amount of money for her. She could only make over 10 silver coins a day. Tears already filled her eyes. Therefore, she looked at Zhang Tie in a poor way, "Is there any alternative method?"

"Any alternative method?" Zhang Tie rubbed his jaw as he considered. He then glanced over that girl and thought about how to tease her. To tell the truth, Zhang Tie really didn't pay any attention to the gold coins at all. Especially when he noticed her poor look, Zhang Tie really didn't feel like asking for gold coins from her at all. After a short while, Zhang Tie then came up with an idea to tease her.

"Heh...heh..." Zhang Tie smiled like a douchebag, "Once you promise me one thing, I will not let you pay the 9 gold coins!"

"What thing?" Under Zhang Tie's gleaming eyes, the girl bashfully looked down.

"Nothing serious, you just need to move your mouth to..."

"Argh..." Before Zhang Tie finished talking, Lv Shasha had already exclaimed while covering her mouth with one hand and gazing at Zhang Tie with a fearful look. With a pale face, she moved several steps back, "No...no, I won't promise you that. You douchebag, you lady-killer, bastard..."

After saying this, Lv Shasha escaped like a flustered rabbit.

Standing outside the door for quite awhile, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded about what she had done as he only wanted her to call him "good brother" twice. How could she be scared that way? She even cried. Was there any relation between that and a douchebag? To call him "good brother" was equal to that he was a lady-killer?

Wait. When she moved back, she seemed to be fixing her eyes on his crotch. Zhang Tie then lowered his head and found a firm tent raising high there. His mummy had been so grim inside, which seemed to be the natural response when he thought of Fiona just now...

"Damn!" Zhang Tie instantly understood why Lv Shasha was scared off. When a virgin lowered her head and watched his grim mummy, he told her—"Nothing serious, you just need to move your mouth to..."

"F*ck, I didn't mean that. Listen to my explanation. Now, even if I had numerous mouths, I couldn't explain!"

"F*ck!"

"Girls are really sophisticated!"

Zhang Tie became extremely depressed.

...

In the next 2 months, no other "episodes" happened to Zhang Tie, nobody else came to disturb him either. Zhang Tie put all his efforts into cultivation. Each day it was like a gear for him as he was mechanically repeating the same thing between Iron Ore Beach and fish market on the wharf.

Pick up navy-blue iron ores——free fish——eating——cultivation——sleep——picking up navy-blue iron ores...

Zhang Tie was single-minded. He didn't know that his real strength had gradually improved through such boring exercises.

Over the two months, Zhang Tie had gradually ignited 3 surge points on his spine was coming close to level 6. After he formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi, he would officially become a fighter.

After setting free sand-scale fish for over two months, Zhang Tie's cold-resistance and sensitivity to water flow had improved by 612%. During the same period, Zhang Tie had also eaten 5 iron-body fruits. He didn't know exactly how his diving skills had been improved. One day, Zhang Tie wanted to see how deep could he dive near Iron Ore Beach; therefore, he kept diving. When he reached deeper than 300 m, he noticed several big words on a huge reef.

——Zhang Taixuan arrived here at 17!

When he saw this line, Zhang Tie also became excited as he focused his Iron-Blood Untouchable Strength onto his finger and left a similar line beside it on the same reef.

——Haha, Zhang Tie also arrived here at 16!>_>...v

However, the first line of words were all unusually robust and beautiful; comparatively, Zhang Tie's words were absolute chicken scratch.

The previous words carved on the huge reef were pretty magnificent; however, after Zhang Tie scrawled down his words, all the magnificence on the huge reef was destroyed. Besides, Zhang Tie also drew a funny 'smile' and a rustic 'v'. When the two lines of words were put together with Zhang Tie's 'drawing', it looked pretty weird.

In the past two months, four people in the Zhixing Department had formed their battle qi and entered the Lingtian Department.

At the same time, five more newbies entered Zhixing Department. On February 24, when Zhang Tie submitted the navy-blue iron ores in the Item Department, Zhang Tie knew that it was the right time for him to form his Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

On that day, Zhang Tie had in total, submitted 317643 kg of navy-blue iron ores to the Hidden Dragon Palace. He not only had 300 gold coins but also had prepared to form his Iron-Blood Battle Qi. His mentality and physicality were at their best condition.

Coming out of the Item Department, Zhang Tie came to the Middle Castle of Hidden Dragon Palace and left an oral message to his cousin Zhang Su by telling him that he had prepared to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in the Dragon Cave.

The Hidden Dragon Palace was built against the mountain. There were a few castles and adventurous locations. The Lingtian Department was behind the Middle Castle. As Zhang Tie was not qualified to enter the Middle Castle, he could only contact his cousin by leaving an oral message.

At supper, Zhang Tie's cousin Zhang Su truly appeared in the Zhixing Department.

"You've reached level 6?"

"Yes, I've ignited the eighth surge point a few days ago and reached level 6!"

"Have you prepared enough money?"

"I've prepared 300 gold coins!"

"Great, that's my brother, I will take you into the Dragon Cave tomorrow to form battle qi. You give me your 300 gold coins. I will show them to the two guys. After they saw your wager, the agreement between you and them would officially take effect. As long as you defeat them, they will have to pay you 900 gold coins!"

"Fine."

Zhang Tie returned to his own room and handed all the gold coins to Zhang Su. After negotiating

the details on setting out tomorrow with Zhang Tie, Zhang Su took away the gold coins.

Zhang Tie then returned to his residence. On the way, he encountered some girls. Lv Shasha was saying something with some other girls. Once they caught sight of Zhang Tie walking towards them, they all stopped talking; instead, they glared at him. Only Lv Shasha looked weak and dared not to look at Zhang Tie.

In the past two months, Lv Shasha didn't seem to have told other girls about that she had come to Zhang Tie. Neither had she revealed Zhang Tie's weird request——letting her "use her mouth" to...It was estimated that she felt it too shameful to talk about. Thanks to this, Zhang Tie didn't become notorious among the girls

of Hidden Dragon Palace.

Zhang Tie then slightly let out a sigh.

However, since that day, each time Zhang Tie saw Lv Shasha, he would feel a weird sense between them as an ambiguous atmosphere existed between them.

The moment Lv Shasha raised her head and glanced at Zhang Tie, she had already found Zhang Tie's eyes stealthily fixing on her. Zhang Tie was even gazing at her small mouth. The moment they moved their eyes away, Lv Shasha's heart had raced while her face blushed. She then dared not to look at Zhang Tie anymore.

"This lady-killer, he wants me to do such a disgusting thing for him with my mouth. That's bastard. However, this lady-killer is really great. He could pick up so many navy-blue iron ores alone. He even dares to face the challenge of forming Iron-Blood Battle Qi which was hardest to practice. Additionally, after a careful look at him, I find this lady-killer and douchebag is really handsome..." Some ideas flew by Lv Shasha's mind. In the mind of the young lady, although Zhang Tie was dangerous, lecherous and disgusting, he was exceptionally attractive.

At the sight of Lv Shasha's bashful look, Zhang Tie felt very happy inside. He also had a special feeling about her. "That's the joy of teasing young ladies. It really feels great making her face blush and her heart pound with only a glance." Zhang Tie thought.

"What are you looking at? If you keep looking at me, I will dig out

of your eyes!" Du Yuhan on the side of Lv Shasha ferociously waved her fist towards Zhang Tie.

"I'll give you some news. I'll be going to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi tomorrow. I want to know whether you have prepared your gold coins. Don't regret by then..." Crossing his arms, Zhang Tie "sneered".

Hearing this news, all the girls' faces slightly changed.

"Humph, don't be that arrogant; I don't believe that you can form Iron-Blood Battle Qi!" A girl called Dong Yan said.

"By now, actually I can tell you my secret." Zhang Tie lied in order to tease the girls.

"What secret?" Zhang Wanjun could wait but ask. Although the other girls didn't speak, they all looked very interested about it. Even Lv Shasha couldn't help but raise her head and look at Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

Zhang Tie then looked at Lv Shasha's small mouth once again, scaring her so much that she instantly lowered her head again.

"My secret is related to the Iron-Blood Fist that I'm practicing. I was struck by lightning bolts and suffered from the Post Lightning Strike Savant Syndrome. I know you haven't heard of it. But it doesn't matter. You only need to know that this syndrome could help me cultivate Iron-Blood Fist without any obstacles. So, go

back and get the gold coins as soon as possible. Compound interest increase so fast...wa...ha...ha..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's fake sneer, the girls' faces turned slightly pale. After glaring at Zhang Tie's pleasant look, Du Yuhan instantly turned her head, "Humph, let's go..."

The girls then walked by Zhang Tie. Seeing Lv Shasha moving close to him and rubbing his shoulder, Zhang Tie's left fingers casually drew on Lv Shasha's palm.

Zhang Tie only felt the girl slightly quivering as her free-waving hand instantly shrunk back like touching a hot item. In a split second, Lv Shasha's ears turned pretty red.

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out laughing loudly as he felt being like a douchebag playboy.

Zhang Tie felt really happy to tease those cute girls when he was free.

Chapter 286: Dragon Cave

The famous Dragon Cave of Jinyun Country was at the center of Hidden Dragon Island. If one looked down from an airship, one would see the entrance of Dragon Cave was an underground cave that had an area of over 10 sq km.

Although there were already various pieces of evidence that there was nothing beyond the stars before the Catastrophe, humans during that age were basically under the rule of demons who masqueraded as humans. In order to better manage the people, the ruling demons influenced them to focus on mutual destruction. Therefore, people were forbidden to be too curious and explore this world. The ruling demons fabricated various lies about the world to firmly constrain people's thoughts and free will. Each person who entered school would be constantly brainwashed by all kinds of lies fabricated by the demons since they accepted education.

Among the lies that were beneficial for demon's rule, the most fundamental one was to answer a question that everybody was born with——Where are we? How's the world that we're in?

For the galaxy and the world that humans were living in, the ruling demons wanted to describe it as an isolated island in the universe and a cage on the ground. It was a wasteland among the beautiful and vast stars where no other sentient beings existed except for humans.

During the last several hundred years, this talk fabricated by demons firmly restrained people's thoughts. During the same

period, mutual killing amongst humans escalated. In this lie, every resource in this world was scarce. In order to strive for these scarce and limited resources, in order to survive, humans constrained to the world started killing each other.

Among those lies was the basic composition of this world. The planet humans lived on was described as a large onion with a solid core and layers around it. Those layers were the crust and mantle with earth's core inside. Deep underground was magma that prevented all life from existing.

When the demons created these lies, they also started to use the huge resources that they controlled to stop those who didn't believe this theory from exploring the depths of their world. They blocked all facts and truths that could reveal their lies.

Based on the knowledge that Zhang Tie had learned at school, before the Catastrophe, many people had already realized the lies that demons fabricated about this world. Many people had already known that this world was actually not a large layered onion. Actually, the inside of this world was hollow. There were many independent and interconnected spaces inside this world. Even above the ground, there were many natural entrances that could lead to other worlds in their galaxy.

These natural entrances spread across the world. But the largest entrances were near the north and south poles. Almost 100 years before the catastrophe, because of advancements in science and technology, many people had expensive private airborne means of travel—planes. By plane, some brave private explorers investigated the north and south poles of this world. They had

already discovered the huge entrances to the underground world near the north and south poles. Looking down at them from the sky, they were so huge that they could not be covered at all.

Not only these explorers, actually most of the countries that could launch artificial satellites during that age had already discovered this secret as they could easily capture images of these underground entrances when the satellites flew across the south and north polar points. However, because of various reasons, people who had discovered them kept it a secret.

Not until the Catastrophe arrived, with the reversal of the magnetic poles of this world and its intense geological movements, many monsters and magical beasts poured out of the underground entrances did people know that there were many secrets hidden in their world.

Since the first holy war between humans and demons, people started putting more effort into exploring the mysteries hidden beneath the world's surface and the entrances leading to other worlds. Many more entrances then started to be discovered across the world. From then on, the vast underground world started to gradually reveal its secrets to humans.

The Dragon Cave on Hidden Dragon Island was also discovered as one of the entrances that led to the underground world after the first holy war. This entrance was actually a stream converging into the ocean. Although the entrance of the stream was here, nobody knew where it led to.

During the several hundred years since the Dragon Cave was

discovered, each day, many people were ventured in. Among them, most were warriors who were here to form battle qi while others were adventurers who were here to look for opportunities, historical relics, and treasures in the underground worlds.

There were totally over 300,000 people in the 5 towns of Hidden Dragon Island, over 60% of them belonged to the above two kinds of people. They were all conceited and arrogant. Some had real strength, some had ambitions, and others had both. They came from all the human countries. Most of them were very experienced. Before they came to Hidden Dragon Island, they were not common figures. The lowest level among them would be like Zhang Tie who had just been promoted to level 6 and were preparing to form battle qi.

There were all sorts of powerful and talented people on Hidden Dragon Island.

With the exception of White Dragon Town which was close to the only wharf of the island, all the other 4 towns were located around Dragon Cave. Therefore, anyone willing to enter the Dragon Cave has to have permission from at least one of the four towns.

Early the next morning, Zhang Tie's cousin had brought Zhang Tie to Black Dragon Town.

After being on the island for almost three months, this was Zhang Tie's first time entering a town on the island. Previously, when he bought and set free fish every day, although he would pass by the mountainous path next to the White Dragon Town, Zhang Tie hadn't ventured into White Dragon Town even once.

Black Dragon Town was 10 times more prosperous than that in Zhang Tie had imagined. In the early morning, there were already so many people on the streets. On both sides of the street, there were all sorts of hotels, restaurants, and stores. It was so boisterous that Zhang Tie even doubted he was still in a town on the island.

However, compared to cities, most people accessing the streets here were carrying weapons like sabers and swords. Most of their weapons were so weird that Zhang Tie hadn't even seen them before. Besides people, there were no vehicles or any carriages on the streets.

Most of them were Chinese with black hair and eyes, except for a few blond white men and black men. They were all going about their own business and felt nothing strange about the scene.

On the Waii Sub-continent, Chinese and white people shared the human corridor. They established their own countries. Among those countries, white people who spoke Hebrew were mainly in the west and the north of human corridor while Chinese countries were mainly in the east and the south of the human corridor. After the first holy war, although there were still some wars and conflicts between countries and regions, as a whole, there was no animosity and opposition between human races. Besides, large-scale wars between allied nations had been forbidden.

Being threatened by demons, human beings realized their first era spanning peace in history, which was definitely a large step forward.

Watching some black tough men who were carrying terrifying zigzag sabers bargaining with the shop owners in fluent Chinese, Zhang Tie was really shocked as he has never witnessed such a scene in Blackhot City.

...

"Bang..." With a loud sound, the glass window on the second floor of a hotel more than 10 m ahead of them was broken when Zhang Tie and Zhang Su were walking on a street of Black Dragon Street. At the same time, a person flew out of the window with a miserable cry and heavily fell onto the street. Seeing this, all the passers-by kept away from him.

Less than 5 seconds after that person fell onto the ground, another person flew out of the same window with his butt coming out first and heavily fell on the ground.

When the first person flew out of the glass window, Zhang Tie had already stopped. When the second person flew out, Zhang Tie saw that the latter one was kicked out of the window.

Before the two people picked themselves up, a young man in the uniform of Hidden Dragon Palace had already walked out of the gate on the first floor while patting off dirt from his hands. He then came in front of the two people lying on the ground and lifted them up by seizing their necks like lifting two chickens.

"You are only level 7 fighters, how dare you dine and dash on

Hidden Dragon Island..." The youth sneered as he turned back to ask, "Lad, how much should they pay?"

A 20-over agile lad had already run out of the gate of the hotel, "They consumed 2 gold coins and 36 silver coins worth of food. The expense of the broken windows, desks, and tables is 5 gold coins. They should pay 7 gold coins and 36 silver coins to the Treasure Gathering Building!"

"Do you have the money?" The young man asked the two tough men who had been beaten fiercely and been lifted in his hands.

"Yes, yes, we have..." A tough man pulled out of his money bag while gritting his mouth. Without even counting, he hurriedly threw the money bag to the lad. Taking the money bag, the lad counted 7 gold coins and 36 silver coins from it in the public before throwing it back.

"Can...can we leave now?" The other tough man who had recovered a bit lowered his voice.

"As you two dared to stir up trouble here on Hidden Dragon Island, although you've paid for your damages, you should still follow me..."

"To...to where?" The tough man's heart quivered as he asked.

"According to the regulations of Huaiyuan Prefecture, besides compensating for their damages, all the trouble-makers here

should perform hard labor for two weeks. Follow me, after doing hard labor in the quarry for two weeks, you will be free."

"Ha, these two idiots really thought they could do whatever they want on Hidden Dragon Island..." A spectator on the roadside shook his head.

"These douchebags are definitely country bumpkins who have stayed in small places for too long. As only level 7 fighters, they dared be that presumptuous? Damn, if they dare to stir up trouble in my place, this father will definitely pinch their eggs into pieces and spread some salt on it before letting them swallow it. F*ck, this daddy is a level 8 fighter, yet I still dared not be rampant when I came to Hidden Dragon Island a half year ago..." A grim tough man who was hefting a big saber cast a contemptuous glance at the two guys and fiercely spat a mouth of saliva onto the ground before walked away. Judging from his look, he must be a robber or a hero who occupied a mountain to be a king in the past.

Seeing that the episode was over, the onlookers all left. They seemed to be used to such things.

After hearing the onlookers' discussions, the two people looked more depressed as they lowered their heads and were escorted away by the young man.

...

"Brother Zhang..." When the young man was escorting the two tough men passed by Zhang Tie and Zhang Su, he caught sight of

Zhang Su. Therefore, that young man hurriedly greeted Zhang Su with one clenched fist in another hand.

"Liu Xu? Are you here on duty in Black Dragon Town today?" Zhang Tie's cousin didn't even glance over the two bad-luck guys being escorted; he only slightly nodded towards the young man.

"Heh heh, I've got few family donation points left, so I come out to do some tasks..." The young man then moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie, "This must be your cousin?"

"Yes, this is Zhang Tie, my cousin. I'm going to take him to form battle qi!"

"Come on, junior brother, I've put 30 gold coins on you a couple of days ago. Hope you form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in 2 years..." That person then revealed a smile towards Zhang Tie to encourage him.

"Thanks, senior brother, if you lose the bet, I will invite you to drink alcohol!" Zhang Tie also smiled as he said, "If you win, how about inviting me to drink alcohol?"

"Hahahaha..." Liu Xi burst out laughing loudly. He felt that this junior brother was very interesting, "It's a deal!"

...

After departing from Liu Xi, Zhang Su kept talking about the warnings in Dragon Cave as he took Zhang Tie into a special medicament store in Black Dragon Town and bought 4 small vials of medicament for Zhang Tie at the cost of 4 gold coins.

"What's this, cousin?" Zhang Tie asked.

"This is night viewing medicament. After arriving at Dragon Cave, you can drip this medicament into your eyes. It could grant you with night vision and help you move underground." Saying this, Zhang Su looked a bit bashful, "I should have sent you more, but my money has been borrowed by a friend to invest in a processing workshop in Green Dragon Town, so..."

"So if we can't make 2 gold coins in the underground world, we will suffer a loss..." Zhang Tie smiled as he continued his cousin's words to make Zhang Su not that shameful. Whereas, with Zhang Su's words, Zhang Tie understood more about the rules in Hidden Dragon Palace, "Cousin, do many cousins in the Breaking Heaven Department make money this way on the Island?"

"Yes, when you enter the Breaking Heaven Department, you will know that it's not that easy to live for free in the Palace!" Zhang Tie signed, "In order to make money, those in the Breaking Heaven Department will have to exert their own talents. Besides some tasks through which they could gain payment, some able men even invest in industries in the towns of Hidden Dragon Island. Look at the hotels and shops in Black Dragon Town, 80% of them were invested in by the forefathers who had practiced on Hidden Dragon Island before. After they left the Hidden Dragon Island,

their invested industries could be taken over by their family members. Hidden Dragon Palace was not a Shangri-La where you could practice fighting skills while ignoring everything else. If one wants to mature, one has to learn to make money. This is a very important lesson for people the Breaking Heaven Department! Previously, when I was at home, I didn't know how to make money at all. I only felt that I had lots of it. However, since I came here, I found out how hard it was for the forefathers to make money. It was really hard for our grandpas to develop such a great business..."

Zhang Tie nodded as he had a deep empathy for it. Previously when his mom sold rice brew, the price of each bowl of rice brew was only several copper coins. His family members even felt it pitiful to eat it themselves. It was really hard to live if one didn't know how to make money.

After leaving Black Dragon Town, it only took them several minutes to reach Dragon Cave.

Dragon Cave was in the cove of some mountains. When he stood on the hillside of Dragon Cave and looked at this huge underground abyss, the area of which was even more than that of a town, Zhang Tie was slightly shocked.

A small amount of sunlight was cast into such the huge cave, enabling the entrance of the cave to be slightly visible. However, even during the day, the inside of the cave was a place where light couldn't reach.

Many people's furious growls and some animals' jarring cries

seemed to drift from deep inside of the cave, making this huge pitch-black cave more terrifying.

Zhang Su then brought out the night-viewing medicament and dripped a bit into his eyes. Zhang Tie then imitated from him. The moment the medicament entered his eyes, Zhang Tie had already felt an icy sense that was very comfortable. After squinting his eyes for a short amount of time, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and felt that whole world had changed. His vision of the surrounding scenes like looking through a layer of a yellow-green glass.

"Don't be surprised about it. That's the effect of the night vision medicament. Let's go inside. Those mutated huge black spiders are in the first layer of caves, which is over 1.5 km away from the entrance..."

...

Chapter 287: Mamma Mia

After heading deeper than 300 m, Zhang Tie found that the whole cave became dimmer. The night vision medicament started to work. What Zhang Tie saw was a faint yellowish-green world, in which, everything became very clear. This made Zhang Tie let out a sigh.

Besides Zhang Tie and his cousin Zhang Su, there was a total of 20-30 people who entered the Dragon Cave together. The team lasted about 100 m. People who were familiar with each other would stay together while those who didn't know each other would keep their distance and be cautious of those around them. Those people who were experienced with the underground world clearly knew that besides those terrifying magical beasts and monsters that could kill people, many would be killed by others due to various reasons each year. What was more gloomy and dangerous than this underground world was a person's heart.

As Zhang Su entered the Dragon Cave in the uniform of the Breaking Heaven Department of Hidden Dragon Palace, soon after he and Zhang Tie entered the underground cave, three other teams of people had already joined them.

Hidden Dragon Palace was the law enforcer and peacekeeper of Hidden Dragon Island. During the past several hundred years, it had accumulated a very good reputation on the Island. Therefore, Zhang Su's uniform made him a reliable symbol for those on Hidden Dragon Island.

The cave was full of strange, jagged rocks. Stalactites could be

seen everywhere. Some stalactites suspended from the top of the cave while others were erected from the ground. Besides footsteps, people could also hear the crisp sound of the water dripping from the top of the cave.

It was the paradise of swallows within several hundred meters from the entrance. There were numerous swallows flying in the cave. When those swallows flew into the sky and covered the sunlight, the whole cave would become bit dimmer.

When Zhang Tie noticed that there were many stands and ladders built of bamboo and ropes were located at critical positions on the walls, he became quite curious.

"Cousin, what are those? How could anyone build these things here?"

"Hoho, there are millions of golden swallows in various caves on the Island. Their nests are extremely expensive tonics, which are worth more than their weight in gold. When they need money, those in the Breaking Heaven Department would come here to dig out the nests of the golden swallows. When I entered the Breaking Heaven Department, I also needed money and came here to dig out the swallows' nests. One day, I dropped from a height of 30 m and almost died!" Zhang Su sighed, "Previously, I used to eat golden swallow nests at home. I always felt that everything was so easy. However, not until I almost lost my life for one swallow's nest did I know that nothing in this world was easy. When you enjoy it, someone is bleeding and perhaps even losing their life for you. Everything has a price. Why could you drink lotus congee with swallows' nests in the morning while others have to dig swallows'

nests for you from dozens of meters high in a cave at the risk of their own lives? For what? Anyone who wanted to leave the Hidden Dragon Palace has to figure it out!"

When Zhang Su talked with Zhang Tie, he didn't lower his voice. Therefore, what Zhang Su said was not only heard by Zhang Tie, but also heard by those people who followed them in.

"I've long heard about the good reputation of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Hereditary clans are truly great!" After hearing Zhang Su's words, a 40-odd-year old man who was walking along with Zhang Tie and Zhang Su sincerely praised.

"Thanks, Hidden Dragon Island is the place where the Zhang clan's apprentices have to cultivate. If we don't endure hardships, how could it be called cultivation?" Zhang Su politely answered.

"Fucheng, Tianlin, have you heard that? Even the apprentices of Zhang clan, the hereditary clan of Huaiyuan Palace would prioritize enduring hardships and dangers during cultivation. Our Lu clan's apprentices have no qualification to be pleased with ourselves in the small Jun'an City as our clan is much weaker than the Zhang clan. You should not complain about hardships when you cultivate. After you form your battle qi and leave here, you have to tell what you have learned here with your juniors. Tell them how the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace trains their clan apprentices to make them feel shameful!" That middle-aged man warned two 20-odd-year old young men next to him in a solemn expression.

"Yes, sir, uncle Qi!" The two 20-odd young men answered

seriously.

Hearing those words, the other people who walked together with Zhang Su and Zhang Tie also hurriedly nodded as what they heard just now was truly a good example to educate the young apprentices in their own clans. It was fortunate for the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace to gain such a great honor.

Everybody nodded, except for a juvenile who looked younger than Zhang Su yet older than Zhang Tie who made a cold harrumph. He seemed to disagree. Hearing the young man's cold harrumph, another middle-aged man who was walking together with him cast a stern gaze at him to make him quiet.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's cousin Zhang Su looked like he was unaffected by the honor or disgrace. He seemed not care about the others' praise or that faint cold harrumph. However, Zhang Tie noticed a wisp of an ignorant smile flashing by his cousin's mouth corner. Zhang Su didn't even look back; instead, he directly ignored it.

"Besides being kind to him and talking with him, this cousin is really proud!" Zhang Tie gradually understood his cousin's personality.

Zhang Su kept silent. In contrast, Zhang Tie was different, he started to chat with the others. When they noticed that Zhang Tie was from Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace and a member of Hidden Dragon Palace, they didn't dare to freely talk with him before. However, when they chatted with Zhang Tie, they found that this juvenile was very humorous and honest. He neither placed himself

above others nor made others embarrassed. They didn't feel the usual sense of arrogance the elites from hereditary clans at all. After a short while, Zhang Tie became familiar with some of the young men.

Zhang Su just listened to their talk on one side as he started to sigh over Zhang Tie's talent. He hadn't imagined that Zhang Tie could be so sociable. But after recalling the letter from home on Zhang Tie's previous life, Zhang Su finally figured it out. As Zhang Tie was living in the secular world since he was young, he usually worked in the grocery store after school, so he must have come in contact with people from all walks of life. Of course, Zhang Tie was good at interacting with others.

When they reached all the way to the underground, the scene in the cave also kept changing. Zhang Tie could see more and more lichens on the ground. At the same time, Zhang Tie could already smell the bloody flavor that drifted from ahead.

When Zhang Tie had estimated that they had already traveled several miles underground, all of a sudden, an unexpected scene appeared before his eyes. A huge underground karst cave which was dozens of kilometers wide and several hundred meters high. The topography inside the karst cave was strange—stones crisscrossed, while some huge lichens that Zhang Tie had never seen before grew amongst the stones. On the ground and among the surrounding massifs, there were various, weird caves of different sizes, making this place a strange maze.

The jarring howls of monsters and growls of people could be heard often. There was also the appearance of all sorts of battle qi

in the darkness in this huge underground space.

Zhang Tie knew that they finally arrived at their destination. By then, they should also separate with each other.

"Brother, if you come to Jun'an City in Jiangtang Prefecture, remember to visit us at the Lu clan. We will definitely invite you to eat all the yummy food across the Jun'an City!" Lu Fucheng patted Zhang Tie's shoulders as he said.

"It's a shame that I can't bet on you in the Hidden Dragon Palace. Otherwise, I would withdraw my entire 100 gold coins savings in the bank to encourage you!" Lu Tianlin laughed out generously, "It usually takes commoners about 1-2 months to gather common battle qi. Firstly, Soul Fire enters one's body; secondly, one is washed by Soul Fire, seven strengths would combine into one to form battle qi. For some advanced battle qi, it requires anywhere from a few months to half a year for a person to form. As you have 2 years, don't worry, the gods always help those who help themselves. As long as you work hard, you will definitely make it!"

"Haha, thanks for your encouragement, brother Lu. When I arrive at Jun'an City, I will definitely come to Lujiabao for you!"

"Fine, that's a deal!"

After separating with Zhang Tie and Zhang Su, Lu's group firstly entered the huge underground space.

"Brother, come on, if you are free, come to Iron Saber Gate to discuss fighting skills with us!"

"Fine!"

Another group separated with Zhang Tie and Zhang Su.

Finally, the team that separated with Zhang Tie and Zhang Su was the one that contained the youth who had made a cold harrumph. Among them, an elder even cast two more glances at Zhang Tie before he left, seemingly wanting to keep Zhang Tie in mind.

"Let's go." Zhang Su headed for the other direction with Zhang Tie following behind.

...

The major attacking parts of level 6 Hell-black spiders were the two pairs of sharp teeth in front of their mouth and the pair of forelimbs. However, their attack range was limited. What you had to watch out for was the webs spat out from their mouths. Once the webs stuck to your body, it would restrict your movement!" After entering the karst cave, Zhang Su told Zhang Tie how to deal with those Hell-black spiders.

"What's the effective range of its web?"

"5-10 m. When it is going to spit out a web, its two pairs of teeth

will completely open. Additionally, its abdomen will produce a sound of a "drumbeat". You can dodge its attack or keep your distance. Its two sides, abdomen and back were all weak points that can be attacked. Its weakest point is on its head. You can directly kill it by destroying its head!"

...

Less than 10 minutes after they entered the underground space, Zhang Tie saw the first Hell-black spider. It was a huge terrifying spider that was taller than 2 m and bigger than an ox. When Zhang Su and Zhang Tie passed by a weird dark-red umbrella-shaped lichen zone, this spider suddenly jumped out of the foot of the plants and bit at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Su didn't move. As it was his first time to see such a huge spider, Zhang Tie was so scared that he almost jumped up. When he realized that this ugly animal treated him as a target, Zhang Tie became furious.

The longer pair of teeth of the Hell-black spider was almost as long as Zhang Tie's arm. They were as wide as a javelin. Before the longer pair of teeth bit onto Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had already firmly held them. With a sound of "kacha", he had broken them and torn them out of the Hell-black spider's mouth. Along with its jarring, painful howl, Zhang Tie inserted the two teeth onto the huge spider's head.

The terrifying spider's jarring sound immediately stopped.

After being so scared that he even screamed by such a level 6 insect in front of his cousin, Zhang Tie really felt that he had lost face.

"F*ck, who let you jump out and scare me, who let you jump out and scare me..." While swearing at it, Zhang Tie didn't stay still. After turning its head into a bloody mess out of fury, Zhang Tie directly kicked it and sent the several hundred kilogram body flying into the air. The corpse of the spider then rolled over 10 m away with its legs pointing to the sky.

After doing that, Zhang Tie even spat towards its corpse, "Pah...damn, who let you jump out to scare me; thankfully, I don't have heart problems. If not, I'd have been scared to death by you instead of being bitten to death..."

After killing the spider, Zhang Tie felt bashful as he smiled towards Zhang Su and scratched his head in an honest way, "Erm...As this is my first time to see such a huge spider, I was really scared by it, heh...heh...don't laugh at me, cousin..."

The corner of Zhang Su's eyes slightly twitched as he was inwardly startled. "A level 6 hell black spider was beaten by Zhang Tie in the same manner he beat and killed chickens and dogs. What insane strength!"

Zhang Su knew that Zhang Tie was abnormal, but he had never imagined that Zhang Tie was that abnormal. When the Hell-black spider jumped out of the plants to bite Zhang Tie, what Zhang Tie had performed in terms of speed, strength, and reflexes to catch that Hell-black spider was definitely akin to having experienced

the same scene thousands of times. What mattered most was that at the critical moment, Zhang Tie could still act that easily. Only after experiencing numerous life and death situations could one gain such fast responsive instinct. Even for Zhang Su, he still could not deal with that Hell-black spider that easily and fluently as if drinking water.

Zhang Tie's strength was too terrifying. To tell the truth, Zhang Su hadn't seen anyone who had just reached level 6 explode with such strength.

After glancing at the corpse of the spider, Zhang Su took a deep breath, "Let's go. It's said that even the imperial households of Norman Empire had to spend half a month to one month to have Soul Fire enter their body when they were cultivating their Iron-Blood Battle Qi. After absorbing enough Soul Fire and combining seven strengths into one, one could finally form the unrivaled Iron-Blood Battle Qi!"

"Cousin, what's Soul Fire?" This was the weakness of poor cultural deposits. The common sense for many people was strange to Zhang Tie.

"You don't know what Soul Fire is?" Zhang Su was dumbfounded.

Good god, nobody had talked about Soul Fire with him——Zhang Tie made a bitter smile. Zhang Tie had heard this term twice today. As he felt it shameful to ask outsiders, he couldn't but ask Zhang Su.

"The so-called Soul Fire refers to the fire of the souls of the underground monsters killed by you. They are stimulated by your killing intent. Soul Fire is a mysterious strength that resonates with your killing intent and invisible qi field. This strength can purify your seven common strengths and aid in converting them to battle qi. Usually, only those whose level and conditions have reached the critical point form battle qi are able to produce Soul Fire inside magical beasts after killing them..."

"How does Soul Fire enter one's body?" Zhang Tie kept asking like a curious child.

"Soul Fire resonates with your killing intent and qi field. Therefore, it can automatically enter your body after being formed. This is called Soul Fire entering one's body. Iron-Blood Battle Qi is very amazing and the last step is the most difficult to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi. Besides the imperial households of Norman Empire, almost nobody can form it. Even the imperial households of Norman Empire are hardly able to break through the last step. Additionally, not every dead magical beast can form Soul Fire. Iron-Blood Battle Qi requires too much Soul Fire, at least five times that of common battle qi..."

Zhang Su walked as he explained. Only after walking a few steps forward, he had noticed that Zhang Tie suddenly stopped.

"Cousin..." Zhang Tie's voice faintly quivered, "Loo...look, what's that?"

Zhang Su turned back and was also dumbfounded by what he saw...

Not far away, in the place where the corpse of the Hell-black spider lay, a firefly-like golden light started to gradually appear above its dead body. In a short period, the golden light had gathered and formed into a ball of golden light as large as a fist. Soon after, the ball of gold light started to burn like a wildfire. Of course, it wasn't truly burning but had the appearance of doing so.

The burning ball of golden light then swiftly flew towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Su tried to grab it with hand, yet it directly penetrated his palm like a zero-weight ball of air and a shadow and fell onto Zhang Tie's lower abdomen and disappeared...

No matter how surprised he was, how unimaginable what happened was, Zhang Su still had to admit that—the ball of golden light was true Soul Fire. Because only true Soul Fire could have such strange properties. As long as it was not far from the person who caused it to form, within several hundred meters, that ball of Soul Fire could always penetrate through all the obstacles and fly into the qi ocean of that person's [dantian elixir field](#)—This is Soul Fire entering one's body.

Golden Soul Fire can only be formed by the resonating of a few top grade battle qis with magical beasts in the entire Waii Sub-continent. Iron-Blood Battle Qi was one of them.

Even though the imperial households of Norman Empire could not form Soul Fire after they killed the first Hell-black spider. How could his cousin...

At this moment, Zhang Su was watching Zhang Tie like he had found gold.

"——[Mamma Mia, wife, come out to see God!](#)" A joke that originated from the age before the Catastrophe flashed across Zhang Su's mind. Thankfully, he was not married. If he truly had a wife, Zhang Su would definitely shout out loudly.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Su still felt his heart racing. He constrained his pounding heart and asked Zhang Tie in a calm voice, "How do you feel now?"

"I felt...felt a bit strange in my lower abdomen. But it soon disappeared!" Zhang Tie scratched his head as he said. Zhang Tie also saw how the Soul Fire penetrating through Zhang Su's palm and felt it pretty marvelous.

"That's because you haven't absorbed enough Soul Fire!" After taking another breath, Zhang Su stared at Zhang Tie with an unprecedented look, "Do you know that you've broken a record today?"

"Is it that difficult?" Zhang Tie dubiously stared at Zhang Su with a blank expression, "I don't feel like I've done anything special! I just hastily killed a Hell-black spider..."

Hastily killed? Zhang Su was so shocked much that he almost spat out blood. He decided to not discuss this with Zhang Tie anymore. If he kept discussing this, his self-esteem would collapse.

...

"Argh, I just saw golden Soul Fire flying from here, was I imagining it? Where's it now?"

"I saw it too, is someone gathering battle qi here?"

"Let's take a look over there! Battle qis that can stimulate golden Soul Fire are all top grade battle qi. It's rare to have the chance to see it. I've been in the Dragon Cave many times, but I've never seen golden Soul Fire! If we take a look we might learn something..."

...

Hearing the voices not far from them, Zhang Su glanced at Zhang Tie, "If you don't want to be surrounded by country bumpkins hurry up and leave here!"

Saying this, Zhang Su paced up towards far, closely followed by Zhang Tie.

"Cousin, why are we rushing?"

"Golden Soul Fire is too obvious here. Since you can't hide it, it's better to display it in a more opening place. As you are from Hidden Dragon Palace, what you do represents the Zhang clan's apprentices of Huaiyuan Palace. The news that a level 6 apprentice of Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace can easily gather golden Soul Fire will definitely shock other clans and make our clan more

majestic..." Zhang Su explained.

Zhang Tie nodded.

In the next several minutes, they didn't meet any Hell-black spiders.

Zhang Su directly brought Zhang Tie into a huge canyon in the karst cave. In the canyon, there were already 200-300 people. What was more amazing was that Hell-black spiders constantly climbed out of the crevices and the abyss of the canyon...

Guo Miaolu and some girls from Zhixing Department were also here...

...

Dantian elixir field refers to the pubic region of a person.

This joke is used to express one's curiosity.

Chapter 288: Freak

After killing a Hell-black spider and gathering a green ball of Soul Fire, Guo Miaolu caught sight of some hell black spiders rushing towards her. She dared not to stay still; instead, she hurriedly ran upward from the foot of the canyon. When she arrived at a safer place, before this elder sister from Zhixing Department gasped twice, she had already noticed that Zhang Tie, the common enemy of the girls in Zhixing Department was standing not far from her and was watching the fight between human and spiders in the 100-m deep canyon.

Last night, Guo Miaolu had already found out from other girls that Zhang Tie would go to the Dragon Cave to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi; however, she could never imagine she would see Zhang Tie here. This Dark Canyon was not like other places as it gathered most the Hell-black spiders and was much more dangerous than other places. Almost no newbie who had reached level 6 dared to gather battle qi here before being fully familiar with the fighting skills of these Hell-black spiders. The girls in Zhixing Department and the others had already fought the hell black spiders for over a month in other places. Many of them had already been able to feel Soul Fire entering their body. Therefore, they tried to challenge more Hell-black spiders in the Dark Canyon.

"Not bad. Soul Fire already entered your body." Having just found what was Soul Fire entering one's body, Zhang Tie instantly praised her like an experienced old man when he found Guo Miaolu was staring at him with enlarged eyes.

Guo Miaolu then slightly frowned. After glancing at Zhang Su at Zhang Tie's side, she immediately looked gloomy and asked in a

bad mood, "What are you here for?"

"There are so many Hell-black spiders here, I'm here to form my battle qi!" Zhang Tie said bluntly.

"You are here to form battle qi?" Guo Miaolu became slightly dumbfounded, "You're going to die. How dare you come here? You are new here! Do you know how many level 6 newbies have been killed in the Dark Canyon? Over 100. Yesterday, one more died here. With so many Hell -black spiders here, once you enter the canyon, you might lose your life while being ambushed by them!"

"I didn't think that Miaolu cared about me so much!" Zhang Tie gave a bashful smile.

The moment Zhang Tie uttered her name, Guo Miaolu quivered all over, closely followed by a burning fury. With eyebrows raising up, she swore, "F*rt, I just don't want you to die here while owing a debt to the girls of Zhixing Department!"

"Trust me, I won't die. Besides being disgusting, these insects don't look like that sharp." Zhang Tie teased.

Before Guo Miaolu was able to say anything else, Zhang Tie had already jumped down onto the bulging rocks on the walls as swift as a goat and arrived at the bottom of the Dark Canyon in a short while.

"Senior brother!" Guo Miaolu looked at Zhang Su, "Is it...okay for

Zhang Tie?" Although Zhang Tie was annoying, Guo Miaolu didn't want to see him die here.

"Don't worry, he'll be safe. He's a freak!" Zhang Su shook his head while added inside, "Hope you're not too shocked when you see for yourself."

Looking at the shadow of Zhang Tie at the foot of the canyon, Guo Miaolu became slightly curious, "What's his talent?" How could he make his cousin so reassured? He didn't even take a weapon."

There were huge bottomless seams on the ground of the Dark Canyon. It was bloody everywhere due to the bleeding corpses of the Hell-black spiders. Being stimulated by this bloody scene, more and more Hell-black spiders constantly climbed out of the seams. Zhang Tie saw these disgusting Hell-black spiders didn't even spare their partner's bodies. Once they found that their partners were killed, some hell black spiders would soon drag the dead bodies into hidden and gloomy places. Soon after that, Zhang Tie would hear terrifying chewing sounds from there.

In comparison to Zhang Tie, the other people in the canyon were all in groups of 2-3. For many level 6 newbies who had not formed their battle qi, their partners could help them out while being attacked by a group of Hell-black spiders.

Of course, some people who had greater fighting skills could take advantage of the topography in the canyon to deal with the Hell-black spiders. As a result, those dead hell black spiders would produce colorful Soul Fire, which would then automatically float

towards those people who killed the spiders.

"Haha...I got one more Soul Fire!"

Along with the growls of people were exclamations which could be heard every so often.

Zhang Tie took a careful look around and found that most Soul Fires were grey and white; with a few of them being green, cyan, faint blue and red. According to his cousin, these Soul Fires came from resonance between the mysterious energy from the spiders and each person. Different colors represented different ranks and kinds of battle qi.

What a marvelous thing!

As they were all busy fighting Hell-black spiders, nobody paid attention to Zhang Tie. With the exception of Guo Miaolu, the other boys and girls from Zhixing Department didn't know that Zhang Tie was there yet.

The first Hell-black spider had already appeared in front of Zhang Tie less than one minute after Zhang Tie arrived at the foot of the canyon. Seeing that spider piercing its sharp forelimbs towards him, Zhang Tie instantly hacked towards its forelimbs using "Sword-like Palm", which was one of the free movements of Iron-Blood Fist Skill.

The forelimbs of Hell-black spiders collided with Zhang Tie's

"Sword-like Palm..."

Zhang Tie then cleanly cut off a forelimb of the Hell-black spider as if he had used a kitchen knife to slice bean curd. The moment the spider lost its balance and tilted towards him, Zhang Tie had kicked on the bottom of its head. After exploding his Iron-Blood Untouchable Strength, he instantly shocked its brain into a mess.

The fight ended in 2 seconds.

After killing this Hell-black spider, Zhang Tie continued to move forward. Soon after that, three hell black spiders appeared in front of Zhang Tie, one in the front, two in the back. This time, Zhang Tie suddenly paced up and surged forward before they attacked him, "Bang" "Bang" "Bang", with three sounds, their brains flew a second later...

Zhang Tie kept going.

Standing on top of the Dark Canyon, Guo Miaolu was shocked by Zhang Tie's swift movements. Those Hell-black spiders which frightened all the newbies didn't have the ability to even respond to Zhang Tie. However, she didn't know that Zhang Tie had already been able to kill those level 6 military officers of Sun Dynasty who had formed battle qi like chopping melons and vegetables when he was only level 4, let alone these hell black spiders which were used to form battle qi.

Guo Miaolu was really surprised by Zhang Tie's movements. However, she had never imagined that there were more surprises

to come. When he swiftly killed the fifth Hell-black spider, a golden light had already started to gather from the corpses of the previous spiders. They became balls of golden Soul Fire and floated towards Zhang Tie.

In that pitch-dark valley, the golden Soul Fires were unique as they were as dazzling as sunlight.

"Golden...Soul Fire? That must be an illusion!" Guo Miaolu rubbed her eyes as she didn't believe what happened at the foot of the canyon...

When the first ball of Soul Fire entered his body, Zhang Tie had already killed six Hell-black spiders. When the second ball of Soul Fire entered his body, Zhang Tie had already killed eight spiders while the third ball of Soul Fire entered his body, Zhang Tie had already killed 11 spiders.

Obviously, Zhang Tie killed those Hell-black spiders faster than the Soul Fires could form. Later, the scene was as follows——When Zhang Tie was swiftly eliminating the Hell-black spiders which were rushing towards him, the golden balls of Soul Fire started to gather, rise and float towards Zhang Tie like golden comets. As a result, the gloomy canyon was filled with brilliant golden flying lights of different lengths.

Standing at the top of the canyon and watching those traces of golden light constantly flying towards Zhang Tie, Guo Miaolu suddenly felt they were exceptionally beautiful. She felt the golden lights were as beautiful as the feathers on the tail of the legendary phoenix...

Guo Miaolu was confused about how such a mean, lecherous, greedy and sinister guy could create such a beautiful and shocking scene. Compared to the constantly rising Soul Fire behind Zhang Tie, all the other sparse Soul Fires behind other people became ornaments.

Gradually, Zhang Tie arouse the public's attention as more and more people in the canyon started to pay attention to him. After noticing the increasing number of golden Soul Fire behind Zhang Tie, the others all became dumbfounded. "Who's that guy? How can he gather golden Soul Fire? That only belongs to top grade battle qis!"

...

When more and more golden Soul Fire automatically flew into Zhang Tie's dantian elixir field, Zhang Tie had already entered a wonderful state. He felt the Iron-Blood Untouchable Strength in his body had slowly changed in a strange way after integrating with the Soul Fire.

Being immersed in fighting Hell-black spiders, Zhang Tie completely forgot time...

Not knowing how long had passed, with a sound of "Paka...", Zhang Tie seemed to hear the sound of breaking eggs. At the same time, the golden swirl of spiritual energy in Zhang Tie's mind exploded, followed by a widespread golden brilliance. It started to completely integrate with the exceptional strength in his body. A

wholly new strength then started to rise from the inside of Zhang Tie's body. Like a lion that suddenly broke out of its cage, he entered a new realm.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt that each of his cells was filled with a huge strength.

Zhang Tie started to radiate a Soul Fire-like blurry shadow. An obscure, huge Hell-black spider started to grow bigger and clearer behind Zhang Tie which gradually turned into a real totem of a grim golden spider of 30-40 m in height. Behind this terrifying golden spider totem, bloody waves rolled in like banners...

...

In the Dark Canyon, at the sight of that huge golden totem and the rolling banner-like bloody waves behind him, that "cold-harrumph" youth who came here together with Zhang Tie and Zhang Su had completely changed his face as he mumbled, "Iron-Blood Battle Qi...Bloody Banners...Iron-Blood Battle Qi...Bloody Banners, that's not possible, that's not possible..."

At this time, the "cold-harrumph" youth was also attempting to form his battle qi. However, compared to that 30-40 m oppressive totem behind Zhang Tie, the battle qi totem of that "cold-harrumph" youth was only 2-3 m in height. In front of Zhang Tie's battle qi totem, it was as funny as a toy at the foot of the giant...

"Sister Fu", "Junior brother Yu", "Junior brother Feng", "Senior brother An" and "Senior sister Fang" who came to Hidden Dragon

Island together with Zhang Tie on the same passenger liner were also in the Dark Canyon. As they were 4-5 km away from Zhang Tie, they didn't see the shocking image when the golden Soul Fire entered Zhang Tie's body. However, at this moment, when that terrifying huge battle qi totem behind Zhang Tie appeared, the five people naturally noticed it.

"Senior sister Fang, what...what's that?" Junior brother Feng pointed at the battle qi totem behind Zhang Tie and stammered.

"It looks like the battle qi totem of Iron-Blood Battle Qi, Bloody Banner...but how could it be that huge, that terrifying. Is there any from the imperial household of Norman Empire forming battle-qi?" Seeing that unprecedented battle qi totem, senior sister Fang became stunned for quite awhile before replied in an unimaginable look.

"Let's go have a look..." Senior brother An responded as he too was excited. Therefore he suggested taking a look there to see who was forming such a terrifying battle qi totem to broaden their horizons.

The moment senior brother An finished, they then started to run towards where Zhang Tie's location.

Only after running several hundred meters, a thunder-like long wail had drifted from the place where the huge battle qi totem rose. Being affected, all the Hell-black spiders close to the howl started to wail as they lay on the ground like shaking lambs waiting to be slaughtered. At the same time, all the other Hell-black spiders hurriedly retreated into the seams...

The whole Dark Canyon then became quiet.

This was a side effect and the most remarkable symbol and name card of all the top battle qi——totem shock! Those who could form these top battle qi were naturally threatening to those magical beasts and monsters that appeared on the battle qi totems. At this moment, Zhang Tie's long howl was due to the energy contained the totem shock of Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

...

"F*ck!" Even always being calm, Zhang Tie's cousin Zhang Su still couldn't help but swear...

All the people in the entire Dark Canyon started to run towards Zhang Tie. Looking at this boy who walked through those shaking Hell-black spiders towards her, Guo Miaolu almost couldn't connect this man with that guy in her mind.

The terrifying battle qi totem behind this person was as majestic as that of a God, which covered the entire Dark Canyon. However, in her memory, that bastard was a miser and lady-killer who didn't even spare 1 silver coin to support the girls' business. There was a great contrast...

"Am I dreaming?" Guo Miaolu couldn't help but ask herself...

"Ha...ha...Junior sister Miaolu, you have to call me senior

brother from today on. Don't forget about our bet! You owe me 90 gold coins now. Erm. I'm always generous. Let's start calculating its interest from tomorrow!" Zhang Tie walked towards her with a smile!

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Su's eye corner twitched once again, while Guo Miaolu started to grind her teeth. "I'm not dreaming! That's the douchebag..."

Chapter 289: Entering The Breaking Heaven Department

If you don't enter the Breaking Heaven Department, you can't say that you've cultivated in Hidden Dragon Palace——This was what Zhang Su told Zhang Tie when they left Dragon Cave last night.

After coming back yesterday, Zhang Tie couldn't clearly remember the chaotic scene at supper anymore. When he appeared in the canteen last night, all the boys and girls who knew that Zhang Tie had formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi in one day had become dumbfounded. What made it more chaotic were the many senior brothers who rushed in from the Breaking Heaven Department as they were exclaiming loudly —— "Where's Zhang Tie? Where's the Zhang Tie who formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi with a battle qi totem as high as dozens of meters in one day? Where's the Zhang Tie who shocked the entire Hidden Dragon Island?"

When so many people poured into the Zhixing Department, it instantly became as noisy as a vegetable market. However, this was not the end. Closely after, there was another group of guys from the Breaking Heaven Department who rushed down the mountain. The latter ones shouted loudly—— "Where's Zhang Tie? Where's that liar? How could he form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in one day? Is he trying to cheat us out of our money? No way! We have to confirm it..."

To end this farce, Zhang Tie released his battle qi totem in the Zhixing Department——Bloody Banner once again!

When the huge spider of the horrific battle qi totem that was 40-

50 m tall emerged which was over 10 times larger than that of common battle qi totems appeared behind Zhang Tie, it covered the entire Zhixing Department and the whole world seemed to stand still...

Everybody then raised their heads and watched the battle qi totem behind Zhang Tie with obsessed, admiring, envious, fearful, shocked, and confused expressions——Damn, what a freak!

Although being suspected of showing off, Zhang Tie found it was beneficial to his physical and mental health by doing this occasionally, especially when he looked at the girls' expressions, Zhang Tie felt pretty comfortable inside. "Guess how this senior brother will deal with you little girls..."

This was the last night that Zhang Tie slept in the Zhixing Department.

The next morning, although being only a short distance from the Breaking Heaven Department, as Zhang Tie's friends in Zhixing Department, Zhang Keliang, Wei Wu and the other guys still insisted on accompanying Zhang Tie there.

"If we knew that you'd have done it so easily, we would have put more gold coins as the wager!" When they bid farewell to Zhang Tie, Wei Wu said regretfully, "Who could have imagined that you were such a freak! How could you form Iron-Blood Battle Qi as easily as drinking water!"

"I really want to know, how much did you put on me?" Zhang Tie

asked Zhang Keliang.

"I put 28 gold coins. Yunfei put 2 gold coins and 36 silver coins. Hongsheng put 13 gold coins and 79 silver coins. Wei Wu only put 11 gold coins, hahaha..." Zhang Keliang laughed heartily. After winning money, everybody became very happy.

Hearing those words, Zhang Tie didn't say anything, but he felt a bit moved. After staying with them for several months, of course, Zhang Tie knew that this time, Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei and Zhang Hongsheng had used all their savings to support him. Although being a bit slippery, Wei Wu could only put 13 or 14 gold coins by then. Thinking of how his brothers picked up navy-blue iron ores in the ocean together with him and their sincere support, Zhang Tie felt warm inside.

Zhang Tie didn't say nothing; instead, he just tightly embraced them, "I'm waiting for you in the Breaking Heaven Department!"

"I will reach level 6 in two months. Then I will go form battle qi..." Zhang Keliang smiled, "Hongsheng and Xiaowu are still level 5, Yunfei will soon be level 5 too. We will soon meet each other in the Breaking Heaven Department!"

"After entering the Breaking Heaven Department, I've already got a plan to help us make a lot of money. I'm sure that we'll have enough money every day without having to do hard work anymore..." Wei Wu stealthily said.

"Wuh, what's that?" Zhang Yunfei asked out of curiosity. Even

Zhang Tie moved his eyes onto Wei Wu. "This guy always has eccentric ideas. He might really have a way to make money in the Breaking Heaven Department." After hearing Zhang Su's introduction about Breaking Heaven Department last night, Zhang Tie had already considered how to make money.

"This is a very simple plan. We can rent a big tent like that of a circus that could hold several hundred people. The ticket price is 10 silver coins a person. Only by performing three times a day will we earn enough money!"

"You want to perform? If you were there, I'm afraid that you have to reduce the ticket price to 1 copper coin!" Zhang Hongsheng mocked him aside.

"Of course not me, heh..heh...who has ever seen the battle qi totem of Iron-Blood Battle Qi of 40-50 m in height? Once we drag Zhang Tie out and parade him around in a circle while releasing his battle qi totem to broaden the crowd's horizons, would the people on Hidden Dragon Island care about 10 silver coins? No matter what, if it was me, I would definitely pay to have a look. This is would definitely be a travel program on Hidden Dragon Island..." Wei Wu giggled, "Last night, I even thought about advertisements. Cough... dear elders and brethren, as you pass by, don't miss it. You only need to pay 10 silver coins, with only 10 silver coins, you will see a battle qi totem 40-50 m in height of the top grade Iron-Blood Battle Qi up close. Come on and have a look..."

Watching Wei Wu's hilarious performance, Zhang Tie pretended to kick his butts while Wei Wu smirked and jumped off. In this

way, they departed from each other.

Watching the shadows of his friends, Zhang Tie really started to consider the feasibility of Wei Wu's joke. He then revealed a smile and shook his head. If he would really do this, Zhang Tie was sure that in a short while, he would definitely be killed by the assassins dispatched by Norman Empire——if one dared to take the secret knowledge of Norman Empire's imperial household as a joke, he must want to die.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie turned and walked towards the Middle Castle of Hidden Dragon Palace.

The Middle Castle of Hidden Dragon Palace was in the middle of the mountain. The whole castle was over 70 m high and was completely composed of hard black steel rocks. It was much larger than the Lower Castle. The Middle Castle looked more magnificent than Wild Wolf Castle. It was the entrance to the Breaking Heaven Department. Only after entering Middle Castle could he make it to his destination. Standing at the gate of the Middle Castle, Zhang Tie raised his head and looked at various powerful defense facilities that faintly revealed a grim killing intent.

Previously, Zhang Tie was not even qualified to enter the Middle Castle. Now, Zhang Tie finally gained this qualification. After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie lifted his luggage and walked towards the gate of this huge castle.

After arriving at the gate of the Middle Castle, under the gaze of two rows of fully-armored soldiers, Zhang Tie pulled out of his clan plate and inserted it into a card slot in a one person high metal

machine as was told by his cousin Zhang Su. After doing that, Zhang Tie heard the sound of moving gears drifting from the inside the machine. Only after several seconds was Zhang Tie's clan plate spat out of the machine. At the same time, an iron gate that held access to the inside of Middle Castle also automatically open. After that, the two rows of fully-armored soldiers moved their eyes away from Zhang Tie.

Ever since he was born, it was Zhang Tie's first time to contact such a hi-tech machine. According to Zhang Su, Middle Castle was not only the entrance to the Breaking Heaven Department but also to the management point. Under the ground of Middle Castle, there was a steam-driven machine that could identify the special metal grains on the clan plates of Zhang Tie's family. Once Zhang Tie gained access to the Breaking Heaven Department, the gate of Middle Castle would be open for him.

After entering the Castle, what Zhang Tie first saw was a magnificent hall, in which, there was a counter while some youths in the uniform of the Breaking Heaven Department were queuing up. Having been told what to do by Zhang Su, Zhang Tie instantly joined them. Behind the counter were some scholars in rigorous uniforms.

Some in front of Zhang Tie were submitting gold coins over the counter while the others passed their paper tapes over the counter. Along with the gold coins and the paper tapes, were their clan plates. After receiving the gold coins and the paper tapes, the people behind the counter took a serious look at them before inserting each clan plate into a huge machine with more operating buttons and sophisticated keys which was similar to the machine outside the gate. After that, they pressed the buttons and the

drawbars to withdraw the clan plate out of the machine.

"Ouyang Guang has submitted 30 gold coins as the monthly payment for March in the Breaking Heaven Department..."

...

"Zhang Zhenyue has submitted 30 gold coins as the monthly payment for March in Breaking Heaven Department..."

...

"Zhang Wei has finished clan task No. Z125 and gained 120 clan contribution points..."

...

"Qi Fei has submitted 30 gold coins as the monthly payment for March in Breaking Heaven Department..."

...

"Zhang Guowei has finished clan task No. T14 and gained 50 clan contribution points."

The person in front of Zhang Tie who looked 2 years older was Zhang Guowei. After confirming that he had gained 50 clan

contribution points, Zhang Tie heard him let out a sigh, "Can you check how many clan contribution points I have now please..."

After this person asked, Zhang Tie had noticed the people's movements behind the counter. After hearing Zhang Guowei's request, the people who operated that weird machine just pulled down a drawbar on that machine to run some gears. After that, a series of numbers showed up from an odometer-like visible window on the side of that person.

Of course, this machine was not a steam-based machine. Instead, it was a machine application terminal that was connected to the steam-based machine. Zhang Su said the steam-based machine that was underground was about three floors tall. With a steam turbine as the driving force, the perimeter of those gears in the machine, after being connected could circle around the Hidden Dragon Island several times.

"Along with the 50 clan contribution points by finishing this clan task, you have 176 clan donation points in total. Anything else do you want to know?"

"No, thanks!" Feeling a bit agonized, that one called Zhang Guowei shook his head.

After returning the clan plate from the machine, that operator gave it back to Zhang Guowei. When he left, Zhang Tie heard him mumbling while looking at the ceiling, "Alas, I still need 24 clan contribution points to learn Iron Elephant Skill..."

After he left, it was Zhang Tie's turn...

...

Chapter 290: Dreaming Of Becoming An Alchemist

When he came to the front of the counter, Zhang Tie handed in his clan plate and the 360 gold coins that he had long prepared.

"If you have enough money, you'd better hand in 1 year's worth of expenses in advance."

This was what Zhang Tie's cousin suggested to him when he handed Zhang Tie's principal of 300 gold coins and the 900 gold coins from Zhang Haige to him.

It was said that Zhang Haige and his cousin really suffered a great loss this time. They lost both face and money. After paying the wager, the two people went out to do tasks for money on the same day. What poor brothers.

Because of this, Zhang Tie carried over 1200 gold coins at this moment. Plus with the debts from the girls in Zhixing Department, Zhang Tie was definitely the richest newbie in Breaking-Heavens Department now.

"I'm new here, today I want to make 1 year's worth of payment in advance..."

"Are you Zhang Tie?" That old scholar behind the counter took Zhang Tie's item as he lowered his head down, lowered his glasses and took a serious look at Zhang Tie.

After what happened yesterday, Zhang Tie knew that he was not a trivial person in Hidden Dragon Palace any more. Many people should have heard about Zhang Tie. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not startled by that old scholar's response. Instead, he just calmly nodded.

"Wait a moment, I have to check the source of this money since you entered the Hidden Dragon Palace!"

Zhang Tie nodded as that old scholar stood up from behind the counter and moved into another room that Zhang Tie could not see. After 1 minute, he returned.

Zhang Tie thought that the managers of Hidden Dragon Palace could easily find the source of a large amount of money from certain students based on their acknowledgement about the intelligence of clan apprentices. If they could not even figure out whether their students were carrying illegal money in, the Hidden Dragon Palace would lose face.

"The source of your money is legal. 1 year's payment in advance, are you sure..."

"I'm sure!"

"Fine!" After counting the gold coins, the man inserted the clan plate into the slot of that machine and made some operations.

"Zhang Tie, submit a year's payment, 360 gold coins..." The old scholar returned the status plate and 2 keys to Zhang Tie, "Your room is No. 7, the room headed by Xuan in Songtao Pavilion. Here are the keys for Songtao Pavilion and your room!"

"Thanks!" Zhang Tie took these items and glanced at that machine out of curiosity, "I wonder if I could ask, since you don't give me a receipt after I've paid 360 gold coins, what do I do if you dispute me later on?"

The moment he heard Zhang Tie's words, the old scholar widened his eyes and glared at Zhang Tie, "Dispute you? Unless Hidden Dragon Palace was broken into by force and the difference machine system in the Middle Castle was completely destroyed, your information in the database of the difference machine in Hidden Dragon Palace would never be mistaken, don't you know?" Saying this, the old scholar turned his head and loudly shouted to the other staff members in the room behind the counter, "Listen, the brat is doubting our machine saying it could make a mistake, what the f*ck..."

In a split second, all the other old guys wearing oversleeves in the room started to glare at Zhang Tie just like some pious believers whose religion had just been insulted.

Noticing that he'd stirred up big trouble, Zhang Tie hurriedly apologized and escaped.

After leaving the Middle Castle from the back door, Zhang Tie had officially entered the Lingtian Department. Not until he entered did Zhang Tie realize the magnificence of this place which

was set off by the mountain scenery. Compared to the Breaking-Heavens Department, that courtyard of Zhixing Department was more like a preschool and kindergarten.

The Breaking-Heavens Department occupied a wide area of valley and woods in the hillside. The architectural style combined both Chinese and western features. Zhang Tie could see pavilions, terraces and open halls everywhere. It was like a palace here. Twisting corridors and raised eaves spread over the terrain. There was a waterfall among the mountains, forming a silver, heavenly waterfall in the Breaking-Heavens Department. Gurgling water could be seen everywhere in the courtyard while fish were swimming leisurely in the water. Exotic flowers and grasses were evergreen all year round. It was really Zhang Tie's first time seeing such beautiful scenery.

After looking around, Zhang Tie realized that the scale of Breaking-Heavens Department was only a bit smaller than those towns on the Hidden Dragon Island.

Being different from Zhixing Department where it was quiet in the daytime, the Breaking-Heavens Department was full of people and pretty vigorous. Under the heavenly waterfall, a large number of people were practicing swordsmanship. On the top of a cliff, many people were sitting there with legs crossed and were practicing breathing skills. In contrast, a lot of people were reading books and talking by the sides of the stream and in the pavilions.

Everyone here was busy doing something, except for someone who was walking fast on their way.

Because the residential area of Breaking-Heavens Department was centralized, Zhang Tie could easily find the Songtao Pavilion. It was a huge traditional Chinese building of five floors being close to a pinewood forest.

After entering the Songtao Pavilion using the key, Zhang Tie found that each floor of Songtao Pavilion had 8 rooms, each of which occupied a corner of the pavilion. The No. 7 room headed by Xuan was on the 4th floor of Songtao Pavilion, which faced southwest. On that early morning, Zhang Tie didn't meet anybody in the Songtao Pavilion before he arrived in front of his room. He thought they all must have gone out.

After opening the door, Zhang Tie put down his luggage as he finally let out a sigh. 1 gold coin a day, with the exception of the hard, wooden board bed, which remained the toughest feature of Hidden Dragon Palace, the other things were much better than that in Zhixing Department.

Besides the bedroom, there was also a toilet, a study room, a metal processing workshop and a cultivation room that faced directly towards the balcony. There were some thick crystal pillars at the corners of the room, each of which weighed heavier than 10 kg. Once he entered the room, being influenced by the powerful qi field of the "crystal generator", Zhang Tie had already felt his battle qi becoming a bit flexible and energetic.

Only after spending several minutes roughly arranging his luggage, did Zhang Tie leave the Songtao Pavilion.

Over 10 minutes later, Zhang Tie finally found the right place

after asking many people along the way here.

This was a small building, which was located in the pinewood forest. It looked pretty trivial among the numerous tall and magnificent buildings in the Breaking-Heavens Department. In front of the small building, there was a horizontal board, on which was written—"Juveniles should have breaking-heaven ambitions!"

When Zhang Tie arrived here, there was a juvenile who had just walked out of the small building full of ambitions. Outside the small building, that juvenile made a big bow towards it before he left.

It was a great person who lived in the Breaking-Heavens Department. Zhang Su's cousin called this man the Bamboo Woods Man. Each person who was new here in the Breaking-Heavens Department should visit the Bamboo Woods Man before officially starting their lives in the Breaking-Heavens Department.

There was a strange rule for visiting the Bamboo Woods Man. It was free for all the newbies who came to visit him the first time. However, they had to pay him 100 gold coins and 100 clan donation points for the second time, then 1000 gold coins and 1000 clan donation points for the 3rd time. Everybody could only visit him 3 times in total.

As Zhang Tie was new here today, it was free.

Zhang Su told Zhang Tie that each person who came to visit the

Bamboo Woods Man would have a great achievement. Therefore, he emphasized that Zhang Tie had to respect him.

Zhang Su also let Zhang Tie carefully consider his ambitions and suggested that Zhang Tie don't go to visit the Bamboo Woods Man before figuring out what he wanted to do and what person he wanted to be, in case he wasted the first chance.

Of course, Zhang Tie wouldn't waste this chance. His cousin's suggestion was acceptable, but Zhang Tie had long found the orientation of his soul and the target he dreamed of for in the rest of his life.

With a very dubious attitude, Zhang Tie arranged his clothes outside the small building and cleaned the mud on his shoes before he entered the small building.

An old man with an infant-like red and smooth face and white-snow hair was inclining his body against a soft bed on one side of a desk. The moment he saw Zhang Tie, he mumbled, which really stunned Zhang Tie.

"Another nuisance surnamed Zhang, alas..."

"Sorry to trouble you!" According to his cousin's directions, Zhang Tie smiled as he bowed towards the Bamboo Woods Man before standing in front of the desk with hands crossed modestly.

After glancing at Zhang Tie, the Bamboo Woods Man closed his

eyes for quite a while. When he opened his eyes, he let out another sigh, "The path for you is too difficult. I'm afraid that nobody in Hidden Dragon Palace and Zhang clan can help you, even though they are powerful in this region!"

Zhang Tie's heart raced, thinking, 'I've not even opened my mouth, how could he know that? That's impossible! I've not mentioned my ambition to anyone else. Nobody could know.'

"The 2 most exclusive top ancestral blood lines had been awakened in the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Any of the two blood lines could lead to rune manufacturing, which was also the top profession among human beings. Most of the Zhang apprentices who come to Hidden Dragon Palace desire to be rune manufactures. The professional rune manufacturers from Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace could rank first in the entire Waii Sub-Continent. Do you know how many people in the entire Waii Sub-Continent want to learn how to manufacture rune products? However, you..." tilting against the soft bed, the Bamboo Woods Man glanced at Zhang Tie with a bitter smile, "As a direct descendant of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, you obviously meet the top requirements needed to be a rune manufacturer, which the others could never dream of, how could you dream of becoming an alchemist? I don't know whether to swear at you for your stupidity or praise you for being ambitious?"

Zhang Tie was instantly shocked, 'F*ck, he really knows that...'

Chapter 291: Lay A Solid Foundation

Looking at the shock in Zhang Tie's eyes, the Bamboo Woods Man revealed a faint smile, "Don't be curious about how I know that you are dreaming of becoming an alchemist. It's not telepathy, but a round of calculation by the skill of yi. It's just a small trick; no need to be curious about that!"

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he recalled a mysterious oriental profession——augur. It was said that people in this profession could use a calculation skill called "yi", by which they could predict many things. It was truly a marvelous profession.

"You...you're an augur?"

"I'm not an augur. He...he...as I've studied the law of yi for dozens of years, I just know a bit of it!" The Bamboo Woods Man gave a smile as he touched his beard.

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie relaxed a bit. If the old man could really see through him and know everything about him at the first sight of him, Zhang Tie might have already been scared away.

Since he attended that auction in Kalur City, when he witnessed the power of the alchemists, Zhang Tie had already been greatly moved and thoroughly believed that "true heroes should act like alchemists". Having entered the Breaking-Heavens Department, of course Zhang Tie would not give up on his dream due to only one person's suggestion. Perhaps the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace

could really cultivate powerful rune manufacturers, but compared to the talent of "touching a stone to turn it into a piece of gold", the great deterrence that an alchemist could bring to a country was more attractive to Zhang Tie.

A guy who could produce horrific "thermal bombs" and casually change common stones into priceless items was far more than "cool"—"Treasure Manufacturer", "Walking Vault", "All-Purpose Stone Speaker", "Thermal Weapon Converter in Cold Weapons Age", "Humanoid Bomb"—When he thought about the reputations of alchemists; Zhang Tie would feel blood boiling.

To be an alchemist was Zhang Tie's greatest dream that he had found since he was born 15 years ago.

"My dream will not change. What can I learn from you?" Zhang Tie looked at that Bamboo Woods Man with expecting eyes.

"I can only teach you one sentence——lay a solid foundation!" After saying this, the Bamboo Woods Man glanced at Zhang Tie before adding, "Alchemy is the most powerful profession among human beings. Only 1 or 2 out of 100 million people have the ability to stride over the threshold to become an alchemist. Each alchemist is one of the most excellent human beings or has a very exceptional aptitude. If you want to learn from an alchemist, you have to be at least a powerful fighter above LV 9. Igniting 34 surge points and becoming a LV 9 fighter is the lowest condition to come into contact with alchemy. As you are just LV 6, you could not even touch the lowest threshold to be an apprentice of an alchemist, even if there are chances in front of you, you will be not qualified to touch them!"

"The lowest threshold to be the apprentice of an alchemist is LV 9 fighter?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes and asked.

"Of course, each alchemist would always go to the underground world. They have to explore and cultivate in places that are out of commoners' imagination, how could they not even protect themselves? Even though they are LV 9 fighters, they could still barely protect themselves, as they are just fighters! The more powerful the profession is, the higher the threshold would be. If you can not break through the surge points on your spine, your cultivation would be useless. In many powerhouses' eyes, to be a LV 9 fighter is just the beginning on the road of cultivation!" After saying this, the Bamboo Woods Man revealed a faint smile to Zhang Tie while lying on the soft bed, head inclined, "Do you think that LV 9 fighters are powerful?"

Zhang Tie forced a bashful smile. Ever since he was born, he had never encountered a fighter above LV 9. When in school, Miss Daina had promised them if any one could be a LV 9 Bloody-Scorpion fighter, she would marry him. Therefore, Zhang Tie always thought that a LV 9 fighter was pretty powerful. LV 9 was once Zhang Tie's target. As for the ranks after LV 9, he really didn't know. This was determined by the knowledge, background, and experience of Zhang Tie. However, according to the Fibonacci Number Series, there are definitely more powerful ranks after LV 9.

"Can you talk about the ranks after LV 9? I'm still confused about the ranks after LV 9. When I was in school, we learned that it was related to Fibonacci Number Series." As the Bamboo Woods Man was in front of him and this lesson was free, Zhang Tie seized this

chance and asked in a respectful way.

The old man smiled, "Most commoners might not be able to reach LV 9 in their whole lives. But in the eyes of the truly powerful men, a LV 9 fighter is just someone who has ignited 34 surge points on their spine. He or she has only just entered the ranks of cultivators."

"When you ignite 55 surge points, you will be a strong fighter."

...

"When you ignite 89 surge points, you will be a fighting master."

...

"When you ignite 144 surge points, you will be a great fighting master."

...

"When you ignite 233 surge points, you will be a fighting spirit."

...

"When you ignite 377 surge points, you will be a fighting monster."

...

"When you ignite 610 surge points, namely when you have ignited all the surge points, you will be a fighting general."

The Bamboo Woods Man patiently explained.

"It turns out that with the exception of the shrine surge point, there are 610 more surge points!" Zhang Tie mumbled. As he realized that he had just ignited 20 surge points out of the 610, Zhang Tie started to ooze cold sweat. Even if he was a LV 9 fighter and had ignited 34 surge points on his spine, he would still have 576 surge points to ignite. Yesterday, when he reached LV 6, Zhang Tie was very pleased about that. However, now, Zhang Tie finally knew that compared to those surge points that he had not ignited, his current achievement was just the first step for a long march.

"Precisely, in the eyes of many powerful men, in the stage of igniting surge points, namely during the process that you ignite all the surge points before you reach LV 15. To a greater extent, the 15 levels could be divided into fighter, strong fighter, fighting master, great fighting master, fighting spirit, fighting monster and fighting general. Of course, each rank could be further divided. Do you understand why a LV 9 fighter is only the lowest threshold to be an alchemist?"

"I know. My current strength does not even reach the lowest

threshold to be an alchemist!" Hearing his words, Zhang Tie didn't feel frustrated at all; instead, he just calmed down with a great ambition rising up from inside him once again, "Is there any greater existence after the fighting general?"

"Of course, it will come to knights after the fighting ranks. You don't need to know about knights now. Sometimes, it might be not good for a young man to know too many things as you might lose your motivation!" The Bamboo Woods Man stared at Zhang Tie with wise eyes, "I could only tell you that many top alchemists are above knights themselves!"

"You said nobody in Hidden Dragon Palace and Zhang clan could help me to become an alchemist. What about the entire Waii Sub-Continent? Will I be able to find someone who can help me become an alchemist there?" Zhang Tie still didn't give up.

"No!"

"Why?" Zhang Tie became surprised.

"Because the inheritance of alchemists is different from common inheritance as the first one involves abhiseca, which is a sophisticated and deep inheritance ceremonial pattern that can only be mastered by alchemists who have reached a certain level. As there are few alchemists, let alone those master alchemists. Although there are some alchemists in the entire Waii Sub-Continent, not one of them would be able to carry out abhiseca!"

Abhiseca? It was Zhang Tie's first time to hear this word. He had

not imagined that the inheritance pattern of alchemists was so rarely seen.

"You mean that the alchemists in the entire Waii Sub-Continent basically adopted abhiseca in other areas?"

"Almost. According to my knowledge, including the alchemists of Jinyun Country, none of the alchemists in Waii Sub-Continent adopted abhiseca in Waii Sub-Continent! There are too few alchemists who can carry out abhiseca in human beings!"

"How can I gain the abhiseca inheritance of alchemists then?"

"It depends on two things: fortune and real strength. Fortune is uncontrollable, yet real strength is under your control!" The Bamboo Woods Man smiled, "Although you cannot gain such a fortune in Hidden Dragon Palace, it could grant you the real strength to be close to fortune. Am I clear?"

"Thanks, I'm clear!" Zhang Tie nodded as he made the decision inside.

"You can ask me another question!" The old man reminded him.

"As I've awakened the precise throwing skill, I would like to know how I can further improve it so as to gain a new ability!"

Besides gaining the old man's guidance on the direction one should develop in and their future ambitions, each person who

came here could also ask him about how to improve their ancestral blood line. This was a very precious opportunity, which was almost equal to a gift that Breaking-Heavens Department sent to each newbie. Of course Zhang Tie would not give up such a good opportunity.

...

After several minutes, with the method to further improve his precise throwing, Zhang Tie respectfully left. At the same time, he heard a faint snore from the Bamboo Woods Man lying on the soft bed.

When Zhang Tie stood outside the small building, he bowed towards it before leaving.

He had not imagined that he could improve his precise throwing in this way. On the way back, Zhang Tie thought about the method as was told by the old man. He then felt it very inconceivable. The information on alchemists was also precious to Zhang Tie.

'If you don't break through the surge points on your spine, your cultivation would be useless. Lay a solid foundation.' Zhang Tie mumbled, not realizing that he had been surrounded by some women who did not look kind...

Chapter 292: Curriculum

Those who surrounded Zhang Tie were all older than him and between the ages of 18 and 20. In black uniforms, they looked pretty cool. Additionally, as they usually did sports, they all had very hot figures. Of course, if he wasn't being glared at by them, Zhang Tie would really enjoy being surrounded by so many women.

"Are you that mean, shameless, lecherous, and sinister Zhang Tie?"

'F*ck, is that a greeting?' Zhang Tie carefully looked at them as he really could not remember whether there was any relation between him and them. However, they looked like they'd caught a person, who owed them several hundred coins, wandering around in a brothel.

"I'm sorry, you've got the wrong person, I'm not the person that you want!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie immediately walked away.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking away, they obviously became stunned as they had not imagined that Zhang Tie would deny his identity. Not until Zhang Tie had walked several steps away did those women realize what had happened and surrounded Zhang Tie once again with contemptuous looks.

"Are you are man or not? Don't you dare to admit your status?"

"That's it, how could such a person enter the Hidden Dragon Palace?"

"Dare you say that you are not Zhang Tie?"

The women then started to mock Zhang Tie.

"As for whether I'm a man, the most qualified one to answer this is my woman. You're not my women, therefore, you are not qualified to ask that question!" With arms crossed, Zhang Tie remained smiling, "You're right, I'm Zhang Tie. It's just a common name as many people are given this name. But I don't know about that mean, shameless, lecherous, and sinister Zhang Tie you mentioned. You must have found the wrong person. If you are looking for the fair, handsome, kind, and generous Zhang Tie, here I am!"

"Humph..." A women replied with a cold harrumph, "Truly as said by those sisters in Zhixing Department, you are eloquent. No crap. We are looking for you!"

"Why are you looking for me, senior sisters?"

"Do you know the rules for newbies when they enter Breaking Heaven Department?"

"What rules?" Zhang Tie asked even though he already knew.

"Okay, I will tell you. We found you today to notify you that we have applied to be your training guides on two compulsory subjects for fighters, namely the basic moving skills and shield defense skills. When you have enough clan donation points and want to learn the two compulsory subjects, we will spare some time to guide you well!" One of them said as she emphasized the word "guide", indicating a malicious intention.

"I'm afraid that you have not even skimmed over your curriculum. You will know it when you see it. Humph, don't beg us for forgiveness then. Let's go..." Another one of them glared at Zhang Tie before making a cold harrumph and turning her head. Closely following her, the other proud women then turned around and left.

Twiddling his beard with his hand, Zhang Tie watched their faintly twisting and rhythmic butts and finally understood a fact. He didn't know when, but his "good reputation" as the "Public Enemy of Female Students" in Zhixing Department seemed to have spread to the Breaking Heaven Department, as they had already found him trouble on the first day when he came here to register.

After knowing that he could easily form Iron-Blood Battle Qi, those LV 7 little girls still dared to find him trouble. It meant that they must have something to back their confidence. There might be something eccentric and mysterious in the two compulsory fighting courses.

'Never mind. Just wait. This father doesn't believe that those little girls could queue up to bite me! If they truly have stirred me up, I will fiercely whip their butts.'

After glaring at their swaying butts, Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva and returned to his room in the Songtao Pavilion.

This time, when he came back, there was already a magazine-like book on the top of the message box which was installed on his door. Zhang Tie took a look at it and noticed a line of big words on the cover of it: "A Brief Introduction on the Arrangement of the Compulsory Courses in the Breaking Heaven Department of Hidden Dragon Palace and Elective Courses".

In the following hour, Zhang Tie was studying this book during which time he started to have a deeper understanding on the Breaking Heaven Department.

With the exception of special situations, newbies had to meet the following conditions before officially leaving the Breaking Heaven Department.

Condition 1: One should reach at least LV 9 and ignite 34 surge points on one's spine.

— This was the lowest requirement.

Condition 2: Males have to reach 20 years old and undergo the capping ceremony. Females have to reach 20 years old and undergo gyerye.

— This was the lowest requirement on age.

Condition 3: One should pass all the compulsory courses and subjects in Breaking Heaven Department.

— This was the lowest requirement on ability.

The first two requirements were easy for Zhang Tie to meet; however, the last requirement really dumbfounded him. He finally understood why the people in the Breaking Heaven Department were so busy all day long. Take his cousin for example, besides being busy making money, Zhang Su was also busy earning clan donation points.

Damn, it turned out that all the compulsory courses and subjects had tuition fees of gold coins and clan donation points. Additionally, so many cultural courses were included in those compulsory subjects besides pure cultivation.

At the sight of those compulsory cultural courses, Zhang Tie instantly became even more dumbfounded.

"General History of Human Beings" — Compulsory Course —
Payment: 10 gold coins.

"A Study on the Two Holy Wars Between Human Beings and Demons" — Compulsory Course —

Payment: 20 gold coins and 20 clan donation points.

"A Study on the Political Systems in the Countries across the Waii Sub-Continent" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 15 gold coins and 5 clan donation points.

"General Introduction on the Human Culture of Continents" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 10 gold coins.

"Geography" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 10 gold coins.

"The Science on the Inside of Earth" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 20 gold coins and 20 clan donation points.

"War Geography" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 10 gold coins.

"An Exploration on the Technical Development in Different Industries in the Black Iron Age" —

Compulsory Course — Payment: 10 gold coins and 5 clan donation points.

"The Great Brilliant Charter" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 1 gold coin.

"Practice on Business Group Management and Trade" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 100 gold coins and 100 clan donation points.

"Clan System and The Wealth of Nations" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 5 gold coins.

"Military Strategies" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 50 gold coins and 50 clan donation points.

"How to be a Qualified Battlefield Commander" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 30 gold coins and 30 clan donation points.

"Survival Skills in Extreme Environments" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 15 gold coins and 15 clan donation points.

"Music" — Compulsory Course — Payment: 10 gold coins.

...

Those cultural subjects were basically all the high-end knowledge that Zhang Tie hadn't touched before, which covered history, politics, geography, culture, and military. There were 20 cultural subjects in total. After taking a serious look, Zhang Tie realized that with the exception of Hebrew that he had already learned, he would need learn all the other cultural courses.

However, for commoners, too much money was required to learn all these courses. If he referred to the previous income of his family in Blackhot City, his whole family might not be able to pay for those courses even after 30 years of work, if the clan donation points were not included.

In a contrast, the expense of those compulsory cultivation courses was even more amazing. However, there were only a few cultivation courses, namely: basic moving steps, basic swordsmanship, shield defense skills, preliminary archery, flying skills, and horsemanship.

Advanced cultivation courses were not included in compulsory courses, but in elective courses. Reading them, Zhang Tie's eyes radiated a gleaming light. As he turned each page, he would forcefully swallow his saliva.

31 battle qi ranging from middle-class battle qi to high-end battle qi were available.

17 swordsmanship were available.

9 marksmanship were available.

56 palm skills, fist skills, and finger skills were available.

8 leg skills were available.

4 secret methods that could be used to improve spiritual energy were available.

3 secret methods on polishing surge points by spiritual energy were available.

Over 100 kinds of secret knowledge, fighting skills, eccentric weapons, and even poisoning skills were available.

Some of the elective courses made Zhang Tie more stunned — advanced courses on professions like alchemy, rune manufacturing, tricks master, beast training, fengshui architecture and tactical deployment master.

The elective courses on alchemy progressed from herbal apprentice, knapsack pharmacist and bottle suspending alchemist, which were also the 3 stages to be an alchemist.

The elective courses on rune manufacturing progressed from craftsman apprentice, craftsman to copper hammer craftsman, which were also the 3 stages to be a rune manufacturer.

The elective courses of all the other professions all included the first 2 to 4 stages of them. Of course, one had to pay a lot for these courses. It would take one 2000 gold coins and 1000 clan donation points to choose the craftsman apprentice; the 1st stage to be a rune manufacturer. This was a huge amount of money.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was once again shocked by the great power and background of the Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

The whole Hidden Dragon Palace was like the clan elites school of the Zhang clan, where the Zhang clan could cultivate some special professions. What a great power!

Scanning this curriculum, Zhang Tie recalled those women who applied to be his "training guides". He then smiled and knew that he would be busy in the Breaking Heaven Department from then on...

Chapter 293: Use the Dead as a Mirror

People in Breaking Heaven Department were free to arrange their learning and cultivation courses. Nobody would force you to do anything. As long as you could afford 30 gold coins a month on Hidden Dragon Island, you could even treat Breaking-Heavens Department as a senior island and live here for the rest of your life. But it was not possible for you to casually leave the Hidden Dragon Island before finishing all of your courses.

In the Breaking Heaven Department, besides learning and cultivation, you had to accomplish some mandatory courses that you had freely chosen. You could make money or clan contribution points through doing these clan tasks. You might also be able to legally leave the Island to finish some tasks on the continent.

However, all the tasks that required one to leave the Island were of great difficulty. Some of them were even very dangerous. Two-thirds of the clan apprentices who lost their lives when cultivating in the Breaking Heaven Department were killed when they left Hidden Dragon Island to do clan tasks.

Breaking Heaven Department was a school, an army and a furnace. It had two sides, the free side and the hard side. The temperature here could sublime you or turn you into residue and ashes.

If you don't want to be residue and ashes, the only thing you could do was work harder, harder, and even harder. You would have no other choice but to constantly grit your teeth and grow more powerful.

On the first night when he entered the Breaking Heaven Department, Zhang Tie had received his first mandatory task. When Zhang Tie was still in the room, someone directly push the first task letter under the door to his room.

It was such a funny task—to do cleaning for one week, by which he could gain 5 clan contribution points. This was the first tasks for everyone that entered the Breaking Heaven Department.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie felt this task was hilarious. But soon, he changed his mind as he was going to clean the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion in the Breaking Heaven Department.

Elites Sacrifice Pavilion was a shrine in Breaking-Heavens Pavilion that was used to honor those clan members who sacrificed themselves or died during cultivation in the Breaking Heaven Department.

At 6 am the next morning, according to regulations, Zhang Tie had already arrived at the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion when the dawn had just arrived. There was only one senior who was guarding the entrance. After Zhang Tie arrived, the old man brought Zhang Tie into the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion.

As soon as he entered the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion, Zhang Tie had noticed many spirit tablets, which frightened him greatly.

"The Elites Sacrifice Pavilion will be open from 9 am to 9 pm. Therefore, you'd better come here 3 hours before it opens. it is

composed of 3 floors, each floor holds 1183 spirit tablets. You need to clean all the floors, handrails, windows and spirit tablets. After it closes in the evening, you should also clean it one more time! After that, I will check it. If you cannot clean it well, you will have to do it again! During opening hours, if anyone wants to worship here, you should also keep it clean from time to time..." The old man took Zhang Tie around the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion as he told Zhang Tie how to clean and what to take care of.

Finally, he guided Zhang Tie into the tools room. After explaining to Zhang Tie how to use the tools, the old man let out a sigh, "Alas, the latest spirit tablet was placed 2 months ago. They were all young men..." Saying this, the old man shook his head as he left, leaving the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion to Zhang Tie.

Trying to recover his composure, Zhang Tie started to clean. Although he had killed people and seen blood before, he was still a bit frightened when he cleaned the spirit tablets and caught sight of the black and white photos on the stony spirit tablets.

On the positive side of each spirit tablet was a photo and a name. On the back of each spirit tablet was a simple introduction on that person's life experiences. A person's life was recorded in only a few lines—one's parents; the year one entered Hidden Dragon Palace; one's events; why one died at an early age.

Each person had curiosity. After he gradually became less frightened, when he cleaned each spirit tablet, Zhang Tie couldn't stand but take a look at the life experiences and cause of death of the people on the back of the spirit tablets. Unless one didn't want to see the words on the spirit tablets, you would always notice

them.

The more he cleaned, the more he saw. Gradually, Zhang Tie started to form an strange mood.

Although they lived in different ways when they were alive, they all died due to numerous causes.

Some were born to be talents, who had awakened many kinds of ancestral bloodlines and had reached level 10 at the age of 17-18 were meant to be powerful fighters. Finally, during their cultivation, they didn't listen to other's advice and wanted to break through a certain cultivation bottleneck, which caused them to be possessed by a devil and to spit out blood before death.

Some were average. After entering the Hidden Dragon Palace, he or she couldn't stand the rapid rhythm here and was gradually lagged far away by others. He or she then complained everyday and finally died due to frustration and grief.

Some overestimated their real strength when they accepted clan tasks. As a result, they died when they executed their tasks.

Some became kind and hesitated when they carried out some special tasks. However, after they forgave the enemy, they were killed.

Some died on some occasions due to carelessness when they were carrying out common tasks.

Some already had deep enmity with others before they entered the Hidden Dragon Palace. Finally they were killed by their enemy.

Some had gained great progress after cultivating in the Hidden Dragon Palace for many years. They were so ambitious that when he returned home and gathered with their previous partners, they violently showed off. After being drunk, they were set up and killed by some of their previous partners who were jealous of them.

Some always bullied their junior brothers and classmates due to their family background and were finally killed purposefully with the excuse of it being a mistake during a sparring exercise.

Some were innocent. Being lured by the others, they violated the regulations of Hidden Dragon Palace by selling intelligence of Breaking Heaven Department and were finally killed.

Some were troubled by love affairs in the Breaking-Heavens Department and were finally killed.

Some directly disappeared when they entered the underground world or dived in the sea for exploration...

...

After cleaning all the spirit tablets, Zhang Tie was so scared that he even oozed a cold sweat. The 1183 spirit tablets were definitely

live textbooks which told you how to leave Hidden Dragon Palace alive. Zhang Tie finally knew why there were not too many rules in the Breaking Heaven Department and why his first task in Breaking Heaven Department was to clean the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion. Because all the rules of Breaking Heaven Department were in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion. Each name and each story on each spirit tablet could work as a mirror for people to reflect themselves.

During the next week, Zhang Tie almost lived in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion. He would come here to clean at 6 am and did another round of cleaning after 9 pm when it was closed before returning to his room in the Songtao Pavilion. As no one arrived there during the day, Zhang Tie would always stay in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion and gaze at the spirit tablets as he thought about the stories on the spirit tablets. He then always asked himself—If that was him, would make the same mistake? Why would he make such a mistake? How could he avoid making such a mistake?

It was a process to constantly ask and reflect on himself. Although the other people considered it pretty boring in this gloomy place, Zhang Tie had different achievements each day. Through constant reflection, Zhang Tie found that he became more mature mentally.

One week soon passed...

In that evening, before he left the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion, Zhang Tie seriously cleaned each corner and each spirit tablet in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion. After that, he arranged his clothes and washed his hands. He then burned three incense sticks and bowed towards

the spirit tablets three times on the first floor before inserting the incense sticks into the incense table.

"Dear senior brothers and sisters, this younger brother has accompanied you for one week. I will not come here tomorrow. Thanks for your lessons. As this place is not big enough, I'm sure that I will not strive for a place here with you. When in festivals and the new year comes, I, Zhang Tie will definitely come here to bring you enough paper notes.

"This kid is teachable!"

A sound drifted from behind Zhang Tie as the old gatekeeper who should have long went to bed at this time had already stood behind Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie turned back and saw that haunch-back old man touching his mustache and smiling at him.

"Kid, you really have a nice consciousness and a good heart. If you have troubles, later on, come here and have a look. Think it over carefully! No disasters could match death in the secular world. Once alive, one will always be able to handle it. If one dies, one wouldn't able to handle it any longer..." The old man watched Zhang Tie as he satisfactorily nodded and talked to Zhang Tie.

"Yes, I've remembered it!"

"Hmm, you can leave now. Don't come here tomorrow. It's not early, go to bed soon!" The old man said as he patted 3 times on Zhang Tie's shoulders and left.

...

When Zhang Tie returned to his room in Songtao Pavilion, it was already 12 am. After washing up, Zhang Tie lay on the bed and prepared to sleep. However, only after a while, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled a fairy tale told by Donder. The protagonist of the fairy tale was a monkey. When the monkey went to learn skills, his immortal master knocked three times on his head. The monkey suddenly realized the meaning of his master and silently slid to his immortal master's room at three am and truly got the true knowledge.

Did it mean that the old man had the same meaning by patting his shoulders three times—thinking of it this way, Zhang Tie instantly became awake, "Is that old man a great powerhouse who lives in seclusion in Hidden Dragon Palace. Did he pat me to test whether I'm smarter than a monkey?"

Therefore, when it was 2:30 am, Zhang Tie got up and put on his clothes. Being a bit thrilled, Zhang Tie fumbled in the darkness and silently arrived in front of the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion several minutes before 3 am.

However, after standing outside the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion and hearing tweets of insects for quite awhile, Zhang Tie saw nobody at all. Finally, he arrived outside the small room where the old man slept. He heard the old man's snores from time to time.

Standing there for quite awhile, Zhang Tie then shook his head and forced a smile before returned to his room in Songtao Pavilion and had a good sleep. The next morning, when Zhang Tie woke

up, he took his clan plate and rushed into the Tasks Center on the second floor of the Middle Castle.

These days, as this mandatory task had occupied all of his time, Zhang Tie's plan to further evolve his ancestral bloodline was delayed. After this task was accomplished, Zhang Tie had a decent amount of free time. He felt it was the right time to evolve his ancestral bloodline and was very excited about it.

Chapter 294: Yaksha in the Sea

"You've already completed the first one-week task in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion and gained 5 more clan contribution points, making it 55 points in total. Can I do anything else for you?" A beautiful young girl standing behind a service window in the task assignment hall on the second floor of the Middle Castle enthusiastically asked Zhang Tie.

"No, thanks. I'd like to look around!", as soon as he finished the mandatory LV 6 task, Zhang Tie suddenly felt as free as a bird in the sky and a fish in the ocean. From then on, he could freely manage his time before he reached LV 7. Zhang Tie really liked this feeling.

"Fine, the task board is over there, if you need any help, just come here and ask me!"

These young girls on the second floor were much better at talking compared to those stubborn scholars downstairs. Their words sounded much more comfortable. When he took his clan plate back, returned by that beautiful young girl behind the window from that machine's slot, Zhang Tie saw another cousin of Breaking Heaven Department walking out of a door on one side of the task hall.

"What's that small room for?" Zhang Tie casually asked.

"The clan's secret tasks are assigned there. They are not opened to the public. Only one person could enter at a time!"

'Secret task?' Zhang Tie was attracted, "Can I enter now?"

"You need to reach LV 7 at least. Additionally, you have to pass all the compulsory modules before taking on a secret task!"

"Okay, thanks!"

It wouldn't be difficult for Zhang Tie to reach LV 7. However, when he recalled the 6 compulsory courses — fundamental moves, fundamental swordsmanship, shield defense skill, preliminary archery, flying skills, and horsemanship — Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. Based on his current conditions, he had enough gold to buy these compulsory courses; however, he had too few clan contribution points. It turned out that he had to spend a lot of time to gain more clan contribution points.

'I will have a look at the open task notice board to see whether I can do some tasks to gain clan contribution points!'

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie left the reception desk and moved to the the open task notice board to carefully read it.

— Island Patrol, 8 hours a day, 15 days for each task. 30 clan contribution points as a reward.

...

— Security officer around five towns. Be stationed in five towns; being responsible for maintaining order in towns by punishing trouble-makers. 7 days for each task. 50 clan contribution points as a reward. LV 7 and above is required.

...

— Scouts in Dragon Cave. Explore deep into the inside of Dragon Cave to pay close attention to any abnormal situations and relevant intelligence in the underground world. 7 days for each task. 70 clan contribution points and 7 gold coins as a reward. LV 8 and above is required.

...

Zhang Tie glanced over at the notice board one column after another. He started to frown as he didn't like most of those tasks or didn't meet the requirements of those he favored. All of a sudden, Zhang Tie noticed a task on the notice board.

——Yaksha in the sea, being responsible for patrolling in the sea near the pearl field of the Hidden Dragon Island by driving away sharks and other dangerous maritime living beings. When huge maritime creatures get too close to the pearl field, Yaksha should promptly send a warning. 7 days for each task. 60 clan contribution points as a reward. Note: task receivers should pass an on-site examination.

'Ha, that's it!' Zhang Tie became highly spirited. This was the ideal task in his mind. For Zhang Tie, with this task, he could both

gain clan contribution points and continue to absorb sea water to increase basic energy storage in the Castle of Black Iron without having to be afraid of being noticed. Besides, he could also stimulate the growth of Iron-Body Fruit. It's really like killing three birds with one stone.

Zhang Tie then jubilantly ran towards the task handling counter and officially applied for the task to be a Yaksha.

"Although this task could also be done by LV 6 people, it requires excellent swimming skills. Even many LV 7 ones could not do it. Are you sure you want to apply for this task?" The young woman behind the counter kindly asked.

"Yeah, I'm sure!"

"Fine, you can have a test at the Long Wind Pearl Field to the east of the Hidden Dragon Island in the afternoon. If you are qualified, this task will begin tomorrow."

"Good, thanks!"

After completing his application, Zhang Tie turned around and left the task assignment hall on the second floor of Middle Castle. When he went downstairs, he encountered a familiar man.

"Zhang Tie..." At the sight of Zhang Tie, Liu Xi instantly showed a big smile, "I was completing tasks outside these past few days and was only just told that you had already entered the Breaking

Heaven Department a week ago. I was thinking about inviting you for a dinner!"

Thinking of the meeting between him and Liu Xi when they met in the Black Dragon Town several days ago, Zhang Tie also smiled, "I thought senior brother Liu had already forgotten about it!"

"Haha, how could I forget about that! Are you free at the moment?"

Hearing Liu Xi's words, Zhang Tie realized that he wanted to make friends with him. As Liu Xi left a good impression on Zhang Tie, of course, Zhang Tie was willing to accept his invitation. "I've just finished the task in the Elites Sacrifice Pavilion, so I'm free for the next couple of days. I will be there whenever you call me!"

Seeing that Zhang Tie's attitude towards him was the same as the first time he met him even after miraculously forming Iron-Blood Battle Qi and shocking the entire Hidden Dragon Palace, Liu Xi started to respect Zhang Tie even more inside. Once Zhang Tie left Hidden Dragon Island, he would definitely be prominent and gain a high position in the Zhang clan.

"That's fine. How about having a gathering with some of my friends in the Ocean Hotel in White Dragon Town tomorrow night. We'll drink until dawn!" Liu Xi happily said.

"Sure!"

"Oh, have you got a new task?"

"Yeah, I got one, Yaksha in the sea. I'm heading for the Long Wind Pearl Field to test my swimming skill!"

"Haha, brother, you really have a great talent. Few people across the Hidden Dragon Palace could do this task!"

"I'm just going over to try the test. It depends whether I can pass it!" Zhang Tie modestly said.

Liu Xi revealed a smile, "Brother, based on your swimming skills when you were picking navy-blue iron ores from the deep oceanic trenches, I definitely believe that you will pass it!"

After chatting for a while, they agreed to meet to drink alcohol tomorrow night before going their separate ways.

After leaving the Middle Castle, Zhang Tie didn't immediately go to the Long Wind Pearl Field to test his swimming skill; instead, he first went to the Secret Knowledge Pavilion in the Hidden Dragon Palace.

"This brat again!" At the sight of Zhang Tie who was stealthily appearing outside the door of the Secret Knowledge Pavilion, the old man who was drinking tea in a green robe instantly widened his eyes and blew up his beard. Last time, this green-robe old man had said so many words, only to be treated as a no-paid teacher by Zhang Tie and choked by Zhang Tie's response. Therefore, the old

man had a deep impression on Zhang Tie.

"Haha, you look good, old man!" Seeing his bad look, Zhang Tie hurriedly flattered him.

The old man lowered his head as he used a spoon to move the tea leaves in the cup and kept his mouth tightly closed.

Having not imagined that old man was that narrow-minded, Zhang Tie put it straight, "I want to learn medium-level fish-like diving skill!"

When he came here last time, Zhang Tie knew that medium-level fish-like diving skill required 50 clan contribution points. Unlike the preliminary level, the medium-level fish-like diving skill involved the application of battle qi under water. Therefore, only those who had reached LV 6 could learn it.

Now that he wanted to take the task, Zhang Tie felt that it was necessary for him to upgrade his diving skill in case others had doubts about him if he performed well as a person who had only just learned the preliminary fish-like diving skill.

This time, compared to the preliminary fish-like diving skill, Zhang Tie had a much easier time learning the medium-level fish-like diving skill. It only took him less than 40 minutes to master it. What he needed to do was only to practice it adroitly.

After learning the medium-level fish-like diving skill, Zhang Tie

directly walked out of the Hidden Dragon Palace and arrived at the Long Wind Pearl Field which was over 10 km away from Hidden Dragon Palace.

A castle with a perimeter of more than 500 m was established on the hillside near the sea, which was over 30 m away from the corner of the wall of the castle.

There were some smaller buildings surrounding the castle. On some of the reefs below the castle, there was a place which was used to anchor boats. Zhang Tie also saw some boats on the sea a bit further away. The girls of the Zhixing Department were constantly jumping off and climbing onto the boats with something in their hands.

It was an extreme form of training and a test for girls to pick up pearls in the sea.

Looking at the several big words "Long Wind Pearl Field" above the coastal castle, Zhang Tie didn't hesitate to enter the castle. After clarifying his intention to the manager of the Long Wind Pearl Field, Zhang Tie was taken to start the test.

That person took Zhang Tie onto a boat below the castle. With a small triangle sail erected on the boat, they soon arrived at a place on the sea which was about 2 miles away from the castle.

"It's deeper than 100 m here. There's a tiny iron octopus at the bottom of the sea. It swims fast. If you can get one iron octopus in 2 hours, you will pass the test! Then, you can come here to

officially join the team of Yakshas!"

"Erm, how many Yakshas do we have in this sea area? Only me?" Zhang Tie asked as he took off his clothes on the boat.

"We have four. This sea area requires at least four Yakshas to ensure the safety of those girls from Hidden Dragon Palace and the pearl picking girls in our pearl field. Three of them are from Hidden Dragon Palace, while the other is an old man in our pearl field. If you pass the test, our old man will retire. After all, he's too old and cannot match you young men!"

Zhang Tie nodded.

After taking off his clothes, that person gave Zhang Tie a mask that could cover the greater part of his face, "Here's the deep-sea diving goggles, once you take it, you will be able to dive as deep as 400 m. This pair of diving goggles might prevent your eyes from being hurt by the octopus' ink! If you can't complete the task, return as soon as possible. Don't force yourself. Do you need diving shoes..."

"No, thanks!" Zhang Tie shook his head while that person gave him a thumbs up.

After putting on the diving goggles, Zhang Tie adjusted them before diving into the water with a net in hand.

After anchoring the boat and lowering the sail, the man sat on

the boat quietly. He then took out a stick of tobacco and watched the pearl picking boat in the distance while faintly narrowing his eyes. Iron octopuses liked to stay in the deep water zone. They responded so fast that as soon as any danger drew close to them, they would escape. They swam very quickly under water and could reach as fast as 35 km/h. If one wanted to be a Yaksha, he had to be able to catch iron octopus alive under water!

Yakshas catch iron octopuses — this was an old rule on selecting Yaksha that had been used for several hundred years. "Yaksha" was an honor for men with good swimming skills! The alleged [water ghost](#) was nothing in front of a Yaksha in the sea!

'I really wonder how long could that young man stay under water! It will be a tough challenge for him to catch a live iron octopus in 2 hours!' Sitting on the boat, the uncle took a mouthful of tobacco as he waited for Zhang Tie to come out of the water to take another breath.

However, before he finished that stick of tobacco...

With a sound of "bada", the net that he had given Zhang Tie was thrown into the cabin of the boat. While the boat was slightly swaying, Zhang Tie popped his head out of the water while supporting himself on the side of the boat.

"These little things are really agile, I only got 3. Look, are these iron octopuses?" Zhang Tie revealed a big, innocent smile.

The uncle fixed his eyes on the 3 iron octopus with his mouth

widely open while his tobacco dropped out of his hand...

Water ghost is a kind of animal or ghost that lurks in water to hug swimmers or divers and drag them into the water to drown them. It's always mentioned by old men in China. However, few people has seen it.

Chapter 295: Preparations

After smoothly passing the test on Yaksha in the sea, being close to the Long Wind Pearl Field, Zhang Tie returned to Hidden Dragon Palace. After eating lunch in the Breaking-Heavens Department, Zhang Tie returned to his own residence before going to the Items Department with money.

Previously, when Zhang Tie came to the Items Department, he was here to submit navy-blue iron ores. This time, he was here to prepare for the first evolution of his ancestral bloodline. He needed to order something here.

It was boisterous in the Items Department. The blast furnace in the department was emitting hot waves. Over 100 people were here. Zhang Tie could hear the sound of knocking iron instruments everywhere. Some of those people were his senior brothers in the Breaking-Heavens Department.

"It's not that easy to be a craftsman apprentice. Do you think that it's like girls' embroidery?" The moment he entered the second gate of the Items Department, he had already heard a loud, rude shout. "Hold the heavy hammer and maintain your strength and rhythm. Have you seen the steam-driven forging hammer? When you can keep outputting a steady level of strength for twelve hours straight like that machine, I will teach you something new. If you cannot even match a machine, how can you dream to be a rune manufacturer..."

Although he didn't know who was being scolded in the courtyard, hearing the acrid words, Zhang Tie was also frightened

as he shrugged his shoulders. "It's so difficult to be a rune manufacturer, what about being an alchemist then? As is expected, each step towards the top professions is pretty difficult."

After passing the exterior of the Items Department, Zhang Tie directly came to the weapons store in the the core area. It was a 5-floor pavilion. The higher the floor was, the more expensive the items being sold would be. Because Zhang Tie didn't need very expensive items, he just took a look around the first floor in the weapon store.

When he was in the Iron Blood Camp, Zhang Tie had visited the arsenal of the Iron Horn Army twice, therefore, he knew weapons well. Only after a look around on the 1st floor, Zhang Tie had been surprised as even the common weapons on the 1st floor were obviously better than those lieutenant-level weapons in the arsenal of the Iron Horn Army of the Norman Empire. Each item here was of top quality in the Iron Horn Army.

The 1st floor of the weapons store covered several hundred square meters, which was filled with rows of weapon hangers. On the hangers, there were all sorts of weapons like sabers, spears, swords, halberds, axes, tomahawks, hooks, forks, soft whips, hard (iron) whips, hammers, claws, tangs(a weapon that was composed of a stick handle and a half-moon like head with a pike between the two wings of the half moon), sticks, shuos (a heavy weapon for cavalry, which is the heavy-and elite-type of long spear), maces, iron or wooden crutches and bolas. Zhang Tie didn't even know some of their names. Perhaps it was a man's nature, as when Zhang Tie saw the sparkling weapons, he felt his adrenaline surging heavily as his eyes started to shine.

When Zhang Tie stood in front of a 2-m longer weird, horrible battle sword which was hung on a hanger and recalled his "Man's Certificate", one person had already walked in front of him.

"Junior brother, are you choosing weapons?"

Zhang Tie looked at him and found it was a senior brother in Breaking-Heavens Department, "Yes, I want to buy something here!"

"Hehe, take a look slowly. If you have enough money, you can choose something better on the 2nd floor. Each weapon over there is more than 100 gold coins. Each item on the 3rd floor is worth more than 500 gold coins. Each on the 4th floor is worth more than 3000 gold coins. As all the items on the 5th floor are rune weapons, I don't suggest you to take a look there, as they are so expensive they'll make you lose your passion for life..."

Hearing the senior brother's words, Zhang Tie burst out laughing, "Senior brother, are you also here to be a rune manufacturer?"

"Not that easy..." The youth then forced a bitter smile, "I'm not even a craftsman apprentice now. I've just hammered in the ironware processing workshop for half a year. After passing the test, I was dispatched here to be familiar with the quality, duration, material, forging techniques, design ideas and styles of each weapon on the 1st floor. At the same time, I can also look after the store for the manager. Not just being a waste!"

"You are so modest, senior brother. Many people are not even qualified to look after this store even if they wanted to!"

"Oh, junior brother, which weapon do you want? I can provide some suggestions for you!"

"I want to have a look at the long spears or javelins!"

"Thrown weapons? Come here, I will show you these weapons..." The senior brother then led Zhang Tie to another hanger, on which some javelins were displayed. Zhang Tie casually took one and had a try. That familiar sense reappeared. These javelins were definitely of the best quality that Zhang Tie had ever seen. The body of the javelin was designed in terms of aerodynamics. It consisted of several sections, each of which had different thicknesses, giving it an obscure but beautiful look.

"Senior brother, what's the price of these javelins?"

"The javelins here are all sold by group. Each group contains 9 javelins and is equipped with a backpacked metal container. Each group weighs 116 kg in total. They are very powerful. The price of each group of javelins is 34 gold coins. You can also have a look at this one..." Saying this, the senior brother took out a short javelin. With a casual handshake, the 30-cm javelin instantly became longer than 1 m, "This is the hidden type telescopic javelin. It is more portable. When you don't use it, you can carry it with you. When you use it, only by shaking the handle, you will see its body. A group contains 42 javelins. They are suitable to fight enemy within short distances!"

Zhang Tie took it and realized this telescopic javelin is really of a delicate structure. Although being very portable, it was not his target here.

After putting that hidden telescopic javelin onto the hanger, Zhang Tie asked, "Senior brother, can I customize javelins here?"

"Of course, the items workshop can produce all the items you require!"

"That's great. I want to customize a batch of special javelins. Here's are the requirements..." Zhang Tie took a common javelin and started to talk about the requirements with this senior brother.

The javelins required by Zhang Tie were divided into different groups. Those that were normal size were placed in one group; those that were 1 inch smaller than normal size were placed in one group; those that were 2 inches shorter than normal size were placed in one group; and those that were 3 inches shorter than normal size were placed in one group; Likewise, the size of the javelins gradually reduced by 1 inch one group by another. The last group was only 3-5 inches. To tell truth, these items could not be called javelins any more as they were even much shorter than the head of a javelin.

Hearing Zhang Tie's requests, the senior brother was really shocked as he had never been met with such a request. However, he didn't ask why, because everyone in the Breaking-Heavens

Department had their own secrets. It was not good to be too curious here.

"Junior brother, as you've ordered 40 groups here, it will cost you a lot!"

"Hmm, I know it will cost me a lot. Therefore, I only need 6 javelins for each group. This way it'll be much cheaper."

"Yes, you can save on one-third of the price this way. Follow me, I will calculate the price of these items for you!"

Zhang Tie and the senior brother came to the counter on the 1st floor. After that, the senior brother took a pen and started to record these items before calculating the price of them on paper.

"Junior brother, if your requests are met, you need to pay 418 gold coins at least!"

Hearing the figure, Zhang Tie also became a bit hesitant as it was truly not a small amount of money for a newbie in the Breaking-Heavens Department. He had to save money. When he was picking up navy-blue iron ores from the sea, he could only make a few silver coins for one day's hard work. Although he had money now, he knew that he should be frugal in preparation of worse scenario.

"Senior brother, how about a bit cheaper?"

"The javelins need to be made of special alloy. Plus its material

expense, processing fee and other necessary cost and profit, this is the lowest price."

"Hmm, my items are just consumable. They don't need a special alloy. Just use some steel with high endurance. Can they be cheaper then?"

"If so..." The senior brother then started to calculate on the paper once again, "If you use common high-intensity steel, you could truly save a lot. Here it is...you only need to pay 189 gold coins! Are you sure that you only need high-intensity steel? This material could only last a few years!"

A few years, hehe, that's enough. It will not take me that long to finish my first round of evolution of my ancestral bloodline.

"I'm sure!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"We need to settle the bill here. Have you brought your money junior brother?"

"Yes, I have!" Zhang Tie directly paid the 189 gold coins.

The senior brother then opened an order for him, "You can come back for them in 3 days!"

Zhang Tie hadn't imagined that he could get these things in only 3 days.

After exiting the Items Department, Zhang Tie returned to the teaching building of the Breaking-Heavens Department and paid for the compulsory courses during the first year

Zhang Tie chose the following courses: "General History of Humanity", "Review on Human Culture on the Continents", "Geography", "The Great Charter of Brilliance", "Clan System" and "National Wealth Theory". All the above courses were Zhang Tie's shortcomings that he might not have been able to learn about when in Blackhot City.

All the above courses only required gold coin instead of clan contribution points. After submitting the gold coins, Zhang Tie could come to the Breaking Heaven-Department to listen to these courses at any time. Each course would be allocated between 3 teachers in the Breaking-Heavens Department. As the teaching schedules of these teachers were staggered, one could choose the appropriate teacher's class at their discretion.

As long as one felt that they could pass the test for a course, one could apply for the examination at any time of the year, even if one didn't attend the class at all. By contrast, if one failed to pass the test, he had to take the course again to be qualified to attend the exam the next year. That meant that one had to pay for the course again. The resources in the Breaking-Heavens Department could never be used for free.

After checking the schedule of these courses and his number for the examination, Zhang Tie finally had the feeling that he had truly started learning in the Breaking-Heavens Department and

have become a member of the Department.

After finishing to affairs in the Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie rushed to the wharf to set free fish as per usual. After that, he returned to the canteen of the Breaking-Heavens Department to have supper. When he went back to his residence in the Songtao Pavilion, Zhang Tie received the first letter from home.

One week prior, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law gave birth to a healthy, fat son for Zhang Tie's elder brother. It weighed 2.3 kg. The third generation of Zhang Tie's family finally came into this world. Zhang Tie, although being only 16 years old, had enjoyed the honor of being an uncle. His whole family became so excited that Zhang Tie's dad named the baby Zhang [Cheng'an](#).

"Cheng'an...Cheng'an...can he really be safe?:" When he thought of the holy war between humans and demons, Zhang Tie suddenly felt a heavy burden on himself.

Over the next 3 days, Zhang Tie became more diligent as he was trying to improve his real strength and broaden his horizons each day.

In the morning, as a yaksha in the sea, Zhang Tie had to be in the pearl field 1 hour before those girls arrived at the Long Wind Pearl Field so as to check the situation of the sea near the pearl field and drive away sharks and some other dangerous marine organisms. If he couldn't drive them away, he had to kill them without letting them bleed.

After clearing up the dangerous creatures in the pearl field, Zhang Tie started to swim in the sea area around the pearl field with the other yakshas and formed several safety lines and flowing sentry posts underwater near the pearl field. It was a very labor-intensive work as yakshas had to stay in water for over 10 hours a day. Besides taking a breath every so often, they even had to rest under water. It became completely impossible for them to eat and drink.

Yakshas couldn't leave the sea until all the pearl divers and girls in the pearl field had left the water and the safe lamp of the lighthouse, which was built on the top of the castle beside the pearl field, was turned on.

People who were capable of doing this work should have the following qualities: excellent diving skills, good physical strength, and a strong willing with a sense of responsibility.

On the second day after Zhang Tie met and made the appointment with Liuxi for a drink, on the table, Zhang Tie was introduced to some friends of Liu Xi. As they were all of the same age and had no estrangement, they soon became familiar with each other. Knowing that Zhang Tie was a yaksha in the sea, they began to admire Zhang Tie's diving skills. Through the new friends' introduction, Zhang Tie knew more about the rules in the Breaking-Heavens Department.

Not until then did Zhang Tie know that there was still a Hidden Dragon List in the Breaking-Heavens Department. There were 4 sub-lists under the Hidden Dragon List: Hidden Dragon Wealth List, Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List, Hidden Dragon Clan

Contribution Points and Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List. People who could rank first on the four sub-lists would be instantly arranged in an important position by the clan and became an outstanding person once he left the Hidden Dragon Palace. People whose names could be seen on the 4 sub-lists were definitely remarkable in the Breaking-Heavens Department. Everyone that cultivated in the Breaking-Heavens Department hoped to see their names on the 4 sub-lists.

Those figures on the 4 sub-lists were all above level 7 and the elites of the Breaking Heaven Department.

"Where can I see the 4 sub-lists?"

"Hehe, as you are new here, you might not be familiar with it. You can see the 4 sub-lists in Qinyun Palace. Qinyun Palace is the place where we trade items and exchange intelligence." Liu Xi replied.

Zhang Tie then kept the sub-lists and the name of Qinyun Palace in mind and planned to go there to see the excellent figures of the Breaking-Heavens Department.

Speaking of lists, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled the two senior brothers who chased after Deng Tong, the sea monster above water, and killed him on the passenger liner. The two senior brothers had distinctive styles, which greatly impressed Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie speculated that their names might be on the Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List.

...

On the third day, after Zhang Tie finished his work as a yaksha in the sea and set free the fish, he came to the Items Department for his javelins. They were put in 3 big crates...

Cheng'an, 承安, which means to be safe forever.

Chapter 296: Collision

The bamboo woods man told Zhang Tie about a simple way to complete his first evolution in his ancestral bloodline of precise throwing, namely — keep practicing! Practice precisely throwing with javelins of different sizes!

Now that he knew he could precisely throw a 1.4 m javelin, how about throwing a 1.3 m javelin? And when he can precisely throw a 1.3 m javelin, how about throwing a 1.29 m one and then try throwing a 1.28 m one...

As long as he kept practicing by constantly extending the applicable range of precise throwing and shortening the sizes of the javelins, Zhang Tie would definitely be able throw a knife, a bolt, a piece of stone, or a javelin head, which was only several inches in length, as precisely as he threw out a javelin. When he could accomplish this, he would finish his first round of evolution of his ancestral bloodline.

After learning of this method from the bamboo woods man, Zhang Tie had been thinking about it a lot. For the majority of people, because precise throwing was not a senior ancestral bloodline, its power was completely determined by that person's strength. However, because people's strength was limited, when it reached a certain distance, the throwing power could not match that of a strong crossbow. The attack only depended on the sudden explosive force of a person while the power of a crossbow depended on the combination of the strong power of the bow and the human's power. The two were not even on the same starting line.

'Although this is applicable to most people, it is not applicable to me, because I have the seven-strength fruits, which can improve my strength to a level which is out of normal person's imagination. With only 9 wild wolf seven-strength fruits, I have already become so much more terrifyingly powerful than most people. What if I have 9 more huge wolf seven-strength fruits and 9 more golden wolf seven-strength fruits?

'Undoubtedly, that would mean that the power of precise throwing has no upper limit for me as it can constantly increase along with the seven-strength fruits that I eat.

'Based on this premise, once I finish the first round of evolution of my ancestral bloodline, besides javelins, I will also be able to use other lighter, smaller, and more portable items to complete throwing attacks. That means that items that are not powerful in others' eyes will exert a terrifying power with my rising strength. By then, I will not only be like a movable, humanoid artillery battery, but also be the most terrifying king of hidden weapons.'

When he imagined that once he raised his hands, he would scare off the enemy and make them flee in terror, Zhang Tie felt his blood boiling up throughout his body.

After forming his Iron-Blood Battle Qi, Zhang Tie's next target for his fighting skills was to complete the first round of evolution of his ancestral bloodline and apply his precise throwing skill for smaller objects.

The javelins made by the Items Department for Zhang Tie were divided into 41 groups of different specifications. Each group contained 6 javelins. The lengths ranged from normal size to 5 inch, which looked like a dart. They were put in 3 big crates, weighing more than 1480 kg in total. Even though the 3 big crates were not too heavy, Zhang Tie could only carry them back to his room in the Songtao Pavilion over 3 trips.

When Zhang Tie was carrying the last crate back, he met those girls who had wanted to take revenge for their junior sisters in the Breaking Heaven Department more than 10 days ago.

7 or 8 men were behind them. There was total of more than 10 people all together. As they walked towards Zhang Tie while talking and laughing, unavoidably, they clashed with him.

Zhang Tie didn't feel like talking with those girls as they acted so strange to Zhang Tie. Additionally, Zhang Tie was very busy and had no time to care about how they felt towards him.

Zhang Tie really felt that there was nothing to say, but the girls seemed to be very hateful towards him. When Zhang Tie was still over 10 m away from those girls, they had already fixed their eyes full of 'killing intent' onto him.

"I heard that you've not selected the fundamental moves and shield defense skill?" One of those girls said icily when she was close to Zhang Tie.

"I've not got enough clan contribution points. I'm doing tasks

first!" Zhang Tie calmly answered while both of them stopped walking.

"I hope that you never select those 2 compulsory fighting courses."

"Never mind, I will not live up to your good intention, senior sisters!"

'What a joke! You want me to scare me off?' Zhang Tie felt that it was a bit ridiculous, 'These girls really take themselves too seriously!'

"Humph... I hope you don't eat your own words!"

After this, Zhang Tie and that girl didn't talk any more and kept walking on. However, Zhang Tie had not expected that only after a few steps away, he had heard those girls talking with a man which immediately stopped Zhang Tie.

"Is this brat that Zhang Tie? I lost more than 100 gold coins because of him. He doesn't look that great..."

"That's him. It is really very strange for him to form Iron-Blood Battle Qi in one day. I was told that Iron-Blood Battle Qi could not be formed without being very brave. I really wonder how he could form it so smoothly!"

"He's a talent, but he has a poor reputation among the girls in the

Zhixing Department. That's why Ruomei and the other junior sisters requested that we teach him a lesson!"

"What talent? He's just fortunate..." A faintly hoarse voice was heard, "I was told that his dad was a crap, who was chosen to marry a woman with a different surname. Finally, his dad stealthily eloped with that woman. As his dad is a douchebag, how could his son be that great..."

"Senior brother Qiguo, watch out your words, please!"

After stopping his footsteps, Zhang Tie turned back. With a loud sound, he threw the crate of 500 kg onto the ground. Hearing the killing intent from the falling crate, in a split second, they stopped walking and turned around.

Zhang Tie faintly narrowed his eyes as he looked at them with a cold expression and said in an icy voice, "The one who mentioned my dad, if you kneel down in front of me and kowtow for my dad three times and slap yourself 10 times to apologize to my dad, I will take it as if nothing has happened!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the others' faces changed.

"Zhang Tie, you..."

Before one of the girls frowned and wanted to say something, she was stopped by Zhang Tie's reproach.

"Shut up! It's got nothing to do with you!"

At this moment, Zhang Tie was totally like a different person as he was not as calm or happy as before.

"Junior brother, senior brother just made an indiscreet remark just now, don't be that aggressive!"

"An indiscreet remark? If he could about swear about his dad ten times like before, I will trust you!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that person opened his mouth, yet his voice didn't come out at all.

Zhang Tie then fixed his eyes on the male boys among the group of people like a wolf as he growled, "Who said it just now? Where you are?"

"I said it, so what?" A young man around the age of 20 with a lanky face walked 2 steps forward as he raised his head and looked at Zhang Tie with a cold smile, "Don't think that you are unrivaled just because you've formed your Iron-Blood Battle Qi, as we're in the Breaking Heaven Department, I want to test your Iron-Blood Battle Qi..."

Soon after he said this, his face abruptly changed. At the same time, Zhang Tie exploded his Battle-Qi Totem — Bloody Banner. In the dense roiling Bloody Battle Qi, a golden terrifying hell-black spider gradually rose up from behind Zhang Tie like a giant.

Finally the horrible monster which was as tall as a building started to look down at those people with icy eyes while a burning, dense, bloody energy like lively flames enshrouded everyone present.

Zhang Tie's battle qi totem was very frightening and shocking even from afar, let alone standing just in front the battle qi totem and being enshrouded by the qi field and frame of the whole battle qi totem.

The group of people in the opposite of Zhang Tie needed to raise up their heads to be able to see the whole battle qi totem. That hell-black spider was like a burning mountain which carried the fury and will of Zhang Tie; erected in front of everyone. When they looked into the 4 rows of 8 pitch-black icy eyes on the battle qi totem which was dozens of meters high, they would feel like they were gazing into hell. The feeling of darkness and fear was oppressive enough to frighten those timid ones and make them fall onto the ground.

Being influenced by Zhang Tie's great oppression and qi field, those people who were enshrouded by Zhang Tie's battle qi totem all started to roll up their own battle qi totems.

Most of their battle qi totems were LV 7 centipedes; only a few of them were LV 8 king snakes. Their battle qi totems varied from 2 m to 5 m. These battle qi totems in front of Zhang Tie's hell-black spider were like infants in front of an adult. When they stood on the opposite side, it felt that Zhang Tie's hell-black spider was going to eat those centipedes and king snakes like eating dim sum...

The battle qi totem of that guy with a lanky face was also a LV 8 king snake. Looking at Zhang Tie who was walking towards him, that man's battle qi totem also started to shake violently while a weird expression flashed across his eyes!

"Move back..." Noticing the increasingly dangerous atmosphere over the two men, the other guys hurriedly moved back to make some space for them.

Where there were men, there were collisions. Therefore, it was not strange to have collisions in the Breaking Heaven Department. When those collisions could not be solved orally, in accordance with the current rules, they could only be settled through their fists. When a big problem arose from a fight, for instance one party was killed or one party believed that something was amiss, it would be solved by the Disciplinary Department of Hidden Dragon Palace according to the rules of the Breaking Heaven Department.

The moment the other people near that person moved back, Zhang Tie had already launched an attack; making the stone slabs under his feet completely shatter into small pieces. In a split second, Zhang Tie shot out like a bolt while launching his fist towards that person's head, which was accompanied by the tiger's roar of the wind...

Chapter 297: I'm Long

Zhang Tie used the fastest and most aggressive movement of the 36 free hand movements of the Iron-blood Fist——Mountain Collapse Punch.

He gathered the strength from his legs. The punch contained an unrivaled power and was full of Zhang Tie's determination, decisiveness and wild-fire like fury.

Anyone who dared to insult Zhang Tie's family members had to face Zhang Tie's fury in the equivalent of a life and death battle.

Even though this member of the Breaking-Heavens Department had reached level 8, he still dared not to directly face Zhang Tie's fist with Iron-blood battle qi; instead, he chose to avoid Zhang Tie's attack.

The guy moved so fast that when Zhang Tie launched his punch towards him, he immediately flashed away and reached a position 5 steps away from Zhang Tie's left.

It was also Zhang Tie's first time encountering such an opponent. In a split second, he had already avoided his punch. Commoners could only feel that person suddenly disappeared; however, with super high spiritual energy, Zhang could slow down his movement and see clearly what he had done. That person didn't disappear all of sudden but used strange movements. As a result, he instantly escaped out of Zhang Tie's attack range.

"Mountain splitting ax!". After the punch, Zhang Tie instantly tilted his body as he slashed his right leg towards that man like a big ax. That man then escaped away once again. At the same time, Zhang Tie's leg broke the air and made a sharp sound before touching the ground, leaving a 2 m long and 30 cm deep rift.

Zhang Tie's 36 free hand movements of the Iron-blood Fist were so fluent that soon after the Mountain Splitting Ax was used, the moment his feet landed, Zhang Tie instantly surged forward with a bow-like stance and attacked that man's lower abdomen with a heavy elbow. The man flashed away for the third time. Zhang Tie then used a horizontal sword palm, causing a tearing sound in the air.

When Zhang Tie hacked onto the ground with the Fierce Mountain Collapse Axe. Every onlooker felt a faint earthquake. Knowing the power of Zhang Tie's Iron-blood Fist, all of them changed their faces. After exchanging glances, they all saw a wisp of fear and shock in the eyes of the opponent. Although they knew that Iron-blood Fist and Iron-blood battle qi were great, none of them had imagined that it could be that great. Zhang Tie was only level 6. That was too absurd.

Anyone who directly faced Zhang Tie's attacks just now would be severely wounded. That was too fierce to stand. What was more amazing was that Zhang Tie kept applying his fierce fist movements as smoothly and rapidly as an untiring machine. He kept launching attacks towards Zhang Guoqing. However, Zhang Guoqing escaped from his attacks each time through weird foot movements.

"Is Iron-blood fist truly that great?" That man among the onlookers who talked with Zhang Tie just now started to mumble when he watched Zhang Tie's flexible moving shadow. Of course, he could judge from Zhang Tie's movements that Zhang Tie had only cultivated Iron-blood Fist and nothing else. Additionally, Zhang Tie didn't receive any systematic training on fighting skills; for instance, Zhang Tie had not mastered the fundamental movements which was a compulsory course in the Breaking-Heavens Department. He didn't see any fighting skills in the Secret Knowledge Pavilion from Zhang Tie either. Even though, by only using Iron-blood fist, Zhang Tie had already beaten Zhang Qingguo so fiercely that Zhang Qingguo didn't even have a chance to fight back; instead, he just escaped here and there.

During this process, Zhang Qingguo also tried to launch attacks several times; however, Zhang Tie just ignored his attacks. Zhang Tie kept attacking him without any inclination to defend or escape from his attacks at all. Zhang Tie was definitely fighting him at the price of life. In fear of Zhang Tie's Iron-blood battle qi, Zhang Qingguo didn't even dare to directly face Zhang Tie. In every instance in which Zhang Qingguo prepared to fight back, he had been forced by Zhang Tie to give up and run away.

It was okay at the beginning; however, as the battle between them continued, the scene became as follows: Zhang Tie chased after Zhang Qingguo by beating him while Zhang Qingguo kept escaping from his attacks.

At the beginning, Zhang Qingguo was thinking about looking for a chance to fight back when the latter was tired. However, after being chased after and beaten for more than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie didn't feel tired at all. Instead, he became more spirited and could

use his movements more smoothly. As a result, the roar of a tiger and the breaking-air sound along with his punches became sharper and sharper. Zhang Qingguo's face then turned black as his forehead started to ooze a cold sweat.

Hearing the noise, the number of onlookers also increased.

"Come here and have a look, a level 6 junior brother is chasing after and beating a level 8 senior brother. The level 8 senior brother was beaten so fiercely that he escaped everywhere..." Among the new onlookers, some wicked guys shouted loudly. Hearing that yell, Zhang Qingguo almost spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Right then, Zhang Tie left an opening on his right ribs to Zhang Qingguo. Immediately, Zhang Qingguo attacked Zhang Tie's right ribs. When he made it, Zhang Qingguo's heart pounded. However, before he became excited, he became shocked as Zhang Tie directly clipped his hand with right arm by making a turn.

Zhang Tie was so powerful that he instantly clipped Zhang Qingguo's right hand tightly like a pair of pliers. Zhang Qingguo could not draw his right hand out at all. As a result, his right hand instantly became numb.

When Zhang Qingguo's right hand was clipped under Zhang Tie's armpit, his partners were all shocked, "That's awful!". Nobody had imagined that Zhang Tie who was only level 6 could beat Zhang Qingguo, who was 2 levels higher than him. The chance left by Zhang Tie was made for the purpose of catching Zhang Qingguo.

"Let's see how you escape now!" Seeing Zhang Tie's bloody mouth and grim smile, Zhang Qingguo became greatly shocked as he shouted loudly, "Argh!" When he could not withdraw his right hand, he wanted to stomp onto Zhang Tie's foot; however, before he raised his foot, Zhang Tie's left foot had already raised up and stomped his foot. All of a sudden, Zhang Qingguo felt like he was being fixed by a big iron nail into the ground.

When he could not move his foot, he could only use the left hand. The two men both responded very quickly.

When Zhang Qingguo smacked Zhang Tie's chest with a left punch, Zhang Tie directly punched Zhang Qingguo's lower abdomen.

At this moment, as they could only move one hand and one foot, the two men were stuck together.

Zhang Qingguo's punch and Zhang Tie's punch were both fierce. As a result, they both spurted out a mouthful of blood and were wounded.

Plus the last time when he left an opening to Zhang Qingguo, Zhang Tie was beaten twice before spurted out blood; however, the Iron-blood Fist was so fierce that the moment he touched Zhang Qingguo's lower abdomen, he had made Zhang Qingguo spurt out blood.

After suffering from a punch from each other and spurting out

blood respectively, Zhang Tie and Zhang Qingguo's eyes both turned red. They gritted their teeth tightly as they stared at each other's eyes. Using no fighting skills, they just punched each other at the price of blood and wounds. They wanted to know who could have the last laugh.

All the onlookers had been dumbfounded as none of them had imagined that the two people would fight in such a fierce manner.

One was level 6 and cultivated the Iron-blood Fist while the other was level 8 and cultivated another high-end battle qi and had been in the Breaking-Heavens Department for a long time. In only several seconds, the two had already attacked each other more than 10 times respectively, causing them spurt blood heavily.

The one who fell down first was Zhang Qingguo. Zhang Tie kept punching his lower abdomen many times, causing him spurt blood and lose the strength to fight back. Gradually, he bent over and knelt down in front of Zhang Tie. Then, he showed the whites of his eyes as he lay down on the ground and panted like a dead fish.

Spurting blood, Zhang Tie directly rode on his back and clenched his collar as he asked, "Are you wrong?"

Receiving no response, Zhang Tie slapped his face...

"Are you wrong?"... "Pah"...

"Are you wrong?"... "Pah"...

"Are you wrong?"... "Pah"...

"Are you wrong?"... "Pah"...

"Are you wrong?"... "Pah"...

Under Zhang Tie's crotch, after being slapped more than 10 times, that guy's face had become swollen. At the same time, his eyes were full of fear like looking at a ghost. Staring at Zhang Tie's firm and cruel expression, he definitely believed that as long as he didn't reply, he was doomed to be slapped to death here...

"Are you wrong?"

"Long..." That person's mouth had been so swollen that he could not even utter clearly.

Zhang Tie grinned, "I want your apology!"

"I...em long...I...em...solly...!"

Hearing his apology, Zhang Tie finally loosened his grasp and stood up from the ground. He then lowered his head and watched that person, "If you think that you're not wrong and want to fight me, I'll wait for you at any time. Duels are also okay. I'll accompany you anytime! However, if I hear those words from you next time, I'll kill you!"

Standing up, Zhang Tie glanced at his partners before wiping off the blood from the corners of his mouth and slowly walked towards his crate.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming towards them, the onlookers all gave way. Many people even cast admirable glances towards him. Zhang Tie came to the crate as he took a deep breath and forcefully picked it up from the ground before walking away towards the Songtao Pavilion.

Lying on the ground, that man's eyes were full of complaints and hatred...

Looking at Zhang Qingguo's expression, some of his partners faintly frowned their foreheads...

Chapter 298: Demons were Found

Zhang Tie returned to his room, No. 7, in Songtao Pavilion while taking cold breaths. He was taking cold breaths because of the pain from his wounds; however, at the same time, he revealed a slight smile.

After eating iron-body fruits for so long, Zhang Tie had not enjoyed the benefit of iron-body fruits in real battle until today. When Zhang Tie fought with that person just now, the benefits of the iron-body fruits truly showed and helped him win the fight. If there were no iron-body fruit, even though he could've won the battle, it would never have been that easy. Neither could he carry a crate of 400 to 500 kg back after such a fierce battle.

When he left a chance to that person and pinned that person's hand, he was betting that he could stand that person's strike instead of being heavily wounded, being killed, or being sent flying away. He guessed right. After eliminating that guy's advantage by fixing his foot, Zhang Tie won the battle. His confidence came from the iron-body fruit which formed when he dove in water in recent days. Now that the iron-body fruit could help him resist against greater pressure from sea water, it could definitely bring him a greater strike-resistant ability.

If he didn't beat that guy and prevent him from moving, to tell the truth, Zhang Tie wouldn't know the outcome of the fight. That guy moved so weirdly. If they were fighting in another place where there were no onlookers, that guy would actually find it impossible to lose the battle because of his weird moving skills.

That douchebag was first beaten by Zhang Tie's self-respect, then the iron-body fruit, and finally Zhang Tie.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie won his bet.

On the way back to the Songtao Pavilion, Zhang Tie recalled how he fought that guy and summed up the experience.

'If that guy had a sword, there might have been a different outcome. I wonder what he used to use. Certainly, if I have a javelin, that douchebag is doomed to die.' Generally speaking, both people had exerted their full strength. However, they didn't use all of their fighting skills. If various fighting skills were available, Zhang Tie was confident to finish that person in the shortest period.

Zhang Tie admired that person's weird and agile moving skills inside. He had determined to learn fundamental movements soon after he got enough clan contribution points. As he had not received systematic training, he was weak in moving skills. As long as he mastered the fundamental movements, he could definitely increase the power of iron-blood fist many times over.

After returning to his room, Zhang Tie put down his crate as he felt a sharp pain in his lungs.

Zhang Tie couldn't help but cough up some blood...

'That guy's punches are too heavy!' Zhang Tie knew that he had

suffered internal injuries.

Zhang Tie went to the washroom to spit out the blood. He then cleaned himself up before going to the cultivation room.

The Xuan No. 7 cultivation room of Songtao Pavilion was not large as it only covered a bit more than 10 square meters. The room was paved with refreshing pine wood floor. As sun light was cast in the cultivation room for most of the daytime, the cultivation room would feel warm and very comfortable at night. Zhang Tie walked towards the cattail hassock and sat on it. Looking at the setting sun in the distance, Zhang Tie slowly adjusted his breathing as he closed his eyes and became relaxed enough to sense inside his body...

Two hours later, dusk fell. After studying the inside of his body, Zhang Tie felt that his wounds were recovering in way faster as he opened his eyes.

Benefiting from the effect of preliminary recovery body, after sunset, the healing and recovery ability of Zhang Tie started to accelerate from 215% to 430%. At this moment, Zhang Tie's recovering speed had reached 4 times that of normal people. That meant, it only took Zhang Tie 1 hour to reach the effect of 4 hours' recovery of most people.

Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile as he stood up from the cattail hassock. Finally, he witnessed the powerful combination of the preliminary recovery body and iron-body fruit.

Feeling a bit hungry, Zhang Tie left the Songtao Pavilion and entered the canteen of the Breaking Heaven Department.

The conditions in the canteen of the Breaking Heaven Department were better than those of the Zhixing Department. With the payment of 1 gold coin a day, Breaking Heaven Department provided various free buffets around the clock in order to meet different people's schedule. Therefore, one could enjoy food here at any time. Zhang Tie was very satisfied about this.

The preliminary recovery body could not only bring Zhang Tie a great physical recovery ability, a higher toxin immune ability, and a fatal wounds endurance ability, but also bring him a better appetite. Especially as he didn't eat lunch, in the evening Zhang Tie easily ate two men's worth of food. He didn't leave until he was almost full.

After exiting the canteen, Zhang Tie only walked less than 1 minute before he met a person and asked him about the location of the Qinyun Palace.

Qinyun Palace was definitely more boisterous in the evening than it was in the daytime. From afar, Zhang Tie had already seen the magnificent building. When he was close, he saw many senior brothers of Breaking Heaven Department accessing here. As Zhang Tie was too common, nobody even glanced at him.

After entering the main entrance of Breaking Heaven Department and passing a porch, Zhang Tie arrived at a brightly-lit hall. The moment he entered the hall, Zhang Tie was attracted

by the four 10-m high lists.

Above the four lists were three golden words "Hidden Dragon List", closely below which were a line of smaller words, "Hidden Dragon Wealth List", "Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List", "Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List" and "Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List". Each sub-list contained 50 names.

After taking a careful look, Zhang Tie found a pattern, namely, 7 of the top 10 in the "Hidden Dragon Wealth List" could be found in the top 10 of the "Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List" except for a small difference in ranks. Similarly, many people of the top 10 in the "Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List" occupied the top ranks in the "Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List".

After a short while, Zhang Tie figured it out. Those who could enter the "Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List" were definitely elites who cultivated various professions in the Breaking Heaven Department, such as rune manufacturers and alchemists. As long as they had gained some achievements, it would be easy for them to make money. Likewise, those in the "Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List" were definitely able to complete highly difficult clan tasks and gain more clan contribution points.

What Zhang Tie had not imagined was that his cousin Zhang Su's name ranked 46 in the "Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List". No wonder Zhang Tie felt his cousin was a bit arrogant most of the time.

When Zhang Tie glanced over the 4 lists, the gate was thrown open and a senior brother rushed into the hall while waving

something. He shouted so loudly that everybody could hear, "Urgent news, urgent news! Demons were found on the Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire, demons were found on the Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire!"

The moment he shouted out, the noisy hall suddenly became so quiet that even a needle falling onto the ground would've been heard.

10 seconds later, someone asked, "Are you serious?"

"This is the brief on the intelligence of the continent transmitted by the clan from Yiyang City. Two days ago, when a cavalry unit of a Celtic prefecture in the west of Golan Empire conducted their routine patrol along the border of the Hurricane Plateau, they met a small troop of demons. Finally, less than 1/10 of that cavalry unit returned. Because it was related to demons, Golan Empire has already reported this battle to the Waii Sub-Continent Human Central Countries Alliance. Additionally, yesterday, Golan Empire released the Demons Killing Order and opened the border between the Celtic Prefecture and Hurricane Plateau to all the pioneers, adventurers and fighters across the Waii Sub-continent."

The hall became quiet once again...

"This might mean nothing. Since the 2nd holy war between human beings and demons, small demon troops were always found slipping into human territory suddenly. The latest demon troops were found 27 years ago on the Waii Sub-continent..." Someone said loudly.

"There's one more possibility. The demons have already broken through the underground channel from the Dark Continent to the Hurricane Plateau. If so..."

A chilly sense was felt in the hall...

That person didn't talk any more while everybody else understood what he meant. If the demons truly had broken through the underground channel from the Dark Continent to the Hurricane Plateau, from now on, there would be more and more demons on the Hurricane Plateau. As soon as the demons prepared well, the demons' army would gather on the Hurricane Plateau, which meant the 3rd holy war between human beings and demons would arrive.

Each corps of demons included around 400,000 to 500,000 demon fighters. In each holy war, the demons would send out hundreds, or even thousands of corps while each demon corps was the nightmare of human kind!

Chapter 299: Strange Solution

While many people were still in the hall discussing the news of demons appearing on the Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire, Zhang Tie had already left the hall after skimming the brief intelligence on Waii Sub-continent sent from the clan in the recent months.

The brief intelligence could help those in the Breaking Heaven Department stay informed about the events around the continent so that the Breaking Heaven Department was not isolated from the outside world. After all, the Zhang clan was cultivating elites, not hermits, in the Breaking Heaven Department.

From the brief intelligence in the last month, Zhang Tie found the news that he was truly concerned about — after half a year, the war between Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty in Kalur Region had ended. After that, the Selindor family which ruled Kalur city officially declared the founding of a new country centered around Kalur city with Alexia Selindor officially became the Queen of Kalur.

The new country centered around Kalur City was a typical pocket kingdom. On the founding day, Kalur's Queen officially declared that they would remain neutral.

Zhang Tie knew that the reason that the Selindor family dared to declare the founding of a new country was because a powerful alchemist was backing their family. Neither Norman Empire nor Sun Dynasty would challenge two powerful enemies at the price of offending an alchemist with terrifying power.

The war in the Kalur region ceased, which was good news for Zhang Tie. Because, his friends in the Blackhot City and the Iron-Blood Camp didn't have to go to battle again. In contrast, the news about demons on the Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire was quite bad for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie thought that if it was just a small demon troop or the demons had truly found the tunnel towards the underground world of the Hurricane Plateau, it was not a good sign.

The demons were drawing closer, which means the holy war between humans and demons was drawing ever closer. Those big figures among human beings were also preparing for the coming holy war, making the sense of a coming chaotic world more obvious.

After skimming over the brief intelligence sent by the Zhang clan from outside, Zhang Tie knew that there was always a hidden flow on the Waii Sub-continent in the latest months. The tragedy case of the whole family of one senior of the Karol Federal Alchemists Association was killed had not been solved, and the King of the Leica Kingdom was assassinated. After that, because of the competition for the throne between the infantess and the princes, Leica Kingdom was instantly divided and troubled by civil war.

At the same time, some countries along the Niin River, which was known as the granary of the Human Corridor, were suffering from a rare plague of insects. As a result, all grain production suffered a sharp reduction this year.

Additionally, the previously safe airlines now continuously

suffered from dangerous wild beasts' attacks. Some regular airlines even had to be abandoned. In this case, the airborne traffic connections between countries of the human corridor started to be fragile as many countries even started to dispatch war-time airships to join in the protection of regular airlines...

Zhang Tie went back to the Songtao Pavilion in a poor mood.

After entering his room, Zhang Tie didn't ignite the lamp in his room; instead he just meditated in the dark room for almost 10 minutes before silently entered the Castle of Black Iron.

When the dreamlike, colorful fog and the tender, bright light of Castle of Black Iron reappeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes, Zhang Tie gradually felt better.

By then, Castle of Black Iron had become more vigorous. Compared to that previous barren land, the inside of Castle of Black Iron had become larger with one more lake of 200,000 square meters. The lake was Zhang Tie's achievement in the latest months.

In the latest months, Zhang Tie had absorbed too much sea water into the Castle of Black Iron. After the sea water was converted into basic energy storage, it had become a huge figure that Zhang Tie had never imagined. Because of the sufficient amount of stored basic energy, the ambitious Heller used a part of the energy and built a freshwater lake that he had long planned, using the space and terrain renovation function of Castle of Black Iron.

At this moment, at the sight of that shimmering lake in the far, Zhang Tie felt a great difference as the whole Castle of Black Iron made him pleasant and opening.

After all, human beings liked water.

Zhang Tie then came to the side of the small tree and looked at the fruits on it.

The latest Leakless Fruit would become ripe in 3 days. With 2 more Leakless Fruits, Zhang Tie would ignite the 9th surge point. It would be more difficult for him to realize that compared to his previous promotions. He needed to ignite 5 more surge points to reach LV 7. It was as difficult as promoting from LV 1 to LV 5. The higher the level was, the more terrifying it would be to promote. Of course, one would also see a substantial growth of their strength and power at each higher level.

The latest iron-body fruit had become 95% ripe and could be eaten tomorrow. The only fruit that he could eat today was a Fruit of Redemption that formed because of the sand-scale fish that he set free in the fish market of the wharf today.

— Fruit of Redemption — gratitude from sand-scale fish; Fruit of Redemption has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

— This fruit will allow Castle Lord to increase your cold-

resistance in water and cold environments and sensitivity to water flow by 8% each.

— After eating it, Castle Lord will be able to increase your cold-resistance in water and cold environments and your sensitivity to water flow by 702% each in total compared to your earliest condition.

Zhang Tie picked it off and ate it. When he fully digested the fruit and absorbed its effect, Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he found that Heller had been long standing under the stone stairs of the small tree, waiting for him to open his eyes.

"Handsome and Magnificent Castle Lord, welcome back to the Castle of Black Iron!" Opening his eyes, Zhang Tie found that Heller was bowing towards him.

The words from a person brought Zhang Tie a greater vanity than a line of written words; however, Zhang Tie faintly felt shameless to be called handsome and magnificent in front of Heller as the latter's face was too handsome that it even made Zhang Tie jealous.

Zhang Tie rubbed his face as he walked downstairs and said, "Hmm, Heller, from now on, you don't need to add the prefixes "handsome" and "magnificent", just call me Castle Lord!"

"As you will!" Heller faintly bent his body and looked pretty perfect while Zhang Tie mumbled, "Where are Edward, Aziz and Agan?"

"Because it's quite late, they've already gone to bed! I also realize that when Castle Lord entered..."

Zhang Tie then realized that Edward, Aziz, Agan and Heller were actually like normal people as they also needed food and sleep.

"As there's no night here, are you used to the living here?"

"Because this space is connected with that world outside through you, in order to make you comfortable, the time and environment here is synchronous to that outside. We also have night; but it becomes bright when Castle Lord enters, just like a house automatically turns on its light when its owner comes back!"

"Is that true?" Zhang Tie suddenly became interested, "Can you show me the night here?"

Having entering Castle of Black Iron for many times, he always saw daytime here, Zhang Tie didn't know what the night in Castle of Black Iron look like yet.

"Castle Lord wants to see the night here?"

"Yes!"

The moment Zhang Tie replied, without seeing what Heller did, the whole space in the Castle of Black Iron became as dark as

outside. The colorful fog in the Castle of Black Iron suddenly became dark, only leaving a faint brilliance on a ball of fog which was suspended in the sky like the moons outside. Even the visibility was almost identical to outside.

His mouth slightly agape, Zhang Tie looked around the dark surroundings as he had not imagined that it could change so fast. However, Zhang Tie felt a sense of curiosity in the darkness of Castle of Black Iron.

"Is the night here always like this?"

"No, the brightness and visibility here is adjustable in the night. They totally depend on the moving trajectories of the 2 moons outside. When the 2 moons outside are full, the night here would be the brightest. When the double crescents arrive in the outside, the night here would be the darkest. The night here is the same as outside." Heller replied.

"Just remain synchronous with the world outside from today on. When I enter, no need to adjust it into daytime when it should be night. Just follow the rule of the nature!" Zhang Tie looked around as he said.

The night in Castle of Black Iron felt especially tranquil and beautiful.

"Fine! As you will!" Heller revealed a smile as he reminded Zhang Tie, "The variety of plant seeds here are not enough. The more complete the collection of plant seeds is in the Castle of Black Iron;

the more aura value will be produced. Increasing aura value would be useful in many aspects in the future. If Castle Lord has any free time, will you bring in some plants or plant seeds. Wetland plants and aquatic plants that are suitable to live in fresh water would be preferred!"

"I will try my best!" Zhang Tie became a bit bashful as he replied. Heller, the steward was too responsible. Compared to him, Zhang Tie was really like a lazy owner who needed to be reminded all the time.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to leave, Heller further reminded him which stopped him.

"Castle Lord, you must have been too busy recently, you might have forgotten about the vats of solution that you made using essential-energy reiki yeast and fruits. They've completed fermented for a while!"

"Argh!" Zhang Tie slapped his forehead as he'd almost forgotten about this.

Zhang Tie then rushed to the lab and opened one of the huge porcelain vat with curiosity...

A strange yet alluring fragrance drifted out of the top of the porcelain vat. In a instant, the whole lab was full of the smell.

Zhang Tie became stunned — 'What...what's this? It smells so

good...'

Chapter 300: Strange Solution II

Last night, Zhang Tie slept very well. When he got up on the next morning, he felt fully energetic and had recovered his vitality again.

After getting up, Zhang Tie warmed up his body by stretching his limbs and doing some movements. Suddenly, he realized that most of his wounds had recovered overnight.

"Yi?"

Zhang Tie tried a few more times and found that the wounds truly had been recovered. Previously, Zhang Tie estimated that it would probably take him a couple of days to completely recover based on his preliminary recovery body, he hadn't imagined that he had almost fully recovered overnight. To be serious, the effect over last night was at least equal to two days of good rest.

Zhang Tie felt that he had mainly benefited from the 430% healing and recovery effect of his preliminary recovery body at night, therefore, Zhang Tie didn't think too much of it.

When cleaning up in the washroom, Zhang Tie looked at the juvenile with a high color in the mirror as he exposed his two rows of white teeth and grinned. He then encouraged himself loudly, "Come on, come on, come on!"

Each morning, Zhang Tie would encourage himself loudly in the mirror.

Until he started brushing teeth when he licked his lips did Zhang Tie feel the fragrance of the residue of the essential-energy Reika yeast that he drunk last night.

It was so good that Zhang Tie hadn't drunk such a marvelous thing before. It was like a beverage, but it tasted like alcohol although it wasn't. It tasted sour, sweet and cool. Although it was fermented by shattered fruits, its luster and taste were utterly different from the same type of yeast solution that he had drunk before at home.

It tasted more mellow and distant. As long as he had it in his mouth, he could feel the spirit and vitality in the liquid.

Zhang Tie couldn't describe how it felt. After drinking it, Zhang Tie only felt that all his pores had opened. He felt comfortable and refreshing all over.

Additionally, after drinking it, he also slept pretty well.

After cleaning up, the moment he thought about the taste of the solution, Zhang Tie started to drool. Patting his forehead, Zhang Tie swore, "Stupid, as long as I take a bottle, I can drink it at any time."

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie found an aluminum military kettle. He then cleaned it with water. After that, he directly locked his consciousness on the solution in the big vat in the lab of the Castle of Black Iron.

All of a sudden, a trickle appeared in the kettle. Only after a short while, the whole kettle was full of the special liquid.

After shaking the kettle full of the solution in his hand, Zhang Tie smiled as he felt that he had the potential to be a magician. If he made a performance with this talent, he could definitely arise others' attention.

After doing this, Zhang Tie carried this kettle and lifted one crate that contained various javelins of different sizes before leaving his room. He went to the canteen to have breakfast first before going to the Long Wind Pearl Field.

"Zhang Tie, what's that crate for?" Senior Chen walked towards him and asked. As Zhang Tie had been in the Long Wind Pearl Field for several days, he had been familiar with the other workers there.

Senior Chen was both an old staff and a yaksha in the Pearl Field. He had been working in the Pearl Field for dozens of years. He was the very person who tested Zhang Tie's diving skills.

"Nothing serious, these are weapons. I customize them from the Items Department. When we finished work tonight, I will take these javelins to the town for sale. They might worth several gold coins!" Zhang Tie raved. Of course, these javelins were not for sale.

"Haha, you clever boy..." Senior Chen shook his head as he said, "There was also someone did this in the Breaking-Heavens

Department before. They wanted to sell the items from the Items Department in town. However, things didn't proceed as they expect!"

"Why?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Although the items in the Items Department are well produced, they are of high cost. Therefore, it's impossible for you to sell them at a higher price. Additionally, most of those people have been well prepared for coming to the island. Few people would buy weapons here. Additionally, there are weapon stores on the island. Don't you know that?"

"Argh!" Zhang Tie shouted loudly like having been greatly shocked before revealing a sad expression, "Do you mean that I suffer a great loss this time? I've spent too much for those items..."

"Heh heh, such pitfall isn't too bad, with your wit..." Senior Chen patted Zhang Tie's shoulder as he said like an experienced man.

When they talked, the other 3 yakshas from the Breaking-Heavens Department arrived. They were all Zhang Tie's senior brothers, who were respectively called Yang Yuankang, Zhang Lin, and Zhu Wenqiang. They were all level 7. With good diving skills, they were here to gain clan contribution points.

Among all the yakshas in the sea here, Zhang Tie's level was the lowest as he was only level 6. However, Zhang Tie's performance was really excellent.

When they saw Zhang Tie's big crate, they all wondered what it was for. After senior Chen explained what Zhang Tie had told him to them, all the other yakshas laughed.

"Junior brother, there's no need to do that. As long as you have good diving skills, there are many opportunities to make money in the sea!"

"Alright, come on, let's start work. After a while, those pearl divers and girls would go into the sea!" Senior Chen urged aside, "Just put your crate here. I will keep an eye on it for you!"

Zhang Tie then put down his crate before following them downstairs to the underground floor of the castle.

There was a huge underground space over 30 m wide under the castle. A huge dark blue seawater pond was inside, which was connected to the sea. Through this entrance, they could enter the sea.

After they reached the underground space, senior Chen lifted the steel fence under the water pond. Zhang Tie and the other yakshas started to take off their clothes. As they were all men, they didn't feel shameful to take off all of their clothes. After that, they started to put on diving trousers made of shark's skin and carry underwater weapons and equipment.

Yakshas always used water-shed daggers, common daggers, underwater crossbows and dragon-king forks. Each of these weapons was available. If one was confident in himself, it was also

okay if he didn't carry any weapon, even his webbed feet. However, one must carry the cross-cloud arrow that was used to send a warning.

The cross-cloud arrow was like a crossbow cylinder, each of which was as long as 30 cm. As long as the one emerged from the water and shot out a loud bolt towards the sky, the bolt would release a ball of red fog when it rose above 70 m in the air. The red fog would last for a long time to remind everyone else to go back onto the bank as soon as possible as some dangerous magical beast or sea monster is coming underwater.

Although after hundreds of years' siege and hunting, there was basically no underwater magical beast or sea monster within the area of dozens of miles near the Hidden Dragon Island, they had to be prepared. In senior Chen's words, if a man-eating magical shark intruded in the Pearl Field, it would be a disaster.

Zhu Wenqiang got ready, "Brothers, I will go down first!", after saying that, Zhu Wenqiang dove into the water.

After Zhang Lin and Yang Yuankang, it was Zhang Tie's turn.

Before going down, Zhang Tie opened his kettle and drunk two mouths of the solution.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt comfortable and refreshing all over.

"Zhang Tie, don't drink alcohol before going down. Although alcohol could warm up temporarily, it will harm your lungs if you stay long in water!" Seeing Zhang Tie drinking something, senior Chen hurriedly reminded him aside.

"It's not alcohol. I brewed something else!" Zhang Tie smiled as he covered the lid of the kettle.

Senior Chen took a deep breath and truly smelt no alcohol from Zhang Tie; instead, he smelt a weird fragrance. He then didn't say anything but cast a glance at Zhang Tie's aluminum military kettle out of curiosity.

After hanging his kettle together with his clothes, Zhang Tie didn't say anything as he directly dove into the seawater.

After a while, Zhang Tie caught up with the other yakshas. They then sped up underwater like mermaids as fast as running on the bank. In only a few minutes, they had already arrived at the Pearl Field and started to be responsible for the safety of different portions of the Pearl Field.

It took them more than 40 minutes to finish patrolling the Pearl Field. During this period, all the other 3 yakshas took a breath above water except for Zhang Tie. He kept moving underwater as easily as he did on land which allowed the other yakshas to admire his ability.

After patrolling in the water area of the Pearl Field, they swam towards the surrounding water areas of the Pearl Field and formed

several cordons.

Arriving at the sea area outside the Pearl Field, Zhang Tie was like a bird in the sky as he had no constraints anymore. He then started to seek his prey.

After a short while, Zhang Tie had seen an over 4-m long man-eating white shark swimming towards him the moment it caught sight of him. Zhang Tie became 10 times agiler all of a sudden. Before the white shark drew close to him with its huge mouth, Zhang Tie had already reached its head. He stretched out his palm and slightly pressed onto its head while slightly releasing his iron-blood battle qi...

Without drawing any blood, the white shark had lost its life in a split second before it sunk to the bottom of the sea...

After an hour, three more white sharks were killed by Zhang Tie.

Knowing that he had formed the latest ripe trouble-reappearance fruit by killing this shark, Zhang Tie stopped.

...

Not knowing why, after finishing today's task, Zhang Tie felt that he was not that hungry as before. He felt that he consumed less physical strength today.

...

In the evening, Zhang Tie was sitting quietly with eyes closed in the cultivation cell of the Xuan No. 7 room, Songtao Pavilion, Breaking-Heavens Department.

In the trouble-reappearance situation of the latest trouble-reappearance fruit, some sharks were closely chasing after Zhang Tie with red eyes. Finally, they could only watch Zhang Tie swimming far away from them.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already swum faster than sharks underwater even without the help of the Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie dove into the underground entrance of the castle of the Long Wind Pearl Field again. Without caring about the sharks chasing after him, after he opened his crate, he started to practice his javelins from smaller to bigger ones in the unmanned castle...

In the next 2 days, Zhang Tie carried a big crate to the Long Wind Pearl Field every day and used the javelins in them to kill sea snakes or sharks in the sea to form new trouble-reappearance situations. Finally, he started to practice throwing javelins in the trouble-reappearance situations which were the same as the true environment.

When Zhang Tie held the javelins with normal size, he could clearly sense the conic locking state between him and the target. However, when he used very small javelins, he didn't have this sense.

However, when he held those javelins which were one size smaller than normal ones, the locking state became unstable. At the same time, that mysterious conic sensing form started to shake and transform. If Zhang Tie threw them, he could not ensure the precision.

Zhang Tie firstly used javelins that were one size smaller than normal javelins. Through constant throwing, the unstable state gradually became stable and finally became the same as that of the normal javelins.

When he had adapted to a certain size of javelins, he started to train himself with smaller javelins...

In this way, Zhang Tie made clan contribution points as yaksha while accumulating basic energy storage and stimulating the production of iron-body fruit in the sea in the daytime and practiced throwing javelins of different sizes in the trouble-reappearance situations in the evening to complete his first round of evolution of his ancestral bloodline. If he had free time, he would go to attend classes or learn General History of Human Beings, Overview of Human Culture on the Continents and Geography by himself which were the compulsory cultural courses that he had paid for.

Since he entered the Breaking-Heavens Department, Zhang Tie had become so busy every day that he didn't even have time to do other things except for work, practice, and study. However, Zhang Tie thought it was very fulfilling although being very busy and monotonous.

In this way, Zhang Tie had stayed in the Breaking-Heavens Department for over a month.

During the past month, Zhang Tie's cousin Zhang Su came here for Zhang Tie once. They only had a meal. After asking about Zhang Tie's recent condition and encouraging him, Zhang Su took a new task and left again.

In the past month, Zhang Tie ignited two more surge points and had already ignited 10 surge points on his spine.

During the same period, Zhang Tie drunk a kettle of that special solution every day. It was too delicious and he had become used to drinking it. No matter what, he had several hundreds kg of that solution in the Castle of Black Iron and could not drink them up in a short period.

Besides its taste, Zhang Tie didn't feel anything special about the solution.

For all the changes like gradually becoming energetic, not being easily hungry in the sea, his skin gradually becoming bright, clean and tender, his spiritual energy and battle qi naturally growing, his five senses becoming sharper and his saliva becoming sweeter... Zhang Tie owed them to his ignited surge points.

However, what was doomed to happen finally occurred.

That day, seeing that Zhang Tie would have a drink of the

solution in the military kettle before going down in the sea, Yang Yuankang who had been increasingly familiar with Zhang Tie finally couldn't control his curiosity as he asked.

"Zhang Tie, what's inside? I see you drinking this every day."

"It's beverage brewed by myself, have a try?" Saying this, Zhang Tie had thrown the kettle to Yang Yuankang.

Taking Zhang Tie's kettle, Yang Yuankang firstly smelt it. In a sudden, a weird yet refreshing fragrance drifted from the opening of the kettle. Yang Yuankang's eyebrows instantly jumped twice. He hadn't smelt such a strange fragrance before. The moment he smelt it, he felt cool all over.

After putting it close to his mouth and engulfed two mouths with a sound of "glug glug", Yang Yuankang exclaimed, "Argh, what's this? How could it taste so good!"

"Let me try!" Zhang Lin took the kettle from Yang Yuankang and also engulfed two mouths without any hesitation. After that, Zhang Lin's eyes radiated shimmering lights.

Zhu Wenqiang who was beside Zhang Lin raised his nose. As he smelt that refreshing fragrance, he started to drool. Seeing Zhang Lin drink 4 mouthfuls of that solution, he finally couldn't stand it and grabbed Zhang Tie's kettle, "Let me have a try..."

With this taste, even Zhu Wenqiang's eyebrows raised.

Looking at senior Chen's sad look with frowning forehead, Zhang Tie couldn't stand but said, "senior Chen, would you like to try it?"

In that period, senior Chen's rheumatism was showing its effect once again. This disease was due to his long-time stay in the water and the seaside. He had eaten many kinds of medicine, yet none of them took effect. Therefore, he was tortured and looked bad every day. Even now, his knees were still aching heavily. Previously senior Chen didn't want to drink it; however, hearing Zhang Tie's suggestion and looking at the other guys' movements, senior Chen also became a bit curious, "Let me have a try..."

Zhang Tie's kettle was then passed to senior Chen. Zhu Wenqiang and the other guys didn't grab that with senior Chen considering his age. After a mouth, senior Chen was shocked. Then, under the widening eyes of the others who were forcefully their saliva, senior Chen bottomed up the kettle.

"Hmm, not bad!" Senior Chen smacked his lips while nodding his head.

Seeing the solution being cleaned, they all went into the seawater one by another. Although they felt it was good, none of them thought too much about that.

...

However, only after an hour, senior Chen found the aches in his knees were gradually disappearing while a wholly new sense of

vitality and warmth seemed to spread inside his body. After being tortured by rheumatism all over for many years, it felt like a long-dried land welcoming sweet dew...

Senior Chen was full of pleasure inside, ‘What’s happening?’

...

Five hours later, Zhu Wenqiang felt a bit strange as he would definitely feel hungry and tired at this time in usual days, how could he not feel as hungry and as tired as he previously did?